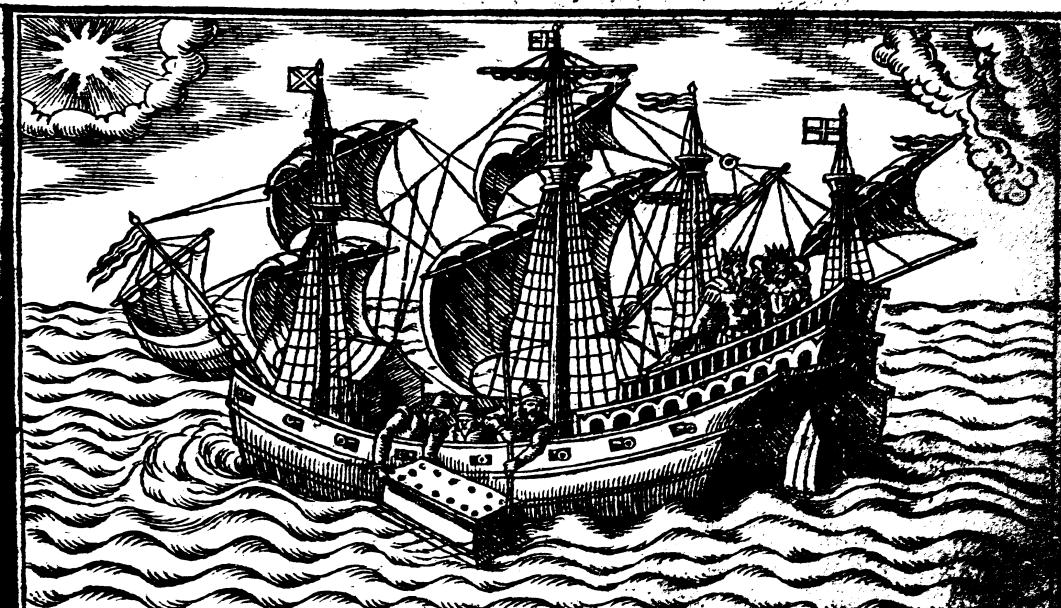


*C. 39. h. 11.*

# THE ANCIENT, FAMOUS And Honourable History of Amadis de Gaule.

DISCOVR SING THE A D V E N T V R E S,  
Loues and Fortunes of many Princes, Knights and  
Ladies, as well of Great Britaine, as of many  
other Kingdomes beside, &c.

Written in French by the Lord of *Effars*, *Nicholas de Herberay*,  
Ordinarie Commissarie of the Kings Artillerie, and his  
Lieutenant thereof, in the Countrey and government  
of Picardie, &c.



Printed at London by NICHOLAS OKE 1612



TO THE RIGHT HO-  
NORABLE, SIR PHILLIP HERBERT,

Knight of the Bath at the Coronation of our  
dread Soueraigne King James; Lord Baron of Sherland;  
Earle of Mountgomerie, and Knight of the most  
Noble Order of the Garter, &c.



Auing already presented your Honour, with the Third and Fourth Bookes of this famous History of *Amadis de Gaule*, and standing enga-  
ged by my promise, to translate so  
many more of them, as time and  
your noble acceptance shall thereto  
enable me; finding also those two  
imprinted parts, to appeare as a bo-  
dy without an head, because these former Bookes are  
the guide and direction to them all: I haue now finished  
them, and therefore make a fresh representation of them  
all foure to your Honour. The fift, sixt, seventh and eight  
Bookes (being already in good forwardnesse of translation)  
with as much expedition as possible may bee, and your wor-  
thy encouragement for their proceeding; shall very shortly  
present themselues before you, in the best habit that mine a-  
bility can put vpon them.

It is not vnkwne to your honour, that the manifolde im-  
pressions of this history, the Bookes thereof being now come  
to be fife and twentie in number, and printed in places farre  
distant a funder: through neglext in the publishers, or defect  
of the Bookes which are perfect indeede, many false volumes  
haue flowne abroade, and the world thereby very much abu-  
sed.

## The Epistle Dedicatore.

fed. But by the helpe of that worthy Lady, I haue had such Bookes as were of the best editions, and them (as I haue alreadly begun) I intent to follow.

In the meane time (Noble Lord) accept of these foure Bookes I beseech you, and defend them from the venomous tongue of foule mouthde detraction, burying all my imperfections heerein committed, in the vrgent importunitie of that worthy Lady, by whom I haue thus boldly presumed, & the rest will beare me blamelesse against your least mislike.

Your Honours in all duty.

A. M.

THE

## Chap. I.

I



# THE FIRST BOOKE OF AMADIS DE GAVLE.

Discoursing the Aduentures and Loue of many  
Knights and Ladies, as well of the Realme of great Brittaine,  
as sundry other Countries, &c.

## CHAP. I.

Of whence the Kings Garinter and Perion were, and the Combate betwenee  
Perion and two Knights, as also how he fought with a Lyon that devoured a  
Hart in their presence : with the successe following thereon.



Oone after the passion of our Sauiour Iesu Christ, there reigned in little Brittaine a King named Garinter, instructed in the lawe of veritie, and highly adorned with many laudable vertues : hauing a Noble Ladie to his Wife, by whome he had two beautifull Daughters. The eldest (beeing maried with Languines King of Scotts,) was commonly called the *Lady of the Garland*: because the King her Husband, taking great pleasure to behold the golden tresses of her haire, would haue them no otherwise couered then with a faire circle or chaplet of flowers : Languines enjoying by his Queene, Agraeis and Mabla, of whom this present

History often maketh mentiō. The other yongest Daughter to this King Garinter, was named Elisena, very much excelling the eldest in beauty, & though she had been oftentimes desired in mariage, by sundry Princes and great Lords: yet as then she had no wil thereto, but for her solitary and holy life, was commonly called of every one, *The lost Virgin in devotion*, considering that in a person of such estate, endued with such excellent beauty, and solicited by so many great Princes, this strickt religion was not conuenient. King Garinter being sumewhat in yeres, for recreatiō tooke pleasure in Hunting, whē at one time amōg other it hap- pened, that hauing appointed a meeting neare one of his Cities called Alyme, a Hart was put forth, in pursuite whereof himselfe wan- dered very farre: wherefore being

B he

he had lost both his people and game, commanding himselfe to God, he began to make sumwhat the more hast, til hauing traversed first one way and then another, at the very entrance into a Wood, he saw two Knights fighting against one. Soone had he knowledge of the twaine, in that they were his owne Subiects, of whom he had heard sundry complaints: but slender order was taken in the cause, by reaon of the great alliance they had in the Country, as also for that they kept themselues still in this great forrest. Who the third should be, he meruailed, and for that time he so well liked the valour of the one Knight, as he feared not what might happen to the other twaine: wherefore he withdrew himselfe a little further into the Forrest, because he might the better beholde the issue of the fight, which sorted to such effect, as by the strength of the one Knight, both the other were vanquished and slaine. The King beholding what had happened, came forth of the Wood, when the Knight seeing one so neere him alone, thus demaunded. Gentle Sir, what Country is this, where Knights errant are thus assayled by robbers and theuees; Let this be no wonder to you Sir, answered the King, for this Country yelds as others doe, both good and bad: as for them that thus assaulted you, they haue done diuers & villainous outrages, not only in this Wood, which hath been their accustomed receptacle: but likewise in many other places, and cheefely against their Lord & King, who could not execute iustice on them, in that they were allied to the best houses in this Realme. And where may I find the King you speake of, said the Knight, for I am come to seeke

him, to bring him newes from a great friend of his. Happen what shall, answered *Garinter*, I will tell ye so much as I know: vnderstand then for a truth, that I am the man you aske for. At these words the Knight tooke off his Helmet, and throwing downe his Sheeld, ran to embrace him: saying, that he was King *Perion* of *Gaule*, who of long time had been desirous to know him. Greatly were these Kings contented, that their meeting was in such fortunate manner, and conferring together on many matters, they tooke the waye through the Wood toward the Citie, where they thought to find the Hunters: but suddenly a Hart ranne before them, which with some danger had escaped the toyles: wherfore the Princes gallopped after the Deere, hoping to kil it ere they gaue ouer. But it fell out otherwise, for in the pursuit, as they came into the thickest of the Wood, a chased Lyon ran before them: which in their sight feazed on the Hart, and hauing with his strong pawes tornit in pecces, turned againe, when running furiously against the two Princes, he watched his aduantage, as if they had angered him, which the King *Perion* perceiving, in laughter saide. You shall not be such a glutton, maister Lyon, but you shall leaue vs parte of the game. And herewith presently he alighted, because his Horse would not come neare the beast, so drawing his Swoord, and clasping his sheeld on his arme, not regarding the cryes of King *Garinter*, who laboured to dissuade him from the attempt, he marched to the Lyon, who for defence of his pray, ran eagerly against the King, and so betweene them began a new warre. But the Lyon being quicke and nimble,

in extreme loue to this yong king, and he in selfe same manner to her, albeit till that hower, he had his hart francke and free, without subiection in any other place. In this sorte during dinner tyme, they found themselves (for each other) in a strange opinion, till the tables were with drawen, whē the Queene would departe to her Chamber, wherefore *Elisena* arose to follow her: but as she stepped forward, she let fall a Ring which she had put in her bosome when she washt her handes, and so had forgot it, by reason of this new loue, that made her thinke on other matters. Now was king *Perion* somewhat neere her, and desirous to let her know how willingly he would be hers, stooped downe as soone as she to take it vp, and so right did their handes meeete together, as the king had the meane to close her fingers, yet feigning to take vp her Ring. Wherupon this amorous Lady began to change colour, and (notwithstanding) by a sweete regard humbly thanked him. Ah Madame, quoth he, this shall not be the last seruice I hope to doe you, for my whole life time shalbe imployed to obey you. Constrained was *Elisena* (without answering him) to follow the Queen her mother, so surprized & altered, as very neere she had forgotten her selfe: so that not able to endure this new fire of loue (which so sudden & vehemently had conquered her wonted chaste and choice determination;) with the teares in her eyes, and her hart full of anguish, shee went and discouered the same to a faythful Damosel of hers, named *Darsolletta*, praying her most instantly to councel her, how she might safelie know, if King *Perion* had not elsewhere placed his loue, and whether the affectionate semblaunce he had

showne her, might proceed from force of that impression, which had so lately seized on her hart. The Damosell meruailing at this so sudden mutatio, & in a person thought so farre from any such matter: taking(neuertheleſſe) compassion on her piteous teares, thus answered. I see well Madame, that according to the extreame passion, wherewith the tirant Loue hath tormented ye, he hath left no place in your iudgement, where counsell or reason may be entertained: and therefore following not what I ought for your seruice, but the will I haue to obey you, I shall do what you haue commaunded me, by the most honest meanes that my little discretio and great desire I haue to please ye, will permit me. So without any more woords, *Darioletta* went to the Chamber where King *Perion* was, and at the doore she found his Squire, who brought other garments for his Lord to weare, which the Damosell tooke of him. For (quoth she) it is necessary that I performe this seruice, and you (gentle Squire) may goe if you please about your other affaires. The Squire thinking it was the custome of the Country, made no deniall, but willingly suffered her to take the Garments, wherupon she entred the Chamber, where she found the King laid on his bed: who seeing her enter, and knowing well it was she, whom he had seen to conferre with *Elisena* most priuately, & in whom(above al other) she put chiefest trust, he thought that she wold not come in that sort to him, without bringing him some remedy for his mortall passions, for which cause, all in trembling, he said. Faire friend, what demand ye; If it may so like you my Lord, quoth she, I haue brought other

garments for ye. Much rather would I, said the King, that you had brought some comfort to my hart, which at this present is left & despoyled of all pleasure. As how my good Lord, answered the Damosell. Thus quoth he. When first I arrived in this country, I was free from all passions, and doubted nothing but of aduentures that might happen to Knights errand: but now (I know not in what sort) entring this Court, by some one of your Ladys, haue I receiued a deadly wound, for which if you (faire Damosell) know how to give me any remedy, your recompence shall be so good, as you shall repute your selfe beholding to me. Certes, quoth she, I should imagine my selfe happy, by doing seruice to so high a personage, and so good a Knight as you are, if I could tell wherein. If you wil promise me said the King, as you are a loyall Damosell, not to discouer me but where it is requisite, I shall tell ye. Say boldly your pleasure, answered *Darioletta*, for by me (without your liking) it shall not be knownen to any. Damosell and my friend, quoth he, I give you to understand, that at what time I beheld the excellent beauty of *Elisena* your Mistresse, I became extreainly tormented with her loue, and in such sorte, as I cannot excuse my selfe from death, if I find not remedy for my greefe the sooner. *Darioletta* (who knew thorowly the mind of the Princesse) hearing what the King had saide, returned him this answer. My Lord, if you will assure me by the faith of a King, which before all other things ought to bekept, as a person most bounden to vertue, and as a loyall Knight, who ought (as is saide) to suffer much, for maintenance of right and

and equitie, that you will take to wife my Lady *Elisena* when time shall serve: right soone will I bring ye to the place, where not only your hart shalbe satisfied but hers likewise, who (it may be) is in as much or more thought and dolour, then you are, by reason of the new anguish that toucheth her thorow the selfe same meanes. But if you do not (my Lord) what I have said, you shall not there recover her, nor shall I haue other cause then to thinke, that your words proceeded from no loyall hart, nor to credit any thing you say hereafter. The King whome loue had already depriued of liberty, to vnite him selfe with *Elisena*, (to the end that hee might be adorned with the great & gratiouſe fruite, which afterwardre happened, as shalbe recited vnto ye,) tooke his Swoord, and setting his right hand on the Crosſe thereof, saide these wordes. I sweare by this Crosſe, and on this Sword, wherewith I receiued the order of Knighthood, to do what you (faire Damosell) shall commaund mee, at all times, and when soever your mistresse *Elisena* shalbe thereto aduised. Be you then frolickie & merrye, answered *Darioletta*, for I shall likewise accomplish what I have promised. And at that instant shee returned to the Princesse, declaring to her what shee had concluded with king *Perion*, wherewith the amorous Lady was so pleased, as shee had vtterly lost her former countenance, and incessantly embracing *Darioletta*, thus demaunded. My deere friend, when will the hower come, that I shall holde beweene mine armes, my Lord whom thou hast giuen me? I shall tel ye answered the Damosell, you know that in the Chamber where King *Perion* lodgeth, there is a doore on the

ster, quoth the Squire, loueth all ingeneral, and I assure ye, that I know no one, to whom he beareth such affection as you speake of.

While they were thus talking, the King *Garinter* came, who seeing *Darioletta* conferring with King *Perions* Squire, demanded what shee had to do with the Gentleman? In sooth my Lord quoth shee, he tell: me that the King his Maister is wont to lye alone, and therefore I thinke he loueth not to haue any company. When *Garinter* understood that, he went presently to King *Perion*, saying, My noble Brother, there are certaine affaires suddenly befallen me, and likewise I must rise somewhat early in the morning, which hath made me thinke, that (not to trouble you) the best way is, that I breake company from lodging with ye. My Lord, answered king *Perion*, do as shall seeme best to your liking, this answer appeared to king *Garinter*, conformable with that the Da-

mosell had said, wherefore right soone he commaunded his bed to be fetcht from king *Perions* Chamber. When *Darioletta* heard there-of, shee imagined their affaires would fall out the better, and therefore returned to *Elisena*, acquainting her with all that had passed betweene the two kinges. In good faith quoth shee, I now beleue, that seeing God hath granted so good a beginning, our enterprise, which at this present seemeth a great sin, will hereafter redound to his seruice: biforn me what wee shall do? for the great ioy which I haue, hath taken from me the most healthfull parte of my iudgement. Madam, said *Darioletta*, this night will wee execute what we haue determined, seeing the doore (whereof you knowe) is certainly open. To my selfe I keep it, answered *Elisena*, & to you only I commit the charge, to prouide, when the hower shall permit: and so they remained attending for the fauourable time.

### C H A P. I I.

How the Princeffe *Elisena* and her Damosell *Darioletta*, went to the Chamber where King *Perion* was lodged.



He time being com, when each one most commonly betake themselues to rest: *Darioletta* (who for the contentment of her Mistresse, had vled extreame diligence) came and tolde her. Madame, now is the time to finish our enterprise, then let vs go if you please. When *Elisena* heard what she saide, you must thinke she gaue no occasion to be reproved with slothfulnes: but hastily arose, & without tarrying, castling only a

mantle about her shoulders, went forward, and afterward they both entred the Garden. The time was then calme & gratiouſ, the Moone faire and splendant, giuing cleere light to the two Ladys: but surely the one had more cause of content then the other, who gladly would haue tastid this good hap, or such an other for her selfe, if she could any way haue compast the meane, & so much she gaue in outward appearance, as *Elisena* perceiued well, that she wanted but the executor to perorme the same: for *Dariolet-*

ta feeling in her spirit, the ease at hand which shee should receiue whom shee conducted, could not but very plesantly iest & dally with her Mistresse, breaking many a bitter sigh among, as though she were to participate in *Elisena*es future good fortune, to whom she saide. Alas Madame, how happy is the Prince, by whom this night you shall receiue such pleasure? You say true answered *Elisena*, but what? thinke you not that fortune is as fauourable to me, as to him? for if I be faire, is not he one of the most perfect men that hath beene heard of, either in personage, good grace or hardines? assure thy selfe, *Darioletta* my friend, that I imagine my selfe so happy, as I thinke it is impossible for me to be more, & therefore let vs make hast I praye thee. These words she vittered with such affection, that she trembled like the little leafe on the high tree, and as she ended those speeches, they arriued at the Chamber doore where King *Perion* was lodged: who (for the strangnes of this new amorous flame, as also the hope he had in *Darioletta*) had not as yet taken any rest. Neuerthelesse, beeing as then wearye with trauaile, & ouercome with sleepe: began (euen as they opened the doore) to slumber, and dreamed that one entred his chamber at a false doore, without knowledge who it should be: but he thought that he thrust his hands into his sides, and rent forth his hart, afterward he saw him throw it into the Riuier, when the king saide. Wherfore commit ye such cruelty? This is nothing at all answered hee that did this outrage, for with you shall remaine another hart, which I must take from ye against my wil. In great feare he suddenly awaked, & making the signe of the Crosse,

commended himselfe to God. Now had the Ladys opened the dore & entred the Chamber, wherfore he hering the noyse, suspected some treason, especially by reason of his fearful dreame, & lifting vp his head beheld thorow the curtans the dore open, wherof he knew nothing, and afterward by the light of the Moone, he saw the shadowe of the Ladys that were entred. For this cause in feare he started out of bed, tooke his Sword, and went to the place where he had scene them: but when *Darioletta* saw him so affrighted, she spake to him in this manner, What shal be done here? Do you draw armes against vs, that come to you with so slender defence? the king who quickly knew them, especially *Elisena* whom hee so much desired, threw his Sword to the ground, and casting a mantle about him which lay neere at hand: in great affection hee came to her, whom he loued better then himselfe, kissing, embrasing & shewing the best countenance could be devised, which *Darioletta* seeing, as one iealous and enuious of such fauour, said to *Elisena*. Now are you somewhat better contented, for in my iudgement, although till this time you defended your selfe from many. And he likewise hath withstood sundry assaultes: notwithstanding at this present, neither the one or other of you hath force or meane, which way any longer to warrant or defend your selfes. As thus she spake, she looked where the king had throwen his Sword, which she took vp, as a witness of the oath and promise he made her, concerning the future mariage of *Elisena* and himselfe: then shutting the dore after her, she went into the Garden, and to the king remained alone with his faire friend, whom (after

(after many amorous embracings, infinite kissings, and execution of delights) he behelde, verily persuading himselfe, that all the beauty of the world was in her, reputing himselfe much more then happy, that the heauens had allowed him so good an aduenture. See now how it chaunced to this Princesse, that for so long time, in the cheefest flower of her youth, beeing requested by so many mighty Princes and great Lordes, she had withstood all, to remaine in the liberty of a Maiden: now won in lesse space then one day, and at such time as her fancies (in her one thinking) was farthest off from such matters.

Thus Loue breaking the strong bandes of her holye and chaste life, caused a sudden alteration of her purpose, making her soone after, of a faire virgen, a faire woman: seruing for example to many other, who assayng to withdraw their thoughts from worldly things, & despising the great beauty wherwith nature hath endow'd them, & tender youth, which maketh them ignorant of the pleasures & delights in their Fathers Courts, whereof sometime they might haue tasted: yeelde themselves (for saluation of their soules) in poore and religiouse houses, thereto in offering their free will, vowing themselves to the subiectiō of others, hoping to passe their time without any renowne or glory of this world. Certes such Ladys, ought with great sollicitude to stope their eares, close their eyes, and give themselves to continuall deuoute contemplatiōs & prayers, accepting them as their true and singular pastimes, as to such they are: and above all, they should exempt themselves from sight of Parents neighbours and freinds, because oftentimes the talk

and frequenting of such, procureth a change of their holy & chaste will. and not without cause haue I made this little discourse, for it is to the end that it happen not to them, as it did vnto the faire Princesse *Elisena*, who so long labored in thought to preserue her selfe: yet notwithstanding in one only moment, seeing the beauty and good grace of King *Perion*, changed her will in such sorte, as without the advise & discretiō of *Darioletta*, who would couer the honor of her Mistresse vnder the mantle of mariage: you may see she was at the poynct to fal, into the very lowest parte of all dishonor. As it hath happened to many other, of whom hath commonly beeene heard speech: who not keepeing them selues from what I haue saide before, haue beeene taken bad enough, and taken will be, if they admit no better foresight.

Now then are these two louers in their solace, *Elisena* demanding of the king, if his departure should be shortly or no. Wherfore Madame do you aske? said king *Perion*. Because, quoth she, this happy fortune that with so great delight hath giuen ease to our affe&ionate desires: doth threaten me already with extreame anguish & sorrow, which by your absence I shall receiue, and feare it will rather cause my sudden death, then long life. Haue no doubt thereof saide the king, for although my body is separated from your presence, my harte for euer shal remain with ye, which shall giue strength to vs both, to you to suffer, and to me by my spee-dye returne. These two contented louers are thus devising, when she that had bin the cause of their meeting (seeing it was time to call her mistresse, who by this pleasure forgot her selfe in her louers armes) entred

entred the Chamber, & speaking somewhat loude saide. Madme, I know that heretofore you thought my company more agreeable, then you doe at this present: but it is needfull that you arise, and let vs goe, for the time calleth vs. When the King heard her, knowing that perforce it must be so, he prayed *Darioletta* to walke into the Garden, and to bring him word in what corner the winde sat: in meane while he tooke his amorous conge, with such reciprocall pleasure, as you that loue may easily iudge, then sweetly kissing her, he saide, I assure you Madame, that for your sake I will stay longer in this Country then you iimage, therefore I pray ye be not vnmindfull of this place. So arose *Elisena*, and went to her Chamber with *Darioletta*, leauing the king alone, not a little contented with his new acquaintance: but dreading his dreame, as you haue heard, and willing to know what it might signifie, he became desirous to retурne to his owne Country, where as then were good store of Philosophers, that were well seene in those Sciences: himselfe likewise in former times tooke great pleasure therein, and vnderstood sundry rules thereof. Neuerthelesse, he soiourned ten dayes with king *Gavinter*, after his sporting with *Elisena*, who neuer a night failed to visit her louely haunt. The ten dayes being spent, king *Perion* (forcing his will, and notwithstanding the teares and intreaties of *Elisena* which were excessiue) resolued to depart, and therefore tooke his leaue of the Court: but as he wold haue mounted on horsebacke, he perceiued that he wanted his good Sword; whereat he became somewhat offended, because it was one of the best, and fairest in the world, yet durst he not demand it, fearing least the loue of him and *Elisena* should thereby be discouered, or King *Gavinter* angry with them that visited his Chamber. In these thoughts, accompanied with infinite regrets, without longer stay, he tooke his way toward *Gaule*: albeit before his departur, *Darioletta* came & intreated him, to be mindfull of the great griefe wherein he left his *Elisena*, and of the solemne promise he had made her. Alas my deere friend, saide the King, I pray ye to assure her on my parte, that she shall haue no cause of offence, and that right soone I meane to see her, in meane while, I command her to you as mine owne proper hart. Then taking from his finger a Ring, semblable to another that he had, he sent it to the desolate louer, intreating her earnestly (for his sake) to giue it her. This present did no whit lessen her great griefe, but increase it, so that if hit had not beeene consoled by *Darioletta*, without doubt, she had then finisched her dayes: but so well she persuaded her to take good hope, that by the alligations she laid before her of dangerous occurrences, she came somewhat better to her selfe, and leaued thence forward more smoothly to dissemble her sorrowe, till she felte her selfe great with Childe, by meanes whereof, she not onely lost the taste of her food, but also the pleasure of rest, and the faire culour of her countenance.

Now on the highest step of mishap was her sorrow set, and not without cause, for in that time was there an inviolable lawe, that any woman or maiden, of what quality or estate soever, offending in such sorte, could no way excuse herselfe from

from death. This sharpe and cruell custome, endured til the comming of the vertuous King *Arthur*, the best Prince that ever raigned in that Country: which he revoked at the time, as he killed *Floian* in battoile before the Gates of *Paris*. But many other Kinges were betweene him and *Garinter*, who maintained that lawe, and for this cause the sorrowfull Lady could not be absolved by ignoraunce thereof: albeit that by the oathes and promises of King *Perion* on his Sword, God would remit the offence, yet knew she not how to excuse her faulfe to the worlde, because it was done so secretly as you haue heard. See here the distresle wherin King *Perion* left his *Elisena*, which gudly she wold give him to vnderstand, if possible she could: but it might not be, for she knew the promptitude of this yong King, that tooke no rest in any place where he came, nor was his hart satisfied, except in this, with following armes, as also seeking strange and hazardous aduentures, and therefore he was the harder to be found. Thus dispairing of this succour, she thought there was no remedy for her life, for which she made not so much mone, as the losse of the sight of her true friend and onely Lord. But at that instant the great and puissant maker of all things, by whose permission this act was appointed to his seruice, inspired *Darioletta* with such councell, as she onely should remedie these occurrances, in such sort as you shall presently understand.

In the pallace of King *Garinter*, there was a Chamber-vault seperated from the rest, neere to which was a riuier, whereto one might easily descend by a little Iron dore, this Chamber (by the aduice of

*Darioletta*) did *Elisena* request of her father, as well for her easie, as to cōtinue her accustomed solitary life, and would haue none other companion then *Darioletta*, who (as you haue heard) knew the occasion of her dolorous greeves. This request she lightly obtained, the King thinking his daughters intent to be as she feigned, and heereupon was the keye of the Iron dore giuen to *Darioletta*, to open when it pleased *Elisena* to recreate her selfe on the water. By this meane had she a place proper to her affaires, and so was in better rest & assurance then before: for well was she aduised, that in this place more commodiously then any other, might she prouide to escape without danger. Wherfore beeing there one day alone with her Damosell, they fell in conference, & she required councell, what should be done with the fruite that she traualled withall. What? answered *Darioletta*: Mary, it must suffer to redeeme you. Oh poore maideny mother, saide *Elisena*, how can I cōtent to the death of the creature, begotten by the onely man of the worlde, whome most I loue? offend not your selfe, quoth *Darioletta*, for if you shold dye, hardly would it be permitted after you to liue. In sooth, saide *Elisena*, although I dye beeing culpable, it were no reason the little innocent should suffer. Leave we this talke, answered *Darioletta*, seeing it were great folly to hazard the safetie of that, which hereafter may be the onely cause of your losse, and your friend likewise: for well you knowe, that if you be discouered, you shall dye, and the infant shall not liue, & you dying, no longer can he liue that so deere-ly loueth you. So shall you alone cause the death of all three, where contrariwise

contrariwise, if you escape the perill, the time will come, when you may haue together children now, which will make you forget the affection you bare to this first. And as this Damosell was thus inspired, so would she before hand seeke to preuent the inconuenience, in this manner. She got fourte little boards, of such largenes as was necessary to make a Chest wherein to put the infant, with the clothes & the Sword which she kept, then did she glue them together in such sorte, as the water shold haue no place to enter. This beeing done & made fit, she put it vnder the bed, without declaring any thing thererof to *Elisena*, vntil the time of child-birth approached, and then *Darioletta* saide. What thinke ye Madame this little Cofer is made for? In good faith I know not, quoth she. This shalbe to serue vs, saide the Damosell, when we haue need. Beleeue me answerd *Elisena* weeping, but little doe I care for any thing that may happen, for I feele my selfe too neere the losse of my good, and all my ioy. Very soone after, the Princesse fel the anguish of trauaile, which was to her very strange & troublesome, oppressing her hart with sundry bitter passiōs: yet notwithstanding al her yrksome plunges, poore soule she durst not but be silent, greatly fearing least she should be heard. Her agonies thus redoubling, the most mighty (without danger of her person) gaue her in deliurance a faire Son, which the Damosell receiued, and as she held it, it seemed to her of wonderfull feature, and happy would she haue repured him, had he not bene borne to hard fortune, where-to *Darioletta* was constrained to send him, for the redemption of the sorrowfull mother, and therefore she deferred it not. But euen as before was concluded, she wrapped the infant in riche clothes, and afterward brought it with the Cofer to *Elisena*: which when the good Lady sawe, she demanded what she would do therewith. Madame quoth she, herein shall your litle Sonne be put, then will I send it forth on the water, and if it pleas God, he may escape and liue. Alas my sweete infant, saide *Elisena*, how full of danger is thy destyny! In meane while, *Darioletta* tooke inke and parchment, and wrot therin these words, *This is Amadis without time, Sonne to a King*: by these words without time, she meant, that she thought his death to be neere at hand, and the name of *Amadis* was of great reverence in that Country, because of a Saint there so ca<sup>rd</sup>ed, to whom this little infant was recommended. The letter beeing written and sealed, was couered and wrapped in silke, & then with a little golden Chaine, fastened about the Childe necke, with the Ring that King *Perion* sent *Elisena* at his departure. Each thing thus appointed, *Darioletta* came to the wofull mother, and in her sight put the Childe into the Chest, laying by him the King his Fathers Sword, which he threw on the ground the first night he came to *Elisena*, and this is the cause wherefore the Damosell had so well kept it: then after the Mother had kist her Sonne, as her last farewell, the Cofer was made fast very arteficially, and *Darioletta* opening the iron dore, commanding the babe to the heauenly protection, she set it on the water, the course whereof beeing very speedy, full soone earied the Cofer into the Sea, which was lesse then halfe a mile from the place.

Now

Now began the breake of day to appeare, and the little infant followed his fortune, now throwne heire, then there, according as the boystrous waues pleased: but by the will of the highest, who (when he pleaseth) makes impossibilities easie, caused it so to fall out, that at the same time as this was done, a Scottishe Ship sayled on the Sea, wherein was a Gentleman named *Gandales*, who from little *Brittaine* sailed with his wife into *Scotland*, she hauing beene lately deliuered of a sonne called *Gandalin*. The morning was both calme & cleere, wherefore *Gandales* might easilie perceiue the Chest floting on the waues, which he presently sent out for, thinking it to be some matter of great value: then the Mariners casting forth a Skiffe, made toward the Chest and tooke it vp: when they had brought it to *Gandales*, he got open the couer, and beholding the goodly infant within, as also the rich clothes wherein it was wrapped, he suspe&t ed that it came from no meane place, as he gathered by the ring & the good Sword. So taking it in his armes, he was filled with such compassion, as he be-

gan to curse the mother thereof, who through feare had forsaken so cruelly such a beautifull creature: and carefully did he cause all things to be kept which he found in the Chest, desiring his wife, that this infant might be nourished as his owne Sonne. She was heerewith very wel contented, and so the two children were equally fostered together, for neuer had yong *Amadis* suckt the teat, but so soone as it was giuen him by his new nurſſe, he made no refusall thereof, but being very thirstie suckt very hartily, whereat *Gandales* and his wife were exceeding glad. Now had they the time so fauourable, as shortly they landed in *Scotland*, neere to a Citie named *Antallia*, and soone after they came to their owne Country, where little *Gandalin*, and the Childe found in the sea were nourished together. And because *Gandales* forbad his seruants to vſe any speech of his good hap, requesting the like of the Mariners, to whom the ship belonged, and were to saile els where: the two children were esteemed brethren by such as were ignorant of their fortune.

### CHAP. III.

How King Perion passing from little *Brittaine*, travellled on his iourney, haſſing his bears filled with griefe and melancholie.



King Perion being on his way toward *Gaule*, as already hath beene recited, entred into a marueilous melancholy, as well for the greefe wherein he had left his *Elisena*, to whom in his hart he wished well: as also for his doubtfull dreame, being in such

forte as you haue heard. So long rode he in this heauines, till he arrived in his country, and soone after he sent for all his great Lords as also the Prelates of his Realme, giuing them expresse charge, to bring with them the most learned Clerkes in their Countryes, and this he did, to the end they might expound his dreame. When his vaſſailes had made knowne his will, not

not only those he sent for, but many other came to the court, shewing the desire they had to see him, & their readines to obey his command: for they did so loue and reverence him, as oftentimes (being fearefull to loose him) they were for him in very great greefe and sorrow, thinking on the dangerous perils, that in chivalry (to win honor) he hazarded himselfe, so that they would more gladly haue had him dayly with them, which could not be, because his hart was discontented, til by armes he had brought the greatest adventures to end.

The Lordes and Princes thus assembled, the King conferred with them on the estate and affaers of the Realme, but it was with so sad countenance as could be: for the occasion of his dreame made him so penſiue, as his Subiectes (being abastid therat) were in meruailous doubtes, notwithstanding, after he had giuen them to ynderstand his will, and appointed all requisite matters in order, he gaue them leaue to departe, sending each one home to his house, only staying with him three Astrologers, reputed the most skilfull in those actions, and therefore he made choise of them. These men he called into his chappell, there causing them solemnelly to ſweare & promise, that without feare of any thing, how dangerous ſoever it were, they ſhould interprete to their vttermoſt, and truely exprefſe what he would declare to them, whereupon he told them his dream, as hath bin already before rehearsed: then one of them being named *Vngan the Piccard*, the moſt experte of them all, thus answered. My Lord, dreames are vaine things, and for ſuch ought to be esteemed: notwithstanding, ſeeing it is your pleasure that ſome account ſhould be made of yours, giue vs ſome ſime to conſider thereon. It liketh me wel, ſaid the King, within 12 daies ſoak that you make me anſwer. But to the end they ſhould not diſgaſe us, we would ceale the truſh from him. It ſeemed them to be ſeparated, ſo that during this ſimile agreed vpon, they might neither fee or ſpeak together: wherefore to their vttermoſt they traualled in what they had promiſed the King; ſo that the day being come, when they ſhould render an oceomp of their labour, he firſt tooke *Albert* of *Champagne* aside, and ſaid to him. Thou knowest how thou haſt ſworne and promiſed, to tell me what thou haſt ſound by thy ſkill. Sir anſwered *Albert*, let therethat be caſt into your preſence; for before them will I tel ye. Well haſt thou aduised, ſaid the King: whereupon they were ſent for, afterward *Albert* thus began. My opinion is, my Lord, that the cloſed Chamber, and him whom you ſaw enter by the ſecret dore, ſignifieth this Realme which is cloſe & well guarded: notwithstanding by ſome right thereto, ſome one haſh come to take it from you. And like as he thrust his handes into your ſides, ſenting forth thence your hart, and afterward threw it into the Riuere: even ſo haſh your Townes and Caſtles both moſe & leſſe, be priuily stolen from you, and put into his hand from whom you haſh not eaſily recouer them. And what meaneth the other hart, ſaid the King, which I dreamed ſhould remaine with me, and yet he ſaid, that ſoone after I ſhould lose it, againſt the will of him that tooke the firſt from me? It ſeemeth by this,

this, answered *Albert*, that some other shall inuade your Country as the first did, yet constrained more by force of another that commanded him to do so, then by any will thereto in himselfe: thus see ye (my Lord) all that I can tell ye. Now said the king to the second named *Antalles*, tell vs your advise. Me thinkes Sir, quoth he, that *Albert* hath very well saide, and I am of his opinion, except in this, (for ought I can learne, & as the cause sheweth me) that what he saith shall happen, is already effected, & by the person that most loueth ye: notwithstanding I am greatly amazed therat, seeing there is not as yet any part of your Realme lost, & if you do loose any thing hereafter, it must be by such a one as loueth you dearely. When the king heard this, he nodded his head, for it seemed to him, that he came neare the marke: but *Vngan le Picard*, who knew much more the other, fel into a laughter, which he was sildome wont to doe, because he was a man very sad and melancholly, yet (by chance) the King perceiued it, wherefore he said, Maister *Vngan* my friend, now remaineth none but you, say boldly what you haue gathered. My Lord, quoth he, peraduenture I haue seene into things, which is not necessary to be knowne to any other then your selfe, & therefore let these give place a while, if you please. At these words they withdrew themselves, leauing the King and *Vngan* alone, who thus spake.

If your Maiestie saw me ere while to laugh, it was at one word which little you thinke on, yet it is true, and will you know what? It was that which *Antalles* said, that what he found by your dreame was alrea-

dy happened, & by the person that best loueth ye: Now shall I reueale what you keepe in secret and thinke that none knowes but your selfe. You loue (my Lord) in such a place, where you haue already accomplished your will, and she whom you loue is surpassing faire, then tolde he all the gests and fashions of her, as if he had bene there present. But as for the chamber you found shur, you know Sir, full well what it meaneth, and how she whome you loue, desirous to deliuer her heart and yours from griefe and sadness: came to ye, entring your chamber by the false dore that was hid from you. The hands that opened your sides, is the conuincion of you twaine: then the heart taken from ye, sheweth that she hath by you a Son or a Daughter. Now tell me said the King, what meaneth the casting thereof into the Riuier? My Lord, quoth he, that nothing concerneth you, therefore never labour for further knowledge thereof. Yet would I, said the King, faine understand it, and therefore feare not to tell me for any harme that may happen. Seeing you will needes haue it, answered *Vngan*, I beseech ye Sir assure me while you liue, for any thing that I shal reueal, you wil not be displeased with her who loueth you so loyally. That promise do I faithfully make thee, said the King. In good sooth Sir, quoth *Vngan*, that heart that you saw thrown into the water, is the first infant she shall haue by you, who must of necessity be forsaken. And the other, said the King, that shall remaine with me, what meaneth that? You may, answered *Vngan*, understand by the one, desseigne of the other, which is, that she shall conceiue another childe, who shall

shall be caryed away against the will of her, that caused the losse of the first. Thou hast told me strange things, said the King, and would God the misfortune of my Children were not so true, as what thou hast told me concerning the Lady I loue. For things ordeined and appoynted by the highest, answered *Vngan*, none knoweth how to gaine-say or remedy, and therefore men of wisdome should never be sad or reioyce at them, because oftentimes the Lord disposeth matters beyond the capacity of men & farre otherwise then they expect: For this cause my Lord, forgetting all that I haue said, and which you haue bin so curious to understand: referre all things to God, desiring him in these your affaires and all other, to limit the end of them to his honor and glory, and thus (in mine opinion) you ought to set downe your rest. The King was highly contented with *Vngan*, and so esteemed of him, that from thence forward he had him neare his person, by meanes whereof he received many great fauours. Now it happened, that at that instant as the king parted from the Philosophers, a Damosell presented her selfe before him, right costly in garments and faire in beauty, thus speaking. *Understand King Perion, that when thou recoverest thy losse, the Kingdome of Ireland shall loose her flower*, yet notwithstanding he was farre from the matter, because he knew not whereof she spake, and therefore thus replied. For Gods sake (Damosell) I pray ye tell me, on what occasion you vse these speeches. Beleeue me *Gandales*, quoth she, I haue tolde thee nothing but truth. At these wordes she departed from him, leauing him very sad and penisive: yet long he did not continue in these thoughts, but he saw her returne againe, in great hast, thus crying & calling. Ah *Gandales*, for Gods sake succor me: then *Gandales* turning about, beheld a knight follow her with his sword drawne, wherefore he gaue his horse the spurres to meeke him, and placed himselfe for the defence of the Damosell,

then comming to him that pursued her, he said. Stay thou bad aduised knight, what moueth thee thus trecherously to outrage Ladys? What now? answered the other, doest thou hope to sauie her, who by trumpery hath made me loose both body and soule? That meddle not I withall, said *Gandales*, but I will defend her to my power, well knowing that Ladys ought not to be corrected in this manner, albeit they did deserue it. We shal presently see that, answered the knight: and so galloped to the place from whence he came, which was a little thicket of trees, where stayed a very beautifull Lady, who when she saw him returne, came forth, bringing him a Sheeld and a strong Launce, which he tooke, and without longer tariance, returned to his enemy, *Gandales* being a sterne knight, would not refuse him: whereupon they met together in such sorte, as their launces were broken no their Sheelds, and they with their horses cast to the ground, yet quickly did they recover footing, when began betweene them a meruailous combate, which worse would haue bin, but that she which desired succor of *Gandales*, stepped betweene them, saying. Stay Gentlemen, fight no more. At these wordes, the Knight who before pursued her went back, then said the Damosell to him. Come now and aske pardon of me. Most willingly, answered the Knight, then throwing his Sword and Sheeld down, came and humbled himselfe on both his knees before her, whereat *Gandales* was greatly amazed, afterward the Damosell said to the Knight. Goe comand the Lady vnder the trees, that she get her away immediatly, valesse thou shalke take her head

from her shoulders. To this charge the Knight yeelded himselfe obedient, and to her whom he loued more then himselfe ( by sudden change from loue to hatred ) he came and angrily said. Trayterous woman, I know not how I shall defend my selfe from killing thee presently. Well perceiued the poore Lady, that her friend was enchanted, and that contestation would nothing at all profit her: wherefore incontinent she mounted on her palfray, and rode away, making the most grieuous sorrow that euer was heard, and there remained she whom *Gandales* had defended, speaking to him in this manner. You haue ( Sir ) done so much for me, as I shall be beholding to you while I liue, and now you may depart at your pleasure: for if the knight offended me, I haue pardoned him with all my heart. As touching your pardon, answered *Gandales*, I haue nothing to doe therewith: for my selfe, I will end the Combate, or he shall hold himselfe vanquished. It behoueth that you acquite him, said the Damosell, seeing that if you were the best Knight in the world, easily can I make him ouercome yee. Do thererin what you can, replied *Gandales*, but I will not acquite him, except you first declare to me, wherefore ( euen now ) you said, that I kept the death of many people in my house. Then will I rather tell yee, quoth she, because I loue you both: He as mine owne Soule, & you as my defender, albeit constraint cannot make me doe it: so taking him aside, she said. You shall sweare to me as a loyall Knight, that no other shall know it by you, vntill such time as I command it: hereof he made her faithfull promise. Know then, said the Damosell, that he whom

whom you found in the Sea, shall one day be the flower of chualdry, and shall cause the very strongest to stoope, he shall enterprise, and with honor finish what other shall faile off: and such deedes of armes shall he doe, as no one thinkes can be begun or ended by the strength of one man. The proud shall he make humble and gracious, being cruell and pittilesse, as also benigne and amiable to the debonaire: this Knight most loyally will maintaine loue, and shall effect in place answerable to his magnanimitie. Moreover, I assure thee *Gandales*, that he is the Sonne of a King, and ( without doubt ) all this will happen which I haue told thee: but if thou keepe it not secret, it may retorne thee more harme then good. Madame, answered *Gandales*, I pray ye tell me where I may meeete with you hereafter, to conferre with you on the affaires of this infant. That must you not know by me, said the Damosell, or any other. Yet tell me your name, quoth *Gandales*, if so it be your pleasure. By the faith you beare to the thing you most loue in the world, replied she you coiure me so, as you shall know it: albeit the thing that most I loue, is he that wisheth me least good, and would you know what he is? it is the Knight against whom ere while you combated: notwithstanding, I will not leaue to intreat him at my pleasure, without he being able to remedy himselfe. My name is *Vrganda the unknowne*: and to the end you may remember me an other time, beholde me well at this present. At that instant, she who shewed her selfe to *Gandales* faire, yong and fresh, as one of eightene yeeres, became so olde and ouer spent, as he meruailed how she could sit on her horse, if then he was stricken into admiration, you may iudge. But when she had beene a pritic while in that state, she tooke out of a little bottell ( which she caryed ) a certaine vnguent, wherewith she rubbed her face, & right soone recovered her former countenance, saying to *Gandales*. What judge ye now Sir? thinke you to finde me hereafter against my will, vsing all the diligence you can devise: neuer therefore put your selfe to such paine: for when all living creatures goe about it, if I list, they shall loose their labour. In good faith Madame, answered *Gandales*, I now make no doubt thereof, yet I beseech ye to be mindefull of the Gentleman, who is forsaken of all but my selfe. Doe not you trouble your selfe therewith, said *Vrganda*, this forsaking wil be a recovering of much more. My loue to him in greaterthen you can imagine, being she that shortly intendes to receiue by him two aydes, which no other can giue me. In recompence whereof, I will giue him two likewise, wherewith he shall thinke himselfe highly satisfied. Let this suffice ye for this time, because of necessitie I must be gone: aduising ye, that you shal see me againe sooner then you thinke for. At these wordes the Damosell departed, and *Gandales*, who had not all this while regarded the Knight against whom he fought, seeing him now bareheaded, reputed him one of the goodlyest Gentlemen that euer he had seene: who after he had taken vp his Sheeld, and laced on his helmet, followed the Damosel, wherefore for this time we will let them goe, continuing what happened to *Gandales*.

*Vrganda* being departed, he returned  
C 3

turned toward his Castel, meeting by the way with the Lady, whō *Vrganda* had caused to be chased frō her friend, and this sorrowfull woman was heard by a Fountaine, where she wept & lamented very bitterly: when she espyed him that came toward her, she easily knew him, wherefore she thus spake. Is it possible, Sir Knight, that the wicked creature whom you succoured, hath done so much as to let you liue? wicked she is not, answered *Gandales*, but wise and veracious: and if you be otherwife, I will make you deny these foolish wordes. Ah God, said the Lady: how can the villaine deceiue every one? How hath she deceipted you? replied *Gandales*. Alas, quoth the Lady, she hath taken from me the faire Knight that should be mine: and so may I well say, seeing he would be more content to be with me, then with her. This is meete folly, answered *Gandales*, for in mine opinion, both you & she doe loue without reason. How euer it be, said the Lady, if I can I will be auenged. You traule in vaine, quoth he, thinking to injurie her that knowes it, not oþerly before you execute it, but when you imagine it. In sooth answered the Lady, this afternoone ye may be gone when you please: and neuertheles it often happeneth, that those which thinke they know most by presumption, fall into the greatest dangers. *Gandales* seeing her so impatient, commanding her to God, followed his way, thinking more of the yong Gentleman's affaires, then what the Lady had spoken to him. Being come to his Castell, and seeing the little boy come running towards him, he tooke him vp in his armes, and louingly embracing him, remem-

bered what *Vrganda* had saide to him, which made the teares stand in his eyes with ioy, saying within himselfe. Faire Childe, I pray God I may liue so long, as to see thee such a one as I hope for. At this time the yong Prince was about three yecres olde, who seeing his Lord weape, (as one moued with compassion) he wiped his eyes, which made *Gandales* imagine great humanity in him: and that as the childe grew in age & strength, so waxed he in will, the better to helpe him if he had occasion. Wherefore thence forward, he was very carefull of him, devising all meanes for his best education, and compayning continually with his play fellowe *Gandalin*, he tooke very great delight in shooting.

He being come to the age of sixe yecres, King *Languines* and his Queene riding through the Country, came to *Gandales* Castell, where they were royally feasted: But before they there arived, *Gandales* being aduertised of their comming, caused the yong Prince and his companions to be hid in a backe Chamber, fearing that in respect of his beauty and good grace, the King would be desirous to take him away with him, or else that the childre would be troublesome to the house. But it fortuned, that the Queene being lodged in one of the highest roomes in the Castell, as she looked forth at a windowe, which was on that side where the Children were, she espyed the yong Prince and his playfellowes drawing their bowes, and marking him very well, she liked him aboue all the other, taking great pleasure to behold his countenance, thinking he was Sonne to the Lord of the house: yet being doubtfull, and not seeing any of whom

whom she might aske the questiō, she thus called to her Ladys. Come and behold the fairest yong creature that eþer was seene. At these words they al came running, and soone after, the Childe being drye, left his bowe by his companions, going to drinke at a conduit pipe, which was hard by: in meane while, one of them that was bigger then the Prince, tooke vp his bowe to draw it, but *Gandalin* would not suffer him, whereupon a great strife fell betweene them, and *Gandalin* being the weakest, cryed out: Gentleman of the sea, come helpe me. When the Prince heard him, he left his draught, and ran to him that misused his brother, taking his bowe from him, giuing him therewith a great stroke ouer the head, saying: In an euill hower (varlet) dost thou outrage my brother. The other not content therewith, came to the Prince, & they fought together: yet he that began the

## C H A P. IIII.

How King *Languines* caried away with him the Gentleman of the sea, and *Gandalin* the Sonne of *Gandales*.

**W**hile the Queene thus beheld the Gentleman of the sea, the King entered her Chamber accompanied with *Gandales*, of whom she presently demanded, if that faire yong Sonne were his. Yea Madame answered *Gandales*. And (quoth she) why suffer you him to be called the Gentleman of the sea? Because Madame, said he, that at retурne of my last voyage into little *Brittayne*, he was borne vpon the sea. Truely quoth she, he reþembles you but little: & this was her opinion, because the

Prince was exellent faire, and *Gandales* somewhat heard fauoured, yet a most gentle companion. It chanced during these speeches, that the King cast his eye on the little Prince, to whom he seemed no lesse beautyfull then he did to the Queene, wherefore he commanded *Gandales* to fetch him: for when I goe hence (quoth he) I will take him with me, and haue him brought vp with mine one Son. In sooth my Lord, answered *Gandales*, he is yet to yong to leaue his Mother: but hauing brought him, presented him to the King,

who said. Faire Child will ye go with me to the Court ; My Lord, answered the Childe, I will goe whether you please, if my brother shall goe with me. And I quoth *Gandales*, will not tarry here without him. I perceiue my Lord, said *Gandales*, that if you take the one, you must needes haue the other, for they will not be seperated. I am the better pleased, answered the King : then calling *Agraises* to him, said. My Son, I will that you loue these two Gentlemen, as I do their Father. When *Gandales* saw, that the King would haue them away in good earnest, with the teares in his eyes, he thus spake in his hart. My childe, that so soone beginnest to proue fortunate, now I see thee in the seruice of them, who one day may (happily) serue thee, if it please God to guide and protect thee, as I shall humbly pray for, & suffer that the words of *Vrganda the unknowne* spoken to me, may proue true : making me so happy, as to liue to see the time, of those great meruailes, promised thee in Armes. The King who noted *Gandales*, seeing that his eyes were filled with teares, came to comfort him, saying. Beleue me, I never thought you had bene such afoole, as to weepe for a Childe. Ah my Lord answered *Gandales*, it may be vpon greater occasion then you thinke for, and if it please you to know the truth, I will presently tell ye heere before your Queene. So he tolde the whole discourse, how he found the *Gentleman of the sea*, and in what equipage : and he had proceeded with that which *Vrganda* foretold him, but that he remembred the oath he tooke. Now my Lord said *Gandales*, deale for him as you shall please, for (so God helpe me) according to his begin-

ning, I thinke him to be issued of great lineage. Whē the King heard this, he esteemed much the better of him, that he had so carefully nourished the child he found, and thus answered. It is great reason (seeing god hath done so much for him, as to preserue him frō so great a danger) that now we be diligent in his education, and endowe him with habilitie when time shall serue. In good faith my Lord, said the Queene, so please you, he shalbe mine during his yong' yerees, and when he comes to mans estate, I will deliuer him to serue you. Well Madame, quoth the King, I giue him you. Now early on the next morning, the King would set forward, wherefore the Queene, not hauing forgot the gift of her Lord, tooke with her *Gandalin* and the yong *Gentleman of the sea*, whom she commanded to be so carefully attended as her owne Sonne, for she tooke such pleasure in beholding him, that dayly she would haue him neere her owne person, because he had such a cheerefull spirit, and so well gouerned withall, as he was well liked of every one, so that whatsoeuer he did, passed with generall allowance, & no other pastime had he, but in shooting and cherishing dogges for the chasse.

Now doth the Authour leave this matter, returning to that which happened to King *Perion*, & his new freind *Elisena*. King *Perion* (as you haue already heard) being in *Gaule*, where he vnderstood by his Philosophers the exposition of his dreame, as also what the Damosell had told him : That when he recovered his loffe, the Kingdome of *Ireland* shold loose her flower : he became more penitue then before, yet could he understand nothing thereof.

thereof. As he thus sadly spent his dayes, it chanced that another Damosell entred his Pallace, who brought him a letter from *Elisena*, whereby she gaue him to know, that King *Garinter* her Father was dead, and she remained alone, and for this cause he shold pitty her, in that the King of *Scots* would take her Kingdome from her. For the death of King *Garinter* was *Perion* somewhat sorrowfull, but yet he comforted himselfe, by thinking he shold goe to see his friend, towards whom he had not diminished one iot of his affection, wherefore he quickly dispatched the Damosell, saying to her. Returne and say to your Mistresse, that without staying one hole day, I shall be in short time with her. The Damosell well pleased with this answere, returned, and after the King had set his affaires in order, he parted in good equipage to see his *Elisena*, and iournied so speedily, as he arived in little *Brittaine* : where he heard newes that king *Langaines* had already gotten all the cheefe of the Country, except those Cities which *Garinter* gaue to *Elisena*, who now abode (as he vnderstood) at a place named *Arcate*, whether he addressed himselfe. If he were there well received, I leaue to your iudgments, and she likewise of him whom she loued so much. After the welcomming & feasting of one another, the King told her that he would now marry her, and for that cause she aduertised her kindred and Subiects : which she did with all diligence could be deuised, as also with so great contentation as her heart might desire, for herein only consisted the summe of her affections. Which being heard by the King of *Scots*, and how to ac-

complish this, King *Perion* was already arriued with his Sister : he sent immediatly for all the noble men of his Realme, to beare him company in doing honor and welcome to the King his brother. At his comming, he was gratiouly receiued by King *Perion*, and after by embracings they had saluted each other, and the nupials likewise thorowly ended : the kings determined to returne home into their owne Countreyes.

King *Perion* trauailing toward *Gaule* with his Queene *Elisena*, & somewhat weary with tediousnesse of the way, he would refresh himselfe along by a Riuere side : & while the tentes were erecting, he rode softly alone by the water-bancke, imagining how he might know the truth, whether *Elisena* had a child, according as his Philosophers told him in expounding his dreame. But so long continuēd he in this thought, that riding on without any regarde, he came to an Hermitage which was neere at hand : wherefore finding himselfe at a place of deuotion, he alighted, tying his Horse to a tree, that he might goe in to say his prayers. And entring the Church, he found there a very antient religious man, who comming to meeete him, said, Knight, is it true, that king *Perion* is married to our kings daughter ? yea verily, answered the king, Praised be God, said the good Hermit, for I know certainly, that she loueth him with all her hart. How can you tell that, replied the king. Euen from her owne mouth, said the good oldeman. The king then hoping he shoud heare of him the thing which he most desired to know, said. I pray ye Father tell me, what you haue vnderstood of her

her and me, for I am King Perion. Truely Sir, answered the wise man, herein shall I greatly fault, and iustly might she repute me an heretique, if I should manifest what she hath told me vnder confession: suffice your selfe with that I haue declared, namely, the true and sincere loue she beareth you. But seeing I haue met ye in a place so conuenient, I will that ye know, what a Damosell (in mine opinion very wise) said to me at the time you came first into this country: yet spake she to me so darkely, as I neuer knew well how to comprehend her words, for she said. *That from little Brittaine should come two great Dragons, that should hold their government in Gaule, and their hearts in great Brittaine, and from thence they should go to denoure the beastes of other Countryes: but against some they should be brave and cruell, and against other some humble and gracious, as though they had neither nayles or hart.* At these words I became very pensiue, nor could I euer since learne the signification hereof. Nor did the King at this instant understand them, but was in no lesse meruaille then the Hermite: notwithstanding, no long time after he found this prophesie to be true. Now the king hauing commended the holy man to God, returned to his tents, where he saluted his Queene, yet would he not tell her (as then) any thing of that wherewith his mind was troubled: but dissembled the same till they were in bed, and after their accustomed embracings, the king by an apt meane recouerte to her, what his Astrologers had said on his dreame, earnestly desiring her to tel him, whether she had any Child by him or no. When the good Lady heard this, she was

surprised with shame in such sorte, as willingly she could haue wi-shed her selfe dead: and therefore altogether denied the truth, so that at this time the king might not know what he desired. On the morrow they departed thence and arriued in *Gaule*, where this noble Queen was generally receiuied with great ioy. And because that (as it hath bene heretofore rehearsed) the king bare hersinguler affection, he did for her sake stay more in his Realme, then he was wont to doe: so that not long after, the Queene brought him a Sonne, who was named *Galaor*, and next a daughter called *Melicia*.

By the little *Galaor* being two yeres and a halfe olde, it chaunced that one day the king his fa-ther, sojourning not farre from the sea side, in one of his Cities named *Orangill*, standing at a window toward the Garden, where was then the Queene with her son & Ladies sporting: there entred at a postern dore such a horrible Gi-ant, as no man that euer saw him but was exceedingly affraide, bearing on his neck a huge & mighty Mace. When the company of women espied him, some fled among the trees, and other (not to see him) fell on the ground: but the Giant made no reckoning of them, only he came to little *Galaor*, whom he tooke in his armes, and in a laughter said. *By my faith, the Damosell said true.* So without any thing else, taking away the Child, returned the same way he came: and entring a Brigandine that there stayed for him, departed vnder saile. In meane while the sorrowfull Queene, who saw her son caryed away. (Forgetting through motherly loue the feare of the Giant) followed him very neere,

neere, hoping to recover her little *Galaor*: but when she saw him enter the Brigandine, God knowes in what anguish she was, for her Sonne in crying said: *Ah helpe me mother.* Alas she could not, and more strange then death she tooke it, to see him caryed away, ~~she~~ she loued as her owne life: ~~she~~ this extreme dollour, she ~~threw~~ her other Sonne thowne into the sea, wherefore the wofull mother fell downe in a swoone. King *Prian* her husband, who saw all this in ~~the place~~ where he stood, from whence he could not quickly come to aide the Queene or her Son: at last came to the Queene, finding her in that case, and did so much as he recovered her againe. Then began she to make the most grieuous mone in the world, regreting this new losse, by whom she before hoped to understand of the first: and dispayring euer to heare any newes of comfort, moued great compassion in all that beheld her. All this while the king laboured to perswade her, whereby at last she reobtained the reason that before was absent, whereupon the king said. Madame, we must thank God for all, and cheefly in this case, for now I euidently see hath hap-pened, the effect of my dreame, whereof sometime I tolde ye: thus is little *Galaor* the last hart, that must be taken from vs against our will. Henceforth therefore feare not to declare, what is become of the first, for considering the estate you then were in, you ought not in reason to be blamed. At these words the mournefull mother for-getting none of the fault committed, told him the mis-fortune of her first borne Sonne, entreating him to pardon her, seeing she did

it throw feare of death, according as was the law of the Country. In good faith Madame, answered the king, well may ye assiure your selfe, that while I liue I will not be offend-ed with ye on your behalfe, there-fore I pray ye, take their desteny so secretly as you may: for I trust in God, that seeing it hath pleased him at our beginning, to afforde vs so little ioy and comforte by our children, in time to come he will recompence vs with better successe, and it may be yet one day, that we shall heare good tidings of them.

Now leauing this, ye must note, that the Giant who bare away the yong Prince, was of the Country of *Leonois*, Lord of an Isle named *Gandalen*, wherein he had two strong places. He was not a bloody man, as many other were, but of a gentle and peaceable conuersa-tion, except when he was offended, for in his fury he would doe great cruelties. At one instant was the little barque so caryed by the wind, as he arriued in his country, which he had caused to be peopled with Christians, & there he kept a Her-mite of most holy life, to whom he went saying. Father take this child, and nourish him for me, teaching him all that is conuenient in a knight, for I assiure ye, he is the son of a king and a Queene. Ah, said the Hermit, why haue you doone such a cruell deede? I will tell ye, answered the Giant. Being minded to go combite with the Giant *Albaden*, who most vn-happily killed my father, as you know, and at this present forcibly holds from me the Rocke of *Gatelles*, which by right appertaineth to me: being thus embarqued to ex-ecute mine intent, there came a Damosell to me, who said. Thou abusest

abuſeſt thy ſelſe, for what thou goeſt about, muſt be done by the ſon to king *Perion of Gaul*, who is muſt more ſtrong and hardy then thou art. I demanded by her faith, whe-ther ſhe tolde me true or no. That ſhalt thou ſee, quoth ſhe: *At what time the two branches of one tree ſhall be ſoynd, which at this iſtant are ſeuored*: then did ſhe tell me, where I ſhould find him of whome ſhe ſpake, and this is he I giue you in guard, euen as you loue me. By theſe meaneſ remained little *Galaor* in the holy mans charge, and there he ſtaied ſo long, till he was of yeeres to receiue the order of Knight-hood, as hereafter ſhalbe recited to you.

At this time reigned in great *Brittaine* a king named *Falangris*, who dying without children, left one of his bretheren his heire: no leſſe prudent in all affaires, then prompt at armes, and Knightly chivalry, being called *Lisuart*, who maried (not long before) with *Br.*

## C H A P. V.

*How King Lisuart ſayling by ſea, landed in Scotland, where he was greatly honoured, and well entertaigned.*

**L** Prince *Lisuart* under-ſtanding his Subiects deſire for his ſhort re-turne, prouided his equipage by ſea, be-ing aided and affiſted by the king of *Denmarke* his father in law, and afterward ſet ſaile toward great *Brittaine*. And becauſe he coaſted along *Scotland*, he tooke landing there, whereof *Languines* being aduertiſed, came and receiued him very royally. Now was this new king of great *Brittaine* accompa-nied with the Queene his wife, and a faire Princesſe their daughter, a-geed (as is thought) about ten yeeres, named *Oriana*, one of the faireſt creatures that euer was ſene: and therefore (during the time of her aboad in *Denmarke*) ſhe was commonly called *The only*, becauſe her paragon was not to be found in beauty. This yong Lady *Oriana*, being not vſed to trauaile on the ſea, found her ſelſe ſome-what weary, and her father fearing a worse miſ-hap, intreated the king of *Scotland* ſhe might ſtay with him till he ſent for her. Righte glad-

ly

*Sana*, daughter to the king of *Denmarke*, the faireſt Lady that then was to be found in all the North parts.

And albeit ſhe had bene re-queſted in mariage by great Princes of the country, notwithstanding for feare of ſome, the father durſt not conſent to the othe-which he would prouide by ſelling one himſelfe, and ſo ſent her to the yong Prince *Lisuart*, who for loue ſerued him, nor was he ignorant of the vertues harbouring in his gentle hart. Now after the death of *Falangris*, the Princes of great *Brittaine*, knowing the right of *Lisuart*, ſent for him to ſucceede in the Realme: for he be-ing in a ſtrange country, whereby his haughty deeds and chivalry, he was maried in ſo good a place, therefore they pitpatched their Ambaſſadours to him, intreating him to accept the Realme and ſub-jects of great *Brittaine*, and to come to inueſt himſelfe therein.

ly did king *Languines* and his Queene accept this charge, where-fore king *Lisuart*, (without longer ſtay in *Scotſland*) went to ſea, where weighing Anckers and hoiſing ſailes, in ſhort time landed in his owne Country, where being arriued, before he could abide in quiet, as in ſuch occaſions it often falleth out: certaine rebels were found, whom in time he ouer-maſſed, which was the cauſe he could not ſo ſpedily ſend for his daughter that he left in *Scotſland*.

In this place the author leaueth the new King peaceably ruling in great *Brittaine*, and returneth to the *Gentleman of the ſea*, who by this time hath attained the age of twelve yeeres: albeit in ſtature he ſeemed paſt fifteene, and for his good grace (both of the Queene and the other Ladies) was loued and eſteemed more then any other. Now according as hath beene al-ready declared, the yong Princesſe *Oriana*, daughter to King *Lisuart*, was left with the Queene of *Scots* to refresh her ſelſe, till the King her father ſhould ſend for her, and to her did the Queene vſe all the gracious curteſies could be deuiled, ſaying to her withall: Faire Madame, henceforth (ſo please you) ſhall the *Gentleman of the ſea* ſerue you, and be yours. Which the Princesſe *Oriana* willingly ac-cepted, wherefore the yong Prince made ſuch an impression of this kindneſſe in his ſpirite, as during life he meant to ſerue nor loue any other; and therefore for euer be-queathed to her his heart: but ſo well it came to paſſe, that this loue was muſſuall and equall betweene them both. Notwithſtanding, the Prince for a while hauing no knowledge thereof, thought himſelfe vneworthy to great good: re-puting it a very bold enterprise to thinke thereon, which was the cauſe he durſt not ſpeake, but ſhew his good will in outward ſem-blance. The yong Princesſe who was of the ſame minde, and alſo in like paine, forbore to talke more with him then any other, thereby to auoyde all ſuſpition: but the eyes of the two louets doyng their deuoir and office, entercoured the thing which moſt they eſteemed, and thus couerly they liued, without acquainting each other with this amboſous affectiō. Soone after, this yong vnuſknowne Prince, ſeeing that to attaine the good grace of the Lady he loued, it was neceſſary he ſhould take Armes, & receiue the order of Knight-hood, he ſaid to himſelfe: If oncelwere a Knight, I would do ſuch exploits, as ſhould deserue the fauour of my Lady, or die in the attempt. And in this deſire, one day finding king *Languines* at leysure for his re-queſt, and comming to him in the garden where he walked, he fell on his knee, vſing theſe ſpeeches. My Lord, might it ſtand with your pleasure, I gladly would receiue my Knight-hood. When the King heard him, ſeeing his yong yeeres, he was greatly abashed, and thus anſwered. How now *Gentleman of the ſea*? Do you thinke your ſelſe al-ready ſtrong enough for ſuſh a weightie charge? I n ſooth it is an eſie thing to receiue honor: but to maintaine it as behoueth (it may be) is moſt hard then you eſteeme, ſo that oftentimes a righē good hart is troublid therewith. For if through ſcarre or cowardiſe he forſake what he ought to doe, moſt better is death to him, then a shamefull life: therefore by mine aduile, I would haue you yet a while to forbear. The Prince not

contented with this answere, repli-  
ed. I will not forgoe honor, my  
Lord, through any such feare as it  
pleaseth you to alleadge, for if I  
had not the desire to doe all that  
appertaineth to Chiualrie, I would  
not haue beene so bold to make  
this request: but seeing by your  
gracious fauour I haue beene hi-  
thero nourished, most humbly I  
beseech ye to grant me this peti-  
on, that I may receiue no occasion  
of loosing your seruice, to secke  
elsewhere for obtaining my suite.  
The king highly esteemed the cour-  
age of the youth, and doubting  
leaste he would depart indeed, an-  
swered. Assure your selfe Gentle-  
man, that wil do it whē I see it ne-  
cessary for ye, in meane while pro-  
vide your Armes and what else be-  
longeth: Yet tell me (faire Sir) to  
whome (if I refused) would you go  
for your order. To King *Perion*,  
said the Prince, who is reputed a  
good and hardie Knight, for he  
hath maried the Sister to your  
Queene, who maketh me beleue  
that he will not denie me: when I  
shall let him understand, how shee  
hath nourished me, and that I am  
her servant. It is true, quoth the  
King, but for this present haue a lit-  
tle patience, and when time ser-  
ueth, you shalbe honorably knighted:  
in meane while he gaue charg,  
that all his needfull accoutrements  
for the caufe should be prouided.

Now did the king aduertise *Gan-  
dales* heereof, who was so con-  
tent therewith, as he foone dis-  
patched a Damosell toward the yong  
Prince: by whome he sent the  
Sword, the Ring, and the letter co-  
uered with waxe, which he found  
in the chest he tooke out of the sea.  
Such speede made the Damosell,  
as she came to the Prince, at what  
time he was sporting with *Oriana*

and the other Ladies, while the  
Queene slept. At that instant was  
he in such a sollemne thought of *O-  
riana*, as not daring to lift vp his  
eyes to behold her, said within  
himselfe. Ah God, why hast thou  
endued this Lady with such exel-  
lent beauty, that vnhappy I should  
suffer so extreame passions by lo-  
sing her? Ah mine eyes, too high  
did ye looke when ye beheld her,  
of whome you are not worthy: but  
if the worst happen, death shall sa-  
tisfie this timeritic, whereto my  
hart (for her) is humbled. In this  
thought he was like to fall downe,  
so had he forgotten and ouergone  
himselfe: when a page came to  
him, saying. Gentleman, there is a  
strange Damosell attending with-  
out, who hath brought you cer-  
taine presents, and would speake  
with ye. When she (who loued  
him) heard this message, her hart  
began to tremble in such sorte, as  
being not able to endure this new  
flame, she talled to the Prince, say-  
ing. I pray ye stay heere, and let  
the Damosell come in, that we may  
haue the fight of what shee hath  
brought: which he did, & the Da-  
mosell being entred, thus spake to  
him. My Lord, your good friend  
*Gandales* saluteth you, as the man  
whom he onely loueth, and hath  
sentye this Ring, this waxe, & this  
Sword, which he desireth yes (for  
his sake) to keepe while you live.  
The Prince hauing receiued the  
presents, laid the Ring and waxe a-  
side, to behold the Sword, which  
being without a sheath, was cap-  
ped in a fine linnen cloth, wherat  
he greatly meruailed: and as he  
was musing thereon, *Oriana* com-  
ing, the waxe, thinking it to be some o-  
ther thing, and said. Beleue me  
Gentleman, for my part I would  
have this waxe. You may haue it  
if

if you please Madame, quoth he,  
but me thinkes this faire Ring were  
better forye. I will haue nothing  
but this waxe, said *Oriana*, and so  
tooke it. During these discourses,  
the King came, who said to the  
Prince: What thinke ye of that  
Sword? My Lord, quoth he, I find  
it a very faire one, but I marauile  
wherefore it hath no scabbard. It  
is said the King, very neer fifteene  
yeeres since it had one: & hauing  
so said, he laid it aside, proceeding  
thus. You would be a Knight, and  
know not whe ther you ought to  
be one or no: therefore it is neces-  
sary that you understand what you  
are, and I to tell you so much as I  
know. Heereupon he declared,  
how he was found in a chest on the  
sea, with the ~~Sword~~ & the Ring, as  
you haue alredy heard. I beleue  
my Lord, quoth the Prince, that for  
your pleasure you vse this inuen-  
tion, because the Damosell when she  
entred said: that my good friend  
*Gandales* sent me these presents,  
but I think she fayled in her words,  
and would haue said my father  
*Gandales*. Notwithstanding (my  
Lord) if it be so as you haue re-  
ferred, I am not displeased therat:  
except in not knowing of whence  
I am, nor they me, yet do I thinke  
my selfe a Gentleman, for my hart  
perswades me of no lesse. Now  
therefore it is more necessary that  
I be Knighted then before, to the  
end I may labour to become such a  
one as may acquire honor and re-  
putation, seeing I haue no parents  
by whom I may be named, not  
knowing what I am. When the  
King heard him speake so vertuous-  
ly, he esteemed much better of  
him then before, thinking him-  
selfe, that he could not but be a  
man of calling and hardy.

As thus they were deuising, a

Gentleman of the sea heard this determination, he was more earnest to compasse his enterprise then before: and seeing king *Perion* was present, he could not glut his eyes with beholding him, onely for the good report he had heard of him: for he thought not then of any affinitie or parentage, but would rather be Knighted by his hand then any other, in respect of his high & hauughty deedes of Armes. And to attaine his purpose, he thought best to entreat the Queene, hoping that if she would doe so much for him, as to moue the King her brother therein she shold not be gainfaid: and for he saw her so sad, that he durst not speake to her, he boldly went to *Oriana*, and setting his knee to the ground, said. I pray ye Madame tell me what causeth the Queene to be so pensive? *Oriana* beholding the man before her, whom she loued in her very Soule, albeit neither he or any other knew it: was surprized whiche such velenomy of loue, as she could hardly tell how to dissemble it, yet thus she answered. Gentleman of the sea and my friend, I will take paine to know, then shall I tell ye with all my hart, seeing it is the first request that euer ye made to me. Madame, quoth he, I know in my selfe so small desiruing toward you, that I account my selfe vnworthy to request any thing of you: but I shoulde thinke I were happy if I had the meane to obey you, or that it would please you to comand me. What? said shee, haue you so base a mind, & such smal estimatiō of your selfe? Madame, answered he, in what sort soeuer it be, I haue no forces at all, but such as haue left me in great desire to serue you: for my hart is altogether yours, and can receiue nothing

but from you. Mine? quoth *Oriana*, and since when? Since the time it pleased you Madame, replied the Prince. And when was it, quoth she, that it pleased me? At that time, answered the Prince, when the king your father left you in this Country, if you remember, and when the Queene presented me to you, saying: I give you this Gentleman to serue you, and at that time you accepted me as yours, when you answered, that you were well contented. Then was I giuen to you, and yours onely I reputed my selfe, so that I haue no authoritie ouer my selfe. Certes, said *Oriana*, you tooke her words to better end, then at that time she meant them: which I take in good part, and am content it shall be so. No sooner had she thus said, but the Prince was overcome with such ioy, as he had no power to answer. *Oriana* perceiving it, made no shew thereof, but said she would goe to the Queene, to doe what he had desired: and returned soone after, telling him, that her griefe was for the Queene of *Gaule* her sister, because the King of *Ireland* so oppressed her country. So please you Madame, answered the Prince, if I were Knighted, I gladly would go succor her, with your leaue. And without my leaue, quoth *Oriana*, will ye not goe? Not for death, said he, for without your gracious fauour, my conquered hart can haue no force or vertue in any perill. At these words *Oriana* smiled, saying. Seeing then you are mine, I grante you to be my Knight, and you shall aide the Queenes sister. Most humbly did the Prince giue her thanks, telling her, how the King thought it not good to giue him the order of Knighthood, but had denied him: yet, quoth he, is King *Perion* heere

heere as you know, at whose hands (so pleased you to intreate it) I would more willingly receiue it, then of any other. Nor will I let for that, said she, and the better to compasse your desire: I will cause the Princessse *Mabila* to beare me company, for whose sake he will the sooner grant it. So presently she went to her, and told what she and the Gentleman of the sea had concluded, to attaine his Knighthood, and how faine he would haue it at King *Perions* hand, for which cause she intreated her assistance in the sute. *Mabila* who loued the Prince very well, thus answered. I assure ye (sister) there shal be no want in me, for so well doth the Gentleman deserue, as would make one do much more then this for him, wherefore let him be ready this night in the Queens Chappell: then when time shall serue, we will go with our women to accompany him, and I will send for the King mine Uncle (which shall be somewhat before the break of day) that he may come see me, and he being come to vs, you and I will moue him in the matter, which I hope he will graue, considering he is a very gracious and affable Prince. This is very well appointed, answered *Oriana*: wherefore they sent for the Prince, and tolde him al the platforme they had laid: who humbly thanking them, wold prouide all things ready for himselfe, and therefore departed. Then went he to finde *Gandalin*, making him acquainted with the whole, saying. I pray ye brother, conuay mine armour so closely as you can into the Queenes Chappell, because I hope this night to receiue mine order: and for I must right soone depart hence, I would know if you haue any will to beare me company. Beleeue me, quoth *Gandalin*, never with my will shall I depart from ye. Of these words was the Prince so glad, that the teares stood in his eyes with ioy. Well said he, prouide all things ready as I told ye: wherein *Gandalin* failed not, for e're supper he tooke such order, as all was done vnsene of any, and the Prince got him secretly into the Chappell, where he arm'd himselfe except the head & hands. So staying there for the Ladies & King *Perion*, he fel on his knees before the Alter, desiring God to be his aide: not onely in conquering such as he shoulde deale withall in Armes, but also in obtaining her, who caused him to endure so many mortal passiōs. The night being come, & the Queen with-drawne, the Princesses *Oriana* and *Mabila* with their wome, came to the chappel where the Gentleman of the sea attened, & *Mabila* hauing sent for K. *Perion*, he was no sooner entred but she thus began. My L. seeing you haue taken so much paines for me as to come hither, I pray you grant Madame *Oriana*, daughter to King *Lismer*, a small request she will make to ye. I would be loath, saide the King to deny her, as well for her Fathers honor as her own sake. *Oriana* arose to thanke him, whom whē he beheld so faire, he thought all the world could not match her in beauty: thus speaking to her. Madame, doth it please you to command me any thing? Not comand my Lord, quoth she, but intreat ye to giue my Gentleman the order of knighthood: this said she, pointing to him as he kneeled before the Alter. When the king saw him, he wondred at his goodly stature, and said to him. My friend, would you receiue the order of Knighthood; Yea my good Lord, answe-

red the Prince, may it please you to give it me. In Gods name be it done, said the King, who give you grace so well to proceede therein, as he hath bestowed seemely perfection on you. Then putting on his right spur, and dubbing him with his Sword, thus spake. Now haue ye the Order appertaining to a Knight, but I would opportunity had serued me, to haue giuen it you with greater honor: notwithstanding, according to mine opinion of you, I hope you will proue such, as your renowne shall supply what wanteth here in performance. Afterward King *Perion* took leaue of the Ladies, who highly thanked him, & then set on his way toward *Gaule*, commending the new Knight to the heauenly protection: this was the first act, that might beare testimony of these louers sweete desires. If it seeme to the Reader, that their purpose was not according to affection, but simple in respect of their vehement passions: I answer, that they ought to excuse their age, likewise it often commeth to passe, that they which thinke themselues most expert in those pleasing and amorous actions, haue beene by this God so strongly bound, and liuely attainted: as not only he deprived them of speech, but of iudgment also, & it is necessary for such persons to vse greater words, then these two who as yet had not learned them. But this new Knight being thoroughly furnished, and ready to his iourney by his Ladies consent: would in thanking the company, take a more secret conge of *Orisna*. And she who for his sudden parting, fel new passions in her heart, yet neuerthelesse dissembling the: tooke him by the hand, and wal-king aside, thus spake. *Gentleman of*

*the sea*, you will be gone then, but first I pray ye tell me, whether you be the Sonne of *Gandalin* or no: for according to the good opinion I haue of you, I thinke you to be issued of better place. Then rehersed he all that King *Languines* had told him, wherein she conceiued very great pleasure: which done, they committed each other to God. So departed the Prince from this company, and right-soone found *Gandalin*, who attended for him at the Kings lodging dore, with the rest of his Armes and his Horse, whereon he mounted, and left the Citie vnseene of any, because as yet it was not day, so rod they on till they came into a Forrest.

Now is the greatest part of the day spent, before they would refresh themselues in any place: but hunger constrained them to feede on such viandes as *Gandalin* had brought with him from the Citie. During this time, they heard in the Wood on their right hand the voyce of some one, which seemed to them very doleful, wherefore the Prince rode presently that way: where he foud a knight dead, and hard by him another in little better case, for he was so wounded, that he had no hope to liue. As for the partie that so cried, it was a woman who lay vpon the knight, pressing him so sore, as made his hart to fail him: and which was worst of all, the villainous woman to cause his death the sooner, cruelly thrust her hands into his wounds. But when the wounded knight espied the Prince, so well as he could he craued succor, saying. Ah gentle Sir, for Gods sake suffer me not to be thus murthered by this ribaud. Greatly was the Prince abashed at this wicked dealing, and therefore very roughly thus

thus spake. Woman withdraw your selfe, for you doe the thing not beseeming you or your like. She as one ashamed, retired, and the Knight full of anguish fell in a swoune, which made the Prince very desirous to know what he was: but fearing that he had already yeeded his breath, quickly alighted, & vsed such good meanes as reviued him againe, when he began to cry. Ah I am dead, good friends bring me to some place where I may haue councell for my soule. Take courage, answered the Prince, for you shal haue what you demand: but I pray ye tell me, what fortune brought ye hither, or where is he that hath thus hardly intreated ye? It is, said the Knight, through this wicked woman, who (albeit I was rich and puissant, yea far much more then she) I made choise, for the good loue I bare her, and espoused her as my wife: neuerthelesse she discouertibus creature, forgetting the good and honor I had done her, hath sundry times abandoned her honest regard, namely this night past with this Knight here dead, whom I hauing never before seene, by chance yesterday he came to me: and this last nighe thus vilanously abused me, where taking him with the head, we had a combate together, wherein (as you see) he lost his life. But when this strumpet saw I had slaine him, fearing I would do as much to her: she fell at my feete and desired pardon, whereto I easily condiscended, provided, that she offended no more. Hereupon, I intreated her to bind vp my wounds, but (she perciuing how grieuously I was hurt, and brought into very weake estate through ouer-much losse of my bloud, to reuenge the adulterous

villaines death, she assaied to kill me outright: and to make me languish the more in dying, cruelly she thrust her hands into my wounds, so that well I perceiue I cannot long liue. Therefore I beseech ye good Sir, helpe me to an Hermitage which is neere at hand, where I shall find some religious man, to comfort me in the agonie of my Soule. Such compassion tooke the Prince on him, as he and *Gandalin* taking him in their armes, caried him on a Horse to the Hermitage: in meane while the wretched woman stole away priuily, and a little before, she fearing that her Husband would be reuenged on her, sent for helpe to three of her bretheren, who dwelled not far from that place, giuing them to vnderstand which way they shold come. In her wamring they met with her, and she had no sooner espied them, but she thus cried out. Ah helpe me good bretheren, for heere before is a theefe, who hath slaine this Knight which lieth heere, and hath beside so wounded my Husband: as there is no hope of life left in him: let him not therefore escape ye, nor he that is in his company, because the one is as deepe in the evill as the other. Such like speeches vsed this Harlot, that by the death of the Prince and *Gandalin*, her treason might be coueted: therefore that her Husband shold not dy alone with her will, she shewed them the Gentleman of the sea, such as he returned from the Hermitage where he left the wounded Knight. Hereupon the three bretheren (too light of beleefe) galloped toward him, crying. Traitor thou art but dead. You lyē villaines, answered the Prince, for right well shall I defend my selfe from such traitours as you are.

are. Bestirre thy selfe then, said the bretheren, for thou hast offended vs all three, and we all wil be reuenged on thee if we may. By good hap the Prince had his Sheeld and Launce ready, and his Helmet very well laced, wherefore without any further answere, he sharply charged them, and meeting with the first, peatced through both his Sheeld and arme: and withall threw his Horse & him so fiercely against the ground, as his right shoulder was broken in the fall: in like manner was one of the Horses legges, so that neither the one or other could rise. At this encounter he brake his Launce, wherefore he suddenly drew his Sword, and addressing himselfe to the other twaine, gave one of them such a forcible stroke, as slicing through his Armour, entred the flesh to the very bone on his shoulder likewise, so that therewith he fell from his saddle. Being thus dispatched of two, he came to the third, and saluted him with such a sound blow on the Helmet, as the poore Gentleman was constrained to imbrace the necke of his Horse, thereby to sheeld himselfe from falling, finding himselfe as greatly amazed as the other were. Here-upon the woman that broughte them thereth fled away, which the Prince perceiving cried to *Gandalin* that he should stay her: in meane while the first Knight hauing recovered himselfe, vsed these speeches to the Prince. We know not Sir, whether this fight hath beene for right or wrong, For right it could not be,

answered the Prince, vnfesse you thinke I haue done wrong, in succouring the husband to this traiterous woman, whom cruelly she hath caused to dy. When the three Knights heard that, they were very much abashed, and then thought they had bene abused by their suster, wherefore they thus replied. In sooth my Lord, so please you to assiure vs, we will shew on what occasion we assailed you. You shall haue good assurance so to doe, said the Prince, yet will I not acquit ye from the combate. Then he that first spake, rehersed all the words of their suster, according as hath beene already declared. In good sooth quoth the Prince, neuer was villanie disguised in such sorte, for she hath done far otherwise: as you may vnderstand by her husband himselfe, who being nere his death, I conuained to an Hermitage hard at hand. Seeing it hath so fallen out, said the three bretheren, dispose of vs as they that remain at your mercy. And mercy shall ye haue, answered the Prince, if first ye will loyally sweare to me, that you will carry this woman and her husband, to the Court of King *Languines*, & therfore him recite al that hath happened: saying withall how you were thereto constrained by a yong Knight that sent ye thereth, & who this day departed from his Court, desiring him to censure on this mis-deed as he shall thinke good. All this they promised and swore to performe: wherefore commanding them to God, he rode away, leauing them together.

## CHAP.

## CHAP.VI.

How Vrganda the vnowne, brought a Launce to the Gentleman of the sea.

**H**is quarrell thus ended with the three Knights, the Gentleman of the sea tooke the way which before he had left: but they had not ridden long, till they saw two Damoſells come toward them by two sundry waies, who addressed themſelues to meeete together, which when they had done, they entered into communication. One of them bare a Launce in her hand, and whē they were come to the Prince, ſhe with the Launce aduanced her ſelfe to him ſaying. My Lord, take this Launce which I giue ye, be-cause I can affiure ye, that within three dayes it will ſtand ye in good ſteed, as therewith you ſhall deliuer from death, the house from whence ye are diſengaged. The Prince amaz'd at thſe words, thus anſwered. How can it be Lady, that a house ſhould liue or dye; It ſhalbe, quoth ſhe, euen ſo as I haue ſaid, and this preſent I was diſirous to bring ye, as a be-ginning of recompence, for two fauours I hope to receive by you, the first whereof ſhall be: When one of your beſt friends, ſhall by you haue one of the greateſt honors that euer be can receive, whereby he ſhall fall into the deepest danger, that any Knight hath done theſe ten yeeres ſpace. Be-leeue me Lady, anſwered the Prince, ſuch honor (if God pleaſe) I will not doe my friend. Full well I know, quoth the Damoſell, that ſo it ſhall come to paſſe: then putting on her Mafay, departed: this Damoſell you muſt note, was Vr-ganda the vknowne. When the other Damoſell (who heard the words) ſay her forſake her company, ſhe determined for certaine daies to ſtay with the Prince, to ſee what he ſhould doe, wherefore ſhe ſaid. My Lord, altho I am a ſtranger, if you thinke it conuenient, I would gladly for a while abide with ye, deferring a iourney that I haue to my miſtreſſe. The Prince well perceiued ſhe was a ſtranger, which made him to de-mand of whence ſhe was: where-to ſhe replied, that ſhe was of *Dewmarks*. And that himſelfe could not gainſay, be-cause her language gaue affiurace thereof, for hauiing heard his Lady *Oriana* as her firſt comming into *Scotland*, it made him the better to remember that Country ſpeech, wherpon he ſaid. If you please (faire Damoſell) to goe with me, I will defend ye to my power: but I pray ye tell me, if you know the other Lady that e-her now gaue me this Launce? Truly Sir, quoth ſhe, neuer did I ſee her, till now I met her on the way, and then ſhe ſaid to me: that the Launce ſhe caried, ſhe would giue to the beſt Knight in the world, deſiring me (withall) to let you underſtand after her depar-ture, that ſhe haue you great affec-tion, and how ſhe was naged Vr-ganda the vknowne. Ah God, quoth he, how infortunate am I in not knowing her, if I forbare now preſently to follow her, you muſt thinke Lady the cauſe is, that I cannot ſind her againſt her will: and thus deuiling they rode on, vntill

vntill the dark cuening ouer-tooke them.

At this time it so chanced that they met with a Squire, who demanded where they intended to find lodging trauailing so late. Where we can, answered the Prince. In good faith, said the Squire, if you meane to haue lodg-  
ing, you must leaue the way which now you take, for you can-  
not long time come to any that way: but if you will follow me, I will conduct you to a Castell be-  
longing to my father, who shall do you all the honor and good enter-  
tainment may be devised. The Da-  
mosel thinking this councel good,  
desired the Prince to accept there-  
of, which he did, therefore the  
Squire rode before them as their  
guide, leading them dereotype forth  
of the way, because he had never  
seen the combates of Knights er-  
rand: and hoping to conduct them  
the day following to a Castell  
where such pastime was vsed, but  
that night he brought the to their  
lodging, feasting and entertaining  
them very sumptuously: yet could  
the Prince take no rest all the  
night, for thinking on the Lady  
that brought him the Launce. On  
the morrow very early they would  
be gone, and taking leaue of their  
hoste, the Squire said he would  
bring them againe into their way,  
acquainting the Prince as he rode,  
with the custome of the Castell,  
which being very neare at hand he  
shewed them: the Castell standing  
very strong and pleasantly, for be-  
fore it ran a huge swifte Riuier, and  
no passage thereto, but ouer a long  
draw-bridge, hauing at the end a  
faire Tower for defence thereof.  
When the Prince beheld it, he  
thought he must needs passe the-  
ther by the bridge, yet he asked the

Squire if there were any other way.  
No my Lord, quoth he, for this is  
the vsall passage. March on then,  
said the Prince, wherewith the  
Squire, the Damosell and their  
company set forward, but the *Gentleman of the sea* remaining behind,  
entred into such a thought of his  
Lady *Oriana*, as he had well neere  
forgotten himselfe: but at length  
he heard the noyse of sixe Halber-  
ders, armed with Corflets and  
Helmets, who at the entrance of  
the bridge had arrested the Damo-  
sell, and there would force her to  
take an oath, that she should never  
beare loue to hir friend, if he would  
not promise her to aide King *Abies*  
of *Ireland* against King *Perion*:  
which she refusing, cried to the  
Prince for his assistance. This  
clamour made him forget his musing,  
when addressing himselfe to the  
Pallardes, he said. Traiterous vil-  
laines, who commanded you to  
lay hands on this Lady being in  
mycharge; Inspeaking these words,  
he came to the chieffest of the sixe,  
from whom right-soone he caught  
his hatchet, and gaue him such a  
stroke therewith, as he fell to the  
ground. All the other together pre-  
fently set vpon him, but one of the  
he sliced to the very teeth, and  
soone after another bare him com-  
pany, with the losse of his arme.  
When the three that were left saw  
their companions so handled, they  
tooke themselues to flight, and the  
Prince followed them so neere, as  
one of them left his legge behinde  
him, the other twaine he let go, re-  
turning where he left the Damosell,  
to whom he said. Now boldly go  
on, and like euill fortune may they  
haue, that encourage any villany,  
to lay forisble hand on Lady or  
Damosell. She being assured by  
these words, went on with the  
Prince

Prince and his Squires: but ere  
they had gone any thing far, they  
heard a great noyse & tumult within  
in the Castell. Methinkes Sir, said  
the Damosel, I heare a meruailous  
murmuring within this Fortress,  
therefore I would aduise ye to take  
the rest of your armour. Goe on  
quoth the Prince, and feare not, for  
where Ladies are euill entreated  
(who ought euery where to goe in  
safety) there hardly abideth any  
man of valem. In sooth, said she, if  
you doe not what I haue desired, I  
will not passe any further: and so  
much shée perswaded him, that at  
length he laced on his Helmet: af-  
terward he went into the Castell,  
at the entrance whereof, he met a  
squire weeping, who said. Ah God,  
why will they murder (without  
cause) the best knight in the world?  
alias they wold inforce him to pro-  
mise, what is impossible for him to  
accomplish. These words of the  
Squire, could not stay the Prince,  
for he saw King *Perion* (who had so  
lately Knighted him) very hardly  
vysed by two Knights, who with the  
helpe of ten armed Halberders  
had round beset him, saying sweare,  
if not, thou diest. Greatly did it  
grieue the Prince, to see such out-  
rage offered to King *Perion*, where-  
fore he thus called to them. Trai-  
terous villaines, what moves you  
to misuse the best Knight in the  
world; by heauen you shall all die  
for him. At these words, one of the  
Knights left the King, and taking  
fisue Halberders with him, came to  
the Prince, saying. It likewise be-  
houeth you to sweare, if not, you  
can escape no better then an other.  
What quoth he, shal I then sweare  
against my will; by Gods leaue it  
shall not be so. Then they of the  
Castell cryed to the Porter, that he  
should shut the gate, wherefore

the Prince now saw he must stand  
vpon his defence: whereupon hee  
ran fiercely against the Knight,  
charging him in such sorte, as he  
fell downe dead ouer the crupper  
of his Horse, for in the fall he brake  
his necke. Whiche the Prince be-  
holding, not tarrying any longes  
with the Halberders, came to the o-  
ther knight that combated with K.  
*Perion*, piercing his Launce quite  
through his body, so that he ac-  
companied the first in fortune. King  
*Perion* seeing himselfe thus suc-  
coured, so cheered vp his hart, as  
he did much better then before a-  
gainst his enemies, causynge them  
by sharpe strokes of his Sword to  
retire: in meane while the *Gentle-  
man of the sea*, (being on Horse-  
backe) raine among them and  
scattered them, tumbling one  
downe heere, and another there, so  
that at length by the aid of the  
king, they were all slaine, except  
certaine that fled away on the top  
of the walles. But the Prince al-  
ighted and followed them, where-  
at they were so affrighted, as they  
cast themselves downe headlong  
frō the wals: only two got them in-  
to a Chamber, where they thought  
to remaine in safarie, notwithstanding  
he pursued them so neare, as he  
buckled *pet met* with them. But  
within the Chamber on a bed lay  
an ancient knight, whose vnweley  
age had taken from him the vse of  
his legges, to them that came in he  
vsed these speeches. Cowardly vil-  
laines, frō whom run ye so shame-  
fully; From a knight, answere one  
of them, who hath plaide the Di-  
uell in your Castell, for he hath  
slaine your two Nephewes, and all  
our companions. As thus he spake,  
the Prince caughte him by the  
head, saying. Tell me (villaine)  
where is the Lord of this place, or  
else

else thou diest. The poore man seeing himselfe in such perill, shewed him the old knight lying on the bed: but when the Prince saw him so old and decrepite, he blamed him in this manner. Thou wretched olde man, hath death already seazed on thy bones, and yet doost thou cause such a wicked custome to be maintained heere? Well dooth thine age excuse thee from bearing Armes, yet shall I give thee thy deſert belonging to such a villaine. With these words he made offer to smite off his head: Wherefore the affrighted olde man cried: Alas my Lord, for Gods sake mercy. None at all, quoth the Prince, thou art dead if thou swarest not to me, that while thou liuest, such like treason shall be no more maintained in this place: whereto the olde knight right gladly tooke his oath. Now tell mee, saide the Prince, wherefore haſt thou heretofore kept this custome heere; For the loue of King *Abies of Ireland*, answered the Knight, who is mine Nephew, and because I cannot aid him with my person in his warre, I was desirous to succour him with such Knights errand as passed this way. False villaine, answered the Prince, what haue Knights errand to do with thy desire: so spurning the bed with his foote, threw it downe, and the olde Knight vnder it: where commanding him to all the Diuels, he left him, and comming downe into the Court, tooke a Horse which was one of the slaine Knights, and bringing it to the King, said. Mount your selfe my Lord, for it little likes me to stay any longer here, where such bad people haue their habitation. The king presently went to Horse-bake, and so they rode together out of the Castell: but the

by

Prince fearing least the king should know him, would by no meaneſ take off his Helmet, notwithstanding as they rode along, the king thus spake to him. I pray ye Sir knight tell me of whence you are, that haue succoured me when I was so neere my death: warranting me also hereafter frō the enimes of this place, & shewing yourſelfe a good friend to Ladies and knights errand. As for me, I am the ſame man againſt whom they kept this ſtraight paſſage, impoſing the cruell oath for which you combated. My Lord, answered the Prince, I am a knight desirous to do you any ſeruice. Beleeue me, quoth the king, that haue I already well perceiued, for hardly ſhould I haue found ſo good a friend to helpe me: yet will I not give over till I know ye. Alas my Lord, ſaid he, that will little profit ye. Notwithſtanding, quoth the King, I pray ye take off your Helmet: which he would not do, but put downe his Beuer a little. Whē the king ſaw that his intreatie would not preuaile, he desired the Damosell to obtaine ſo much for him: whereto ſhe conſideſſed, tooke the Prince by the hand, ſaying, I beſeech ye Sir, grant the king what he hath requested. He ſeeing her importunate, tooke off his Helmet, when preſently the king knew him, that it was the ſame man he had knighted at the Ladies motion, wherefore embracing him, he ſaid. Right glad am I to know ſo deere a friend. My Lord, quoth the Prince, I knew you ſo ſoone as I came to the Caſtell, to be the man that gaue me mine order of knight-hood, wherewith (ſo pleaſe it God) I meane to ſerue you whiſt your warre continueth in *Gaule*: & willingly I would not be knowne

by any one till your troubles be fiſhished. You haue already, ſaid the King, done ſo much for me, as I reſt bounden to you while I liue, allowing you to diſpoſe of me and mine: and if (as you ſay) you come into *Gaule*, you ſhall augment with aduauntage the honoř due to you, then iuſtly may I rearne the hower happy, that it was my fortune to make ſo good a Knight. Such like words vſed King *Perion*: little thinking how neere they were allied together, & thus they rode deuifing, till at length they came to a double way, when he demanded of the King, which of thofe waies pleaſed him to take. This on the left hand, anſwered the King, because it giueth diſtretly to my Country, God haue you then in his keeping, ſaid the Prince, for I muſt needes ride this other way, I pray ye, quoth the King, remember your coſſoming into *Gaule* as you promiſed me, for the hope I haue in you, hath abridg'd part of my ſorrow, and giueth me aſſurance withall, that by your meaneſ I ſhall recover my loſſe. So tooke they leauue of each other, the king toward *Gaule*, and the Prince in company with the Damosell and *Gandalin*: but because ſhe had now ſene what she deſired, namely the prooſe of the Launce which *Vrganda* gaue him, ſhe wold traualie no further out of her way, but turning to the Prince, ſaid. I haue hetherto (my Lord) with right good will kept ye company, because the Lady that gaue ye the Launce, ſaid ſhe brought it to the beſt knight in the world, and ſurely I haue ſene ſo much, as I ſtand in no doubt of her ſpeeches: wherefore I ſhall now ſhape my course to find her I am ſent to, as before I tolde ye. I pray ye Lady, quoth he, tell me what ſhe is. It is,

ſaid ſhe, the *Princesſe Oriane*, Daugter to king *Zifwart* of great *Brittaine*. When he heard her na‐med whom he loued ſo deereley, his hart began to tremble in ſuch forte, as he had fallen beſide his Horſe, but that *Gandalin* ſtaied him, yet ſearching a great ſigh, ſaid. Ah God, my hart faileth me, the Damosell thinking ſome ſudden ſicknes was the cauſe thereof, would haue had him vnarm'd: but hee tolde her it was needless, for he was oftentimes wont to ſeele ſuch paſſions. The Squire (who all this while had beeſe their guide) tooke leauue of the Prince, asking the Damosell if her way lay toward the Courte of King *Languines*: which ſhe affiſing, he ſaid he would accompany her thether, because hee had businesſ of ſome iimportance there. So hauiing courteouſly ſalu‐ted each other, they returned the ſame way they came, & the Prince rode on with *Gandalin* to ſecke ad‐uentures.

Heere leaueth the Author, to tel ye what haueppened to *Galor*, whom the Giane eatid away, and gaue in keeping to the aged *Hermes*, as al‐ready you haue heard. By this time had *Galor* attaingid the age of ſix‐teen yeares, marauiouſly increaſing in ſtature & compleat perfection: hauiing no other exerciſe, then reading, ſing, & Booke, which the olde man leaſt him, diſcouering the deeds of Armes, of ſundry an‐cient Knights. Heerein he tooke to great pleaſare, as on this occaſion, as alſo by a naturall iuſtincion, he was desirous to be knighted; neithe‐leſſe, he knew not whether by right ſuch honoř appertained to him. Very earnestly hee questioned thereon with the *Hermes*, but the holy man whoſt knew right well, that ſo ſoone as he received the order,

order, he should combate against the Giant *Abadan*: his eyes being filled with teares, he thus answered. My sonne, much better were it for you to labour in the safetie of your soule, then to adventure on the order of Knight-hood, which is to be maintained with wonderous trauaile. Father, quoth *Galaor*, very hardly shall I follow the calling, which I take against my will: but in that whereof my hart hath made choyse, if God grant me good successe, will I aduance his seruice, for there-out may I not be during life. The good Hermit, who then well perceiued his grounded resolution, replied. Certes my Sonne, seeing you are determined to follow Armes, I can well affiure ye, that through fault of high lineage, you neede not dispaire of good hap, in respect you are son to a King and Queene: but keepe that to your selfe, and let not the Giant know how I told ye so much. When *Galaor* heard this, he was exceedingly contented, saying to the Hermit. In sooth Father, the care I have had all my life time to be a Knight, hath beene very great: but now I thanke God and you, I am rid thereof, for by that you haue tolde me, I cannot misse of it. The Hermit noting his earnest affection, doubted least soone after he would be gone: wherefore he gaue the Giant to know his Schollers forwarde, as also how his constitution did now very well serue him, being wonderfull deforous of his knight-hood, and therefore he should now dealt in the cause as best himself pleased. No sooner was the Giant informed hereof, but presently he got him to Horse-backe, and rode to the Hermit, with whom he found *Galaor*, of more large stature then his

yeeres expressed, very comely and beautyfull in evry parte, whereupon he thus spake to him. I vnderstand Sonne, that you would be a Knight to follow Armes, truely you shall, prepare your selfe to go with me when time serueth, and your desire shalbe honorably satisfied. Father answered *Galaor*, heerein consisteth the summe of mine affection: so not long after, the Giant departed from the Hermit, taking *Galaor* with him, who falling on his knee before the reuertent olde man, desired that as he had fatherly nourished him, so still he would remember him in his devout orisons. The holy man with the teares tricling downe his cheeke, kissed and blessed him, then mounted *Galaor* on Hors-back and followed the Giant, who brought him home to his Castell: where for certaine time he practised to combate at Armes, as also branly to manage Horses, haing all things conuenient for the same, and two maisters very expert therin. When he had continuall a yere at these exercises, the Giant seeing him worthy to receiue honor, & strong enough to endure chivalrie: disposed thereon as you shall read hereafter.

Now againe doth the Author leade him, and discourteth of that which chanced to the Gentleman of the sea, who after he departed from King *Pervis* and the Damosell, rode two daies together, without any adventure: and on the third about mid-day, he arrived at a very goodly Fortresse, that appertained to a Gentleman named *Galpan*. This *Galpan* was then the most valiant Knight in all that Country, and therefore was greatly feared of all his Neighbours, yet did he there maintaine an abhominable and wicked

wicked custome: forgetting God, who was cheefly to be honored, bequeathed his endeouours to the seruice of the Diuell. For he constrained all Ladies and Damosells that passed by his Castell, to enter in, where vilainously he tooke his pleasure of them: and not contented therewith, enforced them to sweare, that while they liued they should beare affection to none but him, if any denied, he caused them cruelly to be put to death. Likewise he compelled such Knights as traualled that way, to combate one alone, against his two bretheren, but if they were vanquished, he would force the conquerour to deale with himselfe, he being the

most hardy knight in al those parts. If it happened that he brought the into any debilitie, he would take from them all they had, turning them away on foote, after he had made them sweare, to name themselves whise they liued, the vanquished by *Galpan*, otherwise, hee would deprive them of life. But God displeased with the cruelty, which so long time he had vsed to the hurt of many good people, would now alter this great inconuenience, and that *Galpan* with his complices should receiue guerdon to their deserts, making them an example to all other, as you shall heare presently recited.

## CHAP.VII.

*How the Gentleman of the sea, combated with the guarders of Galpans Castell, and afterward with his bretheren, and in the end with Galpan himselfe.*



Y this time the Gentleman of the sea is come nere the castle, where he saw a Lady comming towards him greatly afflicted, haing no other company then a Squire and a Page. This sorowfull woman breathed forth many grieuous sighes, shewing a violent kind of warre, betweene her hands and the golden tresses of her haire, which she discheueled and rent very pitifully. Hereat was the Prince not a little amazed, and willing to know what moued her to these extremes, he came to her with these speeches. Faire Gentlewoman, I pray yetel me the cause of your sorrow. Ah my Lord, qd. shee, death would be now right welcome to me, being the onely friend to

beare me company: for such is my misfortune, as teares are more conuenient for me then remembrance of the cause. In sooth Lady, saide the Prince, if in any respect I can do ye good, you shall find me ready withall my hart. Being sent Sir, quoth the Damosell, by my mistresses commandement, to a yong Knight, a man of some account in these parts, and passing along this way: foure cruell villaines set vpon me, and (whether I would or no) brought me into this Castel where a traitorous Knight dishonorably forced me, compelling me afterward to sweare, that I should never loue any friend but him. This complaint moued the Prince to great admiration, and thus he answered. Follow me Lady, for your iniury shalbe revenged, if God giue

giue me leaue. Heereupon the Damosell immediatly went with him, and by the way he desired her to tell him, what the man was to whom she was sent. If you reuenge my wrong quoth she, I will tell ye: but I can assure ye he is such a one, as will be right sory when he hears of my misusage. Great reason, said the Prince, hath he so to do: and as thus they communed together, they came to the place where shee shewed him the foure Gardants, to whom he presently said. Disloyall varlets, wherefore haue ye abused this Lady as shee traualled on her journie? Because (quoth they) we stood in no feare of you: but if you get ye not the sooner, your entertainment shalbe worse then hers was. Without any more talking he drew his Sword, and comming to one that heaued his hatchet against him, quite cur away the right arme from his body: then turning to another, cleft him ouer the face to the very eares. When the rest saw their companions thus maimed, they fled away so fast as they could, running through a by way along a River side: but the Prince making no shew of pursuing them, wiped his Sword and put it vp againe, then comming to the Damosell, bad her go forward. My Lord, quoth she, hard by is a gate, where I found two armed Knights attending. Well, said he, and I shall find them when I come thether. So rode they on, & as the Prince entred the baste court, he saw the Dungeon dore open, and an armed Knight on Horsebacke come forth, after whom they within, let downe a Port-cullis, and shut the dore againe: then the Knight of the Castell aduancing himselfe, very boldly thus spaketh to the Prince. Poore

wretch, too soone art thou come hether to receive shame and dishonor. Dishonor? quoth Prince, tush these are but words, leaue what shall happen to the presence of God, who only is skilfull therein: and tell if thou be the villain that did force this Lady? No, answered the Knight, but if it were I; what then? I meane, quoth the Prince, to reuenge her wrong if I can. Goto, said the Knight, I shall see then what kinde of reuenge you vse. So giving the Spurts to his Horse, ran as fiercely as he could against the Prince, yet he failed in the attaint: but the Prince meeting him with full carire, gave him such a greeting with his Launce through the Sheeld, as the armour being vnable to resist it, let passe the yron through both his shoulders, whereby he fell downe dead in the place. Having withdrawne his Launce, prepared himselfe for another that came to succor the first, who pearcing quite through the Princes Sheeld, left the head of his Launce in his armour, which was of sufficiēt professe: but in the encounter he met his enimie so dexterly, as he rent his Helmet from his head, casting him so violently off his Saddle, as hee was able to sit no more on Horsebacke. The Knight seeing himselfe thus vnaarmed, cried for some other to come helpe him, whereupon three Halberders issued forth, to whom he said: Looke well my friendes that this man escape vs not. At these words, they ranne all three violently on the Prince, and buckled so neare him, as they slew his Horse betweene his leggs, whereby he was constrained to fight on foote: and so offended was he thereat, that hauing recovered himselfe, he smote his

Launce

Launce through the Knights head, which made him presently yeeld the ghost. And now he bestirres himselfe against the other three, who cowardly stealing behinde him, wouded him on the shoulder, whereby he lost a great quantity of his bloud: but full well he compensated the villain that did it, letting forth the dearest bloud he had in his body, by cleaving him with his Sword as it bad beene an Axe. The other two terrified heer-with, ranne vp into a long Gallery, crying: Come my Lord, come quickly, for we are all vanquished. In meane while, the Prince seeing his owne Horse was slaine, mounted on that belonged to the knight he slew last: soone after he saw another Knight stand looking forth at a dore, who perceiving the Prince had espied him, said. What hath moued thee to come in heere and kill my people? Nothing els, answered the Prince, the desire I haue to reuenge this Lady, who hath beene here wronged most dishonorably. As thus he spake, the Damosell came to him, and knowing the Lord of the Castell that forced her, she said. Ah gentle Knight, see that this monster escape you not, for by him haue I lost my former honor. Libidinous Russian, quoth the Prince, dexterly shalt thou pay for thy disloyall dealing: Goe armie thee, else will I slay thee naked as thou art, for to thee or such like villains ought to be vied no fauour: but the Damosell more and and more still cried. Kill, kill the Traitor, that hereafter he lie not to abuse any more, otherwise will their shame be laid to your charge. Lewde woman, answered the Knight, in an euill hower came he hither by thy councell, and in thy company. And thou that threatnest me so brauely, attend my coming, and flic not away, for by no other meanes canst thou warrane thy selfe. So he departed, and soon after came armed into the Courte, where he mounted on a lusty white Courser: then comming to the Prince, he began to menace him, saying. Well maist thou curse the time that euer thou fawest this Damosell, for it will cost thee the price of thy head. Each one, said the Prince, must keepe his head so well as he may, and he that cannot, let him loose it. Without longer stay they couched their Launces, which at their encounter ran into their Sheelds and armour, wounding some-what deep into their flesh: and so dexterly did their bodies meet together, as they were both laid along on the gound, when quickly recovering themselves, with their Swords drawne they prepare to the combate. Fierce and truell strokes were giuen on either side, to the great admiration of such as beheld them, for many pecces of their Sheelds & armour was scattered round about them: & which is more, their Helmets were so torme and battered, as oftentimes their bare heads bore off the blowes, so that the ground was coloured with their bloud: but Galpan had receiued a wound through the sight of his Helmet, which made the bloud trickle into his eyes, and he to wipe them restid backe alittle. What Galpan? said the Prince, desirdest thou to breath? dost thou not remember that thou fightest for my head? if thou defendest not thine owne well, thou art like to loose it. Be patient a while, answered Galpan, and let vs breath a little, for we haue greate enough to

make an end. It is no reasonable motion, said the Prince, seeing I fight not with thee for curtesie, but to reuenge the dishonor thou hast done to this Lady. With these words he gaue him such a stroke on the head, as made him fall to the ground on his knees, yet quickly he arose and tooke hart a fresh: but the Prince would not let him range about as he desired, for hee was so out of breath, that he could hardly lift vp his Sword, wherefore he did nothing but crouch vnder his Shceld, yet was it so sliced away in peeces, as very little was left to defend himselfe withall. *Galpan* seeing he had no other remedie, began to fye before the Sword of his enimie, and at length (as his last refuge) thought to saue himselfe in a little Tower which his Gardanes vsed to stand in: but the Prince following him hard at the heeles, got him by the Helmet and pulde it off, and giuing a full stroke at him, therewith snot his head from the shoulders, afterward he came to the Damosell, saying. Fair Lady, now may you shoule an other friend if you please, for he to whom you promised, hath discharged ye of the bargaine. Thankes be to God and you Sir, quoth she: and as they returned from the Tower, they heard the dore shut too, wherefore he moued on *Galpan* Horse, which was esteemed one of the goodlyest in the world, and said to the Damosell. I pray ye Lady, now let vs be gone hence. My Lord, quoth she, if it like you, I will cary his head to him whom I am sent, and present it to him on your behalfe. Do not so, said the Prince, for the carriage will be too troublesome, but take the Helmet if you will. The Damosell liking well of his aduise,

commanded her Squire to cary it with him: and so they rode from the Castell, the servants whereof were all gone, & had left the gates wide open. But the Prince not forgetting the Damosels promise, that she would tel him the Knights name she was sent vnto: therefore earnestly he entreated her to satisfie him therein. Good reasō, quoth she, his name is *Agraises*, Sonne to the King of *Scotland*. Praised be God, said the Prince, who made me able to do so much, as so good a Knight shall be no more wronged by traitorous *Galpan*: for you are (in mine opinion) well auenged, and worthily may you call *Agraises* a good Knight, in respect he is one of the best I know, and if for him you haue received dishonor, it now returneth to your commendation. Go then and say to him, that a Knight of his, humbly faltach him, whom he shall find at the warres in *Gaule* when he commeth thither. Gentle Sir, quoth she, seeing you loue him so well, I pray ye grant me one request. That will I, quoth the Prince. Let me then, said she, vnderstand your name. Lady, quoth he, at this time forbear the knowledge thereof, and command what else you please, you shall not be denied. No other thing will I desire, answered the Damosell. Believe me, said the Prince, it is littile courtesie to request the thing, which willingly I would not reveale to any one. Yet must I needs know it, quoth the Damosell, or else you do not perorme your promise. When he perceiued she would not be dissuaded, somewhat moued with anger he repliued. Such as know me, call me the Gentleman of the sea. So fersing spurres to his horse, he galloped away from the Damosell, who was

not

not a little glad that she knew his name: but when he was gone from her, he remembred the wound on his shoulder, which still bled very freshly, so that he might easily be traſt by his bloud, & on his white Horse it had droppe in many places. At euening he came some-what neere a Fortresse, where he beheld a knight vnarmed comming toward him, and after he had well viewed him, he said. My Lord, I pray you tell me where haue you beeene so wounded? In sooth, quoth the Prince, at a Castle not very far hence. And how, said the Knight, came you by that goodly white Horse; I tooke it, answered the Prince, in requirall of mine owne, that was there slaine by traitorous villaines. But would *Galpan*, quoth the Knight, suffer ye so to do? Yea mary Sir, replied the Prince, he is now become more pacient, for hee hath endured the losse of his heads. When the Knight heard of *Galpan* death, he presently alighted from his Horse, and ran to kisse the Princees feete: but he would not suffer him, yet could he not hold him from embracing his Sheeld, say-

## CHAP. VIII.

How the third day after the Gentleman of the sea departed from King *Languines*, the three Knights, came to the Court, bringing with them the wounded Knight in a Litter, and his disloyall wife.

 **N** the third day after the Prince left the Court of King *Languines*, where he received the order of Knight-hood, the three Knights came thither, with their wounded brother and his trothless wife, of whom the discourse hath beene already recited. At their arriuall

they presented him before the King, leting him understand the cause of their comming, and delauering their prisoner on the new Knights behalfe, to dealt with him as he should thinke conuenient. Greatly did the King ieruaine at the womans disloyaltie, not intingeing such wickednes or coulthave harboured in her. notwithstanding,

ding, he thanked the Knight that had sent them to his Courte, yet could he not guesse who it was, for he nor any body else knew that the Gentleman of the sea was Knighted, but the Princesse *Oriana*, and the Ladies which accompanied her in the Chappell. Full soone was hee aduertised of his absence from the Courte, but he thought hee was gone to visite his father *Candales*: the the King turning to the knight in the Litter, said. Me thinkes that a woman so vnfaithful as your wife hath beene, deserueth not to liue. My Lord, quoth the Knight, doe therein as it thal like your maistey: as for me, I will never consent that the thing I most loue should die. This said, the Knights tooke their leaue of the King, carrying backe againe with thō their brother in the Litter: leauing their sister to receiue iustice by the Kings appointmēt, who after their departure called for her & said. Womā, thy malice hath bene too great in respect of thy husbands kindnes, but thou shalt be made an example to all other, that they heereafter offend not in the like: and so he commanded her to be burned aliue. The execution being doone, the King was in greater pensiuenesse then before, because he knew not who the new knight should be, that parting so suddenly from his Court: but the Squire standing by, which lodged the Gentleman of the sea, & afterward conducted him to the Castell, where he delivered King *Perion* from death, began to imagine that it was his guest, wherefore he said to the King. It may be (my Lord) a yong Knight, with whom the Damosell of Denmarke and my selfe were certaine daies, and then we left him when wee came thither. Knowest thou his

name? quoth the King. No my Lord, quoth the Squire, but hee is both yong and very beautyfull: beside I saw him do such rare deeds of Chiualrie in so little time, as in mine opinion if I liue, he will proue one of the best Knights in the world. Then discoursed he at large every action, as also how hee deliuered King *Perion* in the time of great danger. When the King had noted well his taile, his desire to know him increased now more and more. My Lord, quoth the Squire, the Damosell that came hether with me, happily can tel ye more tydings of him, for it was my chance to meet them together. Of what Damosell speakest thou? said the King. Of her, answered the Squire, that lately came from great Britaine to Madame *Oriana*. Presently was she sent for, and hee demanded what the Knight was of whom there went such reporte. & hereupon she declared so much as she knew, cheefly the occasion wherefore she rode with him, and in what manner the Launce was giuen him by *Vrganda*, as to the onely Knight in the world: but in sooth, quoth shee, I know not his name, for never could I learne it of him. Ah God, said the King, how may it be? Now was *Oriana* voyde of all doubting, for shee well knew it was her Gentleman of the sea, but shee was so grieved with the news, which the Damosell of Denmarke had brought her, as shee well knew not whom shee might cōplainte to: for the king her father sent her word how shee should prepare her self in readinesse to come to him, so soon as his Ambassadours should bee sent for her into Scotland. But much more willingly could she affoord to stay in that Country, then there whether she should now goe against

against her mind, noe vniely in respect of her gentle vslage there, but because she imagined by being farre thence, she should be further from him that had the prime of her affection: beside, she might there hardly afterward hear any newes of him, but concerning in Scotland she could easly compasse it. In these melancholly thoughts was the amorous Princesse, and the King (on the other side) in dayly musing, what he might be that sent the fourt Knights, with the wicked woman whom the fire had consumed. But five or sixe dayes after these matters were thus passed, as the King was conferring with his Sonne *Agraeis*, (who now stood vpon departing toward Gaul to succour the king his Uncle) there entered a Damosell, who falling on her knee before all the assembly, framid her speeches to *Agraeis* in this manner. May it please ye my Lord, that in the presence of his highnes and this assembly, I deliver a message of importance to ye: where taking the Helmet from her Squire, shee thus proceeded. This Helmet thus broken and barreled as ye see, I present ye in place of *Galpus* heady, as atoken to you from a new Knight, to whom (in my judgment) it better belongeth to beare Armes then any other: and the cause why hee sends it you, is, so that *Galpus* vainerously abused a Damosell, that came to you on urgent affaires. What, quoth the King, is *Galpus* overcome by the hand of one man, beleue me Damosell you tell vs meruailes. Worthy Lord, answered shee, he onely of whom I speake hath done him to death, after hee had slaine all the other that resisted him in *Galpus* Castell: and he thinking to reueng their soile himselfe,

meth

meth a Gentleman. Great was the ioy for these good newes of the Gentleman of the sea, and if any one receiued displeasure, you must thinke it was *Oriana* aboue all the rest, yet was it handled so couerly, as the watchfullest eye could not desceme it. Now in meane while the king enquired by diuers meanes, how and by whom the Prince was Knighted, when at length he was aduertised, that the Ladyes attending on the Queene, could tell better then any body els, which with much a do he obtai ned of them. Then may the Gentleman of the sea, quoth he, vaunte,

## C H A P . I X .

How King Lisuare sent for his Daughter the Princeffe Oriana, for that long before he had left her in the Court of King Languines: who sent her accompanied with the Princeffe Mabila his only daughter, as also a noble traime of Knights, Ladyes and Gentlewoman.



Bout ten daies after *Agraises* was departed the King his Fathers court with his troupe, three Ships of great Brittaine tooke port in *Scotland*: wherin as cheefe was *Galdar of Rascut*, accompanied with an hundred knyghts of king *Lisuare*, as also many Ladyes and Gentlewoman that came for *Oriana*. Being arriued at the Court of king *Languines*, they were very graciously entertained, especially *Galdar*, for he was esteemed a wise and hardy knyght. After he had giuen his Maiestie to vnderstand his Ambassadge, which was harty thanks frō king *Lisuare* his Maister, for the gentle entreatance of the Princeffe his daughter: he requested now to haue her home, & *Mabila* his daughter with her, to

that he hath found more curtie in you then in me: but the cause why I prolonged the time of his honor, was that he seemed too yong for so great a charge. In this time *Agraises* courteously wellcommed the Damosell, who beside the Helmer, deliuered him letters from a Lady that deereley loued him, of whome the History hereafter maketh mention. But now for this present occasion, the Reader must imagine, that *Agraises* (without longer tarying in *Scotland*) is departed with his Army, trauailing toward *Gaule* to his Ynckle King *Perion*.

hement loue) often wringed her hands, so that the waxe which shée held in them, suddenly brake, & she espied the letter enclosed therin, which so soone as she vnfolded, she found there writte these words: *This is Amadis without time, Sonne to a King*. At the newes shée conceiued such ioy, as quickly she lefe her former countenance, and not without cause, for she was now assured, that he who before was esteemed (at the most) but the son of a simple Gentleman, or it might be of less, because he was vnowne both of name and parents: the man whom she so faithfully loued, was Sonne to a King, and named *Amadis*, therefore without longer desirring, she called the Damosell of *Denmarke* to her, on whom she intirely trusted, & thus spake. My good friend, I will declare one thing to ye, which no other then mine owne hart and you shall know: therefore regarde it as the secret of such a Princeffe as I am, and of the best Knight in the world beside. On my faith Madam, answered the Damosell, seeing it pleasest you to honor me so much, more willingly shall I dye then faille therein, & wel may you be assured, that what-foever you disclose to mee, shalbe altogether kept secret, & executed to my power. The so it is deere friend, said *Oriana*, that you must needs go seek the Gentleman of the sea, whom you shall find at the warres in *Gaule*, and if you chance to come thither before him, there mast ye of necessitie stay for him: but so soone as you see him, give him this letter, saying, he shall find his name therein, writte on the day that he was cast into the sea, whereby I know him to be the son of a king, which ought inspire him with higher courage & hardines, to encrease the same he hath already so well begun. You shall likewise tol him, how the king my father sent for me, and therefore I am gone toward great Brittaine: which I was desirous to acquaint him withall, and when he returneth from the warre where he is, he should immediatly come to the place of my abode, limitting all things in such sorte, as he may liue in my fathers Court, vntill he receive other commandement of me. Such was the speedy dispatch of the Damosell, as without longer stay she iourned toward *Gaule*, and executed her enterprise, whereof heereafter you shall understand more. But not to discontinue the purposed voyage of *Oriana*, after that *Languines* had prouid all things necessary for the same, *Oriana*, *Mabila* & their company were imbarqued: the taking leaue of the King & Queene at the sea side, they set saile hauing the winde so properous, as in few daies they landed in great Brittaine, where they were all right worthy welcommed.

Heereof doth the author at this time make no more mention, because he meaneth to tell ye what happened to the Gentleman of the sea, hauing left him at the Knights Castell that was vanquished by *Gafar*, in the Damofels charge who attended his wounds, which in fiftene daies were almoft thoroewly healed. Notwithstanding, despising rest, determined so set on his way, so that on a Sunday morning, taking leaue of his hoste and his gentle Chirurgion: he mounted on Horse-backe, accompanied onely with *Gandalin* who never would forlase him, and not farre from the Castle they entred a great Forest. It was now about the moneth of April, when the Birdes

ame

tune their Notes most pleasantly, and that all Trees, Herbes, and Flowers declare the comming of the Spring time: this delightsome change made him remember her, who aboue all other flowred in excellent beautie, and for whom (abandoning his libertie) Loue hath taken him captiue, so that in these thoughts, he thus (somewhat loud) parled with himselfe.

Ah poore Gentleman of the Sea, without Parents or Lands, that thou canst auoueh, how durst thou lift thy heart so high, as to loue her who is beyond all other in beautie, bountie, and birth? Ah wretch as thou art, oughtest thou not to consider by these three things, wherein she is most perfect: the best Knight in the world may not be so hardy as to thinke of louing her? And thou poore vnuowne, art wrapt in a labyrinth of folly, louing and dying, not daring to tell it, or make shew thereof. In this complaint was the Gentleman of the Sea so carried away, as forgetting all other matters, hee rode crosse the forrest a long space, with his Helmet closed: till at length lifting vp his head, hee behelde a Knight well-mounted, in the wood by him, who long had kept company to heare his sadde discourse. When the knight sawe the Prince had discryed him & for that cause held his peace, he approched neerer him with these words. Beleeue me knight, it seemes you more loue your Friend then shee doth you, when in commending her you dispraise your selfe: and for ought I understand by your speeches, you are no such man as ought to pretend loue, therefore it is necessarie I should know who shee is, to the end I may supply your defect and sciuue her. Sir knight, answered the

Prince) you haue some reason for these speeches, yet hap what shall, you can know no more then you doe: and I can assure yee, that by louing her you can get no aduantage. So doe not I beleeue, sayd the knight, for a man ought to conceiue glory in traualie, or any danger in the seruice of so faire a Ladie, seeing that in the end, he can not but gaine his long looked for recompence: wherefore hee that loueth in so high a place as you doe, should not be agreed upon any thing that happeneth. When the Prince heard him speake so sensibly, imagining hee vsed these wordes to comfort him, he was of better cheere, and came more neere to him to continue this talk, but the Knight sayd. Keepe yee backe, for either by friend-shipe or force, you must tell mee what I haue demaunded. Now trust me, answered the Prince, it shall not be so. Goe too then, quoth the knight, see what wil happen thereon, and defend your selfe. With right good will sayde the Prince. So gan they lace their Helmets, taking likewise their Shieldes and Lances: but as they seuered themselves for the loust, a Damosell came and spake in this manner.

Knights, I pray you forbeare a while, and tell mee one thing before the combate if you can: for such is my hastie, as I haue no leasure to tarry the end of your fight. At these words they stayed themselves, demanding of her what she desired. I would faime, quoth shee, hearesome news of a Knight, callid the Gentleman of the Sea. And what would you with him? said the Prince. I haue brought him tylings, answered the Damosell, from Agraises Sonne to the King of Scotland. Attend a little, re-

plied the Prince, and I will tell ye so much as I know of him. All this time was the Knight of the Forrest ready for the loust, and much offended at her that came to stay them, wherefore hee called to the Prince to gaurd him selfe, giuing him such an attaint in the encounter, as his Launce strew in pieces: but the Prince met him full, as both Horse and Man were thrown to the ground, when the Horse (being more nimble then his Maister) seeing him selfe at libertie, ran about the field, yet the Prince found the meanes to take him againe, and bringing him to the dismounted knight, sayd, Heere Sir, take your Horse, and hence-forth desire not to know any thing against a mans will. The knight would not refuse his gentlenesse, for he found himselfe so shaken with his fall, as hee could hardly follow to catch him again & in meane while he assayed to remount on his Horse, the Prince left him, comming to the Damosell that stayed for him, demaunding if she knew the man she enquired after. No truely, quoth she, I did never see him: but Agraises told me, that he would presently make himselfe knowne, so soone as I should say that I came from him. He did not deceiue you therein answered the Prince, therfore ye must understand I my selfe am the man: and with these words he unlaced his Helmet, when the Damosell saw his face, she said. In truth now doe I verily beleeue it, for your beauty I haue heard very much commended. Then tell me, quoth the Prince, where haue you left Agraises? Hard by a Riuier not farre hence, sayd she, where he staieth with his Troupe, attending a fit winde for Passage into Gaul: and is very desirous (before he go

doe very hardly) and with his right hand tooke holde on his enemies shield, renting it violently from about his necke, and afterward gaue him such a blow on the head, as in great amazement hee fell to the ground. Thus did hee leauue him there with his companion, and rode with the Damosell to the Tents of *Agraises*: who hauing seen the conclusion of this quarrell, meruailing what he was that had so soone ouer-come two knights, therefore when he came towardes him, hee went foorth to meeete him, and so soone as they knew each other, you need not make no doubt of their kinde salutations. Soone after the Prince alighted, and by *Agraises* was conducted into his Tent to be vnaarmed, but first hee gaue commandement, that the knights dismounted in the fielde should bee brought thither, where they were no sooner arived, but *Agrais* thus spake to them. Beleeue mee, my friends, you attempted great folly to meddle with this Knight. You say true my Lord, answered hee whose arme was broken, yet once to day I saw him in such plight, as I little thought of any such resistance. Afterward he declared all that happened in the Forrest, and the communication they had together: yet he omitted the Princes complaints because hee stood in feare to displease him. During the repitition of these matters, the patience of the one and boldnesse of the other, was entercoursed among them, and all that day they soiuoured there, but on the morrow Morning they mounted on horse-backe, shapping their course to *Palingues*, a right good City on the frontires, and the outmost part of *Scotland*, where they found shippinge, and embargued them-

selues toward *Gaule*. The winde seruynge according to their desire, in fewe dayes they landed in the Hauen of *Gafrin*, and marching thence in seemely order, without any hinderance, they came to the Castle of *Baldain*, where King *Perion* was besieged, hauing already lost great number of his people. When he was aduertised of this succour, you must imagine him comforted thereby, and their welcome to bee good and gracious: chiefly by the Queen *Elisena*, who hauing knowledge of their arriuall, sent to entreat her Nephew *Agraises* to come visite her: which he did, being accompanied with the King, and the Gentleman of the Sea, and two other knights of good account. But you must note, that king *Perio* knew not the prince at the first sight, yet at the length he called him to remembrance, that it was the same man whom he had knighted, and afterward sauued his life at the Castle, wherefore thus he spake. My deare friend, on my faith I had forgotten ye, you are most welcome to this place, for your presence giueth assurance, that I neede feare this warre no further, hauing the onely Knight of the world so neere mee. Dread Lord, answered the Prince, God giue me grace to serue you accordingly, for perswade your selfe, that while these troubles endure, I will make no spare of my person.

As thus they deuised, they entered the Queenes Chamber, when the King taking the Prince by the hand, presented him to her saying. Madame, this is the good Knight of whom here-tofore I tolde ye, he defded me from the greatest danger that euer I was in: and therefore I pray ye let no spare of curtisie be made to him here, but giue him

him the best entertainment the time will affoord. The Queene aduanced her selfe to embrasse him, but he fell on his knee with these wordes. I am seruante (Madame) to the Queen your sister, and for her I come to serue you with loyngbedience as to her owne perb. Right graciously did the good Lady giue him thankes, yet little thought she that he was her Sonne, for she imagined the sea had devoured him: yet was the Princes presence at that very instant so pleasing to her, as her eyes could not be satisfied with beholding him, and (through a secret moving of nature) she wished more good to him then any in the troupe. At this time likewise was her remembrance solicited, with the former losse of her two Childe, whose yeeres she thoughte would haue equaled the Princes, if God had preserued them, & these occasions vrged the teates in her eyes. Thus wept she for him that nature touched her withall, and yet unknownen was in her presence, but when the Prince beheld her so sorrowfull, he reputed it to the reason of the warre begun, wherefore hee said. Madame, I hope with the aide of God, your King, and the fresh supply we haue brought: in shorte time to recouer your ioy, and for mine owne part, trust me I will make no spare. Heaven prosper ye, answered the Queene, with happy successe, & for you are the Queene my sisters Knight, I wil that ye provide no other lodging, but abide here with vs, and all things shall be appointed for yee to your owne contentment. Such was their conference together, vntill *Agraises* would goe refresh himselfe, wherefore taking leaue for that night, he went to his lodging where it was provided: and gladly would the Prince haue followed him, but the Queene with-held him by such importunitie, as he was constrained now to remaine in his vnkowne moothers custody. Right soone was the news of this fresh succour broughte to K. *Abies* of *Ireland* & *Digenet* his Cozin, who made very small account thereof, because (in those times) was King *Abies* accounted for one of the best Knights that either was heard of, and in respect of his hot desire to the fight, determined (seeing new aide was come to his enimy) very quickly to bid him bataile, and for this cause he said before all his people there present. If King *Perion* were so gentle a companion as to come seers, I had rather he would do it to day then to morrow. Allore your selfe, answered *Digenet*, he is nothing so hasty as I thinke: for hee feareth you to much, alcke he maketh little shew thereof. Know you, said *Oske Duke of Normandy*, by what meane we may thereto contraine him? First let vs make an ambush of the greater part of our Army, which shall remaine with the King in the Forrest of *Baldain*, then you Lord *Digenet* and my selfe will go with the rest, to present our selues at breake of day before the Cittie: & I am certaine that being desiried by our enimies, who imagining our strength is altogether, wil take hart, and not fail to come running forth vpon vs. When we see them approach, we will dissemble a timorous feare, and take our flight toward the Forrest, where shall abide the King with his company: then our enimies pursuing assured victory in their own conceit, wil seeke aduantage by our shamefull retire, & so be take theselues in the snare. Very well haue you aduised, answered King *Abies*, do you yore selfe worthy

worthy Duke give order, that all things bee done as you haue appointed. Now might ye there behold armed men on Horse-backe, the Souldiers mustring, the drums thundering, and the Trumpets chearfully sounding, as in ooe instant; matters were so well ordered, that the Kings Commandement failed in nothing: whereupon the next morning at the breake of day, *Daganel* and the Duke of *Normandie*, shewed themselfes with their Squadron before the Towne. Little did King *Perion* at that time thinke of any such enterprise, but altogether restreshed his succour, and honoured the Prince by whō he had found such friendship. And to make some shew of his affection towardes him, in the moring he came with his Queene to the Princes Chambres, where they found him washing his hands, and petting his eyes red, swolten & blubbered with teares, they easily gathered hee had taken no good rest that night: and very true it was, for continually hee thought of her, whose loue had deprived him of libertie, and likewise compared withall the flender means he had to attaine so high, which made him enter into such profound griefe, as he expected no other remedie but death. The Queene desirous to know the cause of his sadness, tooke *Gandalin* aside, thus speaking to him. My friend, your Maisters countenance berayweth some inward displeasure, hath any one heere offended him in ought? No Madame, answered *Gandalin*, he hath by your Maiestie received great honor: but he is wot to bee tormented in sleepe as you see. During these discourses, the Scatinell came to aduertise the King, how he had discouered the ambushe,

and the enemies were very neare the Cittie, where presently he comanded to doraine the Arme. Now was each one ready to horsebacke, especially the King and the Prince, who went directly to the Cittie gates, where they found *Agraeis* chiding, because they would not lethe him goe forth, thinking he shold tarry too long from the fight: for he was one of the hardiest Knights, and the best to give assistance in neede that could bee found, so that if good advise had beeene as ready with him, as he was possessed of unconquerable courage, his like might not haue beeene found in the world. At the Kings comming the gates were suddenly opened, and then went foorth the men of *Gaule* in order, who seeing their enemies to be so great a number, albeit the whole Arme was minded to goe no further, repugning it over-much boldnesse to assaile such an vnequal strenght, and therefore arose among them a murmuring contestation. Which *Agraeis* perciuing, without further trifling gaue the spurres to his horse, crying aloud, Beshrow him that tarrieth any longer: seeing them hee is to deale withall, shall we not venter? So saying, he galloped toward his enemies, in like manner did the Gentleman of the *Sea*, and the rest of their traine, who without any order of marching, ran among them, and were immediatly mingled together. He whom the Prince first met withall, was the Duke of *Normandie*, whō he charged so couragiously, as breaking his Launce on him, ouerthrew both man and horse to the earth, and with this rough fall, his legge was broken. So passed on the Prince setting hand to Sword, as a chaser. Lyon entred the preasie, shewing

shewing such deeds of Armes, as none durst with-stand him: for he ouer-threw all that encountered him, killing some outright, chining and dismembring others, so that every one was glad to giue him way. When *Daganel* saw his men in such disorder, by the meanes of one Knight, he got the most of them together so well as he could, and round about beset the Prince to beate him downe: which they had done, but that *Agraeis* perciuing it, came with his troupe to rescue him. At their arrial you might behold Launces broken, Knights tumbling downe, helnets rent, and shields scattered on the ground making a great conflict & disorder, amongt the *Irish-men*, for King *Perion* likewise came fresh vpon them with his band. *Daganel* (on the contrary side) did the best he could to retire backe, but the Gentleman of the *Sea* was among the thickest, shewing such chivalry, as he found before him not any resistance, each one was so abashed at his behaviour: and *Agraeis* aboue the rest, shewed that his arme was not benummed, for the more to hearten and cheere vp his men, he cryed a loude to them: follow my friends, follow the best Knight that euer bare Armes. When *Daganel* saw his side to haue the worst, & what great damage he receiuied by the Prince, he determined to kill his horse, and so to make him fall among the crowde: but he was deceipted, for the Prince comming to him, let fall so mighty a stroke on his Helmet, as rent it cleane from off his head, and so remained *Daganel* vnarmed. Which when King *Perion* espied he reached him such a salutation with his Sword, as cleft his head through the very braines: whereupon his men see- ing him slaine, they that had the best horses fled away for life, and stayed not till they sau'd themselves where King *Abies* was ambushed. But King *Perion* still pursuing victory, discouered the renguard (that came from the *Forrest*) marching in very great haste toward him, shewing by their countenance a retieng of their losse, wherefore ioyning together, they cryed; Set on them men of *Ireland*, see that none of them escape vs, but let vs enter pell-mell in the field. When the *Gaules* found themselves thus surpized, neuer were people more astonisched, for they imagined the ambush had not beeene so great, and which most of all affrighted them, was, that they must now deale with fresh and lustie men, themselves being sore wearyed, & their horses so ouer-laboured, as they could hardly indure their burden. Beside, they knew king *Abies* was there in perso, being (as you heard before) accounted one of the best knights in the world: and for this cause the most part of the *Gaules* began to tremble. But the Gentleman of the *Sea* foreseeing the disorder was like to ensue, came & perswaded them rather to die then loose one iot of their honour and reputation, saying: My friends and companions, be of good cheere, each one make knowne his vertue, and remember the esteeme the *Gaules* haue gotten by Armes. We are to deale with the people affoniid & halfe overcome, let vs not make change with them, taking their feare, and deliuering our victorie: for if they but onely beheld your reolute countenances, I am certaine they are not able to endure yee, let vs then enter among them, for God is our defender. At

these words the most disheartened tooke courage, concluding to stay and fight manly with their enemies, who soone after in great furie set vpon them. Now did King *Abies* make knowne his magnanimitie, and hardly could Prince *Agraeis* men endure the assault, nor the Squadron that King *Perion* brought: for King *Abies* maimed some, other he ouerthrew, & while his Launce held, he dismounted every knight that met with him. Afterward he layd hand to Sword, wherewith he carried himselfe so valiantly, as the hardyest were amazed therat, for he made way where ever he came: so that king *Perions* men, not able longer to hold out, began to retyre so fast as they could toward the Cittie. Whē the Gentleman of the Sea, saw that Fortune was so contrary to them, in great spight he entered the throng, and fought so fiercely, as the most part of the *Irisb*-men were glad to stay, while the *Gaules* without disorder retyred toward the Castle, then turning his horse, he followed them. To defend this brunt there was also king *Perion*, and the Prince *Agraeis*, who deliuered testimonie to their enemies (by the keen edge of their Swords) how well they knew to gouerne themselves in such extremities: notwithstanding, the *Irisb*-men seeing they had the better, stil pursued them with eagre courage, driuing them confusidly into the Cittie, hoping that now would be the end of their warre. Such was the retire of the *Gaules*, still more and more pressed by their enemies, as doubtlesse the *Irisb* had entered the Cittie after them, but that they were hindred by king *Perion*, *Agraeis*, and the Prince, who wholy did repulse the throng, till their

people by them were gotten in. But now was tydings brought to king *Abies*, that his cousin *Daganel*, and *Gallis* Duke of *Normandie* were slaine, wherat he waxed very displeasant: and seeing King *Peris*, on with his people were inclosed in the Cittie, he resolued to take leysure for his reuenge, wherein he was deceiued, for soone after he was very strongly repulsed, which made him almost mad with anger. And as he thus raged vp & downe, one of his knights shewed him the Prince, saying: My Lord, hee whom you see mounted on the white Horse, is the man that slew Prince *Daganel* and the Duke of *Normandie*, with many other, the best in our Armie. When King *Abies* heard that, he rode to the Prince with these words: Knight, thou hast slaine the man whom most I loued in the world: but if thou wilt combate, I hope to be reuenged so well, as I shall haue cause to be quit with thee. Your men (answered the Prince) are two little traualied to meddle with ours, notwithstanding if thou wilt as (a Knight) reuenge him thou louedst, and declare the great hardinesse for which thou art renouned: chuse of thy men such as thou shalt like, and I (if it please the King) will doe as much of mine, for being equall in number, thou shalt gaine more honor then with so great an Armie, which thou hast brought into this Countrey without iust occasion.

Believe me, quoth the King, thou talkest well, go to, chuse thou thy selfe the number of men, how many or few thou thinkest good. Seeing you leaue it in my choyse, replied the Prince, I will make another offer, which (it may be) you will account more conuenient. You

are mine enemy for that which I haue done, and I yours for the wrong you haue done to this Realme, so for our severall cause of anger, it is not reasonable any other then our selues should suffer: let then the bataile be betweene you and me onely, and presently (if you will) without longer dallyng, yet shall you assure me from your men, as I will do you from mine, so that none shall moue, whether the one or the other be vanquished. Right well said King *Abies*, do I allow of thy offer: whereupon he chose ten Knights on his parte to garde the field. And as the Prince laboured to gaine the like of the King, with his consent, hee found King *Perion* and *Agraeis* somewhat loath to grant the Com-

bate: as well for the consequence that might ensue, as also because the Prince was much wearyed and sore wounded beside, wherefore they entreated him to deferre the matter till the day following: But the desirous affection he had to be conquerour, as also to make a finall conclusion of the warre, that hee might returne vnder her obey-sance, from whom he came to serue king *Perion*: would not suffer him to make any longer delay, of the glory and honor which he saw so neere at hand. For this cause he vised so many perswasions to the king, as in the end hee was granted the Combate, and on his side likewise were tenne knights appointed, for his guard and safetie in the field.

## C H A P . X.

How the Gentleman of the sea fought a Combate with King *Abies*, in def. ference of the marrage he made in Gaule.

 Ou haue heard in what maner the combat was accorded betweene King *Abies* & the Gentleman of the sea, and now already is the greatest part of the day spent: wherefore it was agreed by the Lords on either side, (very much against the wils of the two Combatants) that all should be deserted till the morrow morning: as well that they might refresh themselves, and repaire their battered armour, as also for regarding such wounds, as they had received in the passed encounters. Hereupon the two Kings withdrew themselves, the one to his Campe, and the other to his castell. But such is the bruite spred through the Cittie, what worthy

exploits the Gentleman of the sea had done: as he could not passe by them, but thus they spake with generall voyce. Ah famous Knight, God giue thee: grace to proceed as thou hast begun: impossible is it to find a Gentleman so accomplished with beauty and Chivalrie as he is, for our eyes are iudges of the one, and our enemies full well haue fel the other. But you must noee, that in the morning when they went to the field, the King had giuen the Queenes in charge, that so soone as the Prince returned frō the warre, she should send one of her Ladys to him, requesting him not to be unarmed in any other place then in her chibber: wherefore as he went noore the Kings lodging, the Lady came vnto

unto him, saying. Sir Knight, the Queene desires you not to be elsewhere vnaarmed, but in her Chamber, where she stayeth your coming. In sooth, said the King, you must needs grant this request, and I desire it may be so. The Prince condisending, went where the Queene staied with her Ladies, and no sooner was he entred, but presently the Ladys holpe to vnaarme him: yet the Queene herselfe tooke the greatest paine of all, and as shee had off his coate of Mayle, shee perceiued he was sore wounded, which shee shewing to the King, he said. I maruaile Gentleman, seeing you are so hurt, that you tooke no longer time for your cobat. It had bin needless, answered the Prince, for I haue no wound (I thanke God) that can keepe me from the Combate. Right soone were the Chirurgions commanded to looke thereon, and they found it greater in shew then danger. In the meane while supper was prepared, during which time, they had much talk of the accidents that day past: vntill the houre of rest came, when each one departed till the next morning. Which being come, after they had serued God, the king sent a rich & goodly Armour to the Prince, of better proofof and strength then that hee had on the day before: wherewith he armed himselfe, and hauing taken leaue of every one, mounted on Horse-backe in company of the King, who bare his Helmet, the Prince Agrees his Sheeld (wherein was portrayed two azured Lions in a golden field, rampant the one against the other, as if they both inteded murder,) & another Prince carried his Launce. In this equipage he set forward to the field, where the King of Ireland at-

tended his comming, well armed, and mounted on a goodly blacke Courser: but because King *Abies* had in former time fought hand to hand with a Giant, and vanquished him with the losse of his head, therefore he brought to the Combate the like figure in his Shield, describing the whole order as the deede was done. On either side resorted thither a number of people, placing themselves for most convenient sight of the Combate. And now were the Champions entred the lysts, each one couragiouly resoluing against his enemy, wherefore without longer taryng, lacing downe the sight of their Helmets, and commanding themselves to God: they gaue the spurres to their horses, meeting together so furiously, both with Launce, body and horse, as their staves flew in shiuers, yet piercing their Armour, and both were laid along in the field. But heat of hart and desire of conquest, made them recouer footing quickly, and plucking forth the spields of their Launces wherewith they were wounded: set hand to Sword, begining such a strange and cruel fight, as each one was amazed to see them endure so much. For this fight was not equally matched, in respect the Prince was but yong, well proportioned, and of a reasonable height: but King *Abies* was so great, as he never found any knight that exceeded him a handfull every way, being (withall) so strongly made, that he was rather to be accounted a Giant then a man, yet was he highly loued & reuerenced of his subiects, for the vertue and prowesse which remained in him, albeit he was too much audacious and proud.

Now were these Champions so

animigated against each other, as well for honor as the consequence of the Combate, that without any stay for breaching, they layde on such load, as their strokes resounded the fight of twentie moe toge-ther. And well they wittesled ab-  
great good will betwixne them, for there might ye see the earth stained with their blood, the pi-  
ates of their Shields, the plate of  
their Armour scattered abroad,  
and their Helmets so bruised: that  
by reason their Armes being so  
squandered, they were vnable to  
hold out their strokes, for every  
blow caused the blood to gush out  
abundantly, yet were they of such  
inuincible courage, as they seem-  
ed to feele none of this annoy-  
nace. Hereupon they maintained  
such brauery the one against the o-  
ther, as it could not be iudged  
who had the better or worse: not-  
withstanding, about the houre of  
shree, the Sunne gaue an ex-  
ceeding warme and violent heate,  
whereby they found themselves  
so chafed in their Armour, as they  
began to waxe somewhat feeble:  
especially King *Abies*, insomuch  
as hee was constrained to retire  
backe, thus speaking to the Prince.  
I see thee very neare failing, and  
my selfe am likewise out of breath,  
if thou thinke it good, let vs rest a-  
while, for afterward we may more  
easily finish our enterprise. And  
thus much I tell thee (although I  
have no cause or desire to fauour  
thee) that I hold better opinion of  
thee, then any knight that euer I  
combated withal: moreouer it dis-  
pleaseth me that I had an occasion  
to see thee, & much more that I am  
so long in conquering thee, where-  
by I might take vengeance for his  
death whom most I loued in the  
world, and as thou didst slay him

little and little to lose his strength, and being in this agony, staggering from one side to another, hee could not devise what to do, to escape the pursuing sword of his enemy. Seeing himselfe now deuoyd of all hope, hee concluded either toone to dye, or haue the victory, and taking his sword in both hands, he ran with all his might against the Prince, and pierc'd it so farre into his Shield, as he was not able to pul it forth againe. Which when the Prince beheld, he gaue him such a furious stroke on the left leg, that being quite cut from the rest, the King was enforced to fall downe: and right soone did the Prince set foote vpon him, tearing violently his Helmet from his head, saying. Thou art dead King *Abies*, if thou doest not yeald thy selfe vanquished. Beleeue me I am dead, answered the King, not vanquished alone, but of both the one and other, my ouer-weareing hath beene the onely cause. Notwithstanding, since it is so come to passe, I pray thee let assurance be giuen to my Souldiours, that without injury they may carry me into my Country, and dying like a Christian, I may pay my debt both to God & men. Faine would I haue councel for my ouerburdened Soule, then afterward shall I render to King *Perion* what I vsurped from him. And as for thee who hast vanquished me, I despise not to dye by the valiance of so gentle a Knight as thou art: but wrythall my hart pardon thee my death, wishing thou mayest continue honorable, and yet hereafter to remember me. When the Prince saw him in such debilitie, he was exceeding forowfull for his death, although he knew assuredly, that if he had woon the glory of the com-

bate, he would haue dealt much worse with him. During these speeches, the Knights appointed on each side came to them, wherefore King *Abies* commanded his Captaines, to render King *Perion* what he had conquered in *Gaule*: which was accomplished, and by these meanes the *triflemen* had assurance to carry home their King, who dyed soone after order was giuen for their affaires. These matters thus ended, King *Perion*, *Agatias*, and all the Lords of *Gaule* came to the Prince, accompanying him with great ioy from the field into the Citie, even with such triumphant glory as to Conquerours is accustomed: who by their proesse not onely overcome their enemies, but restore the Country that is well neare ruined.

Now must ye vnderstand, that's little before the beginning of the Combate, the Damosell of *Denmarke* who came from faire *Oriana* to the Prince, was arriued at king *Perions* Courte: and before shee would make her selfe knowne, she desired to behold the issue of the fight. Afterward, seeing him retorne with so honorable a victory, she shewed her selfe, and taking him aside, said. Knight, may it please you to heare a word in secret, of such matter as doth verie neare concerne? Euen what you will, answered the Prince: with which words he tooke her by the hand, and keeping her from the throng, he thus spake. The Princesse *Oriana* who is onely yours, hath sent me to you, and this Letter withall, wherein you shall finde your name written. When he heard her named, by the remembrance of whom only he liued, he was so perplexed, that without vnderstanding what else the Damosell said:

said: hauing taken the Letter, he let it fall, being readie himselfe to heare it companie, which the Damosell seeing, shee tooke vp the Letter and came to him againe. Every one that beheld him in these passions, meruayled what newes she brought to procure this alteration: but she puld him by the arme so roughly, as made him forget his former Traunce, thus speakeing. What now my Lord? Take you the Message in so ill part, that comes from the onely Lady in the world, and who aboue all other lovethe you? for whose sake likewise I haue taken so great paine to find you? Ah Ladie (quoth he) on my faith I knew not what you sayd to me, for euen as you began to speak, I felte the paine to renewe in mee, which heretofore you haue seene me endure. It is true (said the Damosell) but now it is needlesse for me to conceale your selfe any longer from me, for I know more of your affayres and my Ladies, then you imagine, because her selfe hath betrayed them to me. And if you haue her affection, you neede not be ashamed thereof, in that she longeth you beyond all other: in respect whereof, she telleth you by me, that she must goe to the King her father, requesting after your departure from this warre, you would come see her in great *Brittaine*, appointing all things in such order, as at your arriual you may remaine there in the Court, vntill more amply you vnderstand her mind. Beside, she gaue me charge to tell ye, how she certainly knowes you are Sonne to a King, wherewith she is no lesse pleased then shee thinkes you will be: and seeing (being ignorant of your Linage) you haue proued so good a Knight, now vnderstanding your Nobilitie, you

should labour to increase your Fame if you can. And then againe shee gaue him the Letter, saying. Take here the Letter wherein your Name is written, and which you had hanging about your necke, at such time as you were found in the Sea. The Prince tooke the Letter, and when he looked on it, remebering to what good purpose his Lady had taken it from him, fetching a vehement sigh, somewhat softly, he thus spake.

Ah happy Letter, most diuinely wast thou found, in respect thou hast beene kept by her, who hath my heart in her custodie, and for whom I haue so often assayed to die, yet cannot. For thinking on her perfection, I seeke to augment it by strength and commendation, but of so slender value is my puissance found: that striuing thereby to gaine her fauor, the least paine I feele surpasleth a thousand deaths: which (neuerthelesse) are now recompensed by this present benefite. O highest God, when shall I see the time, wherein I may give her to vnderstand, how great my deuotion is to obey her by some agreeable seruice? Hauing finished these words, he opened the Letter, and saw his Name written therein, which was *Amadis*: then thus spake the Damosell againe to him. I was charged, Sir, when I had done my Message, to retorne with all speed to her that sent me to you; therefore be-thinke your selfe if you will command me any thing. You shall not depart (so please you) in such haste, answered the Prince, but stay with mee two or three dayes: during which time, for what occasion so euer it be, you shall not forsake me, and then will I conduet you whither you please. In obeying you (sayd the Damosell)

sell, I trust I doe seruice to my Ladie *Oriana*. Their talke thus breaking off, he returued to the King and *Agraises*, who stayed for him him at the entrance of the Citie, where the people were wonderfully assembled in the streetes. Then came the Queene with her Ladyes & Gentle-women to vnarne him, and the Chirurgions to visite his wounds, which when they had regarded, albeit they were many and yrkesom to behold, yet were they to bee healed without any great daunger of his person. For this night the king desired, that he and *Agraises*, would supp with him, but the Prince making his excuse by his wounds, went to his Chamber, willing to haue no other company

then the Damosel: to whom he did all the honour that could be deuised, hoping through her to finde remedie for part of his grieves. This Damosell soiourned with him certaine time, and in respect of the good Newes shée brought him, no wound could hinder him from visiting the great Hall, there walking and conferring with eueny one: but most with her whom he caused to stay, attending his dispositiō till he might beare Armes. And betweene them happened a strange occasion, which was cause of his longer abode in *Gaule*, then hee expected: so that the Damosell returned to *Oriana* without him, as you hereafter shall vnderstand.

## CHAP. XI.

How the Gentleman of the Sea was knowne by King Perion, his Father, and by the Queene Elisena his Mother.

**N** the beginning of this Historic, it bath beene recited, how King Perion gaue his Queene *Elisena*, being then in little *Brittaine*, a Ring like another that commonly hee wore, and these two Rings were of such an vniforme, as there was no difference to bee discerned betweene them. Likewise ye haue vnderstood how when the yong Prince was put vpon the water, this Ring was fastened about his necke, which *Gundakes* kept, till time he sent it by the Damosell (a little before he was knighted) with the Sword and the waxe. Now had the King sundry times demaunded of the Queene for the Ring, who made him diuers doubtfull answers, and in the end layd shē had lost it. But

it came to passe, that as the Prince walked with *Orianaes* Damosell, which commonly he was wont to do, yong *Melicia* daughter to king *Perion*, passed by him weeping, when the Prince staied her, saying. Faire friend, why weepe ye? Ah my Lord, quoth the Princesse, I haue euen now lost a Ring, which the King my Father gaue me to keepwhile he slept. Weepe not so faire Virgin, answered the Prince, you shall haue another of me to give him: So taking his owne Ring from his finger, he gaue it her. When she beheld it, (thinking it was the same shē had lost) she said. Ah my Lord, haue you found it, wherewith I am not a little glad, for I haue all this while fought it. What nowe? quoth the Prince, this is not your Ring.

Ring. In mine opinion it is, answēred *Melicia*, or the onely thing of the world that most resembles it. So much the better, said the Prince, for more easily will it be iudged the same you lost. Herewith went *Melicia* to the Kings Chamber, and finding him awake, he asked her for his Ring, then gaue shē him the same shē had of the Prince, which the King put on his finger, thinking it was his owne. But soone after as he walked through the Gally, he espied in a corner lying the other Ring, which he gaue his daughter before to keepe, and taking it vp, he compared them together: whereupon he remembred, that one of these two was the same he sometime gaue the Queene, so he asked of *Melicia* where shē had the Ring. The yong Princesse afraid of beating, durst not lye, but thus answēred. My Lord and Father, your Ring I lost, and as I searched for it, I met with the Gentleman of the sea: who because he saw me weepe, gaue me one of his, which I deliuered you in stead of your owne, and if that be not it, I know not where it is. When the King heard this, he presently conceiued suspition betweene his Queene and the Prince, imagining in respect of his beauty, how he was fallen into some dishonest liking of him, and therefore had giuen that token. Hereupon he went to the Chamber where shē was, and shutting the dore, sate downe by her, not speaking one word a good space, but silently fixed his eyes on the ground: then breathing forth a passionate sigh, he said. I will not maruaile any longer Madame, why you would neuer make me any certaine answer, when I demanded for the Ring I gaue ye in little *Brittaine*: you haue lost it in such a place, where you would be loath I should know of it, but hardly can you conceale affection, when it proceedeth to such effects. The Gentleman of the sea inconsiderately gaue it to *Melicia*, little thinking that it came at the first from me: and thereby do I know what he suspecteth not, and your selfe would I should not understand. When the Queene (who already by his countenance saw he was troubled) heard what he had said, she now determined not to dissemble with him in any thing, but summarily made a true discourse of her child-birth. And (not without teares) she recounted to him, how standing in feare of the king her father, as also the seuerē law vſed in his Kingdome, she was constrained to commit her sonne to the mercy of the sea, and in his cradle coffin put with him, both the Ring, sword, & what else hath bene already declared. Confounded was the king with maruaile when he heard the whole truth, and presently imagined the Prince might bee his first sonne, whom God had so miraculously preserved, wherefore he said to the Queene. According to your circumstances revealed, it may be, that he who is vnowne to vs, is our sonne, and the rather I conjecture so by the name he beareth of the sea. Ah God, said the Queen, may it fall out so haply? I beseech ye my Lord, sead presently for him, and we will desire him to tell vs of whence he is. Let vs go then, quoth the King, to seeke him.

So went they to his Chamber, where they found him sleeping, wherefore (without making any noys) he approched nere the bed, espied his Sword, which he tooke, and after he had well viewed it, knew it to be the same he esteemed

so much, and wherewith he had finished many famous aduentures, whereupon he said to the Queene. On my faith, this is the sword I left in the Chamber of the King your Father, the first night we were acquainted together, and now do I the better beleue what you haue said vnto me. Ah God, said the Queene, let vs suffer him sleepe no longer, for my hart cannot endure this weighty burden: herewith she tooke him by the hand and awaked him, saying. My Lord, sleepe no more at this time, for other accasions calleth you. Easly was the Prince raised from sleepe, but when he beheld the Queene weeping, as one amazed thereat, he said. Madame, from what occasion proceede these teares? is there any thing I may do ye seruice in, to remedy them? Noble friend, quoth the Queene, you onely may qualifie my griefe by your words, in telling me whose sonne you are. So God helpe me Madame, answered the Prince, I know not, for by strange aduenture was I found in the sea. The good Lady was then so overcome with ioy, as not onely speech, but vitall sence was taken from her, and she fell downe in a swoone: which the Prince perceiving, quickly ranne to recouer her, saying. What aile ye Madame? further could he not imagine on the cause of this alteration. Ah my sonne, quoth she, now know I better then thy selfe who thou art. The King likewise was so caried away with ioy and admiration, as he stood not able to speake a word: now was it hard to iudge, which of these three fel greatest contentation, but the mother throwing her armes about the Princes neck, said. Now may I boldly dare to kisse in safetie, hauing beene so long de-

priued of thy sight and knowledg: highly am I beholding to the divine bountie, who hath favoured the offence I committed through feare, which was, in deliuering thee to the courtisie of the waters, and see here thy Kingly father that begot thee. With these words the Prince fell at their feete, extreame ioy reducing the teares into his eyes, and altogether praised God for this good aduenture: especially the Prince, because he had beene preserued in so great danger, and now at length to finde such honor and good hap, as to meete with his Parents, being all this while vnowne to them. As thus they deuised on the fortunes passed, the Queene demanded of him if hee had no other name, then that which now he called himselfe by? Yes Madame, quoth he, but it is not fully three daies past since I knew thereof, for as I came from the Combat against King *Abies*, a Damosell brought me a Letter which I haue, and (as she saith) was fastened about my neck, being wrapped in waxe, when I was found in the sea, wherein I finde that my name is *Amadis*: and here-withall he shewed the letter to the Queene, which she full well knew so soone as she saw it. Beleeue me, said the Queene, this truely is the Letter that *Dariolette* wrote, when she made the separation betweene you and me: thus though I was ere while in great griefe and sorrow, yet now (praised be God) I feele as much ioy and pleasure. Now seeing assuradly your name is *Amadis*, it is needless you should beare any other contrary title: so thence forward he was called no more the Gentleman of the sea, but *Amadis*, and sometime *Amadis de Gaule*. It was not long before the bruite heereof

hereof was spread through the ci- ty, that the good & famous knight was sonne to King *Perion* and the Queen *Elisena*: wherefore if euery one reioyced (you must thinke) the Prince *Agraises* was not sorry, for they were found to bee Cozin germaines. Among the rest, the Damosell of *Denmark* had knowl- edge here-of, wherefore consider- ing what comfort this would bee to the Princesse *Oriana*, she laboured so much as she could to returni toward her: knowing she would giue her friendly countenance, bringing her so good Newes, what gracious fortune had hap- pened to him whom she loued all other she loued. For this cause she in- treated *Amadis*, to dispatch her returne to her Mistresse: In that I well perceiue, quoth she, you can not so speedily depart hence as you would, nor were it reasonable, but you should giue some contention to them, who for the loue of you haue shedde so many teares. These wordes caufed the teares to trickle downe his cheeke, yet smothering his griefe so well as he could, he made this answere to the Damosell. Lady, I will pray that the Heauens may safely conduct ye; yet let mee entreat your friendly remembrance, commanding the vttermost of my endeauours, for without your gentle care my life cannot endure: withall, I finde my selfe so endeb- ted to my gracious Mistresse, as I dare not request any thing at her hand. Neuerthelesse you may say to her, that right soon shall I come to shew my obedience, and in like Armor will I be clad, as when you saw me combate with the King of *Ireland*: because both she and you may the more easily know me, if I cannot compasse the meane to speake with you; & in this manner departed the Damosell of *Denmark*: On the other side, *Agraises* seeing his Cozin *Amadis* was to remaine longer in *Gaule*, determined to take his leaue, and calling him a- side sayd. Faire Cozin, for this time I must be enforced to leaue ye, albeit your company is more pleasing to me then any other: but my passionate heart will allow me no quiet, vntill I be with her, who both farre and neare hath power to command me. It is Madame *Olinis*, daughter to the King *Vanis* of *Norway*, who sent for me, (by the Damosell that brought me the Helmet of *Galvan*, which you sent me, in revenge of the dishonour she receiued by him) that I should come to her with all conuenient speed: and therefore I neither may or dare faile, which is the onely cause of my parting with you.

Now must you note heere-with- all that at the time as *Don Galuane* brother to the king of *Scotland*, was in the Realme of *Norway* with *A- graises* his Cozin: this yong Prince became so enamoured of the Lady *Olinis*, as he concluded neuer to loue any other then her, and this made him the more earnest to depart by her commandement. And to tel ye what this *Galuane* was, he had the name of *Galuane without land*, because al the portiō his father left him, was onely a poore Castle: for the rest he had spent in following armes, & entertaining Gentle- men, whereupon he had the Sir- name of *without land*. Such as you haue heard were the speeches *Agraises* had with *Amadis*, of who he requested to know, where he should finde him at his returne from *Norway*. Cozin (quoth *Amadis*) I hope at my departa-

hence, to visite the Court of king *Lisuart*, where I haue heard Chivalrie to be worthily maintained, with greater libertie and honour, then in the kingdome of any Emperor or King. But seeing it lieth you to take another way, I desire when you shall see the King your Father, and the Queene, to remeber my bounden dutie to them both: assuring them (on my behalfe) that they may command me in their seruice, euē as your self, or any other, as well in respect of our alliance together, as also for the gracious entertainment I had in my youth, being by them most carefully educated and esteemed. This done, *Agraires* took his leaue, beeing Honourably conducted through the Cittie, by the King and all the Lords of his Court: but so soone as the King entred the fields, he saw a Damosell comming toward him, who boldly laying hold on the raine of his Horse bridle, thus spake.

Remember thy selfe King *Peron*, what a Damosell some-time sayd vnto thee: *That when thou didest recover thy losse, the Kingdome of Ireland should loose her flower*. Thinke now (I pray thee) whether she sayd true or no, thou hast recovered thy Sonne whom thou reputedst lost, and even by the death of valiant King *Abies*, who was the Flower of *Ireland*, and such a one as that Countrey shall never haue his like: *Untill time the good brother of the Ladie must come, who shall by force of Armes cause to be broght thither the tribute of other Countrycs, and he must die by the hand of him, that shall accomplish for her the onely thing of the world, which most be lost*. And so it hapned by *Marlos* of *Ireland*, brother to the Queene of that Countrey:

whom *Tristan* of *Leonnays* killed, on the quarrell of tribute demanded of King *Marke* of *Cornewall* his Uncle: which *Tristan* afterward dyed for the loue he bare to *Queene Yseul*, being the onely thing of the world that hee most loued. Now must thou be mindefull hereof, sayd the Damosell to the King, for *Vrganda* my Mistresse so commandeth thee. When *Amadis* heard her speake of *Vrganda*, he tooke occasion thus to answere. Damosell, and my friend, I pray you say to her who sent you hither, that the Knight to whom she gaue the Launce, commendeth himselfe to her god grace: being now assured in the matter whereof then she spake, how with that Launce, I shold deliuer the house from whence I first discended: and even so it fell out, for I deliuered my Father vnowne to me, being then at the very point of death. So without any other reply, the Damosell turning bridle rode backe the same way she came, and the King into the Citie, with *Amadis* his Sonne so lately recovered: for which cause he assembled all the Princes and Lords of his Realme, meaning to keepe a more magnificient Court then euer he had done before, to the end that every one might behold *Amadis*, in regard of whose honour and happy comming, there were Knightly Tourneys daily vsed, beside great store of other pastimes and delights.

During these pleasures, *Amadis* was aduertised in what maner the Gyant had carryed away his brother *Galaor*, wherefore hee determined (happen what might) to goe seeke him, and if possible hee could to recover him, either by force of Armes or otherwise. Notwithstanding, his heart being day-

ly mooued to goe see her that houerly expected his presence, one day he entreated the King his Father: seeing now he had peace with his enemies, that with his leaue he might goe seeke aduentures in great *Brittaine*, because he was loath to remaine idle. But little pleasing was this request to the King, and much lesse to the Queen, yet by opportunitie hee obtained permission for his Voyage: nor could they all haue power to withhold him, by reason of the loue he bare to *Oriana*, which made him obedient to none but her. Hereupon, being clad in such Armour, as he promised the Damosell of *Denmarke*, he set forward on his iourney, embarking himselfe at the nearest Port of the Sea, where by good happe he found passage readie. Not long was his cut into great *Brittaine*, landing at *Bristol*, a most goble and auncient City of that Countrey, where hee heard that King *Lisuart* soioured at *Windsore*, royally accompanied with Knights and Gentlemen: for all the Kings & Princes (his neighbours) did highly fauour and shew him obeysance, which made *Amadis* shape his course directly to the Court. Not long had he ridden on the way but he met with a Damosell, who demanded of him, if that were her readie way to *Bristol*? Yea marry is it (answering the Prince.) I pray ye then tell me, quoth she, if I may finde any shipping there, for my speedie passage ouer into *Gaule*? What affayres calles you thither? sayd *Amadis*. In sooth, replied the Damosell, I goe thither to finde a Knight named *Amadis*, whom King *Peron* not long since had knowne to bee his Sonne. Greatly did *Amadis* meruiale hereat, for hee thought these newes had not been so farre spread abroad, wherefore hee de- maunded how she heard thereof? I know it, quoth she, from her, to whom the most secret things of all are manifest: for shee knew *Amadis* before he knew himselfe, or that his Father heard of *Amadis*; and if you would vnderstand what shee is, her name (by common report) is *Vrganda the unknowne*. She hath at this time especiall affayres with him, and by no other can shee recouer that, which shee now standeth in feare to loose. Betreeue me Damosell, answered *Amadis*, seeing she who may command every one, doth now please to employ *Amadis*, I assure ye it is needless for you to trauaile any further: for I am the man you are sent to seek, and therefore let vs goe whither you thinke conuenient. What? sayd the Damosell, are you *Amadis*? Yea, verily am I, answered the Prince. Come, then and follow me, quoth she, and I will conduct yee where my Mistresse is, who attendeth your arriuall in good deuotion. Heere-with *Amadis* rode after the Damosell, and thus are they gone together in company.

## C H A P. X I I.

How the Gyant bringing Galor to King Lisiart, that hee might dubbe him Knight, mette with his brother Amadis, by whose hand hee would bee Knighted, and no other.

**H**e Gyant of whom sundry times we haue spoken heereto-fore, causing yong Galor to bee instructed in managing horses, & all other exercises beseeming a Knight: found him so capable of every thing, as in lesse space then a yecere, hee was growne merualious perfect, so that now nothing remained, but to know of him, by whom hee most willingly would receiue his order of Knight-hood. Notwithstanding before the Gyant moued this matter to him, one day among other, Galor came to him in this maner. Father, quoth he, you haue dayly promised me that I should be Knighted, I desire you would bee so good as your word: for there is too much time spent since I ought to haue had it. In sooth my son (answred the Gyant) you haue reaſon for your words: yet tell me by whō you would receiue your Order? King Lisiart, quoth Galor, is reputed a gentle Prince, and a right good Knight, wherefore if so it like you, I shall be contented to haue it at his hand. Wel haue you aduised, sayd the Gyant: so presently preparing all things in order, they set forward on their journey. About fife dayes after their departure, by good hap they came neare a very faire and strong Castle, named Bradoid, seated on the toppe of a mountaine, enuironed about with Fennes and Marishes, as also with a salt water, that

ran before it wondrous swiftly, so that without a Barque it was impossible to get thither. And because the Marish was very long, there was to passe ouer it a faire long Causey, being so broad that two Chariots might well meet together on it: and at the entrance of the Causey was a draw-bridge, where-under the water ran with such a violent fall, as no one was able by any meanes to passe it. Heere must ye note, that equally facing this bridge, there grew two goodly Elme trees, where-under the Gyant and Galor beheld two Damosels and a Squire, with a knight mounted on a black Courser, this Knight was armed, bearing figured in his Shield, two Lyons rampant: and because the bridge was drawne vp, hee could passe no further, but called with a loude voyce to them within, that some should come to give him entrance, which Galor perciuing sayd to the Gyant. My Lord (if it please you) I would glady see what this Knight will do here. Soone after, they espyed at the further end of the Causey, by the Castle side, two other Armed Knights, accompanied with tenne Halberders, who came and demaunded of the knight, what he would? Marie enter in, answered the Knight. It may not be, said one of the two Knights, except you meane to combate first. I will not sticke for that, answered hee that would enter, cause you the bridge to bee let downe

downe, and come to the combate: which presently they did. But one of the twaine ( more hasty then his companion ) aduanced himselfe first, and placing his Launce, ran with a swift career against the knight, who received him so brauely, as he sent both Horse and man to the ground. The friend to the dismounted knight thinking to revenge his iniury, gaue forth to mete him, and failing in the attaint with their Launces, so furiously encountered with their bodies, as the knight of the Castle fell into the water where he was drowned, and the conquerour rode on, which the Halberders seeing, presently drew vp the bridge againe after him.

When the Damosels saw he was thus closed in, they cryed out a-loud vnto him that he should retorne, & as he was about so to do, he espyed three other Knights well armed come toward him, who veray audaciously thus spake. Unhappy was the houre to thee whē thou diddest passe this bridge, for thou shalt dye in this water, where he is drowned that was of greater reputation then thou art. Here-with they all three together ran against him, and met him so firmly, as his Horse was like to haue fallen ouer backward, yet hauing broken their Launces on him, he was at this encounter wounded in two places, neuerthelesse, one of them he met in such order, as his armour vnable to resist the pointe of the Launce, pierced through with such violence, that the truncheon still remained in his body. This done, couragiously he drew his sword, adressing himselfe to the other twaine, and they in like manner against him, where-upon began a dangerous Combate betwene them: but he with the Lions in his Shield doubting his death, laboured so much as he could to overcome his enemies, giving one of them such a stroke on the right arme, as (being cut from the body) it fell sword and all to the ground: wherefore feeling himselfe thus wounded, he galloped with all speed to the Castell, crying. Helpe my friends, helpe your Lord who is in danger of killing. When the Knight of the Lions heard, that he with whom he must yet deale, was the Lord of the Castell: he deliuered him such a rigorous blow on the Helmet, as made him loose his stirrups and ready to fall, had he not got hold about the neck of his Horse: in this staggering the Knight of the Lions rent his Helmet from his head, and he perteining himselfe vnammed, thought to escape by flight as the other did; but his enemy got betwene him and the Castell, saying. Thou art dead, if thou yeeld not thy selfe my prisoner. Alas, answered the amazized Knight, I am dead indeede if you please, but as you are a Gentleman take pitty on me, for I doe yeeld my selfe your vanquished. Suddenly the Knight of the Lions looking about, espyed other Knights and armed men on foote, that came in great hast from the castell to succour their Lord: wherefore he stepped to his conquered prisoner, and holding his sword against his throte, said. Command thy men to retorne else shalt thou presently die. Then he who saw his life in such perill, cryed to them, & made a signe with his hand, that if they loued him they shold retorne: where-upon, they beholding their Lords life at his enimies swords pointe, obeyed his command with all possible speed. Yet

is not this enough, said the conquerour, cause now the bridge to be let downe: which he did, and they came both forth on the causey where the Ladys taried: but when the Knight of the Castell beheld them, and that one of them was *Vrganda the unknowne*: Ah my Lord, quoth he, if you keepe me not from this Lady, I am but dead. Nay beleue me, answered the Knight, that will not I do, but rather am to deale with thee as shee shall command me: then stepping to *Vrganda*, he said. Madame, see here the Lord of the Castell, what is your pleasure I shall do with him? Smite off his head, answered *Vrganda*, if he will not deliuer you my friend whom he keepeth in prisone. Here-with he lift vp his sword to scare him, when the Knight falling on his knee, cried. Ah my Lord, kill me not, I will obey whatsoeuer she commandeth. Dispatch it quickly then, said the Knight of the Lions. So cal'd the Lord to one of the halberdiers within, saying. Go to my brother, and tell him if euer he intend to see me aliue, let him quickly cause the imprisoned Knight to come hither, and the Damosel that brought him with her. Right soone was the messenger gone on this errand, returning immediatly with the Damosell and the Knight, to whom the Knight of the Lions thus spake. Thanke this Lady who hath done so much for ye, and truly great cause you haue to loue her, in that she hath taken wonderfull paines to deliuer you from this thralldome. I do loue her, answered the restored Knight, and so will continue better then I haue done heretofore. But before he could finish these words, *Vrganda* ran and embray'd him, the like did he to her: afterward the conquerour de-

manded, what should be done with her that brought him thither. It is necessary that she dy, replied *Vrganda*, to let her know the price of so hainous an offence. Presently was the poore Damosel so strangely enchanted, as she ran skipping ouer the marrish quag-mires, and turning backe againe, would haue throwne her selfe into the water, had not the knight of the Lions intreated *Vrganda*, to pardone her trespass for this time. Provided, saide *Vrganda*, that she returne no more to offend me, otherwise she shall pay for altogether. Whē the Lord of the Castle saw the Damosell was remitted, at his request who ouer-came him, he thus spake. My Lord, I haue performed what hath bin commanded, therefore I pray ye giue me leaue to depart from her that never loued me. In sooth, answered *Vrganda*, for honor of him by whom you make your suite, I am content, and you may returne. He being gone, the Knight of the Lions (who yet maruailed, by what occasion the Damosell was driuen into that furie) asked what moued her so to do? Ah my Lord, quoth she, me thought one came round about me, and would haue burned me with a lighted torch, therefore to saue my selfe, I sought to leape into the water. At these words the Knight fell into a laughter, saying. Your folly hath beene ouer great, faire Damosel, to worke her ill who knowes how to reuenge it.

*Galaor* stood and had seene all these things, where-upon he thus spake to the Giant. Beleue me father, I very much desire that this worthy man should giue me my order, for if King *Lisuart* be renowned, it is for his possessions; but this Knight deserves it by his strength and valour. I am well content,

tent answered the Giant, go and request it of him, if he deny you the fault is his owne. So *Galaor* went forward, accompanied with four squires and two Damosels, when comming to the Knight of the Lions, he found him yet vnder the trees. At his arriall he was curteously received by the Knight, who reputed him one of the most comely Gentlemen that euer he had seene, afterward *Galaor* thus began. Gentle Sir, I am come to entreat a fauour at your hand. Truely, answered the Knight, if your request be reasonable, it will the sooner be granted. My suite Sir, quoth *Galaor*, is for nothing else, but that it might please you to giue me the order of knight-hood, and in so doing, you shall saue me a great deale of trauaile to king *Lisuart*, to whom I am going for the same cause. My friend, replied the knight, you shall do your selfe ouer-much wrong, to leaue so good an occasion by the best king in the world, for so poore a knight errand as I am. My Lord, quoth *Galaor*, the great state of the king can put no such strenght into me, as I haue seene performed by you in the late Combats: therefore (so please it you) accomplish in me my earnest desire. I can be much better content, answered the knight, to grant any other thing you will demand: for such authority appertaineth not to me, nor to you likewise is it so honorable. As thus they stood on these tearmes, *Vrganda* (vnlooked for) came to the, where-with the knight of the Lions was very glad: and she hauing as yet not heard any of their talke, thus spake to her champion. What is your opinion of this Gentleman? Me thinks, quoth he, a brauer person was neuer seene: but he requireth such a thing of me, as is neither in him or me conuenient. What is it? said *Vrganda*. That I, quoth he, should giue him the order of knight-hood, and yet he is now in trauaile, with determinacion to request the same of the famous king *Lisuart*. Certainly, answered *Vrganda*, to make him stay, will be a greater cause of evill to him then good, and I will councel him not to desist from his former motion: for you ought nor to deny him, seeing I can assure ye, that honor will be better employed by him, then any other in all the Isles of the sea, except one. Seeing it is so, replied the knight, in the name of God let it be done: goe we then to some Church to performe the vigill. It shall be needless, quoth *Galaor*, to stand about such matters now, in that I come not vnprouided of them already. It suffieth then, answered the Knight: so put he on his right spurre, and embracing him, said. You are now a knight, wherefore take the honor of the sword by whom you shall thinke it more conuenient. Do you then giue it me, said *Galaor*, if you please, for by no other will I accepte it with my will. Then he calld a Squire that held a sword ready, but *Vrganda* stepped before, saying. No, no, you shall haue a better: take that which hangeth on yonder tree, and you shall finde it farre more faire and good. Heerewith they looked vpon the tree, yet saw it not, wherefore they all began to smile, and she doing the like, said to them. In sooth it is almost ten yeceres since it first was hanged there, yet no passenger by euer saw it: looke better about the tree, for sure you cannot but easily behold it. Now did they all perceiue it tied to a branch of the tree, even

even as though it had but even then beene hanged there: and by it was a Scabberd couered with gold, shewing most fine and curios Worke-manship on it. The Knight of the Lyons tooke it downe, and afterward girded it about *Galaor*, saying. So faire a Sword beseemeth a knight so formall, and thinke shee hated you not, who of so long time hath kept it for you. Most cheerfully did *Galaor* give her thankes, and the knight likewise, thus speaking to them. I beseech ye to hold me excused, for I am constrained presently to depart from ye, and were it not I must goe where I am attened, no companie in the world would I desire more then yours; therefore I desire ye Sir, to tell me where I may find ye at my retурne. In the Court of king *Lisart*, answered the knight, where I shalbe verily glad to see you: and because it is no long time since I was knighted, I am the more desirous of some abode there to attaine honour, as you cannot chuse but doe the like if you come hither. Certes, said *Galaor*, to that place will I shortly follow ye: and Madame, quoth he to *Vrganda*, you haue so strikly bound me to your seruice, as may it please you to account me your knight, I am readie wheresoeuer you shall command mee. So departed he from them, returning to the Gyant who stayed for him by the Riuerside, where hee had hid himselfe, least he should bee seene.

But now you must here obserue, that as *Galaor* thus devised with *Vrganda* and the Knight, one of the Damosels that was in *Galaors* company, had conference with her that attended on *Vrganda*, of who at large shee vnderstood, how the knight of the Lyons was *Amadis*,

Son to king *Perion* of Gaul: whose coming thither *Vrganda* had caused, to deliuer by force of Armes her friend that there was kept prisoner, for by enchantment she could not compasse it, by reason the Ladie of the Castle was too cunning in that Arte, and there had first enchanted him in despight of her, fearing no way to loose him againe but by knightly chualrie.

On this occasion the custome there was appointed, which *Amadis* ended, and restored (as you haue heard) the man for whom they came thither: and hee by the Damosell, Neece to the Ladie of the Castle, that in enchaunted furie would haue leapt into the Riuer, was conduced to this place.

So soone as *Galaor* had left *Vrganda*, shee demanded of *Amadis*, if he knew the man to whom hee) gaue the Order of Knight-hood. No, truely Madame, quoth he. In sooth answered *Vrganda*, it is great reason you should knowe what he is: for he beareth so braue a minde, that if you both should meet without further knowledge, there might happen betweene yce great inconuenience. Therefore I giue ye to vnderstand, how he is your owne brother both by father and mother, and the very same whom the Gyant carryed away, being then but two yeeres old and a halfe: now he is of so goodly stature as you haue seene, for whose sake and yours likewise, I haue a long time kept the Sword, wherewith (I assure ye) he shall do more in exploits of Armes, then euer any knight did in Great Brittain. *Amadis* concieued hereat such inward joy, as the teares trickled downe his cheeke, wherefore he said to *Vrganda*. I beseech ye Madame

dame, tell mee where I may finde him. It is not necessarie, quoth she, that as yet you should seeke him. Why said *Amadis*, is he then constrained to accomplish some predestinate matter, before I may finde him? Yea verily, answered *Vrganda*, and it is not so easie to know as you may imagine. Long time thus continued their conference, till *Vrganda* would depart alone with her friend: so she commended *Amadis* to God, who presently tooke his way toward *wind-sore*, where at this time King *Lisart* soioured.

Our Historic (at this time) pauseth of him, continuing what hapned to *Galaor* the new Knight, who beeing arruied where the Gyant stayed for him, thus spake. Father, I am now thanks bee to God, and him you sent me to, a confirmed knight. My sonne, quoth the Gyant, I am not a little glad thereof: and seeing it is so well effected, will yee graunt mee one request? What? said *Galaor*, am I to denie you any thing, except you would with-hold mee from seeking honor? My sonne, answered the Gyant, I rather desire thy happy proceeding therein, and that which I would haue appertaineth thereto. Demand then what you will, said *Galaor* for I graunt it. Faire Sonne, quoth the Gyant, heretofore you haue heard mee complaine of the Gyant *Albadan*, who by treason flewe my Father, and yet forcibly detaineth from me the Rocke of *Galeres*, which iustly doth belong to me: I pray ye to take reuenge on my behalfe, for no other then you may doe it: remember how well I haue nourished and vsed you, as also my true and vnfained loue, which is such, as I will yeeld my person even to

the death for safetie of yours. This matter said *Galaor*, you need not request, but command me to doe it: as for my selfe, I desire you to rest content, till with *Albadan* I haue tryed this difference, seeing it concerneth you to retre. Beside, heerof you may bee perwaded, that if I escape with life, I shall continue euermore in readinesse, to accomplish any thing else for your honour and profit: in which deuoire, the whole circuite of my time is bound, as witnessesse of the dutie I owe to you, therefore without any longer trifling, let vs set forward to him with whom I must try my fortune. So tooke they the way to the rocke of *Galeres*, but before they had traualied farre, *Vrganda* overtooke them, and being acquainted with each other, she said to *Galaor*. Know yee (gentle Sir) who hath this day made you Knight? That doe I Madame, answered *Galaor*, even the best knight that euer I heard of. It is very true (quoth she) yet is hee of greater esteeme then you thinke, but I would haue you to know his name: then calld she *Gandalaz* the Gyant, saying. *Gandalaz*, doest not thou know that this knight (whom thou haft nourished) is the Sonne to king *Perion*, and his Queene *Elsena*, and how by such like wordes I bad thee take him, since which time thou hast beene his Foster father? It is very true, answered the Gyant. Now then *Galaor*, my friend, said *Vrganda*, the man that made thee knight is thy brother and elder then thou by two yeers: wherefore when thou seest him, give him honour, and labour to resemble him in hardinesse and kindship. May it be possible? replied *Galaor*, that King *Perion* is my

my Father, and Queene Eliesene my mother, and I the brother to so good a knight? Doubt not thereof (quoth shee) for it is so. Praised be God, said *Galaor*, now may I assureye, that I am in greater care the before: nor wil I make any spare of my life, seeing it is necessary I should resemble him you talke of. Thus returned *Vrganda* the same way shee came, and the Gyant with *Galaor* rode on as they purposed, the Prince demanding of the Gyant, what the Lady was that had communed with them? It is quoth hee, *Vrganda the unknown*, as she nameth her selfe, because she often trans-formeth and maketh her selfe vnknowne. As thus they deuised together, they came to a Riuers side where they would refresh themselves, and by reason the heate of the day was very vehement, they caused a Tent to bee erected: where long they had not sitten, but they beheld two Damosels comming toward them by two seuerall wayes, and met together directly before the Pavillion. So soone as they espied the Gyant, they would haue fledde, but *Galaor* came to assure them, and curteously caused them to retorne, demanding afterward whether they traualled. I goe (quoth one of them) by the commandement of my Mistresse, to see a strange fight, which one onely Knight hath enterprised in Combate, against the strong Gyant at the Rocke of *Gasteres*, to the eade I may bring her true tidings thereof. When the other Damosell heard her say so, she thus replyed. I am amazed at your speeches, is there any knight in the word dare venter on such follie? Certes, said the first, it is most true. Beleeue me, answered the other, although

my occasions be else-where, I am content to stay and goe with you, to see a matter so incredible. Hereupon they would haue taken leaue of *Galaor*, but hee said to them. Make no hast faire Damosels, but tarrie if you please, and we wil beare ye companie: where-to they condiscended, as well for the good grace they noted in this new Knight, as also in respect of his amiable countenance, which made them take great pleasure in beholding him: then *Galaor* walking with the Giant aside, said, Father, I could wish that you would goe no further with vs, but let me goe with these Damosels to accomplish what I haue promised: this hee spake because hee would not be knowne what hee was, or that his enterprise should bee suspected by them, whereto the Gyant (vnwillingly) did accord. So rode *Galaor* with the Damosels, and three Squires: the Giant left him to beare his Armour, making such speede in their iourney, that they arriued within two Miles of the Rocke of *Gasteres*, where they lodged in the little Cottage of an Hermite, to whom *Galaor* imparred some of his secret thoughts: but when hee revealed that hee came for the Combate, the good Hermit (abashed therat) discoured with him in this manner.

My Sonne, who hath aduised thee to this boldnes, seeing there is not in all this Countrey ten such Knights, as dare assaile the Gyant, so fearefull and monstrous is he to behold: and you being but yong, to hazard your selfe in this danger, aduenture the losse both of bodie and soule, because such as wilfully seeke their owne death, are very homicides of themselves. Father, answered *Galaor*, God worke

worke his will with mee, for by no meanes may I let passe mine enterprise. Greatly was the good man mooued to compassion, so that the teares be-deawed his milke-white beard, beeing able to make no other answere, but thus: If not my Sonne, I desire God to assist yee, seeing you will giue no better credite to me. Good Father, quoth *Galaor*, be mindfull of mee in your devout Prayers: and thus till next morning they spent the night.

*Galaor* hauing armed himselfe, went to the Rocke which was not farre from the Hermitage, for there might be easilly discerned the Fortress & great Towers, which deliuered good marke of a most strong Castle. When one of the Damosels saw they approched so neare, she demaunded of *Galaor*, if he knew the Knight that should performe the Combate? I think (quoth he) I haue seene him sometime: but tell me (I pray yee) from what place are you come to behold this pastime? And what is the Lady that sent you? None must know so much, sayd the Damosell, but the Knight him-selfe which dealeth in the Combate. Thus continued their talke, till they arriued at the Castle of *Albadan*, the gate wherof they found fast shut, but *Galaor* stepping thereto called the Porter: at which noise, two men shewed themselves over the Porch, demaunding of him what he would haue. Goe,

quoth *Galaor*, and say to *Albadan*, that heere is a Knight, who is sent from *Gandalaz* to desie him: and if he come not out the sooner, he will shew himselfe of lesse valour then reputation. You haue reason (sayd one of them in mockage) but he will quickly bring a remedie for your choller, if you doe not helpe it your selfe by running away. So departed the Watch-men to enforne the Gyant of these Newes, and when the Damosels vnderstood, that *Galaor* him-selfe must execute the enterprise, being terrifid with amazement, they sayd. Ah my Lord, you attempt a matter of ouer-much folly, would God you might speed so well, as with honor to accomplish an enterprise of such consequence: As for me (quoth one of them) I dares tarrie no longer with ye, for I shall die at the sight of the Monster with whom you haue to deale.

Damosels, sayd hee, seeing you may not be assured heere, depart I pray ye to the Hermitage, where we lodged this last night, and if I dye not in fight, I will not be long from ye. Beleeue me, replied the other Damosell, what soever happen I will not goe, for I determine to see the ende.

The boldnesse of the one made them both tarrie, yet did they sunder themselves by the Forrest side, because the Gyant should not see them, and hoping the better to escape away if the Knight sped not well.

## CHAP. XIII.

## *How Galaor vanquished the Giant at the Rocke of Galteres.*

One was the Giant aduertised of these newes, wherefore not long after he came forth of the Castell, mounted on a horse proportionable to such a huge body : for it seemed an elephant, & he on his back made ample resemblance of a huge *Colfus*, or like a mountaine mouing, rather then a man. Armed he was in plates of iron so long, as from his throat he couered all the faddle on the horse, hauing on his head a bright shining Helmet, and in his hand a mighty iron Mace, being the weapon where-with hee commonly vsed to fight. Wonderfully affraide were the Squires and the Ladies that beheld him, and *Geler* was not so assured, but hee stood some-what abashed : notwithstanding, he resolued so courageously, as the neerer he approached, the lesse account he made of his huge enemis Mace. When the Giant saw him come marching so brauely toward him, he said. I maruaile demie man, how thou darest wach such boldnesse tarry thy death : he that sent thee hither might either borow thy courage, or thou his corpulence, but he intended I should breake my fast, before the houre of dinner came. *Geler* somewhat discontented with these despisings, thus answered. Thinkest thou huge beast that thy barking can aduantage thee, or hinder me ? my confidence is in him who abated the pride of the great Philistine, and can likewise deliuer thee more base and vile the dust. Exceeding angry was the

Giant at these words, wherefore without any more talke, he lifted vp his Mace to strike, seeming in his marching as though a Tower had beeene caried about, but *Galaor* being prompt & nimble, stooped his Launce, and with a rough cariere of his horfe, attainted him on the stomacke so brately, as he caused the mighty *Poliphemus* forgoe one of his stirrops, his Launce therewith shiuering in pieces in the aire. At this encounter the Giant thought to haue stroken him downe with his Mace, but he was too roughly and suddenly staid, whereby his blow was guien in vaine: for the Mace which was heauie, and comparable to a huge beame in bignes, being deliuered with ful force of both his armes: fel downe so weightly, as the Giant himselfe was not able to hold ir, whereby it lighted on the head of his owne horse so peazantly, as being feld there-with, dyed prestantly vnder him, the Giant tarying a good while before he could recover himselfe againe. Yet the horse being of courage, did ofte strike to get vp, but *Galaor* thrusting his sword into his belly, caused him at length to lie there still enough: but in the end, the Giant did the like to *Galaors* horse, and he seeing in what great danger now he was, by his wonted dexterity quickly got footing. Then approaching his enemy, drew the sword *Vrganda* had giuen him, wherewithal watching when the Giant lifted his Mace, he gaue such a stroke at it where he held his hands, as breaking the stoke in pieces, he left but little

little length for the Giant to holde it by: yet he made shift to buffet Galor there-with in such sorte, as he was constrained to set one hand to the ground to sustaine himselfe. But all this did no iot astonish him, for comming to the Gyant, (who yet kept play with the remainder of his Mace, which by wary escapes the Prince still preuoted), he gave a stroke at him with so full force, as cleane cut away the left arme from his shoulde, and the sword passing further with like strength, met the Giants leg so directly, that it wounded him through the flesh, with a wide gaping wound to the very bone. Feeling great paine by both these maimes, he cried out aloud: Ah vnhappy wretch that I am, to be thus ouercome by the strength of one man. Being in extreame rage, he sought to fasten hold on the bo-dy of Galor, but the sore wound on his leg would let him stand no longer, constraining him to fall on his knees to the ground: & as the Prince aproch't to him, he thought with his other arme to pull him down, but Galor perceiving his intent, stroke at him againe & smot off his hand. Now was the Giant despoiled of all force, being so wounded and ouer-trauailed withal, that he was no longer able to endure: by which meanes Galor more easilly parted his head frō his sholders, which he deliuered his Squires to carry with him. Whē the Damosels beheld this famous conquest, they left their ambush, & came to regard this maruaile, saying to Galor. In sooth worthy Knight, great good nurture hath beene bestowed on you by your educator: for as we have here-tofore heard, he hath the profit and vengeance, and you the honor exceeding all.

As they were about to returme, they saw ten Knights come forth of the castle chained together, who cried to him. Come my Lord, come take this place, seeing you haue done him dead that so miserably detained vs prisoners. What thinke you said Galor to the Damosels, may we sojourne here this after noone? Truely, quoth they, we thinke nothing to the contrary. So went they into the Castle, where Galor discharged the prisoners: & soone after, viands for dinner was brought him and his company by the servants. When they had refi-shed them-selues, and at their pleasure visited the Fortresse, the subiects inhabiting the Rock came all to him, and would haue done him honor as to their Lord: bothe by no meanes would accept thereof, for he tolde them that what he had done, was on the behalfe of Gandalax, to whom that place by right appertained. And I, quoth he, as bound to him by duty, came hither to prepare his lodging: therefore I pray ye that he may be well receiued of you all, and obey him as your true and naturall Lord, for wel am I assured, that he wil intreue you with loue & gentlenes. These requests were pretely answered by one for the all, who said. Hither shall he be most hartely welcome, because we hope, that he to whom we shall be vassalles and Subiects, will cherishe and fauour vs: in stead whereof, the other vsed vs as vilaines and slaues, and you (being the conquerour) we hold for our only deliuener. All things thus bated and accorded, Galor departed thence with his company, returning to the Hermitage, where the Hermit attened for happy newes: but he was not a little glad to see Galor come with such fa-

celle, wherefore he thus spake. My son, daily are you bound to praise the divine bountie, whose loue hath giuen you grace to execute this notable vengeance. On the morrow, after he had received the good mans benediction, he set forward on his way, & one of the Damosels intreated him, that he would suffer her to traualle in his company, whereto right willingly he gaue consent. And I, quoth the other, must take another way, in that I had not come thus farre, but onely to behold the issue of the combat, which I haue scene with such content, as I must needs make cōmendable reporte thereof to other, & so shall I not faile to do in the Court of King *Lisauſt*, whether now I go to finde a brother of mine gone thether before me. Faire Damosell, answered *Galaor*, if you meete a yong Knight, who beareth in his Shield a couple of Lions, I pray ye say to him, that the Gentleman, to whom not long since he gaue the order of Knight-hood, doth humbly salute him, adding this withall, how he endeuoureth to honor the order, and when they both shall meete, he will acquainte him with such matter betweene them, as yet perhaps he knoweth not. So tooke the Damosell her leue of *Galaor*, who afterward thus began to commune with the other. You know Lady, that I haue finished the combate with the Giant, and you saide to me before I began it, how the Knight himselfe shoulde know what ~~is~~ that sent you thether. Very ~~is~~, answered the Damosell, but if you would be resolued therein, follow me, and within five daies I will shew you her. That shall not let me, said *Galaor*: thus rode they on together so long, till at length they came to a forked way, and *Galaor* not

who did mizing before, thought she had followed him: but she ar- rested behind alittle, and when she hoped to ouer-take him againe, it was her hap to take the wrong way. This chanced at the entrance of the Forrest of *Bragande*, which seau- reth the Countries of *Claire* and *Gresce*, where long he had not erred, but he heard a voice thus cal- ling to him. Ah good Knight, help me. *Galaor* turning his head to see what was the cause: I thinke quoth one of his Squires, it shoulde be the Damosell that departed from vs. What? said *Galaor*, bath she left vs? Yea truely, answered the Squire, she tooke the way leading on the left hand. Beleue me, quoth he, I had very little care of her, & hastyly without taking his Helmet, hauing only his Shield and Lattice, he galloped so fast as he could to the place where he heard the voice, and hard at hand he espied five men on foote, armed with Cros- lets and Halberds, and a Dwarffe on horse-back, who cruelly laied on the Damosell with a staffe. When *Galaor* approached neare them, hee came to the Dwarffe, saying. Thou villainous and deformed creature, soone shall I send thy soule to the Diuell: and running fiercely a- gainst him with his Launce, threw him against the ground maru- ously amazed. Then came the other eagerly vpon him, compas- sing him on every side: but to the firſt he gave ſuch a greeting with his Launce, as he lay ſprangling on the earth. Another of them buck- led close to him, laying load on his Shield with his Halberd, but at length he pierced his Lance quite through his body. When the other three ſaw this massacre, they ranne away ſo fast as they could ouer- thwart the Forrest, and *Galaor* not

able to ouertake them, returned backe againe to the Dwarffe, who being gotten on horse-back, fled away after the other, crying. Accoured Knight, in hapleſſe houre haſt thou misused my men, for thou ſhalt dy an euill death. *Galaor* ſeeing the Dwarffe laboured ſo hard as he could to ſave himſelfe, would follow him no further, but went to ſee if his Launce were vnbroke[n], which he had left in the body of the dead man: and finding it ſound as it was before, gaue it to his Squire, ſaying to the Damosell. Ride now before me, and I will guard you better then I haue done. So tooke they the way againe they had left, that brought them to a Riuier named *Braz*, which could not be paſſed at the foord: now rode the Damosell ſomewhat farre beſide *Galaor*, finding the paſſage ſo ready, as ſhe went ouer before he came. In meane while he ſtaied the returne of the boate, he ſpied the Dwarffe come after him crying. Vilainous traitour thou art dead, if thou deliuer not the Damosell thou tookeſt from me. Little account did *Galaor* make of his words, but looking backe, he ſaw three Knights come after the Dwarffe well mounted, one of the three thus ſpeaking to the reſt. It were great diſhonor for vs, to ſet all three together vpon one man: and as for my ſelfe, I thinke ſcorne to be affiſted by any. Hauing ſo ſaid, with a full course he ran a- gainſt the Prince, who likewiſe was ready to entertaine him, and they encountered in ſuch forte, as the Knight piercēd *Galaors* Armour, making him feele the naked pointe of his Launce: but *Galaor* bad him ſo brauely welcome, casting him from his faddle with ſuch might, as he lay on the ground not able to stirre, whereat the other twaine were ſo abashed, that they ranne againſt the Prince, the one failing, and the other breaking his Lance: which *Galaor* determining to re- uenge, ſtoke his Launce into the fight of the laſt Knights Helmet, as he made it fall from his head, and he (hauing lost his ſtirrups) ready to ly along. Meane while, the ſecond who had not broken, returned againſt *Galaor*, & ſped in meeting. Now albeit the encounter was with great vigour, yet escaped the armour on either ſide. Hauing thus galantly ſhiuſed their ſtaues, they drew forth their ſwords, beginning a fierce and cruell combat, and while the fight endured, the Dwarffe without ceaſing cryed to his men. Looke well that he escape not, but kill him leaſt he get away. Then *Galaor* comming neare him who had left his Helmet, reached him ſuch a ſtroke on the head, as he tumbled downe dead before him. And when the third ſaw his companion ſlaine, being affraid of himſelfe, he turned his back and away: but *Galaor* pursued him ſo neare, that he gaue him a blow betweene the neck and the ſhoulders, which brought off a great many plats of his Armour. Now did the run-a-waies ſeare more & more encrease, when he fel his enemy ſo neare at hand, wherefore the better to ſave himſelfe, he caſt his ſhield back o-uer his ſhoulders, & fled away faster then he did before: which *Galaor* perceiving, would follow him no longer, but hafily returned, thin- king to take the Dwarffe and binde his legs to a tree, from which the Dwarffe kept himſelfe well enough, for he had gotten more ground in running away then the other. Here-upon he came to the firſt that he diſmothed, who hauing ſome- what

what recovered himself, *Galaor* thus spake to him. Insooth your misfortune grieueth mee more then your fellowes doth, for like a good Knight you came alone to me, albeit I know not on what occasion, in respect I never offend ye as I remember. It is very true, answered the Knight, notwithstanding you must note what the Dwarffe sayd to vs: how you had beaten him, slaine his men, and taken a Lady perforce from him, that was in his companie.

Beleeue me, quoth *Galaor*, shewing him the Damosell on the other side of the Riuer) he falsly lyed, and were it that I had brought her away perforce, she would not tarry for me, so willingly as shee doth: but shee unhappily straying in this Forrest, the Dwarffe met with her, offering to leaue her away against her will, and because she would not obey him, he gaue her many cruel strokes with a staff. Ah, Traitor that he is, answered the knight, for this villainie shall I reward him, if ever wee meete againe. And because *Galaor* found the Knight in so good Tort, he holpe to take his horse that had esped: desiring him to punish the Dwarffe for his treason. This done, he entred the boate and past the water, afterward hee and the Damosell rode on their way, shee shewing him soone after a Castle neare at hand, which stod very brauely on the toppe of a Moun- taine, laying. Here will be the best lodging we shall finde this night: and alighting from their horses, they were entertained there with maruellous cortesie, it being the dwelling of the Damosells mother. Soone after was the Prince vna- mounted, and then the Damosell came to him in this manner.

To the ende (my Lord) I may keepe promise with yee, if you please to stay heere till I retурne, which credite me shal be very spedily: I will bring ye newes of her whom you desire to see. I am content, answered *Galaor*, prouided that you make no tarriance, because I haue affaires of importance elsewhete. Let it suffice, replied the Damosell, you shall see me againe sooner then you imagine. And so shee departed, vsing such diligence, as *Galaor* was not displeased with her stay. At her retурne, they mounted on horse-backe, and rode together crosse the Forrest, which when they left, the night ouer-tooke them: whereupon the Damosell forsaking the out-right way, turned aside, and by time the greater part of the night was spent, they arrived at a very faire Cittie, named *Grandunes*, where comming to a Castle gate, the Damosell sayd. Now let vs alight, and follow me, for here will I shew you her, I promised: but leaue not your wea- posse and Armour, because one can scant tell what may happen. The Damosell went before, and *Galaor* followed her till they came neare the wall. Get vp heere said the Damosell, and I will goe on the other side to attend you. With much adoe he ascended the wall, by reason of his weightie Armor, as also beeing troubled with his Shield and Helmet. When the Damosell saw hee was amounted, shee entred the Pallace to guide him as shee begun: in meane while *Galaor* was discended, and sat hard by a Posterne that entred a Garden, where he tarryed so long, till the Damosell came and opened the doore with one of her companions, but ere hee entred, they

they thus spake. Although you haue attained thus farre, yet before you passe any furchet, you must needs tell vs whose sonne you are. Let that alone answered *Galaor*, for I haue such a Father, as til the time of better happe, I am content not to name him. Neuerthelesse, quoth one of them, it is very necessarie we should know, for it shall not be any way to your hinderance. I am (answered *Galaor*) Sonne to King *Perion of Gaule*, and the Queene *Elisena*, and it is not sixe dayes past since I could not tell yee so much. Stay then, said the Damosell: so they caused him to be unarmed, casting a Mantle about his shoulders, and afterward went on, the first Damosell going before, and the other comming behinde him. In this manner they entred the Pallace, passing through a chamber, where many Ladies and Gentlewomen were in bed: and if any one demanded who went by so late, the Damosels (his guides) made answere for him. Thus not perceiued by any, they came to another Chamber, wherein when *Galaor* entred, he saw sitting on a gorgious bedde a most beautifull Ladie, with an Ivory combe kembering her faire locks: but when she espied *Galaor*, shee preuenly cast off her head a Chaplet of Flowers, and came to meeke him whom the Damosels had brought, saying. My Friend, you are right heartily welcome, being the best knight in the wold that I know. And you, Madame, quoth he, are most happily found, being the fairest Ladie that euer I saw. Then the Damosell that had guided him thither, thus spake. My Lord, see here my Mistresse, how am I discharged of the promise I made ye, and if you would haue me say any more: she

Dwarffe and the rest (well acquainted with the secret issues of the Castle) with all speed pursued him, and perceiving how this villainous Dwarffe was cause of all this trouble, stayed, saying to himselfe. Either I will die, or bee revenged on this rediculous creature, if I catch him. Then came the other and set vpon him, but so brauely did he defend himselfe, as none of them durst be bold to tary neare him: for he being moued to exceeding impatience, thrust himselfe in the midst among them, laying about with courage, as well they found who they dealt withall. *Galois* seeing the Dwarffe still kept aloose, determining to die, but he would lay hold on him, and entring among the thickest of them, before his Launce brake he slew two out-right: then drawing his Sword, made them so soundly acquainted with the sharpe edge thereof, as he that thought himselfe hardyest, was glad to giue him way, for no one medled with him but was layd along. At length they compassed him in such sort, as they found meanes to kill his horse, which made him fall to the ground in very great danger, for now they verily intended to murther him, and the Dwarffe perswading himselfe that hee could not escape, came neere to shew some part of his man-hood: but when he saw *Galois* had in spight of them recovered his feet, and happy was he which kept furthest from him, hee turned his horse to escape away, yet by chaunce *Galois* got hold on the reines of his bridle, giuing him such a blowe on the stomacke with the hilts of his Sword, that he fell to the ground so louishly, as the blood gushed foorth at all the conduits of his

head. Then lightly mounted hee on the Dwarffes horse, and the Beast seeming to storme at this change, from an euill-fauoured Dwarffe to one of the best knights in the world, made prooef whether his Rider could sit fast, or no, running violently with him a good distance from his enemies. And turning to make an ende of his worke, as by chaunce he lifted his eyes to the Castle, he saw in one of the windowes the Ladie whom he had chosen as his friend, shooke a white hand-kercher to him, meaning he should be gone with all possible speed, which hee did, because hee perceived more enemies at hand. With nimble pace he hyed him away, not tarrying till hee recovered the Forrest, where to refresh himselfe a while, he gaue his Helmet to his Squire.

Now shall ye vnderstand, how when the Dukes Knights saw him make such haste away, some were of the opinion to follow him, the rest said it was in vaine, seeing hee had gotten into the wood, & thus debating, they went no further, but stood as men confounded, with maruailing howe one man could be able to vanquish so many. Meane while the Dwarffe was come to himselfe againe, but hee felt his body so sore and bruised, as very hardly could he stand on his feet, yet still he cryed to them in this manner.

My friends, carry me to my Lord the Duke, for I will let him know what hee must needs reuenge. Through these importunate acclamations, he was brought by them before the Duke, to whom he declared, how he met the Damosell in the Forrest, & because he would haue accompany her home, shhee cryed out till a Knight came to aid her,

her, who killed his men, and beate him likewise very cruelly. Afterward, how hee followed him againe with three Knights to haue her from him, and they in like manner were all confised.

Lastly, that shew brought the same Knight to his Honourable Castle, and suffered him to bee with her in the Dukes owne Chamber. The Duke being highly offended hereat, demanded if he knew the Damosell he thus complained on. Yea, my Lord, quoth the Dwarffe, if I see her againe. Here-upon all the Ladys, and Gentle-women were feareful, and so soone as the Dwarffe beheld her he sayd. This is shew (my Lord) by whom your Pallace is dishonoured. Ah Siray, tour, answered the Damosell, thou lyest fally, for bad is the Knight come to rescue me in the For-

est, thou wouldest haue abased me: & thenously didst beate me, because I wold not confess to thee. Very much ioyed with anger, was the Duke, signifying Damosell, and sayng now fay this mine honour (false scoundre) I will make the povertie of the medevall afterward her sent her to close prison yet notwithstanding all the paine she endured, shew wouldest not discouer shew touching her Ladys secret, & albeit shew was there very long tormented to the no little griefe and sorrow of knyghts that dearely loued her, and knew not by any other how to vnderstand of her Gresse. But the Author thinking helpe haile kept ye too long from *Amadis*, returneth to him intending when place & master shall serue, to finishe that which afterward happened to *Amadis* and

How after Amadis departed from Vrganda hee knowe he arrived at a Castle, where it chanced to him as you shall read in this Discourse.



The Rest ioy had *Amadis* at his departure from Vrganda as well for understanding that the man whom hee had knighted, was his owne Brother, as also because he approached neare the place where his *Orione* sojournd, hoping ere long to haue a sight of her. And so long traualled he through a Forrest, whereinto he had entred, as he was surprised with darke nigh before he could finde any house for lodgynge, yet notwithstanding the obscuritie of the night, he espied in the wood a great fire: wherefore he rode thitherward, and by the way chanced on a faire Fortresse, as he gathered

ging. Strange? quoth he wthin the Castell, it appeareth so by thy language; but more by thy manner of walking so late: our country-men define the daytyme, and thou shunnest it fearing to be seen; or least thou shouldest shate occasion to Combate, and such an houre as this is; none traualle the May except they be Dames. Beleeue me, answered *Amadis*, little courtesie doth you know of them, that vse these words, seeing without further knowledge what I am, you not only rebuke but condemne me: and I thynke if you are possessed either with fence or man-hood, you haue forsworne to come in like distresse as I am, and haing found it in your selfe, never reprobate it in another. Thou maist make triall thereof if thou wile, quoth he in the Castell: but get thee walking, for here shal thou see no foote this night. Now trust me, said *Amadis*, I thinke thou wouldest haue no man by valle in thy company: yet before we parte, I am desirous to knbw what thou art. That will I tel thee, quoth the other, on this condition, that when soe we wll meete, thou shalt combate with me. I will not sticke for that, answered *Amadis*. Know then, said he wthin, how I am *Dardan*, who commands thee not to stay so farre this night, but that I may find thee to morrow morning. Thou vauntest of thy selfe very much, quoth *Amadis*, but if thou wile cause Torchies to be brought hieher to giue vs light, and come sooth presently without longer stay, we shall shoa see who ought to haue the woeis lodging this night. Vv hat? said *Dardan*, to combate with an Other, the enemy of the day, must bring Torchies, and this night take Armes? wile is he, that so late to gaine such simple

honor, will either puppon spurre or Cuyrate: and with these words he went from the gate.

Heere may the Reader by him selfe discouer awhile what fruite ouer-braining commonly bringeth with it, & conuictiwise; what perfection (among all other vertues) is in modestie: No well grounded courage, or gallant disposed body, can duely put in exercise the benefit of the one or other; if moderation & temperance be not their guides therein. And albeid valiance & hardines is a great gift of God's yet are they so pernicious in such as haue them, (who are transported with passions, or the glory of ambition,) as they be euuen no better then cowardise & presumption. Eloquence, and the facultie of well speaking, is a rich and precious gift of nature, augmented and encreased by long vse and study, to giue light and decking to the faire conceptions of the spirit: but it is there a more hurtfull pestilence in a common wealth, then when a well spoken Oratour will misuse his art & sweetnes of language? Haue not some bin knowne to perwade simple people, to enterprise things which afterward haue brought their ruine and subuertion? I leauing the confidence of the wise, and the opinitive in their owne beauty, the one procuring to many the losse of their soules, and the other to infinite number the destruction of honor: so hurtfull in all things it too much usurpation of ouer-weening, and immoderate estimation of our selues. I will not heere compare the wiſdom of *Liffes*, with the arrogancie of furious *Ajax*, or the violence of *Turnus*, with the temperance of *Aeneas*: not make other remonstrances by the successe of great matters, happening to mighty

mighty personages both *Greekes* & *Latines*. It shall content me, to set for example this only accident of indiscreete *Dardan*, to the end that yong Gentlemen, who take delight to read this History: seeing on the one side the patient magnanimity of *Amadis*, and on the other the furious brutality of *Dardan*, may propose the vertues to be imitated, & the vices to be detested and punished.

*Amadis* then somewhat displeased with the outragious speeches of *Dardan*, departed, not so much caring for his lodging, as how to be reuenged: & concluded, sometime in walking obout, and other while in resting by a bush, to passe the incommodity of this night in the Forrest, thus to beguile the time till day rising. As there hee traced vp and downe, he heard the speech of some body neare him, and looking about, espied two Damosels on horse-backe accompaniied with a Squire: after they had saluted him, and he them, they demanded from whence he came so late armed, wherewith *Amadis* throughly reported, all that had happened to him at the Castell. Know you, said the Damosels, the name of the Knight? That doe I, quoth he, for he tolde me his name is *Dardan*. Very true, said they, hee is called *Dardan the proud*, the most audacious Knight in this country. I beleue it well, answered *Amadis*. Sir Knight, quoth they, seeing you are so vnprouided of lodging, if you will take patience to remaine this night in our tentes, which are pitched heare hard at hand, you shall be welcome. Hee glad of this courtesie, rode with them, and being there alighted, *Amadis* caused his Squire to vurne him. When the Damosels saw him so faire, and

of such honest conuersation, they were well pleased with his company: and so they supped together merrily, afterward they gaue him a pallad to rest vpon. Neuerthelesse, before they parted, they demanded of him whether he travailed. To the Court of King *Lisuart*, answered *Amadis*. And so do we replied the Damosels, to see what shall happen to a Lady, one of the best and most noble in the Country, who hath committed her welfar to the triall of a Combate, and it must be within few dayes following bee performed before King *Lisuart*: but yet wee know not who will be the man, for he against whom the cause must be desyded, is one of the best Knights in all great *Brittaine*. What is, said *Amadis*, the Knight so much esteemed, especially among so many good? It is the same *Dardan*, answered the Damosels, from whence so lately you came. And on what cause, said *Amadis*, ariseth the Combate? I pray ye (faire Ladys) if you know, let me understand it. Sir, quoth one of them, this *Dardan* louched a Knights daughter of the Country, who at his second nupcialls, married her I am to speake of: now hath this Damosell the beloued of *Dardan*, conceiued such hatred against her faire mother, that she hath said to her friend, how she will never loue him, except he bring her to King *Lisuart*'s Court, and there openly maintaine, that all the poore Ladys goods appertaineth to her, and if any gain-say it, he no. iustifie the same in Combate. These news were highly pleasing to *Amadis*, for by these meanes he intended to compasse occasion to be revenged of the wrong he did him: and that in the presence of *Oriane*, who shoulde there preueine what her Knight

Knight was, which made him enter into such thoughts, as the Damosels well noting it, one of them thus spake. I pray ye Sir, for courtesie, acquaint vs with the reason of your sudden musing, if it may without offence be knowne. Faire Ladies, answered *Amadis*, if you will promise me as loyall Gentlewomen, to keepe it secret and reueale it to no one, willingly shall I tell ye: all which they solemnly swore to performe. I intend (quoth he) to combate for the Dame you speake of, and minde not to faile: but I would haue it concealed from any but your selues. When they heard what he sayd, they were much abashed, notwithstanding they made great esteeme of him: seeing what they had vitered in praise of *Dardan*, could not affray him, but hee would hazard the Combate, and therefore shee that alreadie had broken the matter, thus replyed. Gentle Sir, your intent proceedeth fro a high resolued minde, and wee will pray for your prosperons successe. So gave they oþ to other the good night, and went to rest till the morning, when they dislodged together. Then entreated the Damosels, that seeing hee went to the same place they did, and in the Forrest kept men of euill behauour: therefore hee would not forsake their company, whereof he made them promise.

Along they ride with sundrie discoulings, where among other talke, they desired, in respect they met so happily together, that he would bee content to let them know his name. My name, quoth he is *Amadis*, but I pray you keepe it onely to your selues. Proceeding on by vaste and vnfrequented places, one day, when furthest

they were from doubt, they beheld before them vnder a tree, two Armed Knights prepared for the Joust: who seeing them comming, stepped into the midst of the way, the one saying to his companion. Which of these two Damosels wouldest thou haue, and the other I meane to take my selfe? I will said (the other) haue the first. And I her companion, answered the other: so without more words they came to lay hands on them. *Amadis* who misliked such dealing, without the Damosels consent, addressed himselfe to the Knights: demaunding what manner of behauour this was, to Ladys comming from honest place? Such, quoth they, as becometh women of their age. What answered *Amadis*, would you then force them? Who shall let vs (quoth they) if wee please? Marie, that will I replyed *Amadis*: then lacing his Helmet, he tooke his shield & Lance, saying. Let the Damosels alone you shamelesse men, and defend your selues. Without any more talke they gave their spurres to their Horses, meeting together with such puissance, as the Knight brake his Launce, and *Amadis* gave him such an attaint, that hee carryed him from his horse to the ground, with his head vnder, and his heeles vpward: breaking the laces of his Helmet in the fall, so that his head remained without shelter.

When the other saw his companion downe, he would reuenge him, and couching his Launce against *Amadis*, met him so full, as piercing his Armour, wounded him a little, and his stiffe was shuered all in pieces: but the Prince failing with his Launce, encountered him so fiercely with his body and

and Horse, as he lay tumbling hard by his fellow, the comming to the Damosels, he said. I pray ye heereafter come no more behinde, but for your better surety keepe ye before. A while he taried to see if they would rise againe, but perciuing they made no shew thereof, he forbare to charge them any further, & so rode on with his company. Soone after they came to a faire plaine, whereby a pleasant Riuere had his course, and there they cauſed their Tents to be erected: as well to regard the hurt of *Amadis*, as also to refresh themselues. But as they sat at meat, the two dismounted Knights came riding thither, saying to *Amadis*. Sir Knight, you haue won the Ladies at the Lance, now must ye defend them by the sword, otherwise we will cary them hence in despite of you. But you shall not, quoth he, if I can let it: so drawing his sword against him that first made offer, in short time he brought him into such distresse, as without the succour of his companion, he was vnable to hold out any longer: which *Amadis* perciuing, said. Ah Knight, the Ladys make slender account of you, that you must come both vpon one man. Yet notwithstanding he wold not forbare, but as the patterne of unconquerable valour, gaue him likewise worke enough to doe, so that all their wrong turned to his honor: for he gaue the last such strokes on the helmet, as the sword glaunsing on his shoulders, cut in twaine the cuyrates of his armour, & sliced his flesh to the very bone, which made him let fall his sword, and run away halfe dead. Then turning to the other, he cut off his hand vnder his Shield, the paine whereof was so yrkesome to him, as he cryed. Ah I am slaine. Thus

speaking, he threw his sword to the ground, and the Shield from about his neck. All this availeth not, said *Amadis*, for I wil not leaue thee, except first thou sware, neuer to offend Lady against her will. Alas, quoth he, I promise faithfully, and will perfore it. Here-with *Gandalin* came, who gaue him his sword and Shield againe, permitting him to go for helpe whether he would: and *Amadis* returned to the Tent, where the Damosels reioy sing for his safe returne, said. In sooth Sir, we had beþe dishonored without your aide, which is much better then we expected, and such, as not onely assyret your reuenge for *Dardans* iniurie, but the Ladys alſo, if fortune permit, you doe vndertake her quarrell. Then was hee vñarmed, and after his wound was drest, he fete downe to meat againe.

At their departure thence, they lodged at a good Ladies Castle, where they were most courteously entertained, and on the morrow traualied all day, without any aduenture worthy rehearsal, arriuing neere *Windſore* where King *Lisnart* lay, when *Amadis* thus spake to the Damosels. Faire Friends, I would not be known to any ong, therefore til such time as the knight come to the combate, I intend to with-hold my felfe from the place: and when the houre is, let your Squire bring me tydings thereof hither. Sir, quoth the Damosels, as yet there wants two daies of the assignation, therefore if you please we wil tarry with you: and our Squire shall goe into the Towne, and bring vs word when the Knight is arraigned. I am well content, said he: whereupon they pitched their Tent betweene a little wood and a Riuere, and *Amadis* presently put off his armour.

I Now

Now did the Damosels change their opinion, and thought it better for them to go into the Towne, to see how things were in preparation, saying, they might returne when they pleased. *Amadis* not misliking thereof, willed them to do so, in meane while (being vnarm'd) he mounted on horse-backe, inteding to stray abroad a little for his pleasure, & *Gandalin* guided him through the wood. Riding along, as they were on the side of a little mountaine, he might easilly behold the Towne, and when they were at the highest, they alighted from their hōrses: when *Amadis* sitting downe vnder a tree, cast his eye toward that part where he iudged the Princesse *Orissa* should be, then regarding the walles, the Towers, and the whole Castle, breaching forth a vehement sigh, hee sayd. Ah happy Towers, within you is the onely flower of the world: and thou faire Towne, how fortunate art thou in containing that, which all the harts and prases of men cannot comprehend? High in diuine grace were he, who for maintenance of this quarrell should spend his life: but much happy he, that without other combat then his small desert, should reach a blisse so incomparable. Then resting his head on his arme, he entred into a deepe conceit, which prouoked him to sudden silence, and in this melancholly the teares trilled downe his cheekes: in meane while *Gandalin* who knew his complexion, standing where he was vnscene of any, espied a goodly troupe of Lordes and Ladyses comming toward them, whereof he made hast to aduertise the Prince, but he was so perplexed, as he could not answere, wherefore *Gandalin* tooke him by the arme,

saying. My Lord, see you not what a great traime maketh toward vs? At these words he came to himselfe, beginning to sigh, and lifting his eyes to heauen, said. *Gandalin*, if in this loue I were maister of my strength, as I am in diuers other actions: neither shouldest thou haue neede to aduertise me, not my selfe be without councell so much as I am. But I feele my selfe so oppressed, as all the enemies in the world cannot bring me to such extremity, as this ouer ruling passion doth: therefore I pray thee talke to me, of the felicity a man shall enjoy in death, for other may I not taste, and practise no meanes of my life, seeing the contrary doth surmount it. What my Lord? answered *Gandalin*, esteeme you the victory over your selfe so difficult, after so many conquests of stout and bold straingers? Why do you not think, that peraduenture the loue shal you well, for whom you endure such affliction, and happily by a great reason as you loue her? your persoage, pretresse, beauty, and nobility of hōrge, can they deserue lesse, then the good grace of the most rare & and excellent Lady in the world? for these humours (my Lord) repell your desperations. Further hee would haue proceeded, but *Amadis* brake him off in anget, saying. VVretch darest thou blasphemie so much, as to say, that he who hath merited no condicō in the world, may be equalled with so perfect a thing as is my Lady? ente no more into such tearmes, if thou wilt not haue me thine enemy, and soleise my conuerstation. Well, well, said *Gandalin*, I pray ye wipe your eyes, least those that come hitherward perceiue you haue wept. What? answered *Amadis*, comes their any body? Yea mary, quoth *Gandalin*, and

and now they be at hand: here-with he shewed him the Knights & the Ladyses, who were hard by them, by time *Amadis* was mounted. Then (as though hee had stayed for their companie) hee saluted them, and riding among the traime hee beheld a Ladie (very comely and beautifull) who wept very grieuously, where-upon hee left the rest, and rode with her, saying. Madame, God comfort yee, and giue you ioy. In sooth, answered the Lady, and thereof haue I need, in that (as now) it is very farre from mee, which except Heauen fauour me with better grace, I am vittery out of hope euer to see againe. And so high a Maiestie, said *Amadis* can prouide therefore when he pleaseth: Not-withstanding, if you were so contented, I gladly would know the cause of your sadnesse.

Beleeue mee my friend, quoth she, all that euer I enioy in this world, consisteth in the tryall of a Combate. By these wordes hee knew this to be the Lady of whom the Damosels had tolde him before, wherefore hee enquired further, if as yet shee had found a knight on her behalfe? No truely, sayd the Lady, and (which grieueth mee most of all) to morrow must my delay bee exterminate. What will ye then doe? answered *Amadis*. What would you that I should doe? quoth shee, but lament and loose all, vnlesse (by hap) I finde one in the Kings Court, who mooued thereto by charitable compassion, will courteously defend the right of a desolate widow. Such fortune sayd *Amadis*, shall I pray may befall yee, for I should not be a little glad thereof, as well for your owne sake, as also because I neuer thought well of

your aduersarie. I thanke ye gentle Sir, quoth she, to God, I commit the reuenge of my wrong. So passed on the Ladie, and *Amadis* turpiting bridle, rode backe to the Paission, where he found the Damosels, who were already returned from the towne: and presently they told him, how *Dardan* was come into the field, with full resolution to doe his deuoire. And trust me, sayd *Amadis*, it was my happe to meet the distressed Lady, euen the same whom the case concerneth: heere-with hee declared all the talke they had together.

But now is the houre of quiete come, and each one went to rest till the point of day, when the Damosels being risen, carrie to tell *Amadis*, how they would goe before to the Towne, and send him worde when *Dardan* was readie. Not so, quoth *Amadis*, I will not bee farre behinde yee, but let one ride before, to aduertise me when *Dardan* shewes himselfe in the field: After he was armed, they went all to horse-backe, and being come to the issue of the Forrest, he sayd to the Damosels. Now may you goe (if you please) for I will not depart this place till I haire some newes from you. Away they went, when *Amadis* alighting, tooke off his Helmet to refresh himselfe.

No sooner did the Sunne appere in the East, but the King eame to the place appointed for the Combate (which was without the Towne, hard by the Walles) where *Dardan* not long after shewed himselfe, in such manner and equipage, as an ambitious man vseth to gaine goods & honour, also like an amorous Champion to maintaine the quarrell of his beloued: who to countenāce him with the greater favor, was quicly led

by the reines of his Palfray, the presenting himselfe before the king on his knees, he sayd. My Lord, according to the ordinance by you appointed, this Ladie and I humbly beseechyc, that the goods may be deliuered her, as is no more then reason: for if any Knight oppose him-selfe against her, heere am I readie for the Combate. The king then called for the Ladyes defendant, but she (poore soule) appeared alone. Why Lady, quoth the King, are you vnprouided of a Champion, that you come without any to defend your right? So helpe me God (answered she weeping) I am (my Lord) forsaken of all, except you grant me mercie. Great compassion had the King on her, for he knew her to be very vertuous: but he could not togerther order reason and the Law. In the meane while, *Dardan* who thought no resistace would come, sat downe in the middest of the field, attending the third houre, which was the time according to the custome, when the King would pronounce sentence to the Conquerour: but one of the Damosells seeing nowe the needefull time, made haste to let *Amadis* vnderstand, what want of his presence was in the field. For this cause he immediately mounted on horsebacke, and being armed as appertained, commanded the Damosell and his Squire to goe some other way, for he would not be seene by any from whence he came: assuring them, that if he were Victor, hee would returne againe to the Tent. So departed *Amadis* alone, riding on a braue white Courser, (as he promisched the Damosell of *Denmarke in Gaule*) and arriued at the place where *Dardan* held the world in wonder of him. The king

and his Nobles seeing him come from the Forrest, stood somewhat in doubt of him, for hee carryed such a gallant and Knightly counteuarce, as promised a-farre off that his enemie should finde him of hautie disposition: which made the King (aboue all other) desirous to know him, and thinking she for whose cause hee came knew his name, he called and demanded of her the question.

Dread Lord (answered the Ladie) I never saw the man before, nor doe I know what he is. By this time was *Amadis* entred the field, when doing reverence to the king and the Ladyes, with-out longer stay he came to *Dardan*: demauing if hee were the man, that would maintaine the quarrell of her, for whom the poore Ladie was put to such trouble; because, quoth hee, I am come in her defence, and also to keepe promise with thee. What didst thou promise me? replied *Dardan*. That I would see thee in the day-time, said *Amadis*, & wettest thou when? It was at such a time, as thou being whitled with wine, or glorie, or else the trust thou hadst in thy strong Castle, spakest so out-ragiously to me stading without, weariest both with trauaile & hunger. And therfore doe I make the lesse account of thee, answred *Dardan*: but cause her to come hither, for whom thou wilt doe such a doubtie deed, to know if she will accept thee as her Champion, and afterward doe the vter-most thou canst. When the King saw they talked so long together, he would haue heard what they said: but the good Widdow came, and to her, *Dardan* thus spake. Dame, this Knight would maintaine thy right, wilt thou submit all to what he can doe?

doe? With all my heart (quoth she) seeing it pleaseth him to stand so much my Friend, and God speed him no otherwise then my cause is iust. Whē the two knights were at the very point to combatte, the King perceiued that *Amadis* Shield was bruised in two places, both with strokes of the Sword, and point of the Launce, wherefore he sayd to such as stood neare him, that if the Knight demanded another shielde, he would gladly give him one: but *Amadis* was so hot in desire to reuenge himselfe and the Ladie, that he listened to nothing but the Combate. Thus the Ladyes accord being receiued, the two Champions tooke their carrie against each other so roughly, as their Launces pierced their Armour and flew in pieces, without any other harme as yet: but when their bodies met, *Dardan* was sent to the ground, yet it happened so wel for him, as holding fast the reines of his horse, he recovered himselfe more nimly, and mounted againe, as one both valiant and branely disposed, boldly setting hand to his Sword. Whē *Amadis* saw him so quickly vp againe, & in such readineſſe for his owne defence: hee approched to him, when began such a battaille betweene the, as every one present maruailed therat. On all sides were placed the inhabitants of the Towne, and many other that came farre off, as well on mightie Scaſſolds in the field, as also on the towers and walles of the Castle: but aboue the rest, the Queene was there present with her Ladies, most desirous to behold who should bearē away the honour of this crueli Combate; for they ſedmed two ſo gallant companions, as it was hard at first ſight to iudge

the better. Such were the rigorous ſtockes deliuered on either ſide, that ſparkes of fire flew forth of their Helmers and Armoir, their Shields cut in pieces, and their blood colouring the ground, which mooued exceeding compassion in the Regardants, who ſeemed co-partners in their danger, according as ech one fauoured the welfare of his Friend: but the two Champions gaue no reſpect thereto, because their deſire was to make knowne both to the Ladyes and themſelues, the man deſeruing highest account.

When King *Lisard* ſaw them endure ſo long, he ſayd aloud, that hee neuer beheld a more ſingular Combate, purſued with greater courage and man-hoode: wherefore he determined not to depart, vntill he had ſene the finall iſſe therof, permitting them to proceed as they ſeemed pleaſed. And to the ende (quoth hee) that the Conquerour may bee dignified with more then accustomed honouer, I will cauſe his deſerts to be liuely cauſed in Marble, at the entrance of my Pallace, to proouoke the like perfection. In all other, that are deſirous to follow Armes: In ſuch manner as you haue heard continued the two Knights a long time, the ſtanders by being not able to diſcern who had the better: for without taking breath or reſt their ſtry continued, as though their ſtrenght had more and more encreased. But *Amadis* who by chance turning his head to the place where the Ladys ſtood, ſpyed his faire Mifresse, *Orpiana*, whereby hee ſeit his vertue augmented in ſuch ſort, that hee was as fresh and iuste, as if but then hee entered the field; imagining hee was become a better man.

Now followed hee the fight with such cruell extremes, as in shott time he dissolueth the doubt who should be superiour: for *Dardan* (not-withstanding all his defence) was constrained to draw backe, seeking how to escape the wreakefull strokes of his enemie, which without ceasing wounded his boodie in many places: his horse likewise no longer able to endure, stumbled so ofte, till at length he set both his knees to the ground, which made *Dardan* thinke it better to fight on foot, wherefore he sayd to *Amadis*. Knight, our horses are wearie, and faile vs, by reason we cannot doe as we would: and if we were on foot (me thinks) in shott time the doubt would be discideth. These wordes did *Dardan* speake so lound, as the King and his Lords easly heard them: whereupon *Amadis* stemed ashamed, thus answerring. Although it be vnholourable to a knyght, to forsake his boodie so long as he can keepe him: yet since thou thinkest to combate better on foot then on horse-backe, we will alight, and defend thy selfe well, for thou shal haue need.

Here with they dismounteth, as sailing each other so furiously, as if her now they began the Combat, shewing more sharpe crudite then before they had done: yet *Amadis* euer more doeth he aduantage, commonly deliuering two strokes for one, which made *Dardan* doe shaking, but defend his enemie blante, who compelled him to shame & reproch: as himselfe pleased, so threeth ofies decouered him very neare disquished, blaming him because he kept not still on horse-backe: But as he turned here and there, flyinge the shewing Sword of *Amadis*, hit was driven vnder the Ladys Scaffold, whiche madeth

them cry: *Dardan* can hold out no longer, he is ouer-come if he enter the Combate againe. Yet for all this *Amadis* would not leaue him, but pressed him still with such puruite, as hee brought him hard by the Queens Scaffold, when she and all the Ladies sayd. Without question, *Dardan* is dead.

At this clamour, *Amadis* vnderstood the voyce of the Damosel of *Denmarke*, and lifting vp his head, espyed her standing by the Princesse *Oriana*: by means wherof, he became so farre beside himselfe, as hee set the point of his Sword to the ground, forgetting not onely the daunger wherein he was, but also stood amazed at the sight of his Mistres. Which when *Dardan* beheld, he tooke heare afresh, and charged his enemie so brauely, that if he had longer continued, he would haue gone away Conquerour: but the Damosell of *Denmarke* noting this change, spake out aloud. In an unhappy houre did the Knight behold any Lady in this company, whereby he hath lost what he wun of *Dardan*: it is no time now for his heart to faint. These wordes confounded *Amadis* with shame, that gladly could he haue giuen enterteinmente to death, fearing least his Lady would suspect cowardize in him: For this cause lifting vp his Sword, he gaue *Dardan* such a stroke on the Helmet, as made him let both his hands to the ground: then falling vpon him, he rent the Helmet from off his head, & trampled in such sort on him with his feet, as he fell downe like one deuiued of his sences. Afterward, taking him by the locks of his haire he beate him on the face with the pummell of his Sword, saying. Thou dyest *Dardan*, if thou coufesse

not the Lady free. When *Dardan* saw himselfe in such estate: he replied: Ah gentle Knight, for Gods sake mercy, kill me not, I will acquit her.

Now approached the King and the other Lords to heare what hee said, and while they stood consering with him, *Amadis* as yet ashamed of his fault committed, drew backe through the throng, and seeing hee had gotten behinde them all, so couerly as he could he ran toward the Forrest, leaning them al musing at *Dardan*, who filled the empty arie with his complaints. In meane while his beautifull friend came to him, who in stead of giuing comfort for the foile he sustained through her, began to detest and despise him, saying, *Dardan*, hereafter seeke thee some other friend then me, for while I live, will I neither loue thee, or any other, then the good Knight who valiantly ouercame thee. How now Lady? quoth he, is this the reward of my honor & life aduentured for you? you then are not the friend to *Dardan*, but to fortune, who is no sooner contrary to me, but presently you are mine eneny. Haue I then escaped death by the mercy of my foe, to endure worse then death by the crudite of my friend? Heauen suffereth me to live, and yet you repine at my infortunate life: now shal I make knowe to all wo-

men by your example, that ingratitude is no lesse hurtfull to such as exercise it, then to any one offended therewith. Hereupon he tooke his sword, and before it could bee imagined what he meant to do, he smote her head quite from her shoulders: then as a man transposed with madnes, staring every where round about him, declared by his angry, countenance, that high and not vulgare, was the enterprise he imbraced in such an extremity.

The King sent his archers to conuay him thence, but ere they came to him, he stroke himselfe so violently to the heart, as the bloud spouted in the archers faces, and then he cryed out, saying. Now friend art thou revenged by my vngent, and thine enemy satisfied with the despised life thou lefist me. So falling downe, he deliuered the last signe of his death, whereat each one was confounded with maruaile, as well for the noueltie of the case, as piting the very last words he breathed: but when they remembred his passed life, wholly addicte to ouer-weining folly, they repaireth this vnsfortunate end happened to him, not so much by accident, as the detigne ordel nance, which made them sorrow no more, but couerted their thoughts to commend the conquerour.

## C H A P.

How King Liliart caused a Sepulchre to be made for *Dardan* and his friends with an Epitaph in remembraunce of their death: and the honor he did to *Amadis* after he was found and

Feit the vnsfortunate end of these ill aduised Louers, the King in memory of this strange accident, commanded that in the fields where

they lay dead, should be erected a sumptuous Sepulchre of blacke Marble stone, fashioned like a Romane Obelisque, and thereon was engraven in the Britaine language an Epitaph, declaring the whole matter

matter as it happened. And when he had knowledge of the conquerour (as hereafter the manner how is declared,) his name was placed thereon, and four great Lyons at the four corners of the sepulchre, importing the devise which *Amadis* bare in his Shield.

But now the rumour being appeased, and they returned to the Pallace, he called for the stranger that won the honor of the day: but after long enquiry, no one could certainly tell what was become of him, albeit certainte comming fro the wood, reported how they saw a Knight returne from the field thither-ward, being alone and making great hast. He that is worthy, saide the King, to beare him company, may imagine himselfe happy enoug: for seeing he hath shewed himselfe so braue a combatant, it is impossible but he should be a wise and vertuous Knight. And for no lesse each one reputed him, who vnderstood the imuries of *Dardan* vsed to him, and saw how he requited them with gentlenes and courtesie: albeit I make no doubt but he knew right well, that if *Dardan* had got the better, he would not haue pardoned him. Such as you haue heard were the words of king *Lishart*, but *Oriana*, who day by day expected the arriuall of *Amadis*, seeing the incomparable valour of him that fought against *Dardan*, began to suspect that it was he: for (quoth she to the Damosell of *Denmarke*) I am sure hee would not send me a fabulous mes-  
sage, and this is the iust time he as-  
sured you of his coming. In good sooth Madame, answered the Damosell, you say very true, & which maketh me conceiue the better hope, is, that he promised me to ride on a white courser, with the like armes

he had when he combated against King *Abies*: and I remember how the knight who ouercame *Dardan*, had the like horse. But did you, (quoth *Oriana*) take no regard of his Armes? Yea mary did I, replied the Damosell, albeit the cruell strokes receiued thereon, made me hardly perceiue what devise was there figured: yet me thought the ground was a golden field, and the like I told ye he bare in *Gaule*, with two azured Lions rampant portrayed therein, which being bat-tered all in picces, he presently made him such another, assuring me to weare no other when hee came into this country, and there-fore I will doubt no further but it is he. Sweete friend, said *Oriana*, if it be he, either he will shortly come, or send into the Towne, therefore you must be watchfull & diligent to heare thereof. Ma-  
dame, quoth the Damosell, referre these matters to my charge. This conference caused *Oriana* to re-  
maine very pensiue, and breathing forth many bitter sighs, she saide: Ah gratioues heauens, what fauour haue you done me if this be *Amadis*? now shall I compasse thy meanes / better then euer I coulde to speake with him.

So attended the Princesse for tidings from her friend, who returned as he promised to the Damosells Tent, yet was it somewhat late ere he came thither, finding them ready to sit downe to supper. Af-  
ter he had vnarmed himselfe, they told him the misfortune of *Dardan* and his friend, as also the whole circumstance of their deaths, here-  
at he was very much abashed: then falling to their cheer, they begiled the time with sundry pleasaunt de-  
uises, yet *Amadis* could thinke of nothing else, but how he might make

make his arriuall knowne to *Ori-  
ana*, wherefore they were no sooner risen from the table, but he tooke *Gandalin* aside, and thus began. My friend, thou must of necessity goe to the Court, and labour secretly to finde the Damosell of *Denmarke*, to whom thou shalt report that I am here, attending to heare from her what I shall do. *Gandalin* with all possible speed departed, and the better to execute his enterprise, he went on foote, when being come to the Pallace, not long had hee stayed till he saw her he looked for, who was as busie as he in the selfe-  
same cause: yet at the first she knew him not, but quickly remembred she had seene him in *Gaule* with *Amadis*, and embracing him, de-  
manded where his Maister was. Why Lady? quoth *Gandalin*, did not you see him to day? it was hee that vanquished proud *Dardan*, and hath with-drawne himselfe to the Forrest to heare from his mistresse, desiring you by me, to let him vnder-  
stand what he must do. Right welcome, said the Damosell, is he into this Country, being the man desired aboue all othes: but my La-  
dy must needes see thee, therefore follow me. If any one aske who thou art, say thou bringest letters to *Oriana* from the Queen of *Scots*, and likewise thou art come to look for *Amadis*, who is arrived heere as thou hast heard: by these meanes thou mayest come to her without heere-after suspition.

Thus was *Gandalin* conducted into the Queens chamber, where the Princesse *Oriana* was, to whom the Damosell of *Denmarke* came, and speaking some-what loude, sayd. Madame, heere is a Squire sent to you from the Queen of *Scots*. *Oriana* weening she had said true, arose to wel-come him: but I scorne him (thinking on you) so farre

farre beyond himselfe, as he hath fallen downe dead in (a manner) before mee, so that I haue imagined (noting the abundance of his teares) his poore heart to be distilled into water, through the conduits of his eyes. If he should die ye offered him great wrong: for he is yours, & easily can ye not finde another so worthy of you. Nor need you doubt, but if you graunt the houre of lengthning his life, he will surpass in Chivaltrie the best Knight that euer bare Armes: wherein it he be happy by his vertue, yet hath he mishap to counterpoise the same, onely through the passions he endureth for you. If now you will not deigne to afford him remedy, much better had it beeene for him, that fortune had let him preish in the sea, to the mercy whereof in his cradle coffin he was committed: then after his preferuation by such strange meane, to suffer him dye by a worse shipwrack then the other. But if his small starres wil not diuert this danger, happy might he haue accounted himselfe, if he had never come to the knowledge of his parents, whose griefe likewise he greatly increaseth, to see him so consume & dye before his day, being vnable to diuine or understand the cause thereof.

*Gandalin* all this while accom-  
panied his words with such teares,  
and often among breathed foorth  
so many mournefull sigbes, as  
would haue enforced the very  
Rocks to rueth: but perceiving *Oriane*  
was touched to the quicke,  
he began againe in this manner.  
Ah, gentle Madame, consent not  
to the death of such a Servant of  
yours, and so good a Maister of  
mine: for beside the common  
losse which will be great, in you-

lone shall consist the fault, more-  
over you shall maculate that per-  
fect beautie, with the high con-  
demned staine of crueltie and in-  
gratitude. Here did he knit vp his  
perswasion, attending an answere  
from the Princesse, but shee was  
not able to deliuer one word, so ve-  
hemently was her heart surprized  
and ouer-come: and holding  
downe her head, let fall wonder-  
full stremes of teares downe her  
daintie cheeke, which enforced  
her to turne on the other side, least  
she should be discried: then when  
as *Gandalin* would haue begun a-  
gaine, she stayed him with a pier-  
cing sigh, saying. Ah, my friend,  
I pray thee say no more, vnlesse  
thou be willing to see me die here  
presently. Now stood shee silent a  
prettie while, often wringing and  
straining her fingers with griefe,  
then setting apart all dissimulation,  
she softly thus spake. The as-  
surance thou giuest me of thy ma-  
sters loue, is highly pleasing and  
agreeable to me: but the passion  
thou sayest he endureth, torment-  
eth me to the very death, so that I  
feele both his paine & mine owne.  
Ah God, let me not be the occa-  
sion of death, to a man so high and  
precious of desert as hee is, rather  
let me worke mine owne death,  
for if he die, I may not liue one  
hour. Thou art come to tell me  
his painfull trauaile, & now thou  
mayest goe to let him understand  
mine, which if thou knewest so wel  
as thou doest thy maisters, instead  
of blaming me with crueltie, thou  
wouldst rather judge me vnfotunate,  
and if I vse any crueltie, it is  
against my selfe, whom I haue de-  
priued of rest, pleasure, and well-  
neere life it selfe. The lesse suc-  
cour can I giue to mine owne de-  
stresse, because (as it often hap-  
peth

how matters went: wherefore *Oriane* wnt to the Queene, leaving  
them in deepe talke together. In  
meane while the Queene demau-  
ded of her daughter, if the Gen-  
tleman were to returne shortly, or  
no: For, quoth shee, I would send  
a token to the Queene of Scots by  
him. Madame, answered *Oriane*,  
the chiefe cause of his coming  
into this Countrey, was to seeke  
for the good Knight *Amadis*, Son  
to the King of Gaule, of whom you  
haue heard such famous report.  
And where is he? said the Queen.  
The Squire saith, quoth *Oriane*, it is  
more then ten moneths since hee  
heard that he was heere, and now  
he maruaileth to misse of him in  
this Countrey. Now trust me, answe-  
red the Queene, right glad wold I  
be, to see so good a Knight in the  
Kings company, for it wold be a  
great comfort to him many wayes  
hauing to deale with so many  
Countys: wherefore I assure ye,  
if he doe come hither, hee shall  
 finde her such honourable enter-  
tainment, as he shal haue no cause  
to depart in haste. Of his Prowesse  
Madame, sayled *Oriane*, I know  
little, but what common bruite  
hath blazed abroad: but heeroof I  
am certaine, how hee was one of  
the most brave yong Gentle-men  
that euer I saw, when in the King  
of Scots Court he served *Mabille*  
and me. All this while *Mabille* con-  
tinued with *Gandalin*, enquiring if  
his maister were as yet arrived. Yea  
Madame, answere *Gandalin*, the  
same was he that vanquished *Dan-  
don*, and expellie change hee gave  
me to salue you on his behalfe. The  
name of Heaven be for euer pray-  
ed, quoth shee, hauing preferred  
our King-man from such exceed-  
ing danger, and now sent him be-  
therto honourably. Ah Madam, said

said *Gandalin*, hee were happy indeed, if the force of loue made him not in worse case then dead: for Gods sake therefore doe you assist him, being thus fully perswaded, that if he finde no ease to cure his afflictions, you shall loose the best Knight in the world, and the vpholder of your fathers fame. Me may be well assured, answered *Mabila*, how hee cannot with greater desire employ mee, then I haue to doe him pleasure: and will him not to faile in what the Princesse hath commanded him: as for thy selfe, being judged to come from the Queene, my mother, thou mayest come and speake with vs at al times as need shall require.

*Gandalin* tooke his leaue for that time, returning toward *Amadis*, who attended the answere of life or death, and into such debilitie was he brought by these extremes as hee had scant force enough to support himselfe: for the short sight hee had of his Ladie at the Combate, encreased such a desire in him to see her at more libertie, as euery houre seemed to him longer then a yeaer. When hee saw that *Gandalin* was returned, in hope of happy newes, hee came and embrased him, not daring to demaund any thing of him, fearing least matters should not fall out to his contentation: but *Gandalin* with a cheerfull countenance, told him that he brought no sadde tydings, and rushing into the matter at first, said. My Lord, God make yee as constant, as you haue cause to be content, for if you haue that vertue, you are the most happy and accomplished Knight in the world. Ouerwhelmed with ioy, *Amadis* caught him in his armes, demaunding what he had done, seene, and heard? I haue

seen and heard, answered *Gandalin* the felicities of Paradise, and know that they are prouided for you, if you hinder it not your selfe. Ah *Gandalin*, quoth *Amadis*, iest not with me, but tell me the very trueth. Then *Gandalin* declared word by word, how euery thing happened, first of the counterfeit Letter, and next the appointed meeting at the window: and (by the way) reported some part of his owne speeches, moouing a change of countenance in *Oriana*, then her answere, even to the conclusion before rehearsed: likewise how he talked with *Mabila*, and how willing she was to assist him with her vttermost habilitie. *Amadis* was so sed with content by these reports, that hee made him rehearse one thing ten times, and I cannot tell which of them was most affectionate: either *Gandalin* in reporting, or *Amadis* in hearing, for both the one and the other seemed insatiable, in the end *Amadis* thus spake.

My faithfull Companion, I thought my self altogether indebted to thy Father, who saued me from the daunger of drowning in the Sea, but I confesse, that duty belongs more necessarily to thee: because (by thy diligence and discretion) thou hast giuen me a better life then he preserued. But tell me now, didst thou take good marke of the place to which she commuanded me? Assure your selfe thereof, quoth *Gandalin*, for she her self shewed it me. Ah God, sayd *Amadis*, how shall I deserue the great good she doth for me? Away from me now all sorrowe and complaining. Yet this is not all my Lord, quoth *Gandalin*, See here a token she hath sent ye, as a testimonie of her honourable loue

to you: so he gaue him the Ring which came from *Oriana*, and after he had long beheld it, kissing it a thousand times, put it on his finger, saying. Faire Ring, that hast beene so happy, as to be caried and accounted deere by the most accomplished creature in the world, albeit thou be now in a place of much inferiour honor yet hast thou not changed thy mistresse, for both thou and I are hers, and she doth compasse my heart with greater force, then thou canst possibly binde in my finger. Let vs leaue this talk, answered *Gandalin*, and returne to the Damosels, who tarry for vs in the Tent: but you must dissemble conningly, for if they see you altered from your wonted melancholie, it may be some hinderance to your determination.

So they brake off cōmunication, and went into the Pauillion, where *Amadis*, (notwithstanding) *Gandalins* councell could not but shew himselfe pleasantly disposed, whereat the Damosels were verie glad, because such behaviour, better besemeed him then his former pensiuenes.

When the houre of rest was come, each one went to his accustomed lodging, and soone after *Amadis* seeing the time commodious for his enterprise, arose and found *Gandalin*, who had already prepared for their iourney: wherefore being armed, they mounted on horse-backe, taking the most conuenient way for their purpose to the Towne. When they came to the Garden, which *Oriana* had before shewed *Gandalin*, they alighted, and tied their horsees at a tuse of trees neare adioyning, afterward they went through a hole which a water course had made in the Garden wall, and approched the wind-

dow where *Oriana* lay: faire and softly did *Amadis* knock thereon with his finger, she not yet sleeping who expected his comming, and when she heard the louing signall of her friend, she awaked *Mabila*, saying. Sweete sister, I thinke your cosin? answered *Mabila*, it may be so, but you haue greater intrest in him then I, or all other of his lineage together. *Mabila* presently arose, and lighted a waxe taper which she had hid for the nonce, when *Oriana* likewise was got out of bed, they came together and opened the casement, where they found *Amadis* no more attending then hec was attended. If they were then well pleased, it were folly to inquire, for all the contentments in the world, might not be compa- red to the ioy of seeing each other. And without question, they had two inducing reasons thereto, for beside the nourishment they recei- ued together in their yonger yecres, and their first amity, conti- nued by the remembrance and good opinion they had of each o- ther: their beauty and perfections were so correspondent, as if they had never seene one another till that very instant, yet had they cause enough to loue together. *Oriana* had on such braue attire besee- ming the night, as set the heart of her loue on fire, for vnder a fine & dainty white frontlet, appeared the rarest golden tresses of haire that euer nature made, and about her shoulders she had a mantle of sign- red cloth of gold, imbroidered all ouer with rich and costly flowrets, as it might beseeme the greatest Maiestie in the world. And for her selfe, a thing more faire was impos- sible to be found, the inward con- ceite of her present comfort, dec- ked

ked her face with such a heauenly beauty, as it seemed that nature in pride of her art, made this piece to excell all other in perfe<sup>n</sup>ction. I will leaue you then to consider on the iudgement of *Amadis*, who (when she was nothing so glorious in fairenes) thought her worthy the loue of the best Knight in the world: now if he stood mute, blame him not, hauing the only iewell of his heart before him, and therefore she to breake off this silence, first spake in this manner. My Lord, if I haue giuen you the liberty (contrary to my duty and custome) to see me in this place at an houre so vnsitting, you must commit the offence to the security, which our former nurturing together loyally promised, and likewise to the good opinion of your great vertues since that time encreased: which hath conquered no leſſe fauour in me, then honor and renoune in all other places. *Amadis* to auoide further silence, thought it better to let his speeches passe at aduenture, then (by holding his peace) to be reputed vnworthy this happines, or not so feruently touched with loue as she was, to exclude all which doubts, he thus replied. Madame, I account my selfe not so much fauoured by fortune in any thing else, as honored at my first entrance into your seruice, euen the very highest tipe of grace she could affoord me: nor do I feele my selfe so beholding to my vertues, as I rest double bound to the that report so wel of me. But when both these benefits shall be excluded, yet is my loue and seruice to you so affectionate, as they can deserue no leſſe then this secret gentenes: and whē you shall allow me more ample courtesie, it may command a sticer bond of duty, but not affection,

for that is already so substantially grounded, that the vttermost good you can do me, is neither able to augment it, or the sharpest vnkindnes diminish it. I know not whether it be seemely for a man, to cōfesse the extremities he hath infinite times endured by this passion, the very least griefe I receiued, hath beene the losse of rest, and banishment of sleepe frō mine eyes: and yet to affiſt me with greater torment, my spirit hath ſcene in a dreame what it vnceſtantly desired. How many times hath it hap‐pened to me, in thinking on you to be ſo cōfounded, that ſuch as haue ſcene me, reputed me not only depriued of common ſince, but euen of very life it ſelfe? What moman, what child well beaten, hath euer powred forth ſo many teares, as I poore Knight haue done? yea my very chiefest enterprizes haue I ſprinkled withall for your ſake: not as ſeeling my ſelfe a happy ſubiect in loue, but rather too little merit of my ſelfe, and much leſſe hope. This fauour proceeding frō you in deigning to heare me, is greater then euer I durſt hope for, and ſo farre doth it ſurmount my paſſions, as I cannot exprefſe the leaſt part of my ioy: my tongue likewiſe ſeemeth as vnprefitable & ignorant of his office, hauing bin ſo long from ſeruing me to you. But aboue all, this impuſſance in ſpeech, ſhall on my behalfe teſtifie to you, what all the words in the world cannot deliuer with ſufficient truth: for as all other beauty in cōparison of yours is nothing, ſo before mine affection, al the other habilitiess of my ſoule vaniſh away, and become of no reckoning. Will you thē (good madame) with your courtesie ſupply my iuſſiciencie, and (with pitie) giue me both life and

and my ſelfe: and conſerue that which elſe cannot be, vnlleſſe it be yours onely. Theſe words vttered *Amadis* with ſuch interruption of ſighes and teares, as witneſſed he had no intent of feigning, but rather knew how to ſuffer then ſpake: wherewith *Oriana* moued to compassion, thus anſwered. I make no doubt (deere friend) but you loue me, in reſpect of the pains you haue taken for me, as alſo by what you haue now tolde me: and though I ſhould haue no ſigne thereof by ſpeech or ought elſe, yet am I cōtent to beleeue, because my heart hath no other deſire, but heerein conceiueith greatest contentment. And yet the torment I ſee you in with impaſſiſe, troublēth my quiet, for you being affluſed by ſufficient proues, and eſpecially this, that I loue ye: me thinks you ſhould haue no further cauſe of ſo ſeuere affliction, but rather ought to temper your paines, in that (through the vniōn of our ſpirits) I ſeele no leſſe then you do your ſelfe. If you will not appeaſe them for your owne ſake, I pray ye let it be done for mine, the rather, that we may the oſtric meeete (if you pleaſe) publiquely: when ſuch ſadnes will but diſcouer, what wee moſt willingly would keepe vnuſtowne, whereby may arife two great inconueniences, and be a meane to hinder the thing we chieſt deſire. Sweete Lady anſwered *Amadis*, I haue ſuch felicitie in ſeeing and hearing you, as wanting ſtrength enough to vnder-prop the burden of ſo eſpeciall contentation: I am faine to fall doun vnder it, experimenting no leſſe the paine of not accuſtomed pleaſure, then the other beſide of continuall penſiuenes, which makes me wonder that I cannot dye heere in this ſolace. If then I haue offendēd you by this traſportation, pardon it in your owne ſelfe, who brought me to this happy misfortune, and likewiſe gaue me this hurtfull mede‐cine: ſuffer me then yet longer to vſe it, that in the aſſurance of your grace, I may by little and little leaue to ſupport it, and attaine the knowledge of liuing content: excuſing my appreſtſhoođ in this felicitie, being yet ſcant ſkilfull enough how to vſe it. Loue is ſickneſſe, and be it fauourable or con‐trary, it cannot be without paſſion, working the like affect in other, which you reproue in me. Well haue you ſaid my friend, anſwered *Oriana*, how you are as yet but an Appreſtſe: and ſo you ſhew very well by your words, prouing that loue cannot be without paſſion. I hope to ſee the time, when you (attaining greater and more perfect knowledge therein, then yet you haue) ſhall be in higher tranquili‐ty of minde, which (it may be) you think cannot be had in this world. Nor ſhall it not happen to you by admiration of that which now you moſt loue, and is likewiſe of farre more leſſe account: but by the fruition of the thing wherein felicitie conſiſteth, the knowledge whereof vniteth and liſteth the ſpirits ſo high as heauen. And albeit I am yet ſo yong in yeres and diſcretion, as I cannot be exempt from the ill you complaine on: yet am I not vnprouided of deſire to haſten the time, when we ſhall liue together merry & contented. Ah Madame, ſaid *Amadis*, the hope of that happy day, ſhall make mee paſſe this mournefull life in patience, ſupporting for your honot my inward paines ſo couerly as I can, & bearing the outward with what couraſe poſſible I may: but I beſeech

ye do me the fauour, as to tell mee when it will be. Well perceiued *Oriana*, that he had not thorowly vnderstood her meaning, wherefore in smiling she said. It is alreadly begun, but the da ling of your eyes will not let you see it. Heere-with *Amadis* became very pensiue, holding his eyes stedfastly fixed on her, and she to change his sadness, tooke him by the hand thorow the window : which *Amadis* kisst a thousand times, without any word passing betweene them, and *Mabila* noting it, she came to them saying. Gentles you forgot your selues. *Amadis* lifting vp his head, courteously saluted her, she doing the like to him, and after sundry speeches of wellcome, as also how long they desired to see him : *Mabila* demanded, what length of time he intended to stay in the Court. So long as it shall please Madame *Oriana*, answered *Amadis*. It must be then continually, quoth *Oriana*, and you shall grant it if the King request it. Sweete Madame, answered *Amadis*, if it please his Maiestie so much to honor me, I will

obey both him and you : yet will I dissemble strangnes awhile. All the better, replied *Mabila*, and in the meane time I pray ye visit vs often. Longer they would haue continued in talke, but *Gandalin* gaue them warning how the day appeared, wherefore he said to *Amadis*. My Lord, me thinkes you are impotunate, but then you must needs accuse the day. *Amadis* gaue no care to him, for he proceeded on still with his devise: but *Oriana* perceiuing *Gandalin* said true, thus spake to *Amadis*. Now goe my Lord if you please, for it is time, & forget not your promise. Then taking her by the hand, and kissing it, he went to horsebacke, returning to the wood where he left the Damosels, who had by entreaty earnestly perswaded him, to goe deliver their cosin that the King held captiue, vntill such time shée presented her Champion, as you have heard : wherefore after they had rested till morning, they returned to the Towne, in the greatest fauour and expectation of the world.

## CHAP. XVI.

How *Amadis* made himselfe knowne to King *Lisuart*, as also the Princes and Lords of his Court, of whom he was honorably receiued and feasted.

**A**rely the next morning, *Amadis* armed himselfe, and mounting on horse backe, rode presently to the Towne accompanied with the two Damosels : where being arrived, they brought him to their cosins lodging, when the good Lady knowing her worthy champion, falling on her knees before him, sayd. My

Lord, all the goods I haue you gaue me, for of you I hold them and no other, dispose therefore of them as you please : but *Amadis* brake her off in this maner. Come Lady, let vs goe before the King, to the end he may acquit you, and I returne where vrgent affaires call me : so taking off his Helmet, hee rode on to the Pallace with the three Ladys. The people knowing him

him to be the man that ouer-came *Dardan* made such thronging in the streetes to see him, as the king was giuen to vnderstand thereof: and he reioycing at his comming, honored him so much, as he came to meete and receiue him on the way, thus speaking to him. Worthy knight, hither are you so wel-come, as may be deuised, because we haue beene very desirous to see you. *Amadis* noting this gracious entertainment, setting his knee to the ground, thus answered. The God of Heauen giue your Maiestie a long and happie life : then the king taking him by the hand, caused him to arise, saying. Right glad am I to haue knowledge of you, being a knight of so excellent deseruing : these wordes enforced *Amadis* to blussh, yet he replied in this manner. My Lord, to desire the Ladys discharge whom you caused to be detained, I am bold to come before your Highnesse : and seeing shē hath answered the Law according to your appointment, (hereafter) I hope shē may enjoy her libertie : yet till this present, shē knew not who maintained her quarrell against *Dardan*.

While the King & *Amadis* thus conferred together, a great number of people gathered about the, some commanding his beautie, other his gallant youth, and all in generall his famous Chiualrie : in that hee being so young, had the power to vanquish *Dardan*, who was redoubted & feared through all Brittaine. By this time, sundry speeches past betweene him and the King, where-among he dissembled his spedie departure, to provoke a desire in him to stay him, and thus spake *Amadis*.

Dread Lord, seeing the Ladie is free, I desire leaue for my returne

be called, and with-out declaring any thing to him, thus spake: Follow me, for I must shew a Knight to thee, that I may bee resolute if thou know him or no. *Gandalin* attended on the King, entring the chamber where *Amadis* was, and *Gandalin* viewing him very earnestly, feigned to haue seene him long-time since, then setting his knee to the ground, sayd. Ah my Lord, great trauaile haue I endur'd to finde you, since I departed from the *Scottis* Court. *Gandalin*, my good friend, right heartily art thou will-come to mee, what newes doest thou bring? None but good, my Lord, answered *Gandalin*, all your noble Friendes are in perfect health, commanding them-selues to your Excellencie, but hence-forth Sir, you must conceale your selfe no longer: then turning to the King he thus proceeded. Mightie King, hee that hath beone so long time vnknown, is this braue Prince, the famous *Amadis*, Sonne to the invincible king *Perion* of *Gaule*: and then came his Fathet to vnderstand so much, when he flew in combate the puissant King *Abies* of *Ireland*, by meanes whereof he recovered his Realme which was well-neere lost. By these deuises was *Amadis* discouerd, and better wel-comm'd then before: for till the he was not knowne, but through his famous deedes, the renowne whereof was every-where blazed abroad, and now was hee so well honour'd for his vertue as his Noblenesse required. So spent they the whole day in honourable Feasting, vntill such time as each one withdrew him selfe, when king *Lisuart* commanded the King of *Norgalles*, that he should lodge in *Amadis* chamber: afterward when they were alone,

to sound his minde, & vnderstand by all meanes possible, if he would consent to remaine in his seruice. Thus leauing them together, hee returned to the Queene, and to her thus spake. Madame, hardly shall I cause *Amadis* to stay (as mine) nor can I tell which way to compasse it, albeit, I never had greater desire to any Gentle-man of long time, for the high account is helde of him, would cause mee to bee much more feared and redoubt. My Lord, quoth the Queene, graunt him any thing he shall demaund, and doe your selfe present him what you imagine will best please him. Hee requesteth nothing of me, replied the king, for if he did, I would consent thereto more willingly then he could desire. Me thinkes it were good, sayd the Queene, to entreat him first, by some other of our Court, & if they cannot preuaile, will him to come see mee, your daughter, and our Cozin *Mabile*: they likewise shall sollicite the matter, for they knew him when hee serued them as a Squire. Then shall we let him vnderstand, how all the Knights here are yours, and none but thinks him selfe honour'd thereby: him will we desire to be one of the Company, that you may enjoy his seruice when need shall require. This will be a good meane, answered the king to procure his stay, and if he will not be wotone by you, we may well judge him of lesse civility the Chiualry. Now because it waxed some-what late, the King bade his Queene good-night, & went to his Chamber. On the other-side, the king of *Norgalles* perswaded his new-come guest, that he would abide in the Court of king *Lisuart*: but *Amadis* could so cunningly dissemble,

semble, that he altogether disgiued the chiefe point of his desire, and might not by all these entreaties be wonne. When he perceiued he laboured in vaine, on the Morrow-morning hee brought him to the king, of whom *Amadis* made offer to take his leaue: But the king answered him in this manner. My good friend, you shou'd haue done me pleasure not to depart so soone, yet can I not constraine yee to tarry against your will, but my Queene would gladly see you before your departure. Nor will I goe my Lord, answered *Amadis*, before I haue done my dutie to her: where-upon taking him by the hand, he brought him into her Chamber, and thus spake to her. See heere, Madam, king *Perions* Sonne of *Gaule*, who is come to salute you before his departure. In sooth my Lord, answered the Queene, he doth mee great honour, and he is very heartily wel-come hither. Then *Amadis* stepping to her, fell on his knee to kisse her hand, but she caused him to rise and sit downe by her: when the king perceiuing they would enter into further talke, with drew himselfe to discourse with his knights, while they conferred together. In meane while the Queene courteously entertained *Amadis*, but the other Ladies and Gentle-women, who had heard such fame of his beautie and excellent perfections, beganne to eye him very diligently, maruailing that Nature had so enriched him, with the onely thing they most desired. Now knew *Amadis* by their countenances what iudgement they held of him, yet durst he not turne his head aside, fearing least seeing his *Oriana*, by some sudden mutation, hee might reueale what carefullly he couerted to hide. And as he continued in this perplexitie, the Princesse *Mabile* came and did him reverence, where-upon the Queene (the better to compasse her intent) called her daughter, who dissembled as if shee scant knew him, and thus shee spake to her. Faire daughter, remember you not the sonne of king *Perion* of *Gaule*, who serued you well while he was your Squire, and yet may doe (if it please him) now he is a Knight? in sooth, you must al assist me in desiring him to grant mee one request. And know ye what it is? quoth she to *Amadis*, the king earnestly entreateth you to remaine in his Court, and yet as I vnderstand, you haue no wil to afford him so samll a fauor. We shal see anon, if Ladies hold greater Priuiledge in knights, then men doe, therefore wee all ioyne together in one suite, that you would be knight to my daughter and my self, & likewise to whom them you see in this faire cōpanie. And if you will doe so much for vs, you shall deliuer vs from seeking support in any other, who happily cannot be so agreeable to vs: for wel we know if you be our knight, we shall sur-passe all them that attend on the king. The Ladyes were before aduertised, what they shold doe in this case, wherefore they flocked about him altogether, and with signes of earnest Supplication, confirmed the Queenes request: especially *Oriana*, who gaue him a signe that he shold consent, but very wisely dissembled it, although he had no other desire in the world: wherefore the Queene seeing him so slow in answering, as if she would haue pressed him thereto, said. Well, Sir *Amadis*, what shall we be denied? Madame, replied

plied *Amadis*, what is he that dare do otherwise, then grant your will and these Ladys present, seeing you are the most honorable Queen of the world, and they likewise deserue the highest point of seruice? therefore madame, by your commandement and the Princesse *Oriana*, as also these other Ladys who are loth to be denied, I am content to tarry with you; yet vnder this condition, that I will doe nothing but for you onely, and if I accomplish any seruice for the King, it shall be yours and none of his. Then as our Champion, answered the Queene, all we accept you: & these glad tidings she soone sent to the King, who was so highly pleased therewith, that he commanded the King of *Norwales* to goe and beare him company, and himselfe for ioy went presently to him, whē taking him in his armes, he sayd. Gentle Knight, right glad am I of your consent to the Queene, and for my part be you well assured, that my desire is to entreat you according to your deserts. *Amadis* on his knee humble thanked him, albeit he only staid by the commandement of *Oriana*, and no such other matter as he feigned to the Queene.

For this time the author leaueth *Amadis*, returning where he left the Prince *Galoar*, who being departed from the Duke of *Brybyses* Castle, where the villainous Dwarffe vnhappily discouered him: all that day he wanded in the Forrest of *Arinide*, not meeting any one to direct him a more ready way, yet toward euening, he saw a Squire come toward him, mounted on a right good Courser. Now had *Galoar* received a certaine wound, by one of the three Knights that assailed him as you haue heard, which

by reason of dallying with his new friend the night past, began to fester and ranckle very much; and seeing himselfe not halfe currant, he said to the Squire. My friend, knowest thou where I may finde cure for a small wound I haue? What if I do? answered the Squire, yet will I not company any such coward as thou art, because it were to my shame and discredit if I should. Enough of that, said *Galoar*, tell mee where I may finde helpe for my wound? Rather, quoth the Squire, would I seeke one to give thee another. Shew me the way, answered *Galoar*, and I will aduenture what thou fearest me withall, I may chuse, said the Squire, except I list. Nay thou shalt do it, quoth *Galoar*, by friendship or force. By force, replied the Squire, thinkest thou I will do any thing for so bad and false a Knight as thou art? Whē *Galoar* heard him speake so impetuously, he drew his sword, making shew as if he would smite off his head, saying. Villaine thou shalt conduct me, else will I send thy soule to all the Deuils. The Squire being affraid, thus answered. Seeing thou enforcest me, I will bring thee to a place where thy folly shall be chastised, and my outrage reuenged. Heere-with he rode before, leauing the right way, *Galoar* following some distance behinde him, and by time they had ridden the length of a mile, they came to a Fortresse seated in a pleasant vally, brauely enuirloed about with trees: the Squire the pointing him to the place, said. Now mayst thou let me goe, for here I hope will be reuenged the iniury thou hast done me. Go thy way to al the Deuils, replied *Galoar*, for I haue enough of thy company. Scant wilt thou like my conducting, said the Squire, before

before thou departest from this castell: wherewitch he turned bridle and away, but *Galoar* followed the path that guided to the Castle, which in his judgement was but newly edified, and being come to the gate, he saw within a Knight arm'd mounted on horsebacke, attended on by five halberdiers, prouided to forbid entrance into the Castle: who comming to him, demanded if he were the man that abused their Squire. I know not, answered *Galoar*, whether he be your Squire or no, but hither am I come by the conduit of a varlet, the most audacious rogue that ever I knew. It may be so, replied the Knight of the Castell: but what would you haue in this place? Sir, quoth *Galoar*, I am sore wounded, and seeke for one to give me helpe. Enter then, said the Knight. *Galoar* rode in, but presently the Knight & his souldiers very fiercely assailed him, yet the first that came before him, thinking to strike at his head with his halberd, was folowed so neet, as *Galoar* snatched his weapon out of his hand, giuing the Knight such a wound therewith, that he fell down dead. Then entring among the other, he gaue them so many rough and sharpe charges, as in the end three of them were slaine outright, the other two fled so fast as they could into the Castle: and *Galoar* would haue pursued them, but that his Squire cryed to him: My Lord take your Armes, for within mee thinkes I haere a great rumour of people, my selfe will take this hatchet to assylte ye if ye stand in need: and although I am vnworthy the order of Chivalry, yet will I defend my Lord to my vittermost habillity: so threw he downe the hatchet, taking vp a halberd and a Shield belonging to one of them

that were slaine. Assure thy selfe, answered *Galoar*, so soone as I finde him that gaue me Knight-hood, thou shalt for thy forwardnes likewise haue thine. So passing further, they saw two other armed Knights come forth, and ten Soulders with them, who were brought out at the gate by the other that fled away. Now was the Squire that conducted *Galoar* to this Castle, standing shewing himselfe at one of the casements, and he cryed aloud to this fresh supply. Kill him, kill him, but saue his horse to do me seruice. *Galoar* looking vp, presently knew him, at whose words his heart was so enraged, that he fiercely ran to mee the new assylants: in which encounter their Lautes brake, especially *Galoar* on him that gaue the first charge, as he made him sure enough from ouer bearing armes afterward. The seeing hand to sword aduanced himselfe to the other, delivering him so sound a greeting, that he tumbled from his horse with his heeles upward: and turning to the halberdiers on foot, he saw his Squire had dispached two of them, wherfore to harten him the more, he thus cried to him. My friend thou hast begun very well, not one of the rest shall escape vs, because such villaines are vnworthy to live. Whē the Squire that was in the windowe saw this bloody confrict, he hasted ranne vp a ladder into a high Tower, crying out so loud as he could in this manner. My Lord, arm yow selfe vnlesse you meane to be slaine. By chance *Galoar* understood him, whereupon he stepped aside to behold what should ensue, whē presently he saw a Knight come forth arm'd, and one bringing a horse for him ready to mount: but *Galoar*, or stepping betwene, laid hand on the

the bridle, giuing these speeches to the Knight. Another time Sir, leare to mount your horse sooner, for I haue occaſion to vſe this horse, & mean to keep him til you can get him from me. Greatly astonied was the knight when he heard him, because all this while he had not ſeen him, wherfore he returnd this anſwer. Are you he that haue ſlaine my two Nephewes, & the other heere in the Castle? I know not who you aske for, replied *Galoſor*, but this I can affiſſe ye, how I found here the moſt diſloyall & bad minded people, that euer I delt withal. I tel thee, ſaid the Knight, they whō thou haue ſlaine were better then thou art, & deereſly ſhalt thou pay for thy boldenes. Heerewith they began a fierce and cruell combate on foot, for the Knight of the Castle was a man of great valour, and ſuch as had ſene this dangerous fight, would haue maruailed that they could endure halfe ſo many blows. Yet in the end, the Knight found himſelf too weake for *Galoſor*, wherfore he thought to ſaue himſelf by flight: but he was followed ſo neare, as hauing entred a porch, he was conſtrained to leaſt out at a window, and falling on a great heape of ſtones, with weight of his armour brake his neck. When *Galoſor* ſaw his deſparate end, hee returned backe curſing the Castle & the wicked inhabitants, and paſſing by a chamber, he heard a ve-ry dolefull voice crying. Ah my Lord, leaue me not to ſuffer any more. *Galoſor* ſtepping neare, ſaid. Open the dore then. Ali Sir, I can- not, answered the voice, for I am tied with a ſtrong chaine. By theſe words, *Galoſor* knew well it was ſome priſoner, wherfore he ranne againſt the dore with his ſoote ſo ſtrongly, that he made it ſtyle from

off the hindges, & entring, beheld a faire Damofell tied by the neck with a great chaine, who thus ſpake to *Galoſor*. Alas my Lord, what is become of the maister of this Castle and his company? They be all dead, quoth he, for com- ming hither to ſeke cure for a wound I received in fight, they cauſed me to enter, and afterward ſet vpon me: but by the helpe of God I haue ſo well defended my ſelfe, as they ſhall neuer doe more harme to any liuing body. Heauen be praife, anſwered the Damofell, for your happy ſuccesse, and leaue me not in this misery, for be- ing deliuered, right ſoonne ſhall I make whole and ſound your wounds. Preſently did *Galoſor* breake the chaine, and the Damofell tooke out of a cofer two little bottles, with other preſcious things beſtrong to the Lord of the Castle, and ſo came downe together into the Court: where *Galoſor* perceiued how the firſt Knight hee iouſted withall was not yet dead, but tra- uailing to his end, wherfore to let him languiſh no longer, he ſo trā- pled on his breſt with his horſe ſeete, as quickly his ſoule forſooke the body, afterward they rode a- way deuizing on many matters.

This Damofell was wife, well gouerned, & of good gracie, where- by ſhe could ſo queintly anſwer & intreac the *Galoſor*, that he became highly enamoured of her: and be- ing able to endure no longer this kindled fire of affeſtion, thought good to make ſome prooſe if ſhee would loue him, whereupon hee thus began. You know (faire Damofell and my friend) that I haue deliuered you from priſon, but in giuing you liberty, I am become my ſelfe captiue, and brought into great danger vniſle you helpe me.

You

You may be well affiſſed my Lord, quoth ſhe, that the matter were ve-ry difficult, wherein I would not obey you, ſtanding ſo deeply bounden to you as I do: for other- wise I might be reckoned among the moſt ingratefull women of the world, conſidering the misery you ſo lately deliuered me from, and therefore doe I remaine at your diſpoſition. In theſe familiar con-ferences they proceeded ſo far, as the execution of this hotte loue ſoone after followed, raſting to-gether the benefit of ſuch content, as other may do the like that haue ſo good fortune: & thus merily they paſſe this night, in the Pauilion of certayne Hunturs they met withal in the Forrest. So *Galoſor* re- ceived by this Damofell, caue of his new wond loue had made, & cure of the other he got in fight.

For certain daies they remained in this wood, during which time the damofell told him, how ſhe was daughter to *Thelais the Fleming*, not long ſince Counte of *Clare* by the gift of King *Lisarts*, and a La- dy whom he had often entreated as his friend. But one day, quoth ſhe, being with my mother in a Mon- aſterie not far hence, the Lord of this Castle (whom you haue ſlaine) de- manded me in mariage, and be- cause my parents miſlike thereof, by reaſon of his vngraſious beha- uour: he watched a day when I was ſporting among other Dameſels, from whom he forcibly caried me away, furiously thralling me in-

## CHAP. XVII.

what were the aduentures of the Prince Agraeis, since his returne from Gaule, where he left Amadis.



Graies returned from his enterprise in Gaule, after Amadis had vanquished king Abies of Ireland, and was knowne to his father and mother as you haue heard: addressed his iourney toward Norway, where he hoped to finde his Lady Olinia. Riding one day along somewhat neare the sea fide, on a sudden hee had a Hart in chace, which when he had some prittie while pursued, he gained at length the top of a mountaine, from whence he might easily deserue the raging bellowes of the sea. Suddenly arose an exceeding great tempest, which with mighty windes so troubled the wa-  
ter, and the thunder ratled with such violedce, as if heauen and the neather religion would haue met together. At length he espied a ship tossed in the tempest, vterly destitute of any safety, and (which was worse) subiect to the mercy of a darke comfortlesse night insuing: wherewith he being moued to pitie, commanded his Squires (as a signall) to make certaine blazes of fire, that they in the ship might chuse their best lading place, without perishing in the darke, himselfe minding to stay to see the end, which happened so well, by the helpe of God and dilligence of the mariners, as the ship tooke safe harbour neare where Agraeis was, when they landed certaine Ladies, who were greatly affrighted with the maruailous tempest, thinking they could not haue escaped so long, Agraeis being one of the

most courteous Princes in the world, seeing them so well landed and free from danger, sent one of his Squires to will them come and refresh themselues in his pauillion: which gentlenes they refused not, and because he was loth to be troublesome to them, knowing they had now neede of nothing more then rest, he concluded this night not to see them, keeping himselfe close in his châber. The Ladys being seperated to their owne cōtentmēt, the matiners made great fires on the shoare to dry their garment, and afterward fell to sleeping, that they wakened not till next morning. Agraeis desirous to see strange women, yet more to serue and honor them, then to remoue his affection from where it was settled: priuily pried in to behold their countenances, they being round set about a fiere, reciting to each other pleasantly their passed danger. As thus he listened their discourses, among the rest he knew the Princesse Olinia, toward whom he was trauailing by vertue of her message: and you must imagine him so intirely addicte to her seruice, as also she in affectiō to him, that they might well be termed happy in their loue. No sooner had Agraeis espied her, but he was so ouercome therewith, as being no longer able to dissemble, hauing before his eyes her so late perill of ship-wrecke, he breathed forth a vehement sigh, saying. Ah diuine comfort, helpe me. When the Ladys heard this cry, especially Olinia, thinking some one of their com-

company was not well, commandēd her women to open the dore, which presently they did, when Agraeis told one of the who he was, that shee might seerely imparre the same to her mistresse, the news whereof were so welcome to her, as immediatly she commanded him to enter. Then were embracings & kissings freely entercoursed, with al other gracious fauours so kind louers could devise, euē the very point wherein loue triumpheth: so that the faire Princesse lost the name of a maiden, with like contentmēt as other who haue assaid, and can more then imagine what I meane. So pleasing was this happy meeting, as they soiourned there six dayes together, beguiling the time with riciprocall courtesies; yet so secretly, as none in the company (except her Damosels) per-  
ceiued.

Meane while the sea became nauigable, the weather faire, and the waters calm: which made the Princesse determine to goe aboord her ship, that she might passe into great Brittaine, whither the King her father had sent her, to be nourished by the Queene Brisena. Which being vnderstood by Agraeis, after he had acquainted her with the cause of his iourney, hee gave her assurāce: that very shortly he would come to her, as well to shew her his faithfull seruice, as also to seeke his cosin Amadis in king Lisiarts Court, according as hee made him promise; wherewith she was not a little contented, desiring him earnestly not to tary long frō her. Thus courteously taking leaue of each other, the Princesse Olinia departed vnder sayle, and in fewe dayes after they landed in great Brittaine, when comming to wind-sore, where King Lisiart kept his

Court: both by him, the Queene, Oriana, and all the other Ladys, was the Princesse and her trayne graciously welcomed, as well to honor the King her father, as also in respect of her excellent beauty.

Now remained Agraeis on the sea shore, giuing many a long look after the ship which caried away the iewell of his heart; and hauing lost the sight of it, he tooke his way to Briantes, a right good towne, in Scotland, where the King his father soiourned, and his Uncle Galuane without land, in whose company he intended shortly to visit King Lisiarts Court. For there, quoth hee to Galuane, shall we finde more good Knights, then in any other Court of King Christian, there likewise may we gaine honor and retiowne better then in Scotland: where we haue none to trye our selues against, vnlesse some fewe that slenderly follow Armes. This Galuane was of gentle heart and a good Knight, desirous among other to reach the top of honor, yet of simple habilitie, as you haue heard before: now the enterprise of these twaine thus concluded, after they had obtained licence of the King, they went on boord with their horse & armour, ech one likewise a Squire attēding on him. Ha-  
ving wind at wil, in short time they landed at Brisow, where they made no long aboard, but riding through a Forrest, they met a Damosell who demāded of them, if that way would conduct her to the Rock of Galeres. No, quoth they, but tell vs Damosell why you trauaile thither? To see if I can finde the good Knight, sayd shee, who knoweth how to remedy a griece I endure at this prefēt. You abuse your selfe Damosell, answered Agraeis, for at the Rock you demanded, you shall

shal finde no other Knight then the great Gyant *Albadan*, to whom if you bring any cause of sorow, he wil quickly double it on yourown head. If you knew so much as I doe, quoth the Damosell, you would not imagine me to be abuled: because the Knight I aske for, hath vanquished the Gyant, and killed him in battaile hand to hand. Beleue me virgin, replied *Galuanes*, you tell vs matter of great maruaile, in respect neuer any Knight deale alone with a Giant, vnlesse it was King *Abes* of *Ireland*, who combated with one, himselfe being armed, and the Giant naked, which was the cause of his death; and yet this attempt of the King, is thought the greatest stratageme that euer was heard of: then found not your speeches, to any likely-hood, for this Gyant surpasseth all other in strength & cruelty. Gentleman, answered the Damosell, the Knight I speake of hath done no lesse then I told ye: wherewith she rehearsed the whole manner thereof; they reputing it strange, and almost incredible: which caused *Agraises* to aske her, if she knew the Knights name. His name (quoth she) is *Galaor*, son to King *Person of Gaule*. Ah Lady, said *Agraises*, you declare the only newes of the world to content me withal, naming my Cofin, who more comonly was reputed dead then living. Hereupon he reported to *Galuanes*, what he had heard concerning *Galaor*, how he was taken away by the Gyant, and till this instant he neuer heard of him. By my faith, answered *Galuanes*, the life of him and his brother is miraculous, and their beginning of Chivalrie so famous, as I thinke their like is not to be found through the world; but Damosell, what would

you haue with that Knight? My Lord, quoth she, I seeke his ayde on the behalfe of a Damosell, who is imprisoned by the accusation of a Dwarffe, the most villainous creature that euer was born: here-to she added the whole discourse of *Galaor* and the Dwarffe, as hath beene already declared to you, yet she concealed the louely pranck of *Aldena*. And because Sir, sayde she, the Damosell will not confirme what the Dwarffe hath auouched, the Duke of *Bristoya* hath sworne, that within ten dayes she shall be burned aliue: which is an occasion of great griefe to the other Ladyes, doubting least shee through feare of death will accuse some of them, and tell withall to what end *Galaor* came into the Dukes Castle: more-ouer, of the ten dayes, foure are already expred. Seeing it falleth out so, answered *Agraises*, you neede traualle no further, for we will perorme what *Galaor* should doe, if not in strength, yet in good will, and therefore be you our guide to the place. The Damosel turned her haquency, and led them with such speede to the Dukes Castle, that they arriuied there the day before the execution should be. Now was the Duke set down to dinner, when the two Knights entring the great hall, humbly saluted him, & when he saw them, he requested they would sit downe to dinner with him: but they answered, that hee should presently know the cause of their comming, where-upon, *Galuanes* thus began. My Lord, you detaine a Damosell prisoner, by the false and disloyall accusation of a traiterous Dwarffe; we desire that she may be deliuered seeing she hath no way mis-done: and if it be needfull to prove her innocency

cency by battaile, let come two other to maintaine the quarrell, for we are ready as her defenders. We haue you sayd, replied the Duke: and calling for the Dwarffe, thus spake. Wchold God Knight thou wert the man by wh<sup>o</sup> this quarrell begā, too high a price should I set on thy folly. We shall quickly see; quoth *Agraises*, what thou canst doe; but I am assurid if he were present, he would make no account of two such bragges as thou art, how lust or vnlust the cause were on his side, by greater reaso then do I leaue thee to iudge, how notably he would handle thee in this, consisting on truth and e-quitie. While these menaces thus passer on either side, the Duke stirred not from the table till dinner was done, when seeing the Knights prepared to execute their spe-ches, he conducted them with a braue company of Gentlemen, to the place appointed to end such controversies, where all accustomed ceremonies being obserued, the Duke thus spake to *Agraises*. Performe the veteriost of your habilitie, yet shall not the Damosel be deliuered, for to the Dwarffe hath not been offered injury alone, but so much beside as are of higher reckoning then your selfe. My Lord, quoth *Agraises*, you caused her to be apprehended only by his false accusation, and he had deliuered your judgement with a lyer: wherefore if any fortunetike mee-*conquerour*, you ought by good reason redresse her. I haue tolde you what I meane to doe, said the Duke, and otherwise it shall not be. *Agraises* carrying for no more worder, swond his horfe, running a braue cartire against the Dwarffe Knight, and in the encouer brake their staves gallantly, striking his wife so furiously with their bodies.

as they were both laide along on the ground: yet quickly they recovered themselves, and vntreaching their weapons, deliuered fierce and cruell strokes to each other; their Swordes being verie sharpe, the Knights valiant and hauily disposed, by meane whereof, their Armour, Helments and sheeldes, were in short time made of slender resistance: yet *Galunes* well saw, how his Nephew had stil the better of his enemy; if then he had before esteemed him a good Knight, farre greater reasoun had he so to doe: notwithstanding, hee was so hot and vigorous, as ofteintimes he seemed out of breath, which made every one imagine (regarding his violence) that hee could not long endure. But in him it proved farr otherwise, for the longer the Combate endured, his courage and strength the more increased, by reason whereof he became the Conquerour, as shall hereafter be declared. The Nephew to the Dwarfe found himselfe so hardly handled, as hee drew back a little, thus speaking to *Agraeis*: Methinkes Sir Knight wee have made prooffe enough, of what we are able to perfoorne in these affaires; wherefore I am of the opinion, that he whose quarrell I undertake, & the other for whom you end cal fight, are neare fallynt any thing wherewith they are charged; otherwise our combate could not thus long haue endurid: but vidooye wold ful to the oþer. Vþel haft thou sayd, answered *Agraeis*, that the Knight for whom I ventur is iust and loyall, but the Dwarfe is a vilaigne and a traitour: and whi I suffer thee to rest, all with thine own mouth thou confesse as muche defend thy selfe therefore better then thou haft done. These angry

wordes did somewhat eleuare the Dwarfes Knights courage, but he had lost so much bloud, that he was no longer able to holde out; by meane whereof *Agraeis* took his pleasure on him, because the other did nothing but defend his strokes: which when the Duke beheld, by reason he fauoured him, he was highly displeased, and to shun the sight of his death, departed toward his Castle, swearing thence-forward to worke revenge for him on all Knights errant, by doing them all the shame he could possibly devise. He being in this furie spake so loude, as *Galunes* overheard him, wherefore he thus answered: Duke thou doost enterprise a great war, especially against such as are known to more worthy Lords then thou art, seeking thus to smother vp the blame of others. As thus he contended with the Duke, the Dwarfes champion fell at *Agraeis* feete, who immediatly snatching off his Helmet, caught him by the head, giving him many blowes with the hilt of his Sword on the face, saying: Confesse the disloyalty of the Dwarfe, otherwise thy life is atan end. Ah gentle Knight, quoth he, giue me my life, for I truly confesse, that hee who you fight for is vertuous and loyall, & promise withall to gaine the Damosell release from imprisonment: but for Gods sake I desire ye, let me not reprooue the Dwarfe mine Vnkle with treason. These words were by all the assistance easilly understood, which mouing *Agraeis* to pitie, he thus answered: For the Dwarfe I will do nothing, but for you being a good Knight, I grant the fauour of your discharge: provided that you labour to your vettormost for the Damosell release from prison, according

ding as you haue faithfully promisid.

All this while the Duke heard none of these wordes, because hee was gone somewhat further off: but *Galunes* laid hold on his horse bridle, saying: By God(Duke)you shall not departe hence, vntill you haue seene the extremity of your Champion: for he is either dead or vanquished; what answer then make ye concerning the Damosell right, & the treacherous iniury offered her by the Dwarfe? What saide the Duke, thinkest thou I will breake mine oath, or do any otherwile then I haue determined? I know not, quoth *Galunes*, what conclusion you haue appointed. Marry this, replied the duke, that she shalbe to morrow morning burn'd, if she tell not what moued her, to cause the Knight come hither who she conducted. Why? quoth *Galunes*, will ye not then deliver her? No, said the Duke, and if thou provide not for thy speedy departure out of my Country, thou shalt well know that thou hast displeased me. Is it true? answered *Galunes*, doe ye threatene me contrarie to all equity, and will not discharge the Damosell so honourably iustified? By heauen henceforth I defie thec, as well on mine own behalfe, as all other Knights errant whatsoeuer. Very well, quoth the Duke, the like do I to thee, and al such as thou resemblest. So went the Duke into his Castle, and *Galunes* returned in an exceeding chafe to *Agraeis*, but reioycing at his Nephewes glorious victory, he somewhat quallified his angry choller: yet did he tel him all the Dukes menaces, and what defiance had passed on either side, wherewith *Agraeis* was very much moued, chiefly for the wrong he threatened to the

Damosell, whereupon he thus replied: In sooth my Lord and Vnkle, it is against all reason, that such a palliard as the Duke, posses sed of so great a signorie, shoulde eare so vile, and bad a minde. Had Ijng thus spoken, he called for his horse, which being brought him, he mounted thereon, speaking thus, to the vanquished Knight: My friend remember your promise, &c, accomplish it so soon as you can, that the Damosell may be released from her imprisonment. In good faith, quoth he, I will performe my vettormost habillity therein. So tode away *Agraeis* and *Galunes*, toward the Forrest of Arinide, wher whi they entred, *Galunes* thus begane: You know Nephew, that I haue defied the Duke, in respect of the iniury he offered vs: but if I mighte giue advise, I would think it good for vs, to ambuscb our selves a while in this wood, wherewhe may easily take him or some of his. I promise ye, saide *Agraeis*, I like well your counsell: wherefore without passing any further, they made choyce of a little thicket, where they alighted, sending their Squires to the Towne to prouide them victuals.

On the other side, the Duke (as you haue heard) being with-drawn to his Castle, grewe into such displeasure against the Damosell, as he thought presently to send her to the fire: where-upon he called for her, & willed her for to haue minde of her soule, because the next morning shee should bee burned, if quickly shee declared not the truth of the Knight: but all these threatenings could not drawe one word from her. Now because the vanquished Knight had promised *Agraeis*, to labour for her deliuerace to the Duke, so soone as hee returne

ned from the field, hee came and fell on his knees before the Duke, beseeching him most instantly to graunt what he had promised on the Ladies behalfe. But the Duke by all meanes excused the matter, saying, he had sollemly vowed she should dye, if shee revealed not the thing he was desirous to know. Therefore (quoth he) I will rather consent to the ruine of my whole Estate, then in one iotte to the breaching of my oath. In this manner was the Knight denied, and the newemoing, very earely he sent for the Damosell, to whom hee spake thus as followeth:

Thou lewd and disobedient woman, now make choice of the fire, or redresse me in the matter I haue demanded; for one of them thou must doe. My Lord, quoth shee, you may appoint what you thinke good; but if I die in this manner, it will be against all law and reason. Presently he committed her to two Sergeants at Armes, accompanied with ten Knights well prouided for their defence: and for the more suretie that shee should not be rescued, himselfe mounted in person on a goodly great horse; then leauing the towne, along they ride thorow the fildes by the Forrest side, and being come to the place prepared for execution, he commanded soorth-with she should be throwne into the fire, saying: Let the stubborne Strumpet die in her obstinacie. But *Agraises* and *Galuanes* being ready armed to aduenture their fortune, discerned when the troupe came from the towne toward the forest; wherefore without longer taryng, ( hauing giuen expresse charge to one of their Squires, to haue a speciall care of the Damosels safety) slyly left their ambu[n]d, beholding the poore mai-

den readie for the fire; when shee perceiving her present daunger, cryed to the Duke, that she would tell what he desired, onely to delay the time of her death. The Duke beleueing shee intended as shey sayd, came to her; when suddenly he espied *Agraises* and *Galuanes* galloping toward him, calling so lowd that hee might easly heare them; Duke, now shalst thou be forced to deliuer the Damosell. At these words were all the Dukes Knights greatly astonished, yet prepared they for their owne defence, where-upon began between them a fierce and cruel fight. Now though *Agraises* and *Galuanes* were alone against so many, yet did they so brauely behauie themselues, as at the first on-set they quailed the greater part of them, before they could devise which way to turne themselues: whereat the Duke was so amazed, that fearing his owne death was neere at hand, he withdrew himselfe behind his men; yet *Galuanes* perceiued it, wherefore he cryed to him: Trayterous Duke, This day thou beginnest to feele the warre thou didst enterprise against Knights errant: then rushing through the preasse, hee minded to charge the Duke, but he retyred aside, willing his Knights to kill their enemies horses, which they on foote might easly compasse. In briefe, these two Champions shewed such chualtrie on their foot-men, as they were vanquished and driven to flight, the most of them so cruelly wounded, that they were scant able to keepe themselves on horse-backe in their escaping away: and the Duke who was better mounted then any of them, made such haste, as hee brought the first newes hereof to the towne, being earely pursued awhile

awhile by *Galuanes*: but when hee saw it was in vaine, he returned to the Forrest, where hee found his Nephew and the Squires with the Damosell.

Such was the rescue of the poore mayden, & shamefull foyle of the Duke, who being arrived at the Towne, caused with all speed a great number to arme themselues, returning to the Forrest to reuenge their late iniurie, thinking to finde the Knights there as yet, but they were dislodged: wherefore failing of their purpose, they dispersed themselues in severall troupes, by five and five in a company to seeke them, the Duke like-wife ( being one in the search ) hauing foure of the best knights hee could make choyce off. And as they rode along in a valley, he espied the Knights condueting the Damosell, wherefore hee sayd to his men: Behold ( my Friends ) the Traytours wee haue to deale withall, let vs set on them before they get leasure to escape: for if they gaine but a sight of vs, they will run away faster then euer wee did. But *Galuanes* espyed them ere they came neere, and shewed them to his Nephew *Agraises*, who hee thought was ouer-waryed with the last assault, which made him say: WEE already haue felt what these villaines can doe, but now must we warily defend our selues, that we may be no more followed in this sort. I know the Duke to be he comes formost, if good hap befall vs, I hope he shall haue his payment first of all: be now (good Nephew) mindfull of your wonted courage, hauing passed through greater dangers then this can bee. Why Uncle? quoth *Agraises*, in time of perill doe you thinke I wil forget my selfe? especially being in

your company? Dreame of no such matter I pray yee, but let vs serue these as we did their compa[n]ions. By time hee had thus spoken, the Duke gave the spurres to his horse, and comming neere them sayd: I am sorry (villaines) you shalldye so honourably, but afterward I meane to hang yee by the heeles on the toppes of these trees. *Galuanes* and *Agraises* buckled close with them, shewing how much they despised such shamefull buriall: on the other side, the Duke and his knights stucke to it closely, especially himselfe, to whom *Agraises* came, and angerly reached him such a blow with his sword, beneath the sight of his helmet, as quite cut away the nostril from his face. The Duke imagining himselfe wounded to the death, turned his backe and fled, *Agraises* following him, but seeing he could not ouer-take him, hee commended him to all the deuils, returning to succour *Galuanes*, whom the other foure had very sore laboured, yet did he hold out so couragiously, as none of them durst come neere him; for one was tumbled head-long from his horse not shewing any motion of life was left in him. *Agraises* being now come from pursuing the Duke, buckled so closely with the first he met, as he fell downe depriued of life: so that there remained but two, who found themselues too weake to uphold the honour of the vanquished, and therefore trusted to the speede of their horses, following the first run-away toward the Forrest, by which meanes they escaped the fury of *Agraises* and *Galuanes*, they suffering them to enjoy that benefit, & returned where the Damosell attended for them, of whom they demanded, if any

Towne or place of lodging were neere. Gentlemen, quoth shee, I know the dwelling of a Knight hard by, named *Oliuas*, who is a mortall enemy to the Duke, by reason he slew a cosin of his, which makes me thinke he will the better welcome vs. Be you our guide thither, said *Galuanes*, and so she was, they being very kindly entertained there, especially when he knew what had happened. On the morrow they tooke their leaue of *Oliuas*, but calling them aside, he thus spake. Gentlemen, the Duke treacherously killed a cosin germaine of mine, who was a good Knight, wherefore I am determined to accuse and combate with him before King *Lisuart*. Now since I vnderstand you are Knights errant, and such as know how, or else your

selues can redresse the wrongs offered to the vnable, yea, by them who (without care of God or their honor) durst proceed so farre. In sooth, answered *Galuanes*, you are deeply bound to prosecute the murder, being committed in such shamefull manner, & we will assist ye in your quarrel on so iust a cause: if the Duke wil bring any Knights to maintaine his wrong, we will be for you, for so little account makes he of vs, that he hath openly givn vs defiance. Most heartliy I thank ye, replied the Knight; and for this cause I will goe with yee if you please. Content quoth they. Hereupon *Oliuas* armed himselfe, and so they rode together to *Windsoe*, where they had good hope to find King *Lisuart*.

## CHAP. XVIII.

How *Amadis* tarryng with his good will in the Court of King *Lisuart*, heard tidings of his brother *Galaor*.

**B**y the discourse past you haue vnderstood how *Amadis* (after he had in open field foyled & ouer-come the audacious proud *Dardan*) was stayed in King *Lisuart* Court by the Ladies request, expressely to be the Queenes Knight: his entertainment by the King, fauour and manifolde other courtesies, you haue likewise heard. It now came so to passe, that as he was one day among the Ladys, a Damosel entered the Queenes Chamber, who falling on her knees before the Queen, said. Madame, is not a Knight heere that beareth azured Lyons in his Armes? The Queene perceiving she meant *Amadis*, an-

swered, Damosel, what would you with him? Madame, quoth she, I haue brought him tidings of a new Knight, who hath begun in deeds of Armes so rarely as ever did any. You speake very much, answered the Queene: but you perhaps being acquainted with none but him, thinke therefore he is beyond all other. It may be so, replied the Damosel, yet when you vnderstand what he hath accomplished, I thinke your selfe will agree to my saying. I pray ye then, quoth the Queene, tell vs what he is. When I see the good Knight, answered the Damosel, hee who carryeth such estimation from all other: I will tell him in your presence, and other news which I am charged to acquaint

acquaint him withall. The Queene was now more desirous to know him then before, wherefore shewing her *Amadis*, she sayd: See here (Damosell) the man you aske for. Madame, quoth she, in respect you speake it, I beleue it, for a Queene of such state as you are, is free from beguiling: then comming to *Amadis*, she thus proceeded. My Lord, the young Gentleman whom not long since you Knighted before the castle of *Bredon*, when you vanquished the two Knights on the bridge, and the other on the cawsey, where you took the Maister thereof prisoner, and deliuered by force of armes the friend to *Vrgands*: most humbly saluteth you by me, being the man whom he reputeth as his Lord, & giueth you to know, how he endeoureth to reach the height of honor, which he will arraige, or dye in the attempt: likewise when he shall performe some-what worthy the name of Chivalrie, he will acquaint you with more then yet you know, vntill which time he shrowds it in silence. *Amadis* soon remembred the speake of his brother, wherefore with ioy the teares dewed his cheeke, and the Ladies well noting this alteration, maruaile therat, especially *Oriane*: who (as you haue heard heretofore) was grounded in such affection toward him, as she was well neare depriued of power to dissemble it. In meane while, the Queene desirous to heare what deedes of prowess the new Knight had performed, sayd to the Damosel, I pray ye continue your message, & tell vs the braue beginning of chivalrie you speake of. Madame, quoth she, the first place where he made prooef of himselfe, was at the Rock of *Gaberres*, where he

combated with the great and terrible *Gyant Albedon*, whome (in open field hand to hand) he ouer-came and slew: hereunto she added the manner of the fight, assuring her that she had seene the same. Greatly were all the hearers abashed at these stowes, but above all the rest the Queene: who demanded of the Damosell, if shee knew whither he traualled from thence. Madame, quoth she, I parted from him soone after, leauing him in the company of a Damosell, who came from her mistresse to seeke him, because she was desirous to know him; at which time he went with her, & since I never saw him. What thinke you heereof Sir *Amadis* sayd the Queene, doest thou know of whence he is? Yes truly Madame, answered *Amadis*, altho I can say but little herein: I shooke haue mine owne brother, for so *Vrgands* not long since assyred me. Doubtlesse, quoth the Queene, the fortune of you both is admirable, & I maruaile how you could come to the knowledge of your Parenes, or they of you: yet would I be glad to see that Knight in the Kings seruice. While these speches endured, *Oriane* who sat farre from the Queene, and heard none of these scylla was in such greefe to see *Amadis* shewed teares, as being vnable to conoceale the same, shesayd to *Mahile*: I pray ye (faire friend) call your cosin *Amadis*, that we may know whicke hath happened to cause him aburie. *Mahile* made a signe to *Amadis* to come, and when he was with them, *Oriane* shewing her selfe somewhat grieved, thus began. Sir *Amadis*, it may full well be sayd, that by some Lady you are now moued to pittie, I pray ye tellvs what she is, and from whence this Damosell

mosell brought you these tydings. *Amadis* quickly perceiued his Mistresses disease, wherefore hee declared all that the Damosell told the Queene: which appeased the icalousie of her hote Louer, and made this shew more amiable conntenance, thus speaking to *Amadis*. Alas, my Lord, I must intreat you to pardon the fault, raised onely by false suspition against you. I promise ye Madame, quoth he, there is no cause of pardon, nor did my heart euer thinke amisse against you: but could you like thereof, that I should goe seeke him the Damosell departed from, and bring him hither with me to serue you? for this I am assured, if I bring him not, it will be very hard to get him hither. Beleue mee, answered *Oriane*, I would gladly wish so good a knight in his company, and therfore you shal doe well to goe seeke him: yet before you depart, acquaint the Queen herewith, that she may imagine, how by her commandement onely, you enterprise this iourney. Hugbly did *Amadis* regratiac his Mistresse: and according to her counsell hee went to the Queen, to whom he began in this manner. It were good (in mine opinion) Madame, that the King had this knight likewise, to attend on his seruice. Certes, quoth shee, I would it might be so if it were possible. If you will grant me leaue, said *Amadis*, to goe finde him, I haue no doubt of bringing him hither: otherwise I know you shall hardly see him, till hee haue made himselfe knowne in many other places. You doe very much for the king, quoth she, if hee doe come; neuerthelesse, I referre it to your owne discretion.

Thus *Amadis* obtained licence

to depart, which hee did very early the next Morning, hauing no other company then *Gandalin*; and spending most part of the day ryding through the Forrest, he saw a Lady come toward him, accompanied with two Damosels and foure Squires: who weeping very grieuously, conducted a knight in a Litter, whereat *Amadis* being abashed, demaunded what mooued them to be so sorrowfull, and what he was they had in the Litter. He is, quoth the Ladie, the onely cause of my care and pensiuencie, my Lord and Husband, who is wounded in such sort as I feare his death. *Amadis* aduanced himselfe to behold the man, and lifting vp the couerture of the Litter, saw a Knight lye there, of goodly personage: but of his face hee could make no iudgement, by reason it was cruelly cut and mangled; whereupon hee called to him, saying. My friend, who hath thus wronged thee? yet did the Knight make no answeres; which made him goe to the Lady againe, and aske her the question. Gentle Sir, quoth shee, a knight that keepeth a Bridge not farre hence, did it, who as we passed by sayd to my Lord, how hee must sweare whether he were of king *Lisuarts* court or no: which made my husband demand why he would know. Because, said the knight, no friend of his shall passe here, but I will kill him. What is the occasion of your hatred, replied my husband? I wish so much ill, quoth the knight, to that vngracious king, as I would gladly haue him in my power, to take vengeance on him at my pleasure: and in despight of him, henceforth shall I slay all such as are belonging to him. Because hee keepeth a knight that killed the valiant

ant *Daodan*, for whose sake I meane to deale in such sort, as the king and his wel-willers shall receiue by me infinite displeasures and dishonours. When my husband heard him, as one agreeued at his villainous speeches, he answered. Know thou that I am one of his Court, & his vowed seruant, who neither for thee or any other will deny him. Highly displeased was the knight of the Bridge with this answere, and without any more wordes charged my husband, so that betweene them grew a cruell combate: but in the end, my Lord was brought into this hard extremity, and farre more worse in the knights opinion, for hee reputed him to be slaine out-right, commanding vs within three dayes to carry him before king *Lisuarts*, to despight him withall. Lady, quoth *Amadis*, I pray you lend me one of your Squires, who can shew me the knight when I come where he is: for seeing your husband hath been so wronged for my sake, it behoofeth me (more then any other) to reuenge the same. What said the Lady, are you hee for whose cause he so hateth the king? Yea verily, answered *Amadis*, and if my hap prooue so good, hee shall neuer heereafter abuse any other. Ah, gentle Knight, quoth shee, I will pray for your prosperous successe. Afterward shee gaue him one of her Squires, and committing him to GOD, rode on with her husband; and *Amadis* neuer stayed till hee came to the Bridge, where hee sawe the knight playing at Tables with another: but quickly leauing his pastime, being ready armed, hee mounted on horse-backe, calling for *Amadis* in this manner. Holla, holla Sirra, I forbide ye to passe any fur- ther till yee haue sworne. What shall I swear? answered *Amadis*. Whether thou be of king *Lisuarts* Court, or no, said the Knight: for if thou belong to him, heere must thou leaue thy head behinde thee. It is a question, quoth *Amadis*, if thou canst doe so much: but I asseure thee, I belong to the Queen his wife, euer since not long agoe. Since when? replied the knight, since a disinherited Lady, sayd *Amadis*, came hither for her right. But thou art not hee, quoth the knight, that foughtest the Combate for her? I am the man, answered *Amadis*, who wonne her peace. By my head, said the knight, now shalt thou loose thine, if I can; for thou didst kill the onely honour of my linage. I killed him not, said *Amadis*, but made him discharge her of his outragious demand, and afterward he became a murtherer of himselfe. All this cannot profit thee, quoth the knight, for by thee and no other he dyed: now for his sake, shalt thou loose thy life. Heereupon they gaue the spurres to their horses, and breaking their Lances brauely, met so furiously with their bodies, as the knight of the Bridge was thrown to the ground; whereof he was not a little ashamed: but by reason the helmet of *Amadis* was unlaced in the running, while hee amended it, the knight had leisure to mount himselfe againe, and to give his enemie two or three strokes with the sword, before he had time to draw out his. All which afterward hee very well required; for striking full at his head, hee brake away the skirts of his helmet, and redoubling his blow, mette so directly with his necke, as his head hung downe behinde his shoulders, his soule

soule passing to the Author of his pride and cruelty. When his gardants of the bridge sawe him thus slaine, they trusted to their heelles, yet *Amadis* would not follow the, but returned to the Squire that cōdueted him thither: willing him to make haste to his Lady, and let her vnderstand how he had reuenged her husbands inurie: which he immediately did, not sparing the worthy attaints at Sword and Launce, which he had seene *Amadis* bestow on the Knight of the bridge.

*Amadis* hauing there no more to do, issuing forth of the Forrest, entred on a large & goodly plaine, brauely beautified with violets, sweete hearbs, and all other deuises of natures tapistrie, which presently prouoked the remembrance of his *Oriana*: riding on in diuers amorous thoughts, he sawe come toward him an euill fauoured Dwarffe, on a simple Palfrey, whō he called to know from whence he came. My Lord, quoth the dwarffe, I come from the house of the counte of *Claire*. Hast thou not seene a young Knight, sayd *Amadis*, named *Galaor*? No truely, answered the Dwarffe, but I know where (within three dayes) I can shew you the best Knight that euer bare Armes in these parts. When *Amadis* heard this, thinking hee had meant his brother, he sayd: I pray thee my friend cōduet me to the place where I may see him. With all my heart, replied the Dwarffe, on condition you will graunt me one request, and goe with me whither I shall guide ye. The great desire he had to finde his brother, made him soone consent. Come with me then, quoth the Dwarffe, and I will bring ye where you shall behold the good Knight. So rode

they on till darke night ouertooke them, which the Dwarffe perciuing, he sayd to *Amadis*, My Lord, hard by is a Castle where we may lodge this night, for there is a Lady who will friendly welcome vs. Thither they rode, and had kinde entertainment, when supper being ended, *Amadis* was brought to lodge in a sumptuous bed: but he could take no rest, his thoughts so hammered on the perfection of his mistresse. And taking leaue the next morning of their friendly hostesse, continued on their iourney till about mid-day, when they saw two Knights fighting against one, then *Amadis* approching to them, said: Gentlemen, may it please ye to pause a while, and tell mee on what occasion your quarrell ariseth? At these words they ceased, & one of the two thus replied: It is because this Knight maintaineth, that he alone is as able as we two together, to bring a hauty enterprise to end. In sooth, sayd *Amadis*, your difference is very slender, for the bounty of the one diminisheth no iot of the other. The Knights perciuing he spake the truth, ended their strife, demanding of *Amadis*, if hee knew the Knight in King *Lisuart* Court, who cōbated for the iniured widow, whereby the good Knight *Dardan* was slaine. Why aske ye? quoth *Amadis*. Because, said the Knights, we would gladly meete with him. I know not, answered *Amadis*, whether your meaning be good or bad, yet is it not long since I saw him in the Court of King *Lisuart*. Hauing so sayd, he rode on his way, when the three Knights hauing conferred a little together, they began to gallop after him: & he no sooner heard them, but turned againe; then doubting they intended

ded some harme to him, he clasped on his Helmet and his Shield, yet had he no Lance, nor they like-wise. Alas my Lord, quoth the Dwarffe, what will ye doe? consider you not they be three, and you alone? What matters that? answered *Amadis*; if they assayle me without reason why; by good right I must assay for mine owne defensē.

On these speeches, they came to him in this manner. Sir knight, we would demand one thing of you, which we desire ye not to denie, otherwise you may not so easilly escape vs. The sooner shall I grant it, quoth *Amadis*, if it bee reasonable. Tell vs then, as you are a loyall Gentleman, where you imagine we may find him that slew *Dardan*? Hee who could doe no lesse then speake the truthe, thus replied. I am free, albeit I would haue you thinke, that I doe not so soone fulfill your request, in respect of adding any praise to my selfe. When the knights heard him, they cryd altogether: Al traytour, thou dyest; and drawing their swords set violently vpon him. *Amadis* offended to see himselfe thus assailed, by them whom ere-while he had so friendly pacified: resisted them with such resolute courage, as at the first stroke he smote one of their armes from the body, the grieve whereof made him fall beside his horse: the seconē also felte his sword so peirantly, that hee clefth his head to the very teeth, and sent to keepe his fellow company. When the third beheld their bad successe, hee put the spurres to his horse and got him away, but *Amadis* being not so well mounted, let him escape, returning to *Gandalin* and the Dwarffe, who thus spake. Credite me my Lord, hence soorth will I trust better to your wordes then I did: let vs therefore make haste hence if you please. So riding at long, at length the Dwarffe shewed him in a pleasant walley two high Pine-trees, neere which was a Knight mounted on a blisous Courser, and two other whom not long before had ranquished, they standynge to catch their horses there strayed about the field. And looking againe, hee espied another Knight lay leaning on his helmet, hauing his shield by him, and twentie Launces ready against the Pines, with two spare horses likewise ready furnisched. My Lord, quoth the dwarffe, doe you see the Gentleman that leaneth on his Helmet? What then? sayd *Amadis*. He is, replied the Dwarffe, the good Knight I promised to shew you. Knowest thou his name? quoth *Amadis*. His name is himselfe, answered the Dwarffe, *Angrioste distremus*, and is the best knight that I haue heard report of. Tell me then, said *Amadis*, why he keepeth there so many Launces? I can thereina, answered the Dwarffe, full well resolue ye, listen then awhile. He loueth a Ladie of this countey, who hateth him aboue all other: neuerthelesse, he hath preuailed so much by fight, as her parents were constrained to giue him her. After he had gotten her into his power, he thought himselfe the happiest man in the world: but shes tolde him, he should wade into no such fond opinion, because hee tooke a yong Ladie against his will. And albeit, quoth free, peradvice you haue enjoyed me, yet shal I haue neuer shal I loose, ye if you do me performe one thing for me. What Ladie answered *Amadis*? is it

within compasse of my puissance? That is it, said she. Comand then sweete Madame, replied *Angriote*, for I will accomplish it even to the death. The Lady whose euill will was toward him exceeding great, thinking to appoint him a place most conuenient for his death, or else to get him there so many enemies, as her Parents might enjoy better assistance to take her from him: intreated him and his brother to guard this vale of Pines, against all knights errant that shold passe this way, causing them by force of Armes to take an oath, how they should afterward traueile to King *Liswari* Court, there to confess her more beautifull then the Ladys they loued. And if it so fell out, that the brother to *Angriote* (whome you see on horseback) were vanquished, and could endure the combate no further: then *Angriote* shold keepe this passage alone, during the space of one whole yeere. For this cause they depart not hence all the day time, and at night retorne to a Castle on the mountaine you see at hand: having already maintained their enterprise three moneths, in all which time *Angriote* never set hand to Sword against any Knight, because his brother hath stil beeene

conqueror. Trust me, said *Amadis*, I belieue thou sayest true, and so I heard in the Court of King *Liswari*, where not long since a Knight arrived, who confessed *Angriote* Lady to be more faire then his friend, and me thought he called her name *Gronofea*. Very true, quoth the Dwarfe: but now seeing you are resolued, remember your promise to me, and bare me company as you sayd you would. With right good will, answered *Amadis*, which is the way? Eventuer this vale, replied the Dwarfe, but because of this hinderance, as yet I thinke we shall very hardly passe. Care not thou for that sayd *Amadis*: so giting his horse the spurres, he rode on, and soone after he met a Squire, who thus spake to him. Go no further Gentleman, if you will not graue the Lady under the Pine, to be more beautifull then your Mistresse. Never will yeelde to such a slander, replied *Amadis*, without force or extreme constraint. Returne then, sayd the Squire, otherwise you must combate with the twaine you see before. If they affaile me, quoth *Amadis*, I must defend my selfe so well as I can: so vsing no more words, he rode on forward.

## CHAP. XIX.

How *Amadis* combated against *Angriote* and his brother, who guarded the passage of the valley, against such as would not confess, that their Ladys were inferior in beauty to *Angriote* s choyce.

*Angriote* brother saw him coming, he tooke vp his weapons and met him, saying: Believe me Knight, you have committed folly, in not

graunting what our Squires gaue you warning of, you must therfore enter combate with me. As for the combate, answered *Amadis*, I like it much better, then to confess the greatest lys in the world. I know well,

well, sayd the Knight, you must do it with disadvantage in an other place. And trust me, quoth *Amadis*, I thinke not so. Stand on your owne defence then, replied the Knight: wherewich they gaue the carrie against each other meeting together so furiously, as the knight was unhorsed: yet held he fast the raines of his bridle, till they brake in his hand, which caused him to fall on his necke to the ground, where hee lay without remembrance of himselfe or any other. Heereupon *Amadis* alighted, and pulling the Helmet from his head, perciuing that he was in a sound, wherefore he buffeted him in such sorte, as he came to himselfe againe. Thou art but dead, sayd *Amadis*, if thou yeeld not thy selfe my prisoner. When the Knight saw the naked sword ouer his head, fearing his death, he yeelded. Then *Amadis* mounted againe, perciuing *Angriote* already on horsebacke, ready to revenge his brothers injurie: and a Squire came to the Prince, bringing him a Launce, which he presented him withall from *Angriote*. Soone after they encountered so galantly, as their Launces flew in pieces without any further harme, and ending their carrie, *Amadis* quickly drew his sword, turning to *Angriote*, who thus spake. Make not such hast (Knight) to combate with the sword, because thou shalt haue time enough for that anon, (this he sayd, in respect he reputed himselfe the best at the sword that might be found:) But I pray thee, quoth he, let vs iust till our Launces faile, or one of vs be sent to the earth. Knight, answered *Amadis*, I haue weighty busines else-where, and may not tyme with tarrying here. What? said *Angriote*, selfe:

selfe, sayd *Amadis*, so shalt thou do wisely, seeing thou art already brought into such danger, for with the finishing of our combate, thy life will likewise end: which can be no pleasure at all to me, in that I esteeme of thee better then thou wearest. These words he vised, as well for the braue Chivalrie he noted in *Angrioste*, as also the great honestie he shewed to the Lady in his possession: whereupon *Angrioste* returned this answer. It is reason I should yeeld my selfe to the best Knight in the world, and the like all other to doe that beare armes: Beleeue me then gentle Knight, I not so much sorrow for my foyle, as the wrackfull chance threatened to me, by loosing this day the onely thing in the world I most loue. That shall you not, quoth *Amadis*, if I can helpe it, beside, the Lady shold shew her selfe very ingratefull, if she acknowledge not your honorable paines in her defence, and it cannot be, but she will esuite ye with the good you haue deserued. As for me, I promise yeto employ my vtermost habillity, in causing her consent thereto, soone as I shall returne from a search I haue now in hand. My Lord, sayd *Angrioste*, in what place may I hereafter finde you? In the Court of King *Liswart*, answered *Amadis*, where(hy Gods helpe) I meane shordly to be. So tooke he leue of *Angrioste*, who gladly would haue had him in his Castle, but he might not be hindered of his iourney.

Thus doth *Amadis* followe the Dwarfe, who guided him ffe daisies without any aduenture, shewing him at length a meruailous strong and pleasant Castle, saying: Sir, within yonder hold you must perfore the promise you made me.

And I will doe it for thee, answred *Amadis*, if it consist in my power. I am in good hope thereof, quoth the Dwarfe, in respect I haue seene some prooife of your fortune: but know ye Sir how the place is named? No verily, sayd *Amadis*, for till now I was never in thi Country: It is called *Valderis*, replied the Dwarfe: and thus deuising, they came neere the Castle, when the Dwarfe willed him to take his Armes. Why? saide *Amadis*, shall we haue any such need? Yea mary, quoth the Dwarfe, for they suffer none to come forth that enter so lightly. *Amadis* buckled on his helmet, riding in before, the Dwarfe and *Gandalin* following after, then looking on every side they could see no creature. This place sayd *Amadis* is not inhabited, where is the request thou saidst I should do for thee? Credit me Sir, sayd the Dwarfe, I haue sometime seene heere a most braue Knight, and the strongest in Chivalrie that euer I saw, who in that porch killed two Knights, one of them being my maister, him hee put to death very cruelly, without regard of fauour or mercy: In reuenge whereof, I would desire that traytors head, which I haue long failed in obtaining, because all such as I brought hither, haue lost their liues or remaine here in captiuitie. Thou doest the part of a loyall seruant, answered *Amadis*: yet oughtest thou to bring no Knight hither, before thou tell him against whom he shall fight. My Lord, quoth the Dwarfe, the man is knowne well enough, and reputed for one of the best Knights in the world: therefore when I haue named him, I could not meet with any so hardy as to reuenge my cause. Belike then thou knowest his

his name, said *Amadis*. Yea my Lord, replied the Dwarfe, he calleth himselfe *Arcalans* the enchanter, *Amadis* hereupon went further in, looking round about if hee might see any body: but all was in vaine, wherefore to rest his horse, he staid there till euening, saying to the Dwarfe. What wilt thou I shall doe now it is so late? Alas my Lord, quoth he, the night being so neere at hand, me thinkes it were good wee departed hence. Nay trust me, answered *Amadis*. I wil not budge hence till the knight come, or some other that can tell me tidings of him. But I dare not tarry, sayd the Dwarfe, least *Arcalans* chance to know me, and imagine I practise the meanes of his death. Yet shalt thou beare me company, replied *Amadis*, as I will nege excuse my selfe from the promise I haue made thee. As thus they communed, *Amadis* espied a Courte somewhat more backward, whereinto he entred and found no body: but he saw a darke place vnderneath, and certaine steps leading into the earth. *Gandalin* got holde on the Dwarfe, who would haue run away, and *Amadis* tooke great pleasure to beholde his trembling, speaking thus merily to him. Feare not tall fellow, but let vs go down these staires, to see who is beneath. My Lord, quoth the Dwarfe, for Gods sake spare me, nothing in the world can make mee goe into such a fearefull place. If thou goe hence, said *Amadis*, how wilt thou enjoy the thing I promised thee, or know that I do my indeuour thererin? Ah Sir, quoth he, I acquite you, and holde my selfe fully satisfied. But so do not I, answered *Amadis*, because hereafter thou shalt not say I brake my promise. On my faith Sir, sayd the Dwarfe, I freely discharge ye, and if you please to let me go, I will tarry for you in the way as we came hither. Get thee gone then, replied *Amadis*, for heere will I abide till to morrow morning attending the Knight.

In this manner the poore dwarfe escaped thence, and *Amadis* went downe the staires, comming into a plaine place so darke, that he could not imagine where he was: yet he proceeded on, and by groping on a wall fel a barre of iron; whereat hung a key which he took, opening therewith a chaine that locked a port-cullis, then heard he a lamentable voyce thus complainng. Ah God, how long shall we remaine in this miserie? sweete death why stayest thou from succouring vs, who call to thee as our last refuge? Soone after the voyce ceased, which made him holde on his way, and enter a vaulte having his sword and Shield ready: then passing further, he came into a great Pallace, at the entrance whereof hung a lampe burning, & six men laide along asleepe, with their Shields and Hatchets lying by them, the best of which he took himselfe. They not awaking he went on by them, and soone after heard another grievous lamentation in this manner. Ah God, full of pitty and mercy, send heath if it please thee to deliuer vs from this hell. Now was *Amadis* in worke case then before, for one of the sixe Souldiers suddenly awaking, sayd to his fellow: Arise, take these rods and make that cursed creature sing another kinds of songs, who hath thus disturbed ye in your sleepe. Mary and I shall, answered the other: so hee arose and tooke the rods, but as he wroke he chanted to see *Amadis* before him, whereat he was somewhat affraid,

yet to be better assured, he demanded, who is there? I, quoth *Amadis*. What art thou? said the other. I am, quoth he, a strange Knight. Who brought thee hither, sayde the Souldier, without any licence? No body, answered *Amadis*, but my selfe alone. The worse for thee, replied the Souldier, now must thou be enclosed among these infortunat people, who cry as thou hearest. Then stepping back, he shut the dore against *Amadis*, and wakyngh his compaions, said. My friends I haue found a strange knight, who to his harme hath entred on his good will. Let me talke with him, answered the Taylor, and if I lode him not worse then the rest, then blame me. So taking his hatchet and Shield; he came to *Amadis* with these words. Caitife, if thou wilt not die, throw downe thy weapons, least with my hatchet I slice thy flesh, & make carbonadoes of it. Very angry was *Amadis* to be thus threatened, wherefore he returned this answer. Slender is thy reason in thinking to feare me with thy words, but the Deuils shall affright thee a great deale more: for I will make them a present with thy soule, which so long hath giuen power to thy wicked body in doing euill. Presently they smote at each other with their hatchets, the taylor delivering his stroke on the helmet of *Amadis*, so that it entred very far therein, & *Amadis* cutting through the taylors Shield, enforced him to throw both it and his hatchet downe to stand to the only defence of his sword: which endurde not long likewise, wherefore he minded to grapple *Amadis* about the body, because he was a man of maruailous strength, yet could he not do so much as hec

meant, in respect *Amadis* was a Knight both stiffe and sturdy. Neverthelesse, the taylor griped him very cruelly, till the Prince gave him such a blow on the face, as brake his iaw bones, which compeling him to fall downe amazed, *Amadis* had the meant to accomplish his promise, seperating with his sword the body from the soale. The other Souldiours that beheld this fight, not thinking the taylor was dead indeede, cryed to *Amadis*: how on perill of his life he should not kill him, least they likewise should send him after. I know not, answered *Amadis*, what may become of me, but I am certaine he is safe enough for doing any more harme: herewith he drew his sword, and taking vp his hatchet againe, marched toward them that came against him, who charged him very sharpe and roughly: yet the first he encountered with, followed the taylor, so did the second, and the fourth being smitten on his knees to the ground, had dyed, but he appealed for metcy, the other twaine bearing him company in the same suite. Cast downe your weapons, sayd *Amadis*, and shew mee them that complained so wofullly: which they did, guiding him the way to the captives, when *Amadis* hearing another voice somewhat neer him, demanded what he was. My Lord, replied the Souldier, it is a Lady in extreame anguish. Open the dore, quoth *Amadis*, that I may see her. Then one of them ran where the taylor lay dead, and taking two keyes from his girdle, opened the dungeon where the Lady was enclosed: but she imagining the taylor entred, cryed. Alas man, take partie on me, and oppresse me with no more torment. Ah

Ah King, quoth she, breathing forth a bitter sigh: hard was my lot to be beloved of thee, seeing I buy my affection so dearely. Her grieuous moanes moued such compation in *Amadis*, as the teares trickled downe his cheeke, returned her this answer. Lady, I am not the taylor that locked you heere, but the man who meanes to deliver you hence if I can, a strange Kaight, seeking my fortune euery where. Alas my Lord, sayde she, what is become of the taylor and his compaions? He and some of them, answered *Amadis*, are sent to hell to looke their copel-mates: then one of the Souldiers having brought a light, the Prince saw how the Lady was tied by the neck with a great chaine, which had so worne & displayed her garments, as the naked flesh appeared in many places. And when he beheld that *Amadis* pitied her, shee thus spake. Although (my Lord) I am at this present sequestred frō al my lifeshood, yet time hath been, when I was the wealthy daughter to a King, and for a King you finde me in this misery. Lady, quoth *Amadis*, it behoueth you to embrace patience, these are but the mutabilitie of fortune, which no one is able to prevent or escape: and if the man for whom you have thus suffered, be of any account, or loue you, I am sure he will conuert right soone this poore estate into rich abundance, and remunerate your long sorrowes with ioy and gladnes. So he caused the chaine to be taken from her neck, commanding garments to be brought and put about her: wherefore hec that brought the lights, ran for a scarlet mante, which *Amadis* not long before gaue the taylor, and cast it about the Ladie shoulde. This being done, *Amadis* tooke her by the hand, conduicting her forth of the darke prison, saying; Sh should never returne thither againe, but he would looke her life before: and passing by where the taylor and the other lay halid, the Lady began thus to complain. Ah cruell hands, how many woes and tormentes haue you givē me, and diuers in this Castle without desert? although your bodies at this instant cannot receiue redigne vēgānce, your damned soules may euermore abide in suffering. Madame, saide *Amadis*, while I go to deliver the rest of the prisoners, I leauē ye in my Squires custody: so passing on to the port-cullis, he met the Souldier that brought the lights, saying. Sir, *Arctalus* demandeth where the Knight is that entred heere, whether he be dead or taken. He who carryed the torch before the Prince, wāys before him at these words, that he set it al, which *Amadis* made him take vp again, thus speaking to him. Villaine, stay rest thou being in my guardes, go on. The assenting the staires, they came into the open Court, where they sawe the greater part of the night was spent, the Moone shinning cleare, and the weather faire: but the Lady seeing the heaer, was sorrel pleat with ioy, that she fell on her knees before *Amadis*, saying. Ah gentle Knight, the Almighty protrect thee, and requite the goodly haue receiued by thee, delivering me from comfordeless durance. *Amadis* looking round about for *Arctalus*, and finding him not, saying he had lost him. Wherefore he saide. If the best Squire in the world be dead, I will take such retaunge for his death, may I but find his murderer; as never wast he like

heard before. Being thus overcome with griefe, hee heard one crie, wherefore hee ran which way he thought best, and found the Dwarfe (that parted from him the night before) hanging by one leg on high at a great piece of wood, hauing a fire vnderneath him full of filthy stinking saours: & neare him he espied *Gandalin* tied to a tree, toward whom hee was going to vnbinde him, but hee saw the Dwarfe had greatest need of help, wherefore he cut the cords in twaine that held him vp, catching him in his armes to set him on his foote, afterward he vnlodged *Gandalin*, saying: In sooth my friend, whosoever entreated thee thus, made little reckoning of thy good deserts. Now because he would deliuer the other prisoners, he met the Lady comming forth of the Castle, as he returned back againe, but going on, he found the gates fast shut against him: whereupon he staid til day light in a corner of the Court, sitting downe by the Lady, accompanied with two of the Souldiers, the Dwarfe and *Gandalin*. And as they communed together, *Gandalin* shewed the Prince a place whereinto he saw a horse led, which *Amadis* being desirous to see, came to the dore and found it shut: but he ran so strongly against it with his foote, that he made it fly open, finding the horse there ready, saddled and bridled, whereon he mounted, attending the day and light of *Arcalans*, who he knew was already arrived at the Castle, by matters he heard of *Gandalin* and the Dwarfe. In meane while he conferred with the Lady, demanding what the King was she loued so deedly, and for whom she had sustaineid such injury. Worthy Lord, quoth she, *Arcalans* getting

intelligence, of the Princes affection toward me whom I loue so loyally, this diuelish enchanter being his mortall enemy: thought he could be no better revenged on him, then by depriueng me of his presence, imagining the griefe hereof would be greater to him then any other. Being thus perswaded, he stole me away, at what time I was with many great personages, who were not able to give me any succor, by reason of the traitorous villainous sorceries: for they could not devise what was become of me, because a wonderfull darke cloud enuironed me, which hindred them from following mee to this place, since when, I never saw light till now you brought mee forth. The disloyall wretch said by the way as he brought me, that he would be revenged on my loue & my selfe by these meane: I poore soule enduring the tormentes, and my loue the griefe of my absence, yet ignorant where. Madame, said *Amadis*, I pray ye name the man you speake of. It is King *Arbas* of *Normales*, answered the Lady, whom it may be you know: I know him right well, replied *Amadis*, for he is one whom I deedly loue, and now do I lesse pitty your sufferings then before: because they haue bin for one of the best men in the world, who will so well recompence them; as by rending you incomparable ioy, your loue and honor shall both be satisfied.

While thus they communed together, faire day appeared, when *Amadis* saw a Knight leaning in a window, who thus demanded. Art thou he that didst kill my iaylor & my seruantes? Art thou he, answered *Amadis*, that so treacherously putteth knyghts to death, abusing likewise both Ladys and Gentlewoman?

mentby heauen thou art one of the vilest villainies that euer I heard of. As yet thou knowest not, said *Arcalans*, the vttermost of my power, but soone shalt thou haue experience thereof, to rid thee of such boldnes in asking me what I can do, whether it bee wrong or right. Herewhile hee went from the window, and not long after came downe into the Court, being well armed, & mounted on a lusty bay courser. Now you must note that this *Arcalans*, was one of the migh-tyest Knights in the world, yet no Gyant, wherefore when *Amadis* behelde him of such stature, hee doubted not of his great force and strength. *Arcalans* perciuing hee eyed him so much, demanded what moued him so to doe? I imagine, answered *Amadis*, that according to thy large proportion, thou shouldest be a man of exquisite Chivalrie: but thy perverse and humaine actions are a foule blenish shoores. Now trust me sayde *Arcalans* I thinke my selfe highly beholding to fortune, who hath brought thee hither to make mee such a smooth farmon: but all this will not helpe thee, therefore defend thy selfe. So charging their Launces, they brake so brauely on their Shields, as the shiuers flew vp into the aire, and with such violence met their horses and bodies, that they were both laide along on the ground. Quickly they arose, & with their swordes began a bloody combate, wherein desire of victorie, and haughty resolution of vngovernable courage, made the continue a long time, till *Arcalans* retirring aside, thus spake to *Amadis*. Knight, thou art in danger of death, and because I know not who thou art, tell me, that when I haue slaine thee, I may yet command thy boldnes in entring heere. My death, answered *Amadis*, is in the hand of God whom I reverence, and thine in the power of the Devil, who is weary of helping thee: and bequeatheth thy body to so innumerable mischieses, as a present perishing of soule and altogether. But seeing thou wouldest so gladly know my name, I am commonly called *Amadis of Gaule*, Knight to the Queene *Brisana*: let vs now then chat no longer but fall to the combate, for on my parte I promis no more resting. *Arcalans* aduancing his Shielde, came with somming fury against *Amadis*, who knew full well how to welcome him: and such eager strokes past on either side, as their shieldes were scattered in pieces aboue them, & likewise many plates of their Ar- mount. Now was it about the third houre, wher *Arcalans* having sustaineid great losse of his bloud, was forced to leud vp and down before his enemy, and seeing the imminent death before his eyes, fled to that part of the Castle where he came out: yet *Amadis* by close pursuite still continued his feare, whereupon he stopt into a chamber, at the dore whereof stood a Lady beholding the combate, and he was no sooner entred the roome, but he caught vp another sword, turning his face to *Amadis*, saying. Enter this chamber to make an end of our combate. The open Court, answered *Amadis*, is more spacious and convenient. I will not come forth, quoth *Arcalans*, for thy pleasure. What? said *Amadis*, thinkest thou so sly to es- cape? so placing his shielde before, he entred the chamber: but as hee lifted vp his sword to strike, he was deprived of strength and the vse of his members, so that hee fell to the

the ground as he had beeene dead. Yea mary, said Arcalans, this is the way to make thee dye as I desired, sleepe then till I wake thee. How say you Lady? quoth he to her that stood by, am I not (in your opinion) well revenged on him? Indeed saide she, he is now altogether at your commandement. Presently he unarmed him, Amadis not seeing any thing was done to him: afterward Arcalans put on himselfe the Princes Armour, thus speakeing to the Lady. Madame, looke (on perill of your life) that no one remoue him hence, vntill his soule haue forsaken his body: then hee intended to iourney to the court, where each one seeing him in the Armour of Amadis, might thinke he had slaine him.

But now the sorrowfull Lady so lately deliuered from prisō, made such moane as would haue melted a heart of Adamant, and what Gandalin's countenance was, you may easily iudge: when Arcalans sawe the Lady lament, he sayde. Dame, seeke some other to deliuer you from prisō, for I haue dispached your hardy Champion. These wordes made Gandalin in such despase, as he fell downe like one fenselesse, and Arcalans called the Lady to him in this manner. Come hicher mistresse, and you shall see him dead that durst so boldely combate with me. When he had shewed him to her, he demaide if he were not now quiet enough, The comfortlesse Lady seeing him in such estate, wanted no teares to

expresse the abundance of her griefe, and withall: Ah God, quoth she, how yrkosome will the reporte of his death be to many? then Arcalans calling his wife, sayde. So souue as this wretch is dead, imprison this Lady where she was before, for I will go to the Court of King Lisyau, and there declare how I combated with Amadis, by covenant, that the conquerour should cut off the head of the vanquished, and within fiftene daies following, to publish his victory openly in great Brittaine. By these meanez none shal quarrel with me about his death, and I shall obtain the greatest glory in the world, hauing overcome him that conquered every one. The went he where he left Gandalin and the Dwarfie, commanding them to be locked vp in a prisō: but Gandalin who wished death, thinking his master was dead indeede, would not go with him, desiring some one to tell him: and to enforcē Arcalans doe him so much fauour, reviled him with names of traitour & villain, hauing slaine the most loyal knight in the world, Arcalans made no account of his words, but because he would not goe willingly, he dragged him by the ears, and thrust him into the dungeon, saying. If I presently kill thee, thou shouldest endure no more paine, but heere thou shalt suffer worse then death. So mounted Arcalans on the horse of Amadis, and accompanied with three Squires, rode toward the Court of King Lisyau.

## CHAP.

CHAP. XX. How Amadis was entangled by Arcalans, who therewould haue deliuered the Lady Grindaloya, and other from prisō: and how afterward escaped the enchantment by the ayde of Vergandas.

After this entente, the Lady Grindaloya, the Lady deliuered by Amadis from a prisō, made such exceeding lamentations for him, as every one pittied her, shee thus speaking to the wife of Arcalans, and the rest in the company. Ah faire Ladies, beholde yee not the beauty of this braue Gentleman, who in so young yeres was the onely Knight in the world? mis-bap attend on such, who by enchantment, iniurie men of vertue. O soueraigne creator, why doost thou suffer so bad minded people to live? The wife of Arcalans, who though her husband was addicte to shamelesse cructie, yet she being of gracious and pittfull disposition, grieved in her very soule to beholde his dealings, and continually prayed for his amendment, comforting the wofull Lady so well as she could. As thus they were devising together, they saw two other Ladyes enter the chamber, each one bringing in her hand good store of candles lighted, which they set round about on the cantons of the chamber: finding Amadis thus lying before the wife of Arcalans and the rest, they being not able to lift or stirre him. Then one of the Ladyes so lately there arriuē, tooke (out of a little casket she carried) a Bookē, whereon she began to reade, and divers times another voyse answered her. As thus she continued her lecture, many other voyces were heard, as they imagined them more then an hundred: then came another booke flying into the chamber, sounding as if the winde carryed it; and fell downe at her feete: that roide, the pulling it in foyre pates, burned it at the foyre corners of the chamber where the candle stood. This done, she returned to Amadis, and taking him by the right hand, said. Lord Amadis arise, you haue slept too long vnaesly. Immedately, Amadis awaked, and rising vp, thus spake. Alas where am I? I mistruste that I am alone. Delcate me Sir, answered the Lady, such zodes as you are must not dye in this forme, rather wil the heauens permitt, that they who haue deliuered it shal dy by your hadd. Herewile the two strange Ladyes, not saying aby more, returned the same way they came, leaving Amadis much amazēd at this aduenture, and looking about for Arcalans: but he was aduertised by Grindaloya, how he was gone to the court of King Lisyau, clad in his Armour, and mounted on his horse, to reporte that he had slaine him in combate. Indeede I felt, quoth Amadis, when he vanquished me, but on my fath me thought I dreamēd: and seeing he is gone with my arborer, I will make his to serue me at this time. Hauing put on the armor of Arcalans, he demanded of Grindaloya, what was become of Gandalin and the Dwarfie: she tolde him they were imprisioned. Euill befall the villainie that so hardely vsed them, sayde Amadis: and Lady, quoth he to Arcalans wife, vpon your fift looke

locke to the safetie of this noble woman till I returne. Coming fourth into the Court, it was a palme to see how Arcalans seruants fled his sight: but Amadis let them run, and went to the darke vncomforstlesse prisons which were filled with captiues.

Now to tel ye in what distressed manner they were, you must note, the place was a vault of an hundred toyces long, yet no more the one foote and a halfe in breadth, without aire or light, and ( which was wors of all ) so ful of prisoners, as they could scarcely stand one by another. Amadis called Gandalin, who being in a manner dead, hearing his masters voyce, began to tremble: yet thinking it was not he because he verily imagined him to be dead, entred into divers doutes of himselfe, whether hee dreamed, or was enchaunted. All this while Amadis greatly grieued, because Gandalin made no answer, wherefore he called aloud againe: Gandalin where art thou? why dost thou make me trauaile so much? speake I pray thee. When he saw ( for all this ) Gandalin answered not, he asked the other prisoners, if a Squire so lately brought in there, was dead or alive: but the Dwarffe remembreding the voyce of Amadis, cryed out. Alas my Lord, we are both heere together aliue as yet, albeit we haue often enough wished for death. Then Amadis caused candles to bee lighted at the lamp, which hung at the entrance of the dungeon, commanding them all to come forth, to their no little ioy and comfort, seeing themselves delivered from such miserable seruitude: and when they came into the open Court, they fell on their knees before the Prince, thanking God and him for

this happie benefit. Amadis beholding their faces so pale, wan, and ouer-spent, seeming rather bloud less ghastly then living creatures, was moued to exceeding compassion, especially they being an hundred and fiftie prisoners in all, and thirty of them were Knights. Armes: as he cast his eye eare where among the, hee made no account of one then all the rest, who notwithstanding his sickness and debility, seemed of braue and comely constitution, and he perceiuing that Amadis noted him so much, stepped to him in this manner. Who shall we say ( my Lord ) hath done vs this grace, by deterring vs from so long wretched thrallome? Such as know me, answred the Prince, doe call me Amadis of Gaul, Sonne to King Peris, Knight to the Queene Brisana, and domestical seruant to King Lysant her husband: in search of a Knight I was brought hither by this Dwarffe, to whom I made promise in a sute he had. In sooth my Lord, replied the other, I am a Knight likewise, and seruant to the same King, who knoweth me full well, as likewise the most in his Court doe, with whom I haue been scene in greater honor then now I am: because euer since my departure from the Court, I haue lived in the miserie from which you redeemed me. How may I call your name? saide Amadis. Brandoyses, answred the Knight. Full well did the Prince remeber, that he had heard report of him in the Court, wherefore courteously embracing him, he sayde. Right glad am I, my starre so fauoured me, to deliuer you & these other from such a hellish place: and though I never saw you till this present, yet oft haue I heard the King and his Barrons talke of your Chiualrie

Chiualrie, your long absence beeing no little griefe to them. The rest of the prisoners cōfessed their bounden dutie to him, desiring him to appoint them what they should doe: hee willing them to shape their course whether they thought best. My Lord, quoth they, albeit we know not what severall Countryes may harbour vs, yet will we still continue your devoted seruants, to attend on you when and wheresoever need shall require. So each one kissing his hand, they tooke their leane, limiting their iourneys as they thought good, not any of them tarying with Amadis, but Brandoyses.

Now go they to the wife of Arcalans, Amadis thus speaking to her. Lady, for your sake and these other Gentlewomen, I forbeare to set this Castle on fire, albeit the euill behaviour of your husband is sufficient warrant therefore: but in regarde of the courtesie Knights owe to Ladies, I am content to remit all at this time. Alas my Lord, quoth she, haauen beareth record of the griefe my soule hath endured, through the behaviour of Arcalans my husband: yet could I do nothing but shew obedience, as becommeth a wife to her wedded Lord, with intercession for his change, notwithstanding, I remaine at your disposition. What I will doe, answered Amadis, I haue already tolde ye, it now remaineth, that at my request you giue this Lady Grindaloys honorable attirements, because her birth and behaviour deserueth no lesse: in like manner, I would haue an Armour for this Knight, to require his own which was taken from him, and a horfe as becommeth one of his profession. If you mislike of my demand, doe more or lesse as you

bidding *Arcalans* wife farwel, mounte on horse-back with his company, the Lady thus speaking at his departure. I shall pray Sir Knight, that God may send peace between my husband and you. Beleue me Lady, quoth he, though I never care for it with him, yet shall it remaine twixt you and me, because you deserue it. So fortuned it afterward these words tooke effect, and highly profited the good Lady, as in some part of this history you shall heare recited.

Now are they departed from the Castle of *Arcalans*, riding till the night ouer-tooke them, lodging at a Ladyes place ffeue leagues thence, where they were entertained with very gracious welcome: and on the morrow, after they had thanked their friendly host, as they rode together, *Amadis* thus communed with *Brandoynas*. Courteous Sir, I trauaile in search of a Knight, as here-efore I told ye, & imagining it will be little pleasure to you to follow me, it were not amisse then if we parted. In sooth Sir, answered *Brandoynas*, I gladly would goe to King *Lisfaerts* court, notwithstanding, if you thinke it good, I will keepe ye company. Little neede shall I haue thereof, answered *Amadis*, I thanke ye, because I must be constrained to wander alone, so soone as I haue brought this Lady into such safety as she thinkes meete. My Lord, quoth she, I will accompany this Gentleman if you please, seeing he trauaileth to the Court of King *Lisfaerts*: and there I hope to finde him for whom I was prisoner, who I am assured will be glad of my deliuerance. Now trust me, answered *Amadis*, very well sayde, goe then together, and God be your guid. Thus are they seperated, now

remaining none with *Amadis* *Gandalin* & the Dwarffe, of whom the Prince likewise demanded what he meant to do. Mary be your trusty seruant, sayde the Dwarffe, if you like so well as I. I am well pleased, replied *Amadis*, and thou shalt doe what thou wilt thy selfe. In sooth my Lord, quoth the Dwarffe, seeing you released me, I would gladly remaine in your seruice, for I know not where I may be halfe so well: the man and the maister being both agreed: they tooke their way as fortune liked to conduct them.

Not farre had they trauailed, but they met one of the Ladyes, that rescued him from enchantment at *Arcalans* Castle, shee weeping and mourning very grieuously: which mouing *Amadis* to pity her complaints, made him demand the cause thereof. A Knight who rideth not farre before, quoth she, hath taken from me a little casket, wherein is matter of great consequence, yet no way able to pleasure him: for such things are therein, as within these three dayes one in my company and my selfe, restored from death the best Knight in the world, and shee likewise of whom I tell ye, is violently carryed away by another Knight, who is ridden before intending to force her. Heere you must obserue, that the Damosell now talking with *Amadis*, knew him not, by reason his helmet beuer couered his face: but when he heard how her casket was taken from her, hee never left galloping till he ouer-tooke him, to whom hee thus spake, Knight, you deale not courteously, giving this Lady cause thus to complaince of you, and me-thinkes you should do a great deale better, to deliver the casket againe you tooke from her:

sayd. By my hand Knight, in hapless time for thee didst thou hinder me of my will. Such a will, answered *Amadis*, as disdainede honor; both men and beasts despise. If I take not reuenge for it, quoth the knight then let me never weare armour againe: The world therin shall sustaine a great losse, replied *Amadis*; of one addicted to such villainy, that seeks to force Ladies, who ought in all liberty and honor to be defended; and so they bee by all loyall Knights: Wilt a braue course they met together; when though the knight brake his lance, yet was hee hurled against the ground so violently, as the weight of his armour and strength of his fall, made him lye trembling in a trance. Which *Amadis* perceiving, to rid him out of his paine altogether, he trampled on his belly with his horse feete, saying, Thus shalt thou loose thy desire of forcing Ladyes. And as for you faire soule, I hope heereafter you are rid from any danger of him. The more am I to thank you my Lord, quoth she, would God my companion who hath lost her casket, were as well deliuered as I am. She was the first, I met withall, answered *Amadis*, wherefore first of all I succoured her so well, as shee hath recovered what was taken from her, and bee holde where my Squire conduceth her hicher-ward.

Now because the heat was somewhat violent, *Amadis* put off his helmet to take the ayre, when the Damosell immediately knew him: for it was shee that as his returne from *Gaule*, conducted him to *Phagandis the unknowne*, when by Chivalry he deliuered her friend at the Castle of *Brandoynas*, which made her remember him, and so did *Amadis* her, when alighting they embrased

ced each other, the like courtesie he shewed to the oþer Damosell. Alas ! quoth they, had we but dreameþ on such a defender, no villain could haue wronged vs halfe so much. On my faith, said *Amadis*, the help you gaue me within these three daies, may not be compared with this matter of no validitie : for I was in greater extremity the you, but how could you possibly vnderstand thereof ? My Lord, (quoth she that tooke him by the hand when hee was enchanted) mine Aunt *Vrgunda* sent me to the Castle of *Arcalans*, by whose meanes we came thither, and you were recouered. Heauen shielde from euill that good Lady, answe-

red *Amadis*, who hath so many waies bound me her obedient seruant : and you faire Damosell, the messengers of this fauour, haue you any thing else wherein to command me ? No my Lord, said they, take you the way you left, and we wil retorne from whence we came. Farewell sweet Virgins, replied *Amadis*, remember my humble duty to the health of your Mistresse, telling her, she knowes right well I am her Knight. In this manner rode the Damozels one way, and *Amadis* another : wherefore wee must now tell what happened to *Arcalans*, since his departure from the Castle of *Valdern*.

## CHAP. XXI.

*How Arcalans brings newes to the Court of King Lisiart, that Amadis was dead, which caused his friends to make manifold lamentations and re-grets, especially the Princesse Oriana.*

**S**oone Vch speede made *Arcalans* after his departure from *Valdern*, where he left *Amadis* enchanted, hee being (as I haue saide) clad in his armor, and mounted on his horse: that the tenth day following, hee arriued neer the court of King *Lisiart*, who was riding abroade in the fields to take the aire, accōpanied with his Lords along the forrest side. They seeing *Arcalans* come a far off, hauing on the armor of *Amadis*, imagining it was hee indeede, diuers rode before to welcome him : but when they came more neere, they found theſelues deceived, by reaſon *Arcalans* had his head and hands vñarmed, wherefore without ſaluting the Gentlemen, he ſtepped to the King with theſe words. Sir, I

come to acquire a promise wherein I stand bound, namely to let you vnderſtand, how I haue ſlaine a Knight in battaile, that ſome-time bare theſe armes. And albeit I muſt be content to declare mine owne prayſe, which were more honorable for me, being reported by another in mine abſence : yet am I conſtrained to do no leſſe, ſeeing the conuenant was betweene me & him whom I haue ſlaine : v.i.e. that the conquerour ſhould diſpoyle the vanquished of his head, and preſent it before you as this day. Full loth was I to be ſo cruell, becauſe hee tolde mee hee was your Queenes Knight, commonly caſted *Amadis of Gaule*, and ſo hee naſmed himſelfe whom I vanquished. As for me Sir, I tolde him in truthe that I was *Arcalans*, whom fortune hath

hath graced with ſuch ſingular fauour : for I haue ſlaine the man, ſome-time owner of this armour and horſe, which as a testimony of my victory I brought with mee. Ah God, ſayde the King, is then the moſt vertuous and accompliſhed Knight in the world dead ? you lowring heauens, why began ye ſo braue to courſe in him, and now on ſuch a ſudden to cut it off ? Theſe ſorrowfull newes prouoked ſighes and teares, both in the King and his royll company, which *Arcalans* perciuing, not ſpeaking any thing elſe, returned the ſame way he came, feigning himſelfe likewiſe very ſad and grieved : but you muſt thinke he went not without great ſtore of curses, every one instantly deſiring God, to ſend him an euill and ſpeedy death, which with their ſwordes they could gladly haue beſtowed on him themſelues, but that they heard howe *Amadis* was ſlaine by an accorded battaile.

The King being ouercome with penituenſie and ſorrow, returned to the Towne, where theſe newes were ſo opened to every one, that at length the Queene and her Ladys heard thereof, which preſently conuerted their former pleaſures in to mourning. At this time was the Princesſe *Oriana* in her chamber with the Damozell of *Denmarke*, where hearing the ſudden clamour and noyſe, ſhe com-manded her to goe vnderſtand the cauſe thereof. Alas good Lady, too ſoone was it brought to her, for no ſooner was ſhe acquainted with the death of *Amadis*, but her immoderate paſſions expreſſed the anguſh of her heart: and more to affiſt this gentle Princesſe, the other Ladys came weeping into her chamber, ſaying. Ah Madame, what tongue can deliver this wonderfull mishap ? yet durſt ſhe not (good Lady) bee too forward in enquiring the manner thereof, leaſt the cinders of her affection might be diſcovered : and as if ſhe had beheld *Amadis* dead before her, ſhe ſayde. Alas ! he is dead, it can not be otherwife. It is true madame, anſwered the Damozell, but what remedy ? you muſt not like-wiſe dy for company. Theſe words made *Oriana* fall into a ſwouſe, which the Damozell of *Denmarke* beholding, thought ſhee had too indiſcretely brought her theſe bad tidings, whereupon ſhe caſted the Princesſe *Mabile*, ſaying. Helpe Madame, my miſtrefſe dyeth. She being come, ſaw that ſhee neither moued nor breathed, doubted leaſt life had taken leaſe indeed, wherefore ſhe com-manded the Damozell to ſhut the dore, to the end her loue all this while ſo well conſealed, might not breake foorth into open ſuſpition. Then unlacing her garments to glue her more liber-ty, as alſo bathing her temples and pulses with vineger & cold water, ſhe recouered againe, when during a faint ſigh, with a ſeble voife ſhe thus ſpake. Ah ſweete friends, hinder me not in the way of death, if you deſire my reſt, and would haue God ſend him another world, who knew not how to liue one day without me. Ah flower and mirrour of chivalrie, thy death is inſupportable not to me alone, but to the whole world, who is ſoplete with griefe for thee, because they haue lost him who in bouny, pa-rence, hardines, and all oþer ver-tues, did honor them above the compaſſe of all deſire. And were yet any ſeeling in theſe, I am cer-taine thou wouldſt not ſorrow for thy lost life, but for my loue, on-during

during by thy misse maruailous afflictions: for thou hast left such honor in the world behinde thee, conquering so incomparable reputation in this short time of thy life, that ( reckoning thy merites) thou diedst possessed with many yeeres. Thus liuest thou in place immortall, I remaining heere alone after thee, can giue but wounding and vnhankfull speeches. Ah cruell death, sufficed it not that mighty loue murdered him with his feathered steele, but thou must kill him out-right with thy curelesse stroke? well, in respect it is so, offend not thy selfe my loue; for thou shalt soone see reason proceede fro her that did thee wrong, who beeing the cause, will beare thee company in death. And I may justly challenge him of wrong, seeing equall loue had vnted our willes to seperate our persons in this sorte: where hauing affoorded our ending together, wee likewise might haue injoyed one sepulchre. After these words she wounded againe in *Mabiles* armes, and in such manner altered her countenance, as they reputed her verily dead, her faire and golden lockes being discheveled, her armes and legges deprived of vitall motion, euen as when the soule hath taken his flight, from the body. *Mabiles* despairing of any life left in her, was so surprised with grieve, that shee was constrained to leaue the Damosell alone with the Princesse, & walking some-what aside by her selfe thus lamented. Incomprehensible wisdome, let mee not liue to endure these trauailes, seeing thou hast taken these two from me whom I loued as my life. But when the Damosell of *Denmarke* saw her selfe thus alone betweene two extremes, shee was maruailously a-

bashed: yet as one wise and well gouerned, shee spake in this manner to the Princesse *Mabiles*. Why Madame? when were you wont to abuse your honourable vertues? is it now time to forget your selfe? will you thus consent to the death of my Lady? you rather ought to aide and comfort her, then thus to forsake her, and procure her further danger if shee reviue againe. Come I pray yee succour her, for now is the time of greatest neede, and let these lamentations be referred till another time. *Mabiles* perceiving the Damosell saide true, wherefore she came to *Oriana*, and feeling by her warmenesse some hope of life to bee expected, they lifted her vpon the bed, when soon after her spirites returned to thair office: and to qualifie this agonie, they could devise no better meane, then to busie her eares with some or other speeches. Why Madame, quoth one, will ye leaue vs? at least yet speake to vs. Madame saide the other, your *Amadis* is yet alive and well. At the name of *Amadis*, shee opened her eyes, turning her head here and there as if she looked for him: which good humour *Mabiles* desirous to continue, proceeded thus. *Amadis* commeth Madame, and shortly you shall see him. *Oriana* giving a great sigh, started vp, saying. Alas sweete friend, where is he? We vnderstand, quoth shee, that he is in very good health, and how the Knight who brought these bad tidings, is wont to vaunt of himselfe without cause, feeding himselfe with false praise of deceiving Knights. Why? saide *Oriana*, haue I not heard that hee brought his horse and armour? A matter of nothing, answered *Mabiles*, they may as wel be borrowed or stolne, or he (happily) sent with that false alarme,

alarme, to try our constancy: then finding vs thus weakely disposed, hee should haue had the thing he desired. I would not haue you thinke so simply Madam, that *Amadis* could be overcome by one and no better a knight then he, nor were it reason to credit a commender of himselfe, bringing his owne glory for testimony and no other approbation: I am assured that *Amadis* will come ere long, and if he finde you not onely dead in a manner, but thus given ouer to grieve: it will cost his life, so shall you deliuer vnhappy prooife, what wicked feigning by malice can do, and thus you both shall die one for another. When *Oriana* remembred, how by this meane she might be the death of her friend, if by good hap he yet enjoyed life, and imagined likewise that *Mabiles* spake the truth: she tooke courage, casting her eye on the windowe, where many times *Amadis* and she had amorouslly conferred; when first he arived at her fathers Court, and intercepting a number of forced fighes, thus spake. Ah window, the witnessse of my abadoned pleasures, how piercing is the doubt of him whom thou cauest me remember, and by whose gracious words both thou and I were made happy? Of this I am certaine, that neuer canst thou indure so long as two so loyall louers might (by thee) enjoy such delight as he and I haue done: which sayling mee now, giueth me strange and insupportable torments to bee my companions, and hence-forth shall my sad spirit remaine in bitter sadness, vntill the comming of him or my death. *Mabiles* perceiving the cheefest danger was past, laboured to confirme her opinion more strongly when shee had done, in

this manner. Why Madam thinke you if I hold these babling newes for truth, I could haue the power to comfort you in this sort, the loue I beare to my *Cofin* is not so little, but rather I shold jacte all the world to weape, then ware consolation for you, who stand in such neede thereof. But I see so slender appearance of beleefe, as I will not before this require, repute you vnfestinate, because discomfiting our selues without assurance: The evill hereby may be amended, and the good made much more worse, especially it will be the meane of discouering, what hath so long time beeene shaddowed in secret. Alas, quoth *Oriana*, if he bee dead, I care not though our loue were openly knowne for all our mishaps in respect of it are nothing.

Thus debating and denising together, the two Ladies all that day kept their chamber, not suffering any other to come infor when the Damosell of *Denmarke* (who passed often in and out) was demanded for *Oriana*, she answered that shee accompanied *Mabiles*, whom she would not suffer to part from her, by reason of her grieve for her *Cofin Amadis*. Thus was the princesse secretes sadness couered, all night she being vnable to take any rest, such were her affailes betweene doubt and despaire, not forgetting any thing that past betweene her and *Amadis* since their younger yeeres. But on the morrow about dinner time, *Broadways* entered the palace, leading *Orindaleys* in his hand, which gave great joy to such as knew them, for of long time they could not imagine what was become of them: they falling on their knees before the king, were quickly callid to re-

membrance, his maiestie thus speakeing. Sir Brandoynas, how chaunce you haue tarryed so long from vs? Alas my Lord, quoth he, imprisonment hath bin the cause, whereout (had not the good Knight *Amadis of Gaule*, given liberty to me, this Lady and many more, by such deedes of Armes as are vnspeakable) we could neuer haue been deliuered. Yet was he once in danger of taryng there himselfe, by the villainous coniurations and sorceries of *Arcalus*: but he was succoured by two Damosells, who deliuered him from all the exorcisances. When the King heard him name *Amadis*, whom hee verily thought to be dead? What my friend? quoth he, by the faith thou owest to God and me, is *Amadis* liuynge? Yea my good Lord, answered *Brandoynas*, it is not ten dayes since I left him in good disposition: but may it like you to tell me, why you demanded such a questiō? Because, sayd the King, *Arcalus* yesterdaie tolde vs he had slaine him: heere-with he declared his speeches, and the manner how. What a traitorous villaine is that? replied *Brandoynas*, but worse is befallne him then he weenereth as yet: hereto he added what passed betweene *Amadis* & *Arcalus*, as already you haue heard, whereby each one forsooke the sorrow of the former false newes, the King presently commanding, that *Grindaloya* should be conducted to the Queene, that shee might vnderstand these happy tidings.

Into the Queenes chamber is she brought, and the Damosell of Denmark hearing her reporte, ran with all speede to the Princessse *Oriana*, who hearing by her the truth of all, the passage of her speech was stopt for a long time, seeming

as one confounded with enchantment, thinking in these newes shee gaue her the bag, or that she dreaſed them, but when she recoured the vſe of her tongue, she thus answered the Damosell. Alas my friend, did I rauē? or toldest thou me that *Grindaloya* testified to the Queene, how *Amadis* is not dead? In good faith, quoth the Damosel, I came but euen now from her highnes chamber, where *Grindaloya* declared how *Arcalus* had deceiued the. Happy bee this houre, sayde *Oriana*, but I pray thee goe tell my mother, that *Mabila* entreats her to lende the Lady to comfort her: which she did, returning right soone with *Grindaloya* to *Oriana*. I leauē to imagine whether shee were well entertained or no, with all the modest courtesies so glad tidings deserued, likewise whether *Oriana* and *Mabila* gave her audience, when she recounted *Amadis* deedes of armes at *Valdrin*, the misery of her and many other, the danger wherinto he fell afterward by the enchantments of *Arcalus*, from which hee was deliuered by two strange Damosells. The discourse hereof so pleased & contented them, that I think *Grindaloya* had an endlesſe taske in the reporting, for *Oriana* must haue euery thing often redoubled. But repeating the dangers of *Amadis*, and the misery from which he deliuered the poore captiues, caused teares so thick as winters haile to trill downe her cheekeſ. Thus taſſed *Grindaloya* all day wiſh the two Princesses, and had not so ſoone departed, but that ſhee was aduertified, how that King *Arban* of *Normaſe*, (who loued her deereley) expeſted her returne in the Queenes chamber. Good reaſon had ſhee to take leauē of *Oriana*, and ſecke him from

from whom ſhee ſuffered ſuch ſorrow: But when theſe loyall louers met together, each one was delighted ſo ſubſtantially, as *Grindaloya* thought her grieves well recompenced. Now because the Queene vnderſtood, how ſhee was daughter to King *Ardryd* of *Seralis*, and all her miseries had been for the loue of king *Arban*: with instant intreay ſhee procured her ſtay in the Court, doing her all the honour and fauour could be deuiled. *Grindaloya* was not curiuous in granting the Queenes request, becauſe king *Arban* was partaker in the ſame ſuite: by this occaſion the

Queene was aduertified, that ſhee had a maruaillous faire ſister naſmed *Aldene*, who was nourished with the Duke of *Brifoyter* caſtle, which made her preſently diſpatch a Gentleman thither, with requeſt that the Ducheſſe would ſend her to the Court. This *Aldene* was the friend to *Galaor*, ſhee for him ſuffered ſuch iniurie by the Dwarf as you haue heard before diſcoured. We haue a long time con tinued with *Amadis*, now let vs re turne againe to *Galaor*, leauing King *Lisuer* in hope to ſee him ſoone in his Court, whom *Arcalus* ſaid he had ſlaine in combat.

### CHAP. XII.

How *Galaor* came very ſore wounded to a Monastery, where he ſtayned five dayes attending his health, and as his departure thence, what happened to him ſhall be declared in this Chapter.

**G**lue dayes together a boade *Galaor* at the Monastery, whether he was conduced by the Damozell he deliuered from prison, attending thiere the recovery of his wounds: but when hee found himſelfe able to weare his Armor, he tooke leauē of the ſisters, and rode on his iourney, euen which way fortune pleaſed to guide, for he had minde to no part more then another. About mid-day he arriuēd in a valley, in the middeft whereof stood a fyre fountain, where he found a knight armed hauing no horſe: *Galaor* marauiling therat, demanded if hee came thither on foote, the knight returning this anſwere. Believe me no, but riding through this Forrest to a Castle of mine, I met with certaine theueſes that flew my Horſe: thus am I brought into the ſtate you behold me; by reaſon my ſervants haue not of my miſfortune. Why? You ſhall haue my Squires monture, anſwered *Galaor*. I thanke you fir, quoth the Knight, yet before wee part hence, you ſhall know the great vertue of this fountain, for there is no poyon in the world ſo ſtrong, that hath any force againſt this water, wherefore by reaſon of ſo ſoveraigne a benefit, often times enuenomed beaſts doe drinke hereof, and are preſently healed: beſide, diuerſe of this Countrey vſe to come hither, and finde redrefſe for all their infirmities. In ſooth you tell me mernales, replied *Galaor*, and ſeeing I am now ſo neare it, I will alight to drinke thereof as oþers haue done. Good reaſon you ſhould anſwered the Knight, becauſe you are ignorant of comiſſing this way againe. *Galaor* leapt

ed from his Horse, bidding his Squire alight to drinke as he did: but while they were drinking, the knight clasped on his owne head *Galoar* helmet, and taking his Launce mounted on his Horse, when leauing the Prince drinking he rode away, saying. Farewell Knight, I must be gone, tarry thou here to beguile another as I haue done thee. *Galoar* lifting his head from the water, and seeing the Knight make such hast away, thus called to him. Ah villaine, neuer did theefe such a treacherous pranck as thou hast done: for thou hast not alone deceiued me, but committed an aet of great disloyalty, which thou shalt well know, if euer I meet with thee. Yea mary, answered the knight, rest your selfe there, till you recouer some other meane to combat with me.

Gone is the Knight so fast as he could gallop, leauing *Galoar* chafing like a mad man, but seeing there was no remedy, he mounted on his Squires horse and pursued him, till at length he came to a double way, when not knowing which of them to take, because he had lost the sight of him, hee stood still in great pensiuenes, till at length hee saw a Damosel come riding a pace toward him, of whom hee demanded, if she met not a knight mounted on a bay Courser, bearing in a white sheeld a vermillion flower. What would you with him? replied the Damosell. I would quoth he recouer again my horse & Armes, for they be mine, and by false villanies hee hath carried them from me. When happened this? said the Damosell: wherewith *Galoar* told her all the discource. Well, quoth the Damosell, what can you doe to him being thus vnarm'd? for I thinke hee tooke them not away to

restore them againe. I care for nothing else, said *Galoar*, but to finde him once more. Trust me, answered the Damosell, if you wil grant me one boonte, soone shall I bring ye together againe, *Galoar* being very desitrous hereof, agreed to any thing she would demand. Follow me then, quoth she, so turning her horse, rode the same way she came, keeping company a while together: but the Damosell being better mounted then he, left him behinde with his Squire, & rid before so fast, that they had lost the sight of her, trauailing the space of 3. miles without any news of her, but at last on a great plain they saw her returne againe, here you must note, that the cause of her riding thus before, was to aduertise the other knight (being her deete friend) of their comming, and hee had expressly sent her to fetch *Galoar*, to deceiue him of the rest of his Armour: which he imagined easilly to do without danger, seeing hee had gotten the chieffest thing of his defence, and afterward he intended to kill him, or put him to some notorious shame. For this cause he taryed in a Pauilion, erected by him on the plaine, and no sooner came she to *Galoar*, but thns she spake. Gentleman, to the end I might not faile in my promise, I forsooke your company a while, only to see if the man you looke for, were in the place I left him or no: there haue I found him little thinking on your coming, and in yonder Pauilion may you speake with him at pleasure. As thus they deuised together, they came to the Tent, wherfore *Galoar* alighted to enter, but the Knight meeting him at the doore, said. Sir knight, what moueth thee to come in here without licence, trust me it is but little for thy profit because

because thou must here leaue the rest of thine Armour, or die presently. Thou mayst be therein deceiued, answered *Galoar*, and the wordes of such a wretch as thou art cannot feare me.

This reply very angrily incensed the Knight, lifting vp his sword to smite the Prince on the head, but *Galoar* cunningly escaped the blowe, giuing his enemy such a stroke on the top of his helmet, as made him set one knee to the ground: then quickly laying hold on him, got the helmet beside his head, spurning him so strongly with his feete, that therewith hee fell on his face to the earth. When the Knight beheld him selfe in such danger, he called with a loud voice to the Damosell for succor, whereupon she stepped to *Galoar*, saying: that hee should holde his hand, for this was the boone he promised to giue her. But he being in extreame choller, gaue no care to her speeches, bringing the Knight into such estate, as hee left no vitall motion in him: whereat the Damosell being ready to despaire, breasted forth many grieuous lamentations, saying. Alas wretch that I am, too long haue I trifled time: for in seeking to beguile another, my selfe am worthily requited with deceite. And thou traytor quoth shee to *Galoar*, who haft thus cruelly put him to death, heauen send thee a more worse and haplesse end, for by thee haue I lost my onely felicity in this world: for which (bee well assured) it shall cost thee thy life, because thou haft broken promise with mee, and in such a place will I demand revenge on thee, as nothing but thy death shal expiate my anger, wert thou a Knight of greater hardinesse then thou art: if then thou make refu-

sal there, I shall haue more then iust occasion to publish in all places, the pusillanimity of thy faint hearted courage.

Faire Damosell, answered *Galoar*, if I had thought his death would haue beeene so grieuous to you, I could haue spared part of my displeasure, though iustly hee deserved no lesse, but you spake when it was too late. The worse for thee, replied the Damosell, because thy death shall recompence his. *Galoar* seeing shee continued her threatening speeches, without any further answere left her, lacing on his helmet, mounting on the horse the dead Knight tooke from him: and hauing ridden a pretty while, hee looked backe to see if the Damosell followed him, when perceiuing her hard at his horse heeles, demanded of her whither shee trauailed. With thee, answered the Damosell, and neuer will I leaue thee, till I haue found opportunity to request the boone thou didst promise me, which shal be the losse of thy head by some euill death. Me thinkes it were better, sayde *Galoar*, for you to take some other satisfaction of me, and happily might bee more pleasing to you. Not any thing else, quoth shee, thy soule shall accompany his whom thou haft slaine, else neuer shal thou accomplish what thou haft promised mee. Well, well, answered *Galoar*, I must stand to the hazard of that as I may: thus quarreling, they rode on three dayes together, and entered the Forrest of *Angaduce*, an aduenture there happening to them, whereof the Author hereafter maketh mention.

But now he returneth againe to *Amadis*, who taking his lease of *Vrgandas* Damosel, as you haue heard

heard before recited : rode on till about noone time, when issuing forth of the Forrest, hee saw on a plaine a very faire Castell, whereout came a goodly Chariot, so brauely equiped as euer he beheld any, it being drawn by two braued steedes, which were couered with imbroidered crimson fassin, as it made a very daintyness and seemely shew. The Chariot was guarded by eight armed Knights, yet *Amadis* being desirous to see who was in it, drew somewhat neere to lift vp the rich couering, but one of the Knights came to him with these rough wordes : Keepe backe Sir Knight, and bee not so bold to come thus neare. What I doe, answered *Amadis*, is for no harme. Whatsoeuer it bee replied the other, trouble your selfe no further, in respect you are not worthy to see what is here couered : for if you enterprise the like againe, it will value your life, because thou must deale with all in this troupe, and some such one is amongst vs, as is able alone to get the maistrie of thee, more easilly then may wee altogether vs thes as we list. I know not, sayd *Amadis*, the Knights valour you speake of, but hap good or bad, I will see what is in the Chariot. Herewith hee tooke his Armes, which the two Knights seeing that rode formost, they ran both against him, the one breaking his Launce, and the other missing: but *Amadis* sped otherwise, for the first very easilly hee cast from his saddle, & the other he threw both horse and man to the ground. Then *Amadis* went towards the Chariot, yet was he stayed by two other Knights, one of them being likewise dismounted, and with his sword hee gaue the other such a welcome on the pate, as hee was

glad to keep himselfe from falling, by catching fast holde about his horse necke, when the other fourre sawe their companions so vied by one Knight, they maruailed not a little, and being willing to revenge their iniury, altogether fiercely charged *Amadis*. With this last assault hee found himselfe sore combred, for one of them taintred him in the shield, and another in his armour, as hee escaped hardly from beeinge ouerthrowne : notwithstanding hee held out valiantly, deliuering such stroakes to the first he met, as hee fell beside his horse in a swoone. The three that remayned turned their faces, seeking which way they might soonest hurt him : but hee snatched a Launce from one of them, which yet remayned whole, and met one with such a full carriere, that piercing quite thorough his throat, hee fel to the ground and gaue vp the Ghost.

After his death, he came to another of them, and with his sword smote the helmet from his head: when seeing hee was a very ancien knight, hauing his head and beard so white as snowe, moued with pittie, he friendly thus spake. Father, henceforth it were good you left the vse of armes to younger then your selfe, seeing you haue liued so long without gaigning honour or commendation, marry your age doth now excuse yee. In good faith answered the Knight, your speeches are very contrary, because if it bee seemely for young men to seeke renowne and fame by armes : it is more necessarie that an auncient man should doe his endeauour, to maintayne those affaires so long as he can. Believe me Father, sayd *Amadis*, your reason is good. While

While thus they talked together, *Amadis* saw him who was first vnhorfed, make great hast toward the Castle, and so did the other which were wounded : wherefore hee approached to the Chariot, and lifting vp the couering, beheld there a tombe of Marble, hauing a crowned King figured thereon, clothed in his royall ornaments, yet was his Crowne and part of his head some what seuered aloofe from the rest. Hard by sat a very antient Lady, and neare her a yong Damosell of most excellent beauty, whom very gratiouly hee saluted, speaking to the antient Lady in this manner: I pray ye tell me Madam, what figure is this which you accompanie so carefully ? What Sir Knight ? quoth shee, (not knowing her gardants were discomfited) who gaue you permission to see our secrets ? None other, laid *Amadis*, then my desire thus to doe. In good faith, quoth the Lady, this is in you a great pate of presumption, and I meruaile that my Knights would suffer it : then putting her head forth of the Chariot, shee saw some of them flaine, others flying to the Castle for their safeti, & som ran after their Horses that were escaped, wherat she was so amazed, as she thus cryed out: Ah Knight, cursed be the houre of thy birth, who haft done me this cruel outrage. Madam, answered *Amadis*, your people affayled me : but now may it please ye to satisfie my demand ? Neuer shalt thou, quoth she, be resolued therein by me, hauing offered mee such monstrous abuse : so saying, she caused the horses to haie away with the Chariot. *Amadis*, beholding her so agreed, would trouble her no more but rode on his journey: then were the dead bodies put into the Chariot, and presently conuoyed into the Castle.

Now had the dwarfe heard all that passed betweene *Amadis* and the Lady, but hee knew not what was within the Chariot, wherefore he desired to know of his Master. I cannot tell thee, quoth he, for she would make no answere thereof to me. In sooth, said the Dwarfe, it is strange that women haue learned to hold their peace. As thus they rode beguiling the time, on a sudden they espied the old Knighe now vnarmed, gallop apace after them, crying so loud as he could to *Amadis*, that he should stay, which he did, when he deliuered him this message. My Lord, I come to you by commandement of the Lady whom you saw in the Chariot, and she being willing to make amends for the iniury she did ye, desires you to take a lodging this night in her Castle. Ah Father, replied *Amadis*, I found her in such griefe for the debate betweene me and your companions, that I think my predecester will rather be hurtfull then pleasing to her. Assure your selfe, said the knight, your returne will be very acceptable to her. *Amadis* thinking a knighe of such yester would haue told no leaing, was content to goe with him, seeing with what affection he coloured his speches and by the way hee demanded of him, why the pichtures head was made in such sort, beth he would tell him nothing, sayng at last the Lady would thorowly resolute him in all. Beeing come to the Castle, he saw the Lady and the Damosell awaying his couening on the bridge, who bad him very heartily welcome. Ladies, quoth he, I would be glad to doe you good, but I haue appayled you. When hee was entered, hee saw a greate many

many armed men, who flocking about him, cryed. Yeeld Knight else thou art but dead. Nor shall you, said hee; with my will, keepe me your prisoner. So hee laced his Helmet, but he had no leysure as yet to take his shield, so sharply was he assayled by his enemies: yet did he worthily defend himselfe, sending them to the Earth he met withall, at length by the multitude of his assaylants, he was driven into a corner of the Court, which he recovering, and keeping them therein all before him, endamaged them much better then hee did before. But while hee was thus combatting, he saw the Dwarffe and *Gandalin* carried into prison, whereat hee conceiued such displeasure, as being exempt from feare of death, he layed such loade on his enemies, that no one durst come neare him: albeit they were so many, as often times hee was in danger to fall on his knees, yet looking for no mercy at such mens hands, would deereley buy his death among them, causing diuers of them to fall dead at his feete. And the diuine bountie regarding him in pitty, deliuered him from this perill by the young beautifull Damosell, who marking his braue behaviour in Chiualrie, intended to saue him, calling one of her women to whom she said. The gallant minde of this Knight moueth me to compassion, so that I had rather all mine should die, then hee; therefore follow me. Why Madam answered the Gentlewoman, what meane ye to doe? Let loose my Lyons, answered the Lady, that they may bee scattered, who offer wrong to the best Knight in the world: and thou (iting my vassale) I command thee presently to goe let them loose. Which she

durst not deny, but immedately sent them forth of the Cau: then the Lady to make them retire that combatted with *Amadis*) cryed to them: Looke to your selues my friends, for the Lyons are gotten loose by some mischance. The men being all afraide, fled vp and downe to shunne the fury of the beasts, but the Lyons made such speede after them, as diuers they overtooke and rent in pieces. When *Amadis* saw himselfe thus rid of his enemies, seeing the wicket of the Castle was yet open, he went out and held the doore fast to him, while the Lions devoured the other in the Court.

In this manner *Amadis* escaped his bloody foes, yet was he so ouertrauailed, as he could hardlie sustaine himselfe: Wherefore he sat downe on a stone, holding his Sword still ready drawne, a great part whereof was broken, and the Lions being yet so hungrie, as they ranne about the Court to secke way into the fields: nor was there any man in the Castle so hardie, that durst come downe to shun them vp againe, no, not the Damosell who had the government of them, for they were so chased, as no obedience was looked for in them, nor the wisest of them knew how to remedy it: Except the olde Ladie should intreate the strange Knight to let them forth, imagining because shee was a woman, hee would grant her request sooner then to the rest. But shee considering her false dealing toward him, durst not aduenture to moue the suite: Yet when she beheld it was her last refuge, shee put her head soorth of the window thus speaking to *Amadis*. Although ( Sir Knight) wee haue intreated yee very hardlie, yet let your

courte-

courtesie excuse what is past: and to saue our liues, open the gate that the Lyons may come soorth, to the end our present feare may be quallifyed, and they raunge the fields as is their desire. This fauourable kindnes let vs obtaine at your hands, whereby wee shall yeeld amends for the wrong wee haue done ye: and on my faith I swaere to you, our intent was no other wife the to gaine you our prisoner, vntill you consented to bee our knight. Madame, answered *Amadis*, you should haue labored your determination by a more honest way: for without constraint I would willingly haue yeelded my selfe, as I haue to diuers Ladies, who knowe full well my seruice. Will ye then Sir, quoth she, open the gate? No, replied *Amadis*: wherewith she went from the window, and the young Lady trembling shewed her felte, thus calling to *Amadis*. Ah gentle Sir, such are within heere, who could not suffer the iniurie done to you, the better they deserue to finde some fauour. With such seemely modesty vteered the Ladie these words, as *Amadis* asked her, if she would haue the gate opened? Yea mary Sir, quoth she, I humbly desire ye. Presently he arose to obey her request, but she willed him to stay awhile, till the olde Lady warranted him asfurance from the rest of her seruants: nor could he but commend her wit and discretion, who getting him security from all the Castle, made promise likewise, that *Gandalin* and the Dwarffe should be deliuered from imprisonment. Then came the ancient knight, of whom we spake before, and calling to *Amadis*, he sayd. Because me thinkes ( Sir ) your Shield is greatly impaired, and your sword

in like manner broken, take this shield and this mace, wherewith you may defend the Lyons when they come forth: so thowing this mace and the shield downe, *Amadis* willingly tooke them vp, returning this answere. Let me never be ingratefull to them that seruo me in neede. By heres, saide this knight, seeing you. Me loystis to worse then beastie, no doute is to be made of your mercy to reasonable creatures. *Amadis* opening the wicket, the Lyons furiously did soorth, and he entred the Castle, which they within perciuing, came with the Ladies to entertaine him, desirous pardon for their offences committed, and presenting him *Gandalin* and the Dwarffe. By my soule, saide *Amadis*, never was I so misfied vpon no occasion, but seeing all enemy is ouerblowne, you must give me a horse, for your seruants ( I thankee them ) haue slaine mine. Sir knight, answered the olde Lady, it is now somewhat late, if you please to vaine your selfe, and rest here this night, to morrow you shall haue a horse, or what else you neede. In hope you meane no worse then you say, quoth *Amadis*, I will not refuse your offer, because the tyme doth request no lesse.

Fourth with was he unarmed in a sumptuous chamber, and a clothly mantle brought to wrap about him, then returning to the Ladyes who attened his comming, they were stricken into admiration of his excellente beauty, but much more at his valour being so young: and casting his eye ouer the Lyons, he reported her one of the fairest that ever was seene, but he spake nothing to her as yet, by reason hee proceeded in this manner

manner with the old Lady. I pray yee Madame let mee understand, why the picture which I saw in the Chariot, hath his head so seperated. Sir Knight, quoth she, if you will promise to accomplish the couenants before you be acquainted with the accident: I will tell ye, if not, I pray ye holde me excused. It were no reason Madame, replied *Amadis*, to promise any thing ouer-lightly, being ignorant to what it may relate: but if you will let me heare the couenants, they seeming reasonable, and in compasse of a Knights power to execute, feare not to tell me, for I will employ myvtermost therein. You haue reason, answered the Lady: then causing each one to withdraw, except the faire young virgin, she thus began. Vnderstand gentle Sir, that the figure of stone you behelde, was made in the remembrance of this Ladys father, who lyeth entombed in the Chariot, being in his time a crowned King, but on an especiall festiuall day, as he helde open Court and royll, hee was assailed by his brother the vncle to this mayden, who came to tell him, that the Crowne hee wore was his, by as good right as hee could claime it, they being both issued from one roote. Then drawing a sword, which he had hid vnder his mantle, gaue him such a stroake therewith on the head, that it parted in such sorte as you saw in the picture. Long time before did the traitour excogitate this treason, and to the end he might the better execute it, hee confederated himselfe secretly with certaine of the Kings servants, by whose meanes he waxed the stronger in his enterprise. But the King being dead, this disloyall wretch was honoured with

the Crowne, for the murdered Prince had no other heire then this his faire daughter, whom the aged Knighte that brought you hither had in guard, he shewing himselfe so faithfull to her, as he conuayed her thence ere her vncle could take her, & performed such painfull diligence, that hee brought my orphaine Neece hither for her better safety. Afterward finding the meane to recover the body of the King her father, each day we put into our Chariot, riding there-with about the fields as you saw vs, we hauing all sollemly sworne not to shew it to any one, vnlesse by force of armes we should be compelled thereto: and though such a one happened to see it, yet would we not reueale why we conducted it so, except he would promise to reuenge this horrible treason. Now if you be a noble Knight, bound to prosecute vertue, and on so just occasion, you will employ the forces God hath lent ye in a matter of right: for my part, I will continue as I begun, vntill I finde two other Knights on this behalfe, that you three for vs may confoule the traitour and his two sons, who will alow no combate, vnlesse they fight altogether, which they haue often published abroade: how such as will reprove their dealings, must come in this sorte. In sooth Madame, answered *Amadis*, great reason haue you to seeke meanes of reuenge, for the most famous iniurie that euer I heard of, and he who hath done it, surely cannot long endure without shame and misfortune, because heauen scorseth such monstrous actions: but if you can bring it to passe, that one after another they will come to the combate, by the helpe of God

as might be devised, cues vntill the house of rest cam. The good night being given on all sides, by the Dameſell that let loose the Lyons, hee was conducted to his chamber, where ſhe kept him company an indifferent while, and among other ſpeches, ſhe vteſed this. You haue her neare you my Lord, who ſeauoured you this day more then you imagine. Wherin faire Lady? answered *Amadis*. My ſelfe, quoth ſhe by commandement of the young Princesſe, for pitying your perill and the wrong offered you: was charged to let loose the Lyons from their Deane. I never ſaw, replied *Amadis*, a more wiſe and diſcreete Lady of her yeares. In ſooth, ſaid the Dameſell, if ſhe liue, ſhe ſhal be endued with two extremities, the one in beauty, and the other in wiſedome. I deſire ye, quoth *Amadis*, to thanke her moſt humbly on my behalfe, and how in acknowledging the good ſhe did me, henceforth I will remayne her Knight. I am wel content my Lord, answered the Dameſell, to carry her this message, becauſe I know it will bee moſt welcomme to her: ſo bidding him good night, ſhe departed the chamber. Now was *Gandolfe* and the Dwarf lodged in the next room where they heard what had passed betwixt *Amadis* and the Dameſell, and because the Dwarf knew nothing as yet of his Maifters loues to *Oriane*, he imagined ſome new affection was kindled betwixt the young Princesſe and him, in reſpect of the offer he made to her Knight. And to ſuch end did he retaine this opinion, as wofull *Amadis* after-wand had ſmall joy therof: for hereby he thought to receive a cruelle death, as in continuall of this history ſhall be

be declared. The night being spent & bright day appearing, *Amadis* came to bid the Ladies farewell, requesting to know their names against whom he should combat. The Father, quoth the Lady, is named *Abises*, his eldest sonne, *Darys*, and the other *Dramis*, all most valiant Gentlemen armes, excelling al other in that country: which likewise is commonly called *Sabradis*, confining on the Kingdome of *Serolys*. Very well replied *Amadis*, by Gods leaue we shall one day see what they can do. When he was arm'd, as he mounted on a lusty courser, the ancient Lady had given him, the young Princesse presented him a goodly Sword, which sometime belonged to the King her Father, saying. Sir

Knight, I pray yehenceforth (for my sake) to weare this Sword so long as it will last, and I shall pray it may be helpefull to you in all your affaires. I assure ye faire Lady, answored *Amadis*, for your sake will I carefully keepe it, and thake you therefore with all my heart: hereof likewise ye may be perwaded, that I remaine to obey you, and shal aide you in all things concerning your estate and honour. Well might it be discerned in the Lady, how these humble thankes and his former offer, pleased her not a little, wherefore the Dwarfe, (who noted the gestures on either side) softly said to her, Madame, you haue this day made no small conquest, having so good a knight at your commandement.

## CHAP. XXIII.

How *Amadis* departed from the Ladies Castle, and of the masters which were occurrent to him by the way.

 *Amadis* being gone from the Ladies Castle, rode on without finding any adventure, till he entered the Forrest of *Angaduce*, and the Dwarfe riding somewhat before, saw a farre off, a Knight and a Damosel coming toward them. When the Knight came right against the Dwarfe, hee drew his sword to offer him outrage: but he started aside, so that the blow lighted on his shoulders, wherewith he was in such feare, as he fell downe from his horse, crying out for help to his Maitre, who seeing when he

smote him, made hast for his defense, thus speaking to the Knight. What mooues you (Sir) to wrong my Dwarfe without cause: now trust mee it is but simple manhood, to lay hand on such an excrement of nature as hath no defense of himselfe, but being in my guard the presumption is great. I am sory sir, answered the Knight, to giue you any displeasure, but I must needes take his head from his shoulders, because it is my gift to this Damosel. Sooner said *Amadis*, shalt thou loose thine own. So encouert they together, with such force, as they were both cast beside their

their horses: & yet quicke recouering themself, they began a most sharpe and truell combatte with their Swords. Now were they in greater danger of thid persona, then euer they had beeane befor: for their Shields being shakid in peeces, their swordes coloured with their blood, their Armes broken, their helmea batterod, and their selues so sore hittured: as they were constrained to draw backe a while to take breath, when the knight that combated the Damosel thus spake to *Amadis*. My frind you may iudge the danger whereto we both may tally, if longer we continue the Combat: therefore I pray ye Ioe mee haue my will on the Dwarfe, and I will amend the offence afterward, if it may bee termned an offence to you. What? said *Amadis*, do you thinke me of such slender stomacke, as that I will suffer any thing of mine to be wronged in my presence? not so, I must and will defend him to the uttermost. And I must needes haue his head, answered the Knight. By Heauen quoth *Amadis*, one of ours shall first acquit him and that immedately. Herewith they charged each other againe, with such wonderfull courage appearing in either, as seuerall desire to gaine the honor of the combat, made them shew extream violence one against another: so that the best resolued of them both thought to die, by abundance of blood which issued from infinite wounds on his body, especially the Damosel champion, who thought he felte himselfe greatly impairing, yet made he no shew thereof, but held out with such braue viuacity of spirit, as his enemy found he had a hard taske in hand.

At this instant an other knight

changed so passe by, who seeing the combatants fightes against each other, determined to espide who shold depart with victorie, and placing himselfe by her, she Damosel demanded, if shee durst them, at the dause of their swerd, I must needs know them, shold I see the Damosel, because I set them together as you see, and this good hap is not a little pleasing to me: for it is impossible but one of them must die, nor do I greedily care which of them it be: but if both end together, my joye would be the greater. Now said me, said the Knight, full well do you manifest a wicked disposition, prouising (for your pleasure) the death of two such braue men, whose health and safety you rather ought to desire, then imagine such a disloyall thought toward them: but tell me I pray ye, what reasoyn you haue to hate them so? That can I sufficiently, quoth she. He whose shidle is most defaced, is the brenly man of the world: to whom mine Uncle *Arcales* wisteth most haue, he being named *Amadis*. And the other that combata with him, is *Galer*, who notwithstanding, flew the chieffest man I loued. I shewed out, that *Galer* herewofore made me promise of any thing I would request, and because this day I was most affectionate to his deathly: I haue brought him to dealt with such a one, as will hardly permit him to escape with life. For I knew the other to bee one of the best Knights in the World, and whom this Dwarfe (which you see) attendeth: I therfore desired *Galer* to giue the litle vilaines head, being perswaded *Amadis* would rather die then suffer it. Thus the one to deliuerate my request, and the other to see Dwarfes

Dwarffes defence, are fallen into the extremitie of their liues, which doth me good at the heart to behold. By my conscience Damosell, replied the Knight, I never thought such malice had remained in a woman of your sort, and I believe assuredly (being yet so yong) if longer you liue, you will accuse your selfe to such vilainie as this you begin withall : whereby you shall infect the ayre and the other elements, to the disaduantage of the honest and vertuous Ladies living at this day. But to shielde them from such danger, and these two good Knights, whom treacherously thou wouldest shouldest kill each other, I will make a Saifice of thee according to thy deserts : then lifting vp his Sword, he smote her head quite from her shouolders, that it fell on the ground at her horse feete, saying. Take the reward of thy meritis, for the loue I beare to thine Uncle Arcalus, who kept me his prisoner, till the vertuous Knight Amadis deliuered me : then running to the combatants, he cryed out aloud : Holde Lord Amadis, hold your hand, for the than you fight against is your brother Galor. When Amadis heard these words, he threw down his Sword and Shield to the earth, and embracing Galor, said. Alas my friend, my brother, rightly may I be tearmed the most vnhappy Knight in the world, offering you such outrage as I haue done. Galor anszed at this aduenture, knew not what to say : but seeing how Amadis humbled himselfe on his knee, he fell downe likewise, desiring pardon, reputing himselfe wonderfull vnsfortunate, in wronging thus his Lord and brother : then Amadis weeping with inward conceite of joy, thus answered.

Noble brother, and my friend, I haue steeeme the passed perill well imployed, because it beareth wittnes of what we are able to doe. So to king off their helmers to refresh themselves, they heartily thanked the Knight that thus caused their acquaintance : whereupon he told them all what the Damosell said, & the execution hee committed on her. Now trust me, quoth Galor, never was false strumpet more rightly serued, and now am I discharged of the promise I made her. All the better for mee, said the Dwarffe, and thereby haue I saved my head : yet I meruaile why she should hate me so much, in respect I never saw her till now to my knowledge. Then did Galor at large discourse, what happened betweene him, the Damosell, and her friend, as you haue heard already rehearsed : but the Knight that separated them, seeing their Armoir all couered with blood, thus spake to them. My Lords, your Armoirs deliuer testimony enough, how discourteously your Swords haue intreated your bodies, wherefore me thinks long tarrying in this place, will but endanger your wounds : let me request ye then to mount on horsebaek, and accompany me to the Castle, whether you shall not onely be welcome, but finde helpe for your hurts by one skilfull therein. Wee will not refuse your gentle offer, said Amadis. Let vs set forward then answered the Knight, and happy shall I thake my selfe, in doing any service that may be liking to you : for you Lord Amadis deliuered mee from the cruell imprisonment, as never poorknight endured the like. Where was it I pray? replied Amadis. At the castle, quoth he, of Arcalus the enchanter, wher you resi-

restored so many to liberty. How are you named? said Amadis. Balays, answered the Knight, and because my Castle is cleped Cersanta, I am often tearmed Balays of Cersanta, therefore my Lords vse mee and mine as your owne. Brother, said Galor, seeing the Knight reputeth himselfe so much bounden to you, let vs goe with him.

In short time they arrived at the Castle of Balays, where they found Gentlemen and Ladieis that courteously entertained them : by reason Balays had sent them word before, how he brought with him the two best Knights in the world, Amadis who deliuered him from the strong prison of Arcalus, and his noble brother Galor. For this cause were they welcommmed much more honourably, and brought into a goodly chamber to bee vnammed, where likewise stood two costly beds, and a table furnished with soueraigne medicins for their wounds, the cure whereof, two Ladieis (being Neeceis to Balays) vndertooke, for they were very learnedly skilled in Chirurgery. Now did they employ their vttermost cunning, to recōpence Amadis for his worthy pains, in restoring their Uncle from the slauerie of Arcalus : so that within few daies, they fel themselves indifferently amended, and almost able to bear their Armoir as they did before. Hereupon, Amadis comming with his brother Galor, declared how to seek him, he departed, from the Court of King Lysuert, promising not to returne without his company : wherefore he intreated him to yeelde no deniall, in respect no

Princes Court was better frequented with Chualrie, nor could he finde more honour in any other place. My Lord, quoth Galor, I intend to accomplish what you please to command me, alasse, I desire not as yet to be knowne among men of account: first would I haue my deedes give some witness, how desirous I am to imitate your proceedings, or else to die in this religious affection. Ceres brother, answered Amadis, for this matter you neede not abandon the place, seeing your renown is already greater then mine, if so be I haue any at all : yea it is darkened by the illustrate splendour of your Chualrie. Ah my Lord, replied Galor, never disguise matters in this order with me, seeing not in deedes, no, not so much as in thought, am I able to reach the height of such honour. Leau we then this talke, said Amadis, for oncking father maketh no difference of vertue betweene vs : but will ye know what I haue presently deuided? I see well we must stay here longer for our health, then otherwise we would, for which cause I intend if you thinke good, to send my Dwarffe before to King Lysuert, that he may aduertise the Queene of our stay, and so soone as we are able to trauaile, we meane not to tarry long from her. Doe as you please, answered Galor. Presently was the Dwarffe dispached thence, who made such good speed in his journey, as within few dayes he arriuied at Windfore, where King Lysuert was then accompanied with many good Knights.

## CHAP. XXIIII.

How King Lisuari being in the chace, saw a farse off three Knights arm'd comming toward him, and what followed therupon.

I chanced on a certaine day, that King Lisuari summoned a meeting in Windsor Forrest, which was well storded with red Deere, and all other game needfull for hunting. And as he was in chace of a Hart, hee espied a good distance from him, three armed Knights to crosse the way: wherfore he sent a Squire to them, with request that they would come vnto him: vpon this message they immediatly obeyed, returning with the Squire to the King, and when they drew neare him, he quickly knew Galuane, because he had seen him many times before: when embracing him, the King had him hartily welcom, and the rest in his company likewise, for he was a Prince, that most graciously entercayned all Knights, especially strangers: then hee demanded what the other were. My Lord, quoth Galuane, this young Prince is my Nephew Agraises, son to the king of Scottes, and one of the best Knights in the world I dare assure ye: the other is Oliua, whom your Maiesty hath well knowne heretofore. The King embrased them very louingly, saying to Agraises: Faire Cozin, I must needs take this gentlenesse very kindly, that you would vouchsafe to see me. As for you sir Oliua, I thought you had forgotten vs, considering the long time since you were here: and in sooth it is a matter very displeasant to mee, when so good a Knight as you are would so absent himselfe. Dread Lord, answered Oliua, my earnest affaires kept mee hence against my

will, which hath made me the more negligent in your seruice: and yet I am not free from them, as (if you please) I shall let ye vnderstand. Then he reported, how Galuane and Agraises came to his Castle, by meanes of the Damosell that conducted them thither, whom they very worthily deliuered from death: likewise how the Duke of Bribysa treacherously slew his Cozin, for which hee humbly craved Justice, with free liberty to come before his Maiesty, where he doubted not to make him confesse his treason. After the King had well pondered his discourse, and vnderstood the hard dealing of the Duke: he was highly discontened for he knew Oliua Cozin to be a good Knight, whereupon he thus answered. Beleeue mee seeing the Duke hath committed such a fawke, & you request justice of me, affre your selfe to obtaine it, and I will send for him to come iustifie his person.

Presently the King gase ouer hunting, returning with the 3. knights to his court, conferring on many matters by the way: among which the King demanded of Galuane, why the Duke of Bribysa would haue burned the Damosell whom they reskued. Because Sir, quoth he, she brought a knight named Galor into his pallace, and (as we vnderstand) it was in the night time, and no other reason had bee to alledge. Why? said the king, Agraises is gone to seeke Galor, but since his departure wee were put in a terrible feare, by Arcalaw, who said hee had slaine him. But are you certaine sir, answered

Agraises, that he liueth? Yea indeede, quoth the king, Brandoyas and Grindaloya came hither since then, and they gaue vs such crediblie testimony of his welfare, as I may full well assure ye thereof: for loth am I to offend any other, because no one can deserue his good and honout more then I doe. It is the argument of your good nature replied Agraises, likewise in respect of his bounty and valour, hee deserueth to be loued of you, euen with like affection as good men wish to their like.

By this time are they come to the Court, where these news were quickly brought to the Queene, which reioyced very many, especially faire Oliua, who loued Agraises deerer then her selfe, and the Princesse Mabile his sister was not sorry: for as shee came from the Queenes chamber, she met Oliua, who thus spake to her. You cannot chuse (Madam) but bee well pleased with your Brothers comming. Very true, quoth Mabile, for I loue him as mine owne heart. Desire then I pray ye the Queene, said Oliua, to send for him to her chamber, to the end we may haue the meane to confer with him together, so shall the pleasure of you both be fully satisfied. That shall I doe, answered Mabile, so going to the Queenes chamber, she thus spake to her Maiesty. It were good (Madam) you should see my brother and mine Vnkle Galuane, in respect they are come hither to honour you with their seruice. Sweete friend, said the Queene, I take it very gently that you haue so well aduised me, for I promise ye I am very desirous to see them: wherewith she sent one of her Ladies to the King, desiring him that they might come to her, which he

liking very well, said, Gentlemen; my Queene is desirous to see you all three, let me then request your consent herein. You must iudge if Agraises liked this motib, because he certainly knew to finde thers, the princesse Oliua, the choice Lady and Mistresse of his heart. But when they came among the Ladies, their entertainment was good and gracieous, especially by the Queene her selfe, who caused them to sit downe by her, as meanning matter of more priuate conference. Many familiar speeches were entercoursed betweene them, and practising by all meanes to welcom them honourably: for she was the onely Queene of the world that loonest could win the hearts of Gentlemen, and therein tooke no little pleasure, by means whereof, she was loued of most and least, being repugned the most vertuous Lady living.

Now had Oliua made choice of her place next Mabile, thinking Agraises would soonest come to his sister when he left the Queene: but while hee beguiled the time with her, his eye glanced on the object of his heart, which he being vnable to dissemble, was compellid to a sodaine alteration of countenance, and could not withdraw his looks from the Adamant of his thoughts: which the Queene somewhat noted, yet imagined his Sister Mabile was the cause, and that he was desirous to talk with her, wherfore she thus spake to him. My Lord Agraises, will ye not see your sister whom you loue so dearely? Yes Madam, quoth he, so I please you to glorie me leauie? Herewith he arose and came to Mabile who stepping forward to meet him you must think Oliua was not one iote behinde her, but welcomid him

him both with semblable reverence. But *Olivia* louing him as you haue heard, (ouermastring her will with reason, as a most wife & well aduised Princesse) gaue little in outward shew: till after sundry amiable speeches passing betwene them thre, they had some leasure to stand a while asunder from all the rest. Yet did *Agnes* keep neere his Mistresse, taking her by the hand, and playing with her fingers often sent her a sweete kisse in imagination: so that by intire regarding her, he was transported with such singuler delight, as he neither heard or made any answere to his sister. She being ignorant as yet of his disease, knew not well what to thinke, for notwithstanding all her courteous speeches, his minde was otherwise busied then on her: yet in the end she discouered the cause of this suddaine mutation, perceiving that *Olivia* and her brother were surprized with each others loue. Whereupon she thought it best to fauor them with more liberty, feigning a desire to speake with her Vnkle *Galunes*, which she prettily coloured in this manner. Brother, quoth she, I pray ye increase the Queene that my Vnkle may come hither, because it is long time since I saw him, and I haue, somewhat to acquaine him with all secretly. I hope to obtaine so much of her, answered *Agnes*: whereupon he went to the Queene & thus spake. Madam, if you could, spare mine vncle a little, you might doe his Neece a very great pleasure, for she is desirous to talke with him. And reas on good, said the Queene: at which words *Galunes* went with him, which *Mabell* seeing, she humbly met him, making great reverence, when *Galunes* vning the like to her, began in

this manner. Fayre Neece, I am glad to see you in such good position: but tell me I pray ye, do you like Scotland or this Countrey better? We shall confer, quoth she, more conueniently at the window, because I haue many things to tell ye, which were needeless for my brother to vnderstand: nor shall he, they being of such importance as they are. These words shee vitterd smiling, and witha marueilous good grace: cheefly because her brother might count his friend alone. And well said Neece, answered *Galunes*, our secretes are so great, as they must needs bee kept from him. Sotaking her by the hand, they went aside to one of the windowes, by meanes whereof, *Agnes* and *Olivia* were left alone: When the Prince perceiuing hee had liberty to speake, trembling in abondance of affection, he began thus. Madam, to accomplish your commandement when you pased from mee, as also to satisfie my heart which never enjoyeth rest, but in the gratiouse contentment, conuayed thereto through mine eyes by your presence, I am come hither to serue and obey you: affirring you on my Faith, that being neare your person, my spirits feele themselves viuified in such sort, & they suffer with great strength the anguishes of continuall affection, which makes them dead in time of your absence. Therefore I desire ye (if it bee your pleasure) to limit mee some better houre, in place where I may often see and doe you seruice: And as hee would haue proceeded further, *Olivia* interrupted him in this manner. Alas my Lord, I am assured of the loue you beate me, and also of the griefe you endur-

we being absent one from another: as no other proofe is required, then what mine owne heart doth plainly testifie, smothering a displeasure worse then death it selfe: whereto oftentimes I could very gladly submit my selfe, did not a cheerefull hope rebake this despaire, how one day our loue shal meet together with happy contentation. And perswade your selfe, that I daily trauaile in remembrance of our mutuall loue: meane while (sweete friend) temporize and dismay not. Mistresse, sayde *Agnes*, you haue already so boode me to you, as I must (in duty) temporize till time you please, but I desirye to consider, how I haue no forces, but such as you must forfesse withall: so that if you contynue your graces to me as you haue begun, I shall haue strength to looke according to your deserts. While I liue my Lord, quoth she, never will I faile yee, be you then so well aduised, as easie one may loue and esteeme yee: whereby I may striue to loue you more then any other can, in respect you are none of theirs, or your owne, but mine onely. And if it happen some to speake of you, you must thinke I receiuie incomprehenisble ioy therein, for it cannot bee without recital of your haughty courage & chivalry: yet my heart dreading the dangerous occurrentes, which may enue by ouer bold venturing, accompanied the former pleasure with as great a paine. *Agnes* abashed to heart himselfe so praiised, vayled his lookes, and shee loath to offend him, alred her speech, demanding what hee was determined to doe. On my faith, Madam, quoth he, I wil do nothing but what you please to command me I will then, sayd *Olivia*, that hence-  
forth you keep company with your Cosen *Amadis*, for I knowe hee loueth you intirely, and if hee counsell you to bee one of this Countrey, deny it not. Belewe me (Madam) answered *Agnes*, boch your bad such good counsellling will I obey: for setting your diuine selfe aside, there is no man living whom I wil more credite with mine affaires, then my honourable Cosen *Amadis*.

At these words the Queene calld him and *Galunes* likewise, hauing knowledge of him in her fathers kingdome of Denmark, where hee performed many braue deedes of armes: and likewise in Normandy, so that fame reported him a right good Knight. They being with her, the Queene remembred *Galunes* of her assencion acquaintance, at which instant the Princesse *Orlana* came to them, wherfore *Agnes* arose to salute her, leauing *Galunes* with the Queene, and setled himselfe to conserue with *Orlana* who entayned him marueilous kindly, as well for *Amadis* sake whom hee loued, as also the eastesse hee shewed her for Scotland, wherking *Lysans* left her there at his returne from Denmark, as you haue heard before declared: the Princesse then speaking to *Agnes* Madam, we haued alreadie desir'd your presence I haue, especially your sister, who not many dayes since was in great grief, by fait her selfe that came hither of *Amadis* deaies your kinsman, as truly yee would haue wondered therat. Good reason had she Madam, quoth *Agnes*, to be sorrowful, and not alone; but all the rest of his knyghtage were bound to no lesse: knowinge wher our Cosen abydeth, the chiche and most excolcable of knyghtes, yet the best knyght that comes there alwaies mour-

mour on his body, and you must thinke his death would haue beeene auenged and accompanied with many other. Ah, sayde she, the villaine *Arealans* shrewdly affrighted vs, and euill death bestride him, for troubling this royall Court in this sorte.

By this time the King was ready to the table, wherefore he sent for the three knights from the Queen, commanding them to sit downe by him in company of many great Lords and Barons. And as the seruice came in, two Knights entered the hall, who falling on their knees before the King, the first of them spake. God prosper your Maestic with increase of ioy and honor, most humbly I desire to know, if *Amadis of Gaule* be in this Court. Not at this present, answered the King, but we could wish he were here. Right glad would I be, sayd the Knight, to finde him, because by his meanes I hope to recouer what I am now farr from. Tell vs my friend, quoth the King, if you please, who you are. My Lord, replied the stranger, I am a sad Knight named *Angriote d'Estrees*, and this other is my brother, when King *Arban of Nowales* (who was there present) heard him speake of *Angriote*, hee started from the table, and stepping to the King, saydes Doth not your Maestic know Sir *Angriote*? such as haue dealt with him, wil say he is one of the best knights in your Kingdome. My friend, quoth the King to *Angriote*, I pray you arise and pardon me, if I haue not honoured you according to your deserts: for the fault was only committed through ignorance, but be sure you are welcome: & shall with heart, but say I desire ye, how came you acquainted with *Amadis*? My

Lord, replied *Angriote*, I haue knowne him no long time, and my first acquaintance was very dearely bought, for I never thought to dye till I was wounded: but he that did me the harme, promised afterward to give me help, which is very needfull now to cure me: hereto he added the whole accident as you heard it before. In sooth, sayde the king, I would be glad these men should haue a good end, but now come sit downe with vs to dinner, afterward we will consider theron as we may. Next to king *Arban* was *Angriote* placed, and as they were about to rise from the table, *Damas* the Dwarffe to *Amadis* entered the hall: whom *Angriote* knowing, called him, demanding where he had left his Maister, because he saw him last in his company. Sir, quoth the Dwarffe, wheresoeuer I haue left him, hee maketh good account of you: then falling on his knee before the King, hee thus began. *Amadis* my Lord humbly saluteth your Maestic, and all the rest of his friends in this Court. Dwarffe, sayd the king, wheredidst thou leaue him? In such a place my Lord, quoth the dwarffe, where he is of good cheere: but if you would knowe any more, it must be in the presence of the Queen. With right good will, answered the King, and heereupon sent presently for the Queen, who quickly comming, being attred on by diuers beautifull Ladys, the most part of them the amorous friends to the knight, then wayting on the king, wherby they purchased leaue (during the Dwarffes discourse) to deale with them, at better leysure, then long time before they could: but the Dwarffe beholding the Queen present, thus proceeded. Madame, my

my Lord and master *Amadis* in all humble reverence saluteth your excellency, commanding mee to tell ye, that he hath found Prince *Galaor* his brother hee sought for. Now trust me, said the Queen, I am heartily glad thereof. But on my credit Madame, quoth the Dwarffe, neuer was heard of such a perillous meeting of two brethren, for if God had not the better prouided, both the one and the other had never beeene scene againe, so neare were they both at the point of death: but by hap a good Knight arriued there, who names himselfe *Balays*, and hee found the meanes to agree them. Then tolde hee all the whole accident, how *Balays* slew the Damosel that procured their quarrell, for which, *Balays* was highly commended of them all. But where hast thou left them replied the Queen? At the Castle of *Carsantes* Madame, sayde the Dwarffe, where *Balays* dwelleth, frō whence I was dispatched hither with this message. But tel me Dwarff, quoth

the Queen, what thinkest thou of *Galaor*? I thinke Madame answered the Dwarffe, that hee is one of the goodliest knights in the world, carrying a resolution not one iot inferior to the best: and did you see him in company of my Lord, you could make little difference between them.

I maruaile saide the Queen, that they come not hither. Assure your selfe, replied the Dwarffe, no sooner shall they recouer health, but they will be here with you, for so they exprely commanded me to tell ye. So ioyfull was the King hereof, that he minded to keepe open Court after they were come: commanding his Lords & Barons not to depart his Courr, whereto they all willingly cōdescended. He likewise desired the Queen, to send for all the chiefe Ladies in the Realme: For the more honorably quoth hee, you are attended on by Ladys, the more Knights shall they finde heere to deserue their loue, on whom I will bestow many rich gifts and presents.

## CHAP. X XV.

How *Amadis*, *Galaor*, and *Balays* determined to traueile to King *Lisuart*, and what aduentures happened by the way betweeue them.



Olōng soioured *Amadis* and *Galaor*, at the Castle of *Balays* of *Carsantes*, as their wounds beeing thorowly healed: they intended to returne to King *Lisuart* Court, before they would enterprise any other aduenture. *Balays* who desired to beare them company, for the familiar acquaintance he had now with them: intreated them to afford him so much fauour, where-

with they were very well cōtented. Departing thence, they rid toward *Windsor*, and after they had iournied ffeue dayes, they came into a foure corned way, in the middest whereof stood a tree, and vnder it a dead Knight lay on a rich bed, with great waxe tapers standing burning at the boulster and feete; which notwithstanding any great winde could not be extinguished. The dead knight was unarmed, & not couered with any thing, wher-

fore easily might a great many wounds be deserved on his head, and a trounchion of a Lance, peirced with the iron quite through his necke and throat: beside, in such manner did the dead Knight holde vp his hands thereon, as if he would haue pulled foorth the Lance. Greatly was *Amadis* and the rest amazed hereat, and faine they would know what the knight shold bee, but they could see no body of whom they might enquire, nor any place neere that was inhabited, which moued *Amadis* thus to speake. Doubtlesse without some great occasion, this knight was not brought into this place, beeing alone and furnished in this strange manner: if we stay heere awhile, some aduenture or other must needes ensue thereon. And so think I, answered *Galoar*, whereupon hee thus spake. Brother, this rash oath, some-what displeaseth me, for I doubt it will be an occasion of our long taryng in this place. What I haue said, answered *Galoar*, is done: with these words he alighted from his horse, and late downe at the dead knights feete: which the other twaine perciuing, concluded not to leaue him, but euen to take such part as he did.

Now was it betweene noone and euening, when they being thus dismounted, might at more easie visite the wounds of the dead man: and *Amadis* seeing his hands on the trounchion in his throat, confounded with griefe and maruaile, hee sayd. Doubtlesse hee yeelded his spirite as he now holdes his hands, because they still remaine in the place. And as they were thus communing together, they heard a great noyse of some comming toward them, when presently they espied a knight and two Squires,

the one bearing a shielde and hel-  
met, and the other driving a Da-  
mosell before him, she giving ma-  
ny shreckes and out-cryes, because  
the knight smote her often with  
the end of his Launce: and thus  
they passed by the bed where  
the dead knight lay, when the Damo-  
sell sawe the three knights by the  
coats, cryed. Ah good knight who  
lyeth on the bed, wert thou aliue,  
I am sure thou wouldest not suffer  
me to bee thus cruelly handled, if  
hazarding thy body in a thousand  
perrils might defend me: would  
God the death of these villaines  
had excused thine. Sayst thou so?  
quoth the knight t that vsed her  
so hardly, and thou shalt know the  
price of thy words: then smote her  
with his Lance so cruelly ouer the  
head, as made the blood in great  
abundance to trickle downe her  
face, and so rode on still beating  
her: which *Amadis* grieving to be-  
holde, said to his companions. In  
sooth, neuer did I see such a bad  
minded knight, to out-rage a poor  
Damosell in such pittifull manner:  
but (if God be my guide) he shall  
not long abuse her so. Therefore  
brother, quoth he to *Galoar*, if I tar-  
ry too long, set forward I praye ye  
to *Windfore* with *Balays*, and I will  
come thither with what speede I  
may: the mounting on horse-back,  
hee commanded *Gandalin* to fol-  
low him, and galloped after the  
knight, who by this time had gai-  
ned a great deale of ground.

Thus remained *Galoar* and *Balays* alone there till night, which being very darke, they could not see, but heard a knight come riding the same way which *Amadis* took, who complaining of griefe in his legge, lay holding himselfe about his horse necke, but when hee espied  
*Galoar* and *Balays*, he demanded if

they knew the knight that rid so  
fast the same way he came. Why  
aske you? answered *Galoar*. Because  
sayd the knight, I woud haue  
breake his necke, for hee runneth  
so rudely, as if hee followed some  
Diuell. What rudenesse hath hee  
offered you? answered *Galoar*. Hee  
would not tell me, quoth the  
knight, neither by entreatance or  
other curteous meane, why hee  
made such hast: and I seeing him  
so selfe willed, layde holde on his  
horse bridle, resolued to make him  
pay for his boldnes, and to satisfie  
me either by friendship or force.  
Well, answered *Balays*, what did  
hee there tell ye? Nothing to my  
demand replied the knight, but  
peremtorily thus spake. That hee  
would tarry no longer to tell mee,  
except I first combated with him.  
Hereupon we charged each other,  
he giving me such a shrewde push  
with his Lance, as I and my horse  
were tumbled quite ouer, and in  
the fall I brake my legge as you  
may beholde. When *Galoar* and  
*Balays* heard his reporte, knowing  
full well hee spake of *Amadis*, they  
fell into a great laughter, saying.  
In good faith now are you taught  
against another time, not to bee ouer  
importunate to knowe any  
thing against a mans will. Belike  
you mocke me then, answered the  
knight, and trust me you may hap-  
pen to repent it: then comming  
neare *Galoars* horse, hee gaue him  
such a blowe on his nose, as ma-  
king him furiously to break his bri-  
dle, gaue him liberty likewise to  
run about the field, and thinking he  
was not reuenged enongh, sought  
how to serue *Balays* horse in the  
same sorte, but they both stepped  
between with their Lances, & kept  
him off: which the knight perci-  
uing, giuing the spurs to his horse,

he rode away, saying. If I had sped  
the other knight so well, I woud  
haue thought my selfe halfe rec-  
peased: leaue you then to scorne  
me another time. Is it true, said  
*Balays*, and God never helpe me in my  
need, if I make thee not leaue thy  
horse for the other thou hast sent  
raunging. Presently he leape into  
his saddle, desiring *Galoar* to stay  
for him til morning, for then at the  
vittermost he hoped to returne.

By these accidentes is *Galoar* left  
alone, attending newes of the mat-  
ter he vowed: for hee had sent his  
Squire to recover his horse, which  
by mishap tooke his way into a  
thicke wood. In meane while the  
greater part of the night is spent, &  
*Galoar* could enjoy no rest, through  
extreame affectiōn after his em-  
prise: but about break of day he  
found his spirits so ouer-watched,  
as (whether he wold or no) he was  
compelled to take off his helme &  
shield, and leaning on them forgoe  
himselfe so much, that when hee si-  
waked, hee neither saw the gaudies  
burning, or the dead knight which  
lay on the bed, whereat he became  
so sorrowful, as he entred into these  
complaints. Well I perceue, that  
I am vnworthy so high an em-  
prise, seeing so fondly I haue fay-  
led in such an easy matter. Now see  
I how Fortune (through this my  
fioathfulnes) scorned the tieles-  
sour (she shewed mee at the begin-  
ning: and well may she do so, for  
seeing I wold so carelessly fall asleep,  
at such a time as she commanded  
me to watch. But seeing I haue so  
wilfully offended, I will amend it  
by an answerable penance: for I  
will recover on foote with the  
truel of my body, the murdered man  
carried from me in my sleep. Then  
followed he the track of their feete,  
whom he imagined had contayned

thence the Knight, and walking on warily, as loth to faile thereof, he heard the neighing of a horse: which made him shape his course wither-ward, albeit hee could discerne no body, yet passed he further, because hee heard the like noise of other horses. Not far had he gone, but he espied two Knights armed, one of them being alighted from his horse, & reading certeine letters engrauen on a stone, afterward he sayde to his companions. In vaine did they make mee come to this place, for I vnderstand not one word of them: wherewith hee mounted agairie, and they rode away not seeing *Galoar*, but hee called to them, saying. Gentlemen, can ye tell me who hath caryed away a dead knight, who not long since, lay vnder a tree in the fourre cornered streete behinde? Verily, answered one of them, wee knowe nothing thereof, but about midnight we saw three Damosels passe by, and ten Squires with them conducting a litter. Which way did they take? said *Galoar*. This on the left hand, replied the knight: so giuing them thankes, he went the same way he was directed, & soon after saw a Damosell comming toward him, to whom he said. It may be (Lady) you can tell me who hath caryed away the dead knight, that lay vnder the tree not farre hence. If you wil promise me, quoth she, to reuenge his death, which is an exceeding great griefe to many: I will resolute you therein. I will not stick for that, answered *Galoar*, for it seemeth by your words, it is an act of justice to do it. Very true, said the Damosell, mount vp before me on my Palfary, and I shall dire& ye to your desire. Whē they had ridden about two miles, shee showed him a maruailous faire ca-

stle, and alighting at the gate, she bad him enter: But remembē, quoth she, what you haue promisē. And because I haue solicited, you heereto, I pray yee let me understand your name. I am called *Galoar*, quoth hee, and thinkeyou shall heereafter finde mee in king *Lisfaerts* Court, then any where else. I am satisfied, said the Damosell, to God I commend yee: then shee turned bridle and rode away, but *Galoar* entred the castle, where he found the dead laid in the middest of the Court, & by him stood many making great lamentation. Neuerthelesse *Galoar* approching neere, and stepping to an anciant knight, demanded of him whae the dead knight was. Sir, answered the olde man, while hee lined hee was such a one, as all the world may bemonē his misfortune. Do you know his name? saide *Galoar*. He is called *Antebon* replied the other, one of the most vertuous Gentlemen that euer lived in Gaul. When *Galoar* heard he was a subiect to king *Perion* his father, his heart began to storne, and as hee pittied him the more, so his desire encreased to reuenge his death: whereupon hee entreated the knight to acquaint him with the truth of this tragical accident: Sir, quoth he, this unfortunate Gentleman which you see, was (in respect of his bounty and vertue) maried to a wife, who now lamenteth for him, she being the Lady of this Castle. In time they had a very faire daughter, and she growing in yeres, was beloved by a knight, our too neare neighbour: but the young Damosell ever hated him, and aboue all other could not abide him. Whereof he getting intelligence, determined by some meane or other to stcale

stcale her hence, and being so resolute, (forgetting God, as also his owne honour) watched when this good knight, (as customely he vſed) should goo to the cornered street there to succour such as often were distressed, because it is the mostdangerous place in this countrey.

Knowing him thus to bee from home, the disloyall wretch entred this Castle, and finding the maidēn in company of her mother, with diuerse Gentlewomen heere disporting: maugē them all, forcibly hee tooke her away, before wee could fall the bridge to succor her. Hereupon (as wee afterward vnderstood) shee did nothing day and dight but grieuously mourne, despising all the inticing blandishments the knight vſed to her: which in the end displeased him so much, as hee began in this sort to reprooue her. Lady you know that I loue yee with all my heart, desiring onely to haue the like of you, meaning no otherwise then honorably to make you my wife: but you scornefully disdaine me, albeit I am discended of a more noble house then your father is, which maketh mee maruell very much, what should moue you thus to bee mine enemy? In good faith I will tell yee, quoth shee. I heretofore made promise to my mother, and such is still my deliberation: that I would never match with any husband, if hee were not so good a knight, and comparable with my father in chivalry, for which shee made choyce of him among all other knights: to which wordes, he thus answered. By heauen I see you loue me now, for erē it bee long I will make sufficient proofe, that I am a better man at armes then hee. Within a while after, hee left his

Castle, beeing well wouned and armē, placing himselfe vnder the tree where you sawe this knight dead; to what intent I can not tell: but unhappily the Lord of this Castle camē that way, haing left his horſe and Armour, because hee wchely intended to take the syre. The cowardly wretch seeing what aduantage hee had of him, and remembēing the promise hee made his Lady, thought it place comodious to get his reputation, and no witnessēs by to report the contrary, so without giuing him warning, or speaking one word to him, stealing behinde him, smote his Launce thorough his necke, as you heere beholde.

Thus, unprovided of defence, likewise suddenly and most villaniously, was this good knight slaine and yet the bloody traytour not satisfied; alighting from his horse, gaue him many needless cruel woundes with his sworde, and so despitefully left him there. In good faith, answered *Galoar*, the deede is monstrous, vnable to passe without common reprehension: but seeing you haue vouchsafed me this fauour, I pray ye tell me, why was he afterward laid on such a costly bed vnder the tree? Because it being a continual paſſage for knightes errant, said the olde man, to try if any would be so honourably prouoked, as to reuenge an act of such shame and contēmpt, after wee had acquainted them with this sad discourse. I found him alone at the tree, replied *Galoar*, what was the cause then you left him so? Your deſtard is not amisse, quoth the olde man, for soule Squires were euer wout to guarde him: but because the knight who did the murther came and threatened to kill

them, we were constrained to bring away the body hither. I maruell, sayde *Galaor*, that I heard not the noyse, it may well bee sayd I slept soundly. Are you he, replied the old man, whom we found leaning asleep on your helmet? The very same man, answered *Galaor*. Why did you rest so hightly there? quoth the old man. To reuenge his death, sayd *Galaor*, if by reason I might doe so much. Ah worthy Sir, answered the old man, heauen grant the finishing thereof to your honour: then taking him by the hand, he brought him to the bed whereon the dead man lay, thus speaking to the sorrowfull Lady. Madame, this knight saith (to his power) he will reuenge the death of your Lord. Alas gentle knight quoth she, the God of heaven keepe you in that good minde, for I can finde no kinred or friend in this countrey, who will doe so much for me, because my Lord was a stranger: yet while he liuid, every one shewed great friendship in looks, but now their kindnes is cold enough. Lady, answered *Galaor*, in respect both he and I were borne in one countrey, my desire is the greater to reuenge his death. Are you, said the Lady, the sonne to King *Perion* of *Gaule*, whom my deceased Lord often told me was in king *Lisnarts*

## CHAP. X XVI.

How *Galaor* reuenged the death of the Knight whom he found sleeping in the bed under the tree.

 Hus departed *Galaor* in conduct of the two Damosels, who leading him the nearest way through a Forrest, at the further side thereof shew-

ed him a Castle, beeing the place whither they were commanded to bring him, whereupon they thus spake to the Prince. Beholde my Lord, at this Fortresse you may reuenge the murdered Knights death.

death. Tell me his name, replied *Galaor*. Hee is called *Palingnes*, and swerred the Damosels. Being now come hard by the Castle, they saw the gate was fast, which made *Galaor* call out aloud, whereat an armed Knight came on the battlements, demanding what he sought for. I would enter the Castle answered *Galaor*. This gate, quoth hee, is appointed to no other end, but for the comming forth of such as remaine heere within. Which way shall I enter then? said *Galaor*. I will shew you, quoth the Knight: But I doubt I shall trauell in vaine, and that you dare not come to vs. Now trust mee, replied *Galaor*, I would faine haue beeene within long since. Wee shall quickly see that, sayd the Knight, if your hardinesse be such as you make shew of: alight from your horse, and come neer the Castle wall. Which *luer* did, giuing his horse to the Damosels, went to the place where hee was appointed.

Then came the Knight againe and another with him, seeming of greater stature then his companion: they two winding a winche aboue, ouer the wall let downe a basket with a cord, saying to the Prince. If you will enter here, the passage by the basket is this high way. But if I put my selfe therein, answered *Galaor*, will yee promise to draw me vp in safety? Yea truly, quoth they, albeit afterwarde wee will not warrant yee. Crediting their wordes, hee entered the basket, saying. Drawe mee vp, for on your honest promise I aduenture. Herewith they beganne to winde vp the basket, which the Damosels seeing, marueling not a little at *Galaor*'s hardinesse, sayde. Ah good, Knight God shield thee from treason, for doubletis-

thou shewest a gentle and valiant heart.

By this time the Knights had drawen him vp, taking him and the basket in at the top, afterwards the knights thus began with him. Gentleman, it is necessary you sweare to aide the Lord of this Castle, against such as would quarrell with him for the death of *Anthebon*, otherwise you never shall depart hence. What? sayd *Galaor*. Did one of you twaine kill him? Why demand you? replied the other. Because, quoth hee, I am come to let the murderer knowe, how hee hath committed a deed of horrible treason. Come yee for that intent? sayd they, now surely you might haue beeene a great deale better aduised: Darest thou threaten vs, and art in our custody? alas, wee must haue another manner of account at thy hands, & we must chafisce the folly wherewith thy braime is troubled: then drawing their swordes, they layde vpon him very furiously. When *Galaor* sawe himselfe thus wronged both in words and deeds, hee entred into such choller, as quickly hee made them feele the edge of his sword, so that the Damosels might easily haere the clanching of the stroakes on the Armour: for the two knights were strong and vigorous, and *Galaor* well mooued with hot displeasure. Ah God, quoth one of the Damosels, harke how the worthy knight dealeth with the traytors, let vs not depart hence till wee see some end thereof. All this while *Galaor* so laboured his enemies with such sharpe charges, as their hearts began somewhat to despaire, for to one of them hee gaue such a blow on the helmet, as his sword entred three fingers deepe into his head: after-

afterard hee buffeted him with the hilts of his sword, that hee made him fall on his knees to the ground. In meane space the other spared not *Galoar*, but layd loade on him to reuenge his companion, whose head the Prince had now feuered from his shoulders: and comming to the other, the coward began to turne his backe, running downe the staires faster then euer hee came vp: but *Galoar* followed so nimblly, that laying holde on him, hee made him sure for euer letting downe the basket againe, to drawe vp any more knights on the wals.

Now because the Prince knewe not *Palingues*, and doubting one of thesetwaine to be he, he threw them ouer the battlements to the Ladies, bidding them to looke on them & afterward to resolute him: but they answered they were so mangled as they could not iudge of them, and they were perswaded that *Palingues* was neither of these twaine. Wherupou *Galoar* went downe into the Castle, and as hee looked every where about him, he espied a faire young Lady, who cryed aloud: *Palingues*, *Palingues*, is this the great chivalry for which thou wouldest be renowned? now thou flyest like a cowardly and faint hearted knight, yet sayest thou wert a better man at armes then my murdered father, whom thou killedst (as thou vauntest) in combate hand to hand. In sooth what euer I doubted is now come to passe: why dost thou not attend this Knight who looketh for thee? if there be any manly heart or spirit in thee, shew it now in need when thy life depends thereon. At these words *Galoar* looked more aside, and espied *Palingues* well arm'd, who was opening the doore

of a Tower to saue himselfe, wherefore he stepped to him, saying. Beleeue mee Knight, this flying wil little aduantage thee, and leise the strong holde thou wouldest enter into: for thou must answer the life of good *Antebon*, whose death thou diddest compasse by monstrous villany. *Palingues* seeing there was no other remedy, turned and fiercely smote at *Galoar*, his sworde entring so farre into the Princes shield, as he was not able to pull it out againe: by meanes whereof *Galoar* reached him such a blowe, that therewith his right armes was cut quite from his body, the griefe whereof so pained him, as hee ran into the chamber where the Ladie was, thinking by this poore shift to defend his life. But *Galoar* getting hold on his legges, dragged him along on his backe out againe, and with his sworde smote his head from his sholdens. This is, quoth hee, the reward of thy treacheries done to *Antebon*, and payment for thy treason in the action of his death.

The daughter of *Antebon* being present at this deede, hauing heard *Galoar* often name her father, fell on her knees before him with these words. Alas my Lord, you haue bound me in such duty to you, as never shall I be able to requite your paines, my selfe being of such simple and slender ability: but the good will I haue to recompence this benefit, hath imprinted daily prayers in my heart to God for you, hauing so iustly reuenged the death of my father, and the wrongfull forcing of this traytour. *Galoar* curteously taking her vp, embrasing her in his armes, thus answered. On my faith faire friend, hee were a man of little fense, that would offer dis-

displeasure to such a one as you are, seeing you much better deserve to be loued and serued, then with griefe or fauour to be offend: but tell mee, haue you any more enemies in this Castle? No Sir, replied the Damosell, those which remaine, are to doe you honour and obeysance. Let vs goe then, quoth hee, to let in two Damosels, who were my guides hither from your Lady mother. So taking him by the hand, shee commanded the gate to be opened, & the two Damosels entred leading *Galoar* horse: but when they sawe their yong Mistresse, they humbly made her reverence, demanding if her fathers death were reuenged to her desire. Yea verily, quoth shee, I thanke God and this knight, who hath done that many other could not doe.

It was now the vehement hot time of the day, wherfore *Galoar* tooke off his helmet to refresh him selfe, when the Lady seeing him so young and beautifull, as also so valiant in deedes of armes: began to bee touched with loue, and letting aside both feare and bashfullnesse, shee began to imbrace and kisse him, saying. My honorable Lord & friend, more cause haue I to loue you then any other creature living. In good faith, quoth he, and I loue you likewise, as well in respect of your beauty and good grace, as also for your deceased fathers sake, he and I being borne in one Countrey. May if it please ye Sir, sayde shee, to tell mee your name? Such as are acquainted with mee, answered the Prince, teame mee *Galoar*. In sooth my Lord, quoth shee, often haue I heard my father speake of Sir *Amadis* your brother, and of you likewise, saying you were the son

to the King of Gaul, his liege Lord and Soueraigne. As thus they deuised, they entered alone into a chamber, while the Damosels with the rest were pouiding viands: wherfore *Galoar* seeing time and place so conmodious, to request the loue of her that visid him so kindly, shee being a Lady, young, fresh and faire, named *Brandusa*: himselfe likewise active and desirous of such sweete baytes, thus spake. Madame, if *Palingues* loued you as I haue heard, hee had great reason for it, knowing you to bee such a one as I see you are: for my selfe, who haue so little acquaintance with you, am already so deepe in deuotion to your gracious nature, as I would repete my selfe happy, if you granted me the fauour I desire, accepting mee as your friend and seruant.

The Lady not one iot behinde him in amorous affection, shaped him this answere. I haue tolde yee my Lord, that I loue you more then any other living creature, therefore you may be certaintely assured, how my desire is to please you in all things whatsoever. During these speeches, *Galoar* still held his loue in his armes, kissing and royning with her so pleasantly, as *Diana* soone after lost her interest in the maiden, whereto *Brandusa* exceded with greater contentement, then all her former resistances, to *Palingues*: from whom shee kept her virginity so long, that shee was now content to bestow it on the French Prince, and hee hauing a good stomacke to such dainty dyet, made her loue him the better for it while shee liued. But see an vnhappy inconuenience, after many indeings and amorous conferences, as they would once more haue

besieged the Fortresse of loue : the Damofels came to tell them that dinner was ready, wherefore (though loath) they were forced to leaue off, accompanying the Damofels to the place where the tables were couered, which was vnder a Gallery inuironed with trees.

As they sat at the table, and discoursed of many matters, among other things *Brandueta* declared to him, how *Palingues* (standing in feare of him and his brother *Amadis*) caused this Castle to be kept so strongly : considering that her Father *Antebon* was of *Gaule*, and king *Perions* subiect, the sooner would they assay to worke reuenge for his death. For this reason, quoth she, hee allowed no other entrance then by the basket into this Castle, where I haue liued in maruailous griefe and sorrowe, as neuer shall I desire to tarry here longer : therefore right gentle Lord and friend, raight it so like you, without any longer stay I would gladly see my mother, who will not bee a little glad of my returne, and yours likewise. *Galoer* was very well contented, and thought it were late, yet got they to horse-backe, departing from the Castle: but for all their haste they were two houres benighted;

## CHAP. XXVII.

*How Amadis pursuing the Knight that misused the Damofel, met another Knight with whom he combated, and what happened to him afterward.*

 Ou haue heard what haste *Amadis* made after the Damofell, whom the knight led away perforne, beating and misusing her very cruelly.

but hee happened to meet with another Knight, who demanded of him why he did so fast. What haue you to do? answered *Amadis*, whether it be my pleasure to ride fast or soft. In good faith, said the knight,

I speake it as one willing to helpe you, if you be offered wrong by any, that you may goe in better assurance if you bee affraid. Truely you may spare this labour, replied *Amadis*, for at this time I haue no neede of your helpe. When the other heard this answere, hee imagined that *Amadis* mocked him, which made him come and lay holde on the bridle of his horse, saying. By God Sir, you shall answere my demand, otherwise, I meane to breake your pate. I know not what thou canst doe, quoth *Amadis*, but I will dispatch my selfe of thee by combate, and that way resolute thee in thy request: for rash mindes must haue rough medicines, and such as seeke to knowe more then they neede, often feele more then they would. So fetching their carrie, the Knight shivering his Launce in pieces : but *Amadis* sent both horse and man to the ground, and with such violence, as the Knights legge was broken in the fall, and *Amadis* had leasure to follow his iourney: this was the man you heard of before, that made *Galoer* Squire goe looke his maisters horse.

But now to proceede with *Amadis*, who tarryed not to helpe the Knight vp againe, such speed made he after his intent, as at length hee ouer-tooke him that led away the Damofell, & comming neare him, thus spake. Forbeare Sir I pray ye, and wrong the Ladie no more. What wrong haue I done her? answered the Knight. The most shamefulllest, sayde *Amadis*, could be devised. What? quoth the Knight, you would then chafise me? No Sir, answered *Amadis*, but aduise ye by reason for your owne benefit. I haue yee well enough, said the Knight, but you may re-

turne as wife as you can. It is true, quoth *Amadis*, shew thynging to the Squire that led the Damofell Palfrey; hee heartely sayd. *Vi laime*, let the woman alone, or thou dyest the death. The Squire being affraid, fled away, which the knight seeing, and being very angry thereat, at, hee came to *Amadis* with these words. Believe me Sir, you command very audaciously: but if I know not how to charme such banners, let armour never come on my backe againe. So placing their Launces in their nests, they brake their staves in the encouer: but the knight was cast headlong out of his faddle, and before he could recover him selfe againe, *Amadis* stood ready with his sword to raze his life, which he perceiuing, and that he must bee forced to beg his pardon, thus spake. Good Sir, take pittie on me, and looke what offence I haue committed by any hard dealing, shall be amended by better vsage. Swear me then, sayde *Amadis*, never to wrong Lady or Damofell against his will. With all my heart, replied the Knight, and as *Amadis* was comming to receiue his oath, hee stolke thence his sword into his herte, whiche which made him prettily fall downe dead, and *Amadis* under neath in very great danger: so before he could get vp againe, the knight deliuered him many cruell strokis, saying. By God Sir, now shall I deereley teach yee how you enterprize another time to gortell your better. At length *Amadis* recovered footing, and gaue him such my such a blow through his legge of his helme, as cut the nose of his face cleane away; wherevpon he was so affraied, that he fell to the grounde wher *Amadis* sette his footes on him, quidly sayng

besieg'd the Fortresse of loue: the Damosels came to tell them that dinner was ready, wherefore (though loath) they were forced to leaue off, accompanying the Damosels to the place where the tables were couerted, which was vnder a Gallery inuironed with trees.

As they sat at the table, and discoursed of many matters, among other things *Brandusa* declared to him, how *Palingnes* (standing in feare of him and his brother *Amadis*) caused this Castle to be kept so strongly: considering that her Father *Ansheben* was of *Gaule*, and king *Perions* subiect, the sooner would they assay to worke reuenge for his death. For this reason, quoth she, hee allowed no other entrance then by the basket into this Castle, where I have liued in maruillous griefe and sorrowe, as neuer shall I desire to tarry here longer: therefore right gentle Lord and friend, might it so like you, without any longer stay I would gladly see my mother, who will not bee a little glad of my retorne, and yours likewise. *Galor* was very well contented, and though it were late, yet got they to horse-backe, departing from the Castle: but for all their hastie they were two houres benighted;

which brake no square in respect of the good newes, the good Lady with all her family ioyfully receyving them, with all honourable meanes could bee devised, beside, the comforted widow cast her selfe at his feete, vsing these speches. Worthy Lord, both I and mine are bound to you for euer, referring to your disposition whatsoeuer wee enjoy, because you are the restorer & confirmer of all. I thank you Madame, answered *Galor*, for your friendly offers, but where no desert is, the requitall must of force be farre more easie. Now the greater part of the night beeing spent, they brake off talke and bequeathed themselues to rest, and *Galor* being alone in his chamber, remembred his louely breakefast before dinner with his new friend, who likewise was so deepe in consideration thereof, that shee could wish such another ere supper, and whether she did or no, ludge you. For no sooner knew shee every one to bee in bedde, but secretly shee came to *Galors* chamber, where shee had no churlish speeches to drive her away, but most dainty, sweete, and gracious entertainment: what else they did I know not, but shee tarryed there till morning, and then returned vnto the scene of any.

## CHAP. XXVII.

How *Amadis* pursuing the Knight that misused the Damosel, met another Knight with whom he combated, and what happened to him afterward.

*Amadis* O you have heard what hastie *Amadis* made after the Damosel, whom the knight led away perferte, beating and misusing her very cruelly:

but hee happened to meet with another Knight, who demanded of him why he rid so fast. What haue you to do? answered *Amadis*, whether it be my pleasure to ride fast or soft. In good faith, said the knight, I

I speake it as one willing to helpe you, if you be offered wrong by any, that you may goe in better assurance if you bee affraid. Truely you may spare this labour, replied *Amadis*, for at this time I haue no neede of your helpe. When the other heard this answere, hee imagined that *Amadis* mocked him, which made him come and lay holde on the bridle of his horse, saying. By God Sir, you shall answere my demand, otherwise, I meane to break your pate. I know not what thou canst doe, quoth *Amadis*, but I will dispatch my selfe of thee by combate, and that way resolueth me in thy request: for rash mindes must haue rough medicines, and such as seeke to knowe more then they neede, often feele more then they would. So fetching their carrire, the Knight shivering his Launce in pieces: but *Amadis* sent both horse and man to the ground, and with such violence, as the Knights legge was broken in the fall, and *Amadis* had leasure to follow his iourney: this was the man you heard of before, that made *Galors* Squire goe looke his maisters horse.

But now to proeceede with *Amadis*, who tarryed not to helpe the Knight vp againe, such speed made he after his intent, as at length hee ouer-tooke him that led away the Damosel, & comming neare him, thus spake. Forbeare Sir I pray ye, and wrong the Ladie no more. What wrong haue I done her? answered the Knight. The most shamefulllest, sayde *Amadis*, could be devised. What? quoth the Knight, you would then chafise me? No Sir, answered *Amadis*, but aduise ye by reason for your owne benefit. I haue yee well enough, said the Knight, but you may re-

warde as wife as you can. It is true, quoth *Amadis*, then flapping to the Squire that led the Damosel *Palffay*, he starnely sayd. Whilaine, let the woman alone, or thou dyest the death. The Squire being affraid, fled away, which the knight seeing, and being very angry therat, hee came to *Amadis* with these words. Behen me Sir, you comande very audaciously, but if I know no how to charme such banners, let armour never come on my backe againe. So placing their Launces in their nests, they brake their staves in the encounter: but the knight was cast headlong out of his faddle, and before he could recover him selfe againe, *Amadis* stode ready with his sword to take his life, which he perceiuing, and that he must bee forced to beg his pardon, thus spake. Gentle Sir, make pitie on mee, and looke what offence I haue committed by any hard dealing, shall be amadred by better vsage. Suse me then, sayde *Amadis*, never to wrong Lady or Damosell against his will. Whiles all my heart, replied the Knight, and as *Amadis* was comming to receive his oach, hee vnto the hilt his sword into his herte, whiche which made him prestely fall downe dead, and *Amadis* underneath in very great danger, saue before he could get vp againe, the knight deliuered him, many strokis, sayng. By God Sir, now shall I deereley teach yee how you enterprize another time to correct you better. At length *Amadis* recouered footing, and gaue his strok my such a blow through the sight of his helme, as cut the gange of his face cleane away; wherewith he was so affacioned, that he fell on the ground, when *Amadis* setting his strok on him, quicly seyed

ted his beade from his shoulders. The night induring all this while, yet comfortably lightned by faire *Cynthia*, whereby the Damosell sawe the death of her adversary, which made her fall at the princes foote with these wordes. Alas worthy knight, the God of heauen (not I) must require this honourable kindnesse, for without your helpe, much better had death beeene to mee then life: yet let mee request this further curtesie, no more but your company to a Castle not far hence, where I shall be in safety to my owne desire, and to trauell alone thither will be dangerous for mee. Nor shall you faire Damosell, sayd *Amadis*, be in such feare, for I will not leaue yee till you be where you would: so hee willed *Gandalus* to bring him the knights horse, and to helpe the Damosell on her palfrey, afterward they rode as shee conducted them. Of many matters they conferredred by the way, shee acquainting him with the whole history of the dead knight, whose deach you haue heard how *Galaw* reuenged. And comaming into a meddowe by a riuers side, they alighted from their horses, betaking themselves to sleepe a little, because it was night, shee tying on a mante that *Gandalus* spread for her, and *Amadis* leaning on his helmet as his best pillow. But as they all thus slept, it chanced a knight came riding by, who sawe them, and without making any noyse, with the great end of hit launce, hee joggod the Damosell till shee awaked. When shee beheld him on horse-backe, thinking it was *Amadis* that conducted her, shee starrd vp as one halfe asleepe, demanding if it pleased him to departe. Yea marry, quoth the knight, and taking her

by the hand mounted her vp behinde him. Why doe ye so? said the Damosell, your Squire might helpe mee to mine owne horse, without troubling you in this manner. It were needesse, answered the knight, for seeing a booty is so well offered, I meane to haue the carriage of it my selfe. These wordes made the Damosell suspect her selfe deceived, and looking backe, shee behelde where *Amadis* lay fast asleepe, wherefore shee cryed out so loud as shee could. Ah helpe me Sir, quoth shee, for heere is one I knowe not will forcibly carry mee away. When the knight heard what a noyse shee made, hee gaue the spurres to his horse, riding away in a maine gallop: but *Amadis* awaking and not seeing the Damosell, was greatly displeased, hastily calling *Gandalus* to bring him his horse, afterward hee posted the same way the knight had taken. At length hee got a sight of them, marking their entrance into a thicket of trees where he mistooke his way in such sort, as hee knew not which side of the woode to take: when (though hee was one of the most patient men in the world) he conceiuied this griesse marueilous vnkindly, saying to himselfe. Now may the Damosel well report, that I haue done her as much shame as succour: for if I defended her from one forcer, by my sloathfulnesse I haue left her in the power of one worse then he.

Thus riding in and out among the brambles, offering much iniurie to his horse, at length he heard the winding of a horne, which made him follow the sound thereof, imagining the knight did it for his pleasure. Soone after he espied a strong Castle on the top

of a mountayne, and approaching neere perceived it was begirt with a high wall, whereon were many great Tewers, and the gate made faire with mighty barres. As hee was seeking some place of entrance, the watch discryng him, said. What man at so late an hour commeth armed so neare? I am a strange knight, answered *Amadis*. What would you haue? sayde the watch. I seeke for one, quoth *Amadis*, who not long since tooke a Damosell from mee. Vee sawe none such, answered the watch. Hereupon *Amadis* passed further, and discerned a little doore open, and the Damosell with the knight to enter thereat on foot, because they could not come neare it on horse-backe: then *Amadis* calling to the knight, thus spake. Stay a while I pray you Sir, and tell mee before you shut the gate, if you be the man that tooke a Damosell from mee? If I tooke her from you, answered the knight, you had the lesse care of her keeping. And the lesse manhood, sayde *Amadis*, was in you, to steale her from mee while I slept, beeing assured you could no otherwise haue carried her from me so lightly. My friend, quoth the knight, I haue her indeede, and of her owne good will shee came with mee, without any manner of soliciting or forcing. In good faith, answered *Amadis*, if you shew her me, and shee affirme as much, I shall rest contented. It is not long to morning, sayde the knight, and then I will let yee see her here, if you will enter vpon the custome of the Castle? What is the custome? replied *Amadis*. You shall be tolde it, quoth the knight, and I thinke you will finde it too hard for your enterprisng. If I would profenly agres thereto?

So soone as hee was entred, the first

first Knight and he encountered together: but *Amadis* overthrew his enemy so furiously, as his right arm was broken in the fall, which made him glad to yeeld for safety of his life. At the second gate hee found the other two ready carrying for him, threatening him with prison, if he did not well defend himselfe: I must buy my libertie, quoth *Amadis*, with your dearest blood, keepe it therefore from me so well as you can. Then couering themselves with their shields, hee met one of them so direly, that he fell to the ground, and his horse vpon him, very sore shaken and bruised with his fall, then comming to the other with his sword drawne, hee smote the helmet quite beside his head, when being loth to proceed any further with him, he said. Now trust me knight, it is the greatest folly in the world to fight, thy head being bare. Care not you for that, answered the knight, I will keepe as safe as you shall do yours. And I will trie your cunning, quoth *Amadis*: then striking a full blow at him, which the knight shifting his body aside to escape, lost his stirrups and fell beside his horse, when *Amadis* quickly stepping to him, got holde of him by the necke, saying. See knight how well thou defendest thy head, art thou not well worthy to loose it for thy wordes? When the knight saw what danger he was in, he fell on his knee, and thus spake to the Prince. Ah worthy Sir, for Gods sake mercy, and seeing you haue so well aduised me, never will I hereafter bee so rash in folly, therefore I yeeld my selfe to your mercy.

*Amadis* being thus pacified, took a fresh Lance & mounted on horse-back againe, riding now to the last gate, where he espied La-

dies and Gentlewomen on the wales, who said to each other: If he passe the bridge in despite of our guardants, hee shall perorme a most rare deede of Chivalrie? While thus they communied, the three knights came foorth to assayle *Amadis*, the first of them vsing these wordes. Knight yeeld thy selfe, or swaere to doe the commandement of this Lady. These arbit wordes, answered *Amadis*, from which I can defend my selfe well enough: I cannot put on the minde to yeeld my selfe, or accomplish the Ladys will you speake of, because I know not what she is. Here upon a fierce combat began betweene the Prince and the thre, who shewing themselves to be right hardy knights, and *Amadis* full loth to receiue the soyle, made a long doubtfull judgement of victory: till at length by many wounds & great losse of blood, the knights were able to holde out no longer, flying into the castle for safety of themselves, yet one of them fell downe by the way, whom *Amadis* swore should die if hee yeelded not presently. Alas my Lord, quoth he, with all my heart I submit my selfe, and so ought all other to do that combatte against you, considering your happy fortune since you came to this Castle. With these wordes hee deliuered his sword to the Prince, who gaue it him again; and followed the other twaine into the Pallace, where hee met divers Ladies and Damsells, when the choyce of them all in beauty, thus spake to him. Stay awhile Sir knight if you please, for alreadie you haue done so much, as you shall obtaine what you demand. Lady, quoth *Amadis*, command then your Champions to yeelde themselves vanquished.

quished. And what shall you bee the better for that? said she. When I accepted the conditions of entracere here, answered *Amadis*, it was saide, that I must either be killed, or vanquish him that I combated withall: otherwise I haue not the right was promised. You misunderstood it replied the Lady, for it was tolde ye, that if perforce you entred thus farre, you should haue reason in what you demanded: say now therefore what is your pleasure? I demand a Damsell, quoth she, which a Knight tooke from mee this last night past, while I slept by the riuers side not farre hence, and hither bee brought her against her will. I pray ye Sir, said the Lady to sit downe and rest ye: in meane while I will send for the Knight who shall answere ye. Then sat they downe together, and shee proceeded on this manner. I entreatee you Sir to resolve me, if you knowe a Knight that is named *Amadis*? Why aske ye Lady? quoth she. Because, replied shee, all the guard you found in this Castle was appointed for him, and assure your selfe if hee entred heere, hee never should depart hence againe, if first hee denied not a promise that he made. What was it? answere *Amadis*. I wil tel ye Sir, said she on this condition, that with your vitemost endeauer you will cause him to acquire it, either by Armes or otherwise, by reason hee hath not done it infly. In sooth Madame, quoth shee, if *Amadis*, hath promised any thing wherein hee is

to bee touched, I will (if I can) cause him to discharge it. Shee who understood not to what ende hee thus spake, answereed as followeth. I heartily thank ye Sir, wherefore understand that *Amadis* promised *Angriote a Efranais*, how hee would procure his Ladies king to him, and yet shes never could loue him in all her life: this is a matter against all right, seeing forced affection is no loue, but dolour and misery, then according to your promise, you must labour to cause *Amadis* reuoke this vnreasonable offer.

Now trust mee Madame, replied the Prince, you say right well I will endeauer to make him acquite you. These wordes prooued many thankes from her, shes not comprehending his meaning heerin: for bee hoped to accomplit his promise both to *Angriote* and her, without derogating either to one or other, as you hereafter shall understand. But Madame, saide shee, are you shes whom *Angriote* loueth so? Yea truely, quoth shee. I know him very well answereed *Amadis*, that bee is one of the best Knights in the world, and shee thinkes there is no Lady or Gentlewoman so rich or faire, but mighte thinke herselfe happy and fortunate to haue such a Knight as he. Neverthelesse, what I say, is to exempt my selfe from the promise I made ye, for I will performe it if I can, because bee is a much better Knight then *Amadis*, albe it he made him that gentle offer.

## CHAP. XXXIII.

How Amadis combated with the Knights, that did steale the Damosell from him when he slept, and vanquished him.

While thus they were deuising together, there entred another Knight of large proportion and strong, all armed except with his helmet and gauntlets, who thus spake to *Amadis*. It is tolde me Sir knight, that you demaund a Damosell which I brought hither yester night, and how I did it against her will: but assure your self, she would more willingly goe with mee then stay with you, therfore you may be ashamed thus to quarrel, nor haue I any reason to deliuer her againe to you. I would faine see her, answered *Amadis*. It must bee then, saide the Knight, whether I will or no: but if you will maintaine that I haue wronged her, and she ought not to be mine, I presently will approue the contrarie on your person by combat. Thou canst not please mee better, quoth *Amadis*, and in this cause will I stand not onely against thee, but resolutely against all other: that by right she appertayneth not to thee, if willingly she gaue not her consent. Let vs see then, saide the Knight, which of vs shall haue her. This man of whom we speake, was Uncle germaine to *Angrioste* Ladie, named *Gafinan*, shee louing and honouring him above all her other kinred: for hee was the best Knight of his race, wise and discrete, so that shee was altogether gouerned by his counsell. A goodly horse beeing brought forth for him, hee laced on his helmet, and stood prouided to enter the combat: which *Gronessa* the Lady

perceyning, shee came to her Uncle with these wordes. Certes my Lord, it were better you should forbear this difference, because I would bee sory any harme should come to either of you, in respect you Uncle are the only man of the world, whom I am most bound to loue: and this knight I haue greatest hope in, for he hath promised to deale with *Amadis*, as hee shall acquire the offer made to *Angrioste*. What Necce? answered *Gafinan*, thinke you that hee or any his like, can dissuade the most gentle Knight on the earth from accomplishing his promise? I know not quoth shee, what you imagine of him, but I repute him one of the best in the worlde: otherwise hee could not haue entered here by strength of Armes as hee did. Say you so? replied *Gafinan*, yete pralke him ouer mynch, for passing the defended gates, when men of such mean account had them in charge. I say not this, but that hee may be a gentle Knight, yet I hope to take him forth a new lesson, and a better then hee if hee were here: in witness of my wordes, your selfe shall presently be iudge, seeing him vanquished, and my selfe peaceably possessed of the Damosell we quarell for. Herewith the Ladie left them, and they giuing the spurres to their horses, brake their Lances gallantly in the encounter, and with such fury met their bodies, that *Gafinan* was dismounted, haung a shrewd fall against the ground: yet he arose quickly, and drawing his sworde, stood by a Marble pillar in the middest of the

Court

Court, thinking *Amadis* could there little endome him being on horse-backe, and hee on foote. When *Amadis* sawe how his enemy dallied with him, he waxed verely angry, and striking fierely at him, by mishap his sworde lighted short on the pillar, and so was broken in three peeces: now grew he into greater choller, and seeing in what danger hee was, vnprouided of a weapon to defend himselfe withall, hee leaped from his horse so quickly as hee could, when *Gafinan* thus spake to him. Knight, thou feest thy death at hand, if thou grant not the Damosell to be mine. Nor will I yeilde thereto, saide *Amadis*, vntille her selfe doe first consent. Thou shal see, quoth *Gafinan*, how deere this foolish humour will cost thee. With these wordes he deliuered his iorney sharte stroakes, but *Amadis* awardeled them verily cunningly, so that the most of them were bestowed in vaine rather wearyng his enemy, then doing him any harme. And so long endured the combatte, as the beholders were not a little amazed therat, wondering that *Gafinan* got not the victorie all the while, considering what aduantage hee had of the Prince: but *Amadis* concluded with himselfe (being thus extreameley handled) to hazard rather a speedy conquest, then a langing shame, and therefore ranne violently vpon *Gafinan*, getting fast holde about his body so suddenly, as he had scant leasure to lift his armes for resistance, but was constrained to let fall his sworde and struggle with *Amadis*, who griped him terribly, so stroue they to ouerthrow each other. But *Amadis* threw him with such might against the Marble pillar, that hee was not able to stinde on his feete; and afterward taking vp *Gafinan* sworde, brake the buckles of his helmet, then catching him by the head, hee sayd. Knight thou hast offend me greatly wrong since my sworde brake, knowew shall I bee revenged on thee. Then made hee a proffer to smite off his heade, which *Gronessa* seeing, cryed in Alarame. Knight, haue pittie of me and mee together. With abundance of teares trickling downe her cheeke, shee came and fell at the feete of *Amadis*, shewinge the affection of her request, and her inward griefe to beholde her Uncles death: all which *Amadis* well noting, feigned himselfe mōe willing to kill him then before sayng. If your soule were reasonable, I would consent thereto: but hee hath so wronged mee and without redresse, as I cannot be satisfid but with the losse of his heade. Alas my Lord, quoth shee, for Gods sake demand for the other satisfiction, for I will doe whatsoeuer you please, to redeeme his life. Lady, answered *Amadis*, there be but two things which may save his life: first the deliuerance of the Damosell againe to mee, or secondly, that you swear to me as a loyall Lady, to meet me at the next assencion held by king Rishart, and to graunge a boone ieh shall require of you. *Gafinan* beholding this, gerishis life, saide to the Ladie Niece, suffer me not shought your default to die, but take compassion on mee, and promise the knight faithfully what he shall demand, which shose presently did, wherefore *Amadis* ptemised him to arise, & said to the Ladie, Ladie yee Madame, the soule I must obayne of you, gaue faich nothing of my proprieite concerning *Amadis* for.

for I will accomplish it to my vertuost, see then no defaute bee made on your behalfe. In sooth my Lord, quoth shee, I will perferme my duty effectually, knowing well, such men ought to bee honoured for vertue, in whom so singular prouesse is apparant: much lessc then weede any doubt be made, of any thing prejudicall to my vnystayned report. Be holde therof sayd *Amadis*: then was the Damosell sent for, and shee being come, *Amadis* demanded if shee would accompany him any further? Worthy Sir, answered the Damosell, I will doe what you please to command mee, in respect I have beeene so painfull to you, as while I live I am yours in all obedience. But were it your liking, considering the affection *Gafius* beares mee, as hee would rather hazard the combate, then deliver mee, albeit by treachery hee capited mee away: I gladly could afford to stay with him. By beauti-

faire Damosell, replied *Gafius*, most true and sincere is my affect on towarde you, and as I request yee not to forsake mee, so doe I desire your good opinion. You haue chosen (Damosell) one of the best knights in the worlde, sayd *Amadis*, and seeing you like each other so well, with all my heart I leue yee together. They both thanked him very humbly, intreating hee would rest himselfe there certaine dayes: but hee would retorne to his brother *Galois*, whom hee left vnder the tree by the dead knight, by meanes whereof hee excused his departure, and mounting on horse-backe, commanded *Gafius* to carry the broken pieces of his sword with him. By hap *Gafius* was over-heard him, wherefore hee presented him with his sword, which hee accepted, and a Launce that *Galois* gave him: then leauing the Castle, hee tooke the way againe toward the tree, where hee hoped to finde *Galois* and *Baleys*.

## CHAP. XIX.

*Baleys* deliuered him selfe in his enterprise, pursuing the Knights that meete *Galois* left his horse.

*Baleys* of *Corsairs* of fended as you haue heard, with the Knights iniurious pranckes to *Galois* horse, followed him so fast as possibly hee could: but the other had gotten so farre before, as *Baleys* heard no tydings of him, neuerthelesse hee rode on till about midnight, when hee heard a voyce a long by a Riuers side. And shapping his courte thither, hee found there faine theues well arm'd with Crostess and Hatchets, who vil-

lainously would force a Damosell: one of them dradging her by the hayre of the head in a straite way on the mountaine, and the other beating her forwarde with great staves, *Baleys* seeing them vily abuse her, entred among them saying: Trayterous murderers, dare you so boldly lay holde on a Damosell? let her alone, else shall you die according to your deserts. Then running fiercely at one of them, his Launce passed quite throu his body, so that he fell downe dead without any mouing. Wherupon

upon the other foyre would revenge their compaines death, & altogether infurrowed *Baleys* with such sharp assaults, as one of them smote downe his horse vnder him yet *Baleys* distroyed nothing therat, but beeing courageously resolute, quickly recouered his footing, and drawing his sword, layde so fiercely about him, that an other of them fell downe headlesse at his feet. In briefe, two more of them accompaned their fellowes in like fortune, when the last seeing hee could not preuent like doome, fell on his knees before *Baleys*, saying. Good my Lord haue compassion on me, for if I die in this wicked life I haue so long vsed, vndoubtedly both body and soule will perishi together. Since thou doest, answered *Baleys*, so willingly deliuered thy faulfe, thy life I gaue thee, to the ende thy repentance hereafter may make amends for ali & faithfully hee kept promise with *Baleys*, for soone after he became a religious Hermit, spedding the rest of his dayes in great devotion.

But now returneth *Baleys* to the Damosell, who being not a little glad she was so happily deliuered, gave him thankes for the succour shee found in such necessity, and hee requesting to know how shee happened into this daunger, shee thus begun. Hauing occasion (Sir) to trauell in these parts, in the narrow way on the mountaine they staid mee, it beeing the common place for their theevish assaults: and after they had slaine my seruante, they brought mee into this place, all of them swearing to force me one after another, but God and you haue graciously deliuered me. Her modest behaviour in speech and comely beauty, made *Baleys* to wax somewhat enamoured, which

made him chide his compaines to sooths sake Damosell, & peraduise they haue dealt with yee vngently, for they were very sooth compaines with yee: but seeing somuch harm allowed & such a conuictioun entred, wherefore may hap a foundish of ides: hee then request this fayreupable knyghtesse, that hee may haue tose a good law opportunity. I know not Sir, quoth *Baleys*, how yoll are minded, but that they componed me to dole lassigome desires, both God and the world might holde me to excluder entralwise: if I shalde willingly graunt you such an vnhonorable request, what excuse might there be either you or me? But since you haue shewed your selfe a well disposed knight, I gaue thee instant yee to accompany chibalcie, with contynence and veracie: as byduty you are bound. When *Baleys* heard her answere so soberly, hee repented that hee had offered her such vndecent wordes, saying. With reason (faire virgin) you haue fayrely satisfied mee, get pardon me for attempting so bad a faulfe: in respect it is no leesse: soone I haue knights to moue ladies with loue; then for them moderately to denyss you haue done. And albeit you haue first we imagine it a great vndesirke to obteyne of them what we most desire: yet when wily and diucreetly they resist our inordinate appetites, keeping the thing (without which) they are woorke no prale: they bee euen of yoll selves more reuerenced and commended. This is the cause, quoth she, why I more esteeme your succour to mine honour then my life, because the difference betwene th is farre incōparable. Well, said *Baleys*, what will you now I shall do for you? Let vs leauue these dead car-

carcasses, replied the Damosell, and goo where wee may stay till day, night. I like your counsell, answered *Balys*, if I had another horse, but being now destitute, I know not what to doe. We will ride on my horse, said the Damosell, till wee finde further remedy: so he mountynge vp before the Damosell, they rode till they came to a pleasant meddow, where they rested themselues till Sunne rising, and then they went to horse backe againe. Now because *Balys*, intended to secke the knight, who caused *Galois* horse to escape away from him, hee asked the Damosell what should become of her. My Lord, quoth shee, not farre hence is a house, whither when you haue brought mee, you may depart to what place you please.

As thus they rode communing together, he sawe a knight come towards him, carrying his legge on his horses necke, but drawing neerer, he put foote in stirrop, couching his Lance against *Balys*, and running at him, threwe him and the Damosell both from the horse, afterward he vsed these speches. In sodich Lady, I am sorie for your fall, but to amend the wrong I haue done ye, I will bring yowhere you shall be contented, because he that hath the charge of you, is vnworthy to haue so faire a creature in his custody. Ere this had *Balys* recouered himselfe, and knowing him to bee the knight he fought for, hee drew his sworde saying. By thee villaine haue I lost my horse, and my companion thou hast in like sorte abused, now finding mee vnprovided, thou takest delight in offering me wrong: but both for him and my selfe will I be revenged on thee, else let mee be thought vnworthy of my order.

What? quoth the knight, art thou one of them that mocked me as I rid in the darke? I hope now I haue put the mockerie on thee. Hereupon they presently fell to combate, and many sharpe blowes were giuen on either side, till *Balys* at length fastning holde on his enemy, got him vnder foot, when rentynge his helmet from his head, hee tooke his life as ransome for his villany: and breaking his sworde in pecces, layd them by him, then mounting on his horse, and the Damosell on her owne, they tooke their way toward the tree whiche left *Galois*.

But because their stomacks well serued them to meat, they alighted at a little Lodge, where dwelt two women of austere and holy life, who bestowed on them such cheer as they had: the Damosell acquaintynge them with all her mishap, and how *Balys* deliuered her from the theeues, at what time they intended to dishonor her hauing slaine her seruants, and shewe delituite of helpe, whereof the holy women were very glad, by reason those theeues did much harme in that countrey. After they had refreshed themselues, *Balys* and the Damosell took their leaue, and comming to the tree, met *Amadis* therenewly returned from his enterprise: wherefore they concluded no more to sunder themselues, vntill they arrived at King *Lisuart* Court. By this time the night drew on apace, whereupon the Damosell earnestly intreated them, to lodge that night at her Fathers which was not farre off: they liking well of her friendly offer, went with her, beeing there enterayned and vsed very honourably. Early in the morning arming themselues, they thanked their gentle host

host & his daughter, framing their course towarde *Windore*, but by the way you must note, how *Balys* (according to his promise) presented his horse to *Galois* which he won from the knight, and he refused it because he had another, so that *Balys* saued his oath therby.

## CHAP. XXX.

How King *Lisuart* held open Court most royally, and of that which happened in the meane time.

**H**auie heretofore declared, the ioy and content of good king *Lisuart*, for the newes brought by the Dwarfe, concerning the health of *Amadis* and *Galois*: but the more to shew his princely minde, hee concluded at their comming to keepe a most royall and magnificient Court, as all his ancestors in Great Britaine never did the like. Which *Oliuas* perceiuing, who came (as you haue heard) to make his complaint on the wrong done him by the duke of *Bristrye*, in putting to death trayterously his Cosen germaine: fell on his knee againe before the King, desiring hee might haue justice in the cause.

When the King had confidered thereon with them of his blood, as also diuers other knights and auncient Gentlemen: he de creed that within one moneth (all excuses set apart) the Duke should come in person to answere *Oliuas*, and if with two knights more beside himselfe hee would iustifie his cause, *Oliuas* should likewise prepare two other knights. Warning hereof was presently sent to the Duke, and open Proclamation made the same day: that all Gentlemen following Armes, should bee ready at the City of *London*, on the day of our Lady day

day to try the matter I doubted. Neverthelesse I will deferre it till the feast of September, because I heare you will then keepe Court at London, where must bee assembled many valiant men, who shal know by the promise you haue made me, how worthy you are to gouerne such a noble Realme, and how highly Chivalry is honoured by you. Damosell, sayde the King, so much as effects may better my wordes, so much the more will it glad me, to see good store of hardy knights there present. My Lord, quoth shee, if effects answere your wordes, I shall haue great reason to bee contented. So tooke shee leaue of him, returning the same way shee came, wherat every one was much abashed, and displeased with the Kings rash promise, not knowing any reason for it: and now they began to misdoubt, that the enterprise of this woman would bring the Kings person into some danger. But his heart was so addicted to magnanimity, as (whatsoever happened) hee would not be reprooued with cowardice: and so dearely did his subiects loue him, that they rather desired a thousand deaths, then to see him suffer any mishap or iniury. Wherupon the Lords and Barons perswaded him, (greatly fearing some threatened inconuenience) to alter the promise, hee had so lightly made: shewing it was not beseeching his Maiestie, to deal with faires of knights and Gentlemen, he being placed in authoritie ouer them.

While they stood on these tentes, there entred thre knyghts, two of them being very well arm'd, and the third having on no Armeour at all, for hee was a man of ancient yeare, as seemed by

his white head: yet in his countenance appeared a more chearefull colour, then commonly hath been noted in a man of age, who likewise was of tall and comely stture. This knyght carried in his armes a very costly Cofer, and demanding for the King, the Gentlemen shewed where hee sat, making him way to his Maiestie, before whom hee fell on his knees, thus speaking. God blesse so good a Prince as is king Zissets, for within these few dayes, hee hath made the most worthy promise, that euer King did, if he intend to keepe it. Beleeue me knyght, answere the King, I never promised ought, but it was in my power, & and therefore the easier to be performed: but I would faine knowe your meaning heerein. I understand Sir, quoth the knyght, that you intend to maintaine chivalrie in the very highest honour, a matter whereto (now a dayes) fewe Princes delight, therefore are you to bee commended aboue all other.

Heerein you were tolde truthe, sayde the King, and you may be well assured, that I will doe my wettmost to aduance the cause of vertue, while I liue. Long may you continue in this minde replyed the knyght, and because I haue likewise heard, how you haue summoned the Princes and Lords of your countrie, to be ready as you Court the next feast of September: I haue brought you here a thing with me, which such a king as you are ought most royally to receiue. Then opening the Cofer, hee tooke forth a Crouyne of gold, sumptuously embelished with Orientall Pearles, and pretious stones, whereto was seene a more costlier Jewell: every one being

of the minde, that is war to impale the head of some especiall mighty Lord.

When the king had long and earnestly beheld it, he was very desirous to haue it, at what price soever, which the knyght perceaving, saide. This Crouyne my Lord is of such workmanship, as no jeweller in the world can make the like, and beside, the vnualluable riches thereof, it hath a vertue highly to be esteemed: for the king that keepeth it in his power, shall encreaſe in all felicitie and honor. So will it happen to the king who must enjoy it while he liueth, and long time haue I kept it, no king but you that euer saw it: but if you like it so well, I will make ye a present thereof, prouided, you helpe to sauve my head, which I am in some danger to lose. All this while was the Queene in place, earnestly wishing that the king her husband might haue it, whereupon she saide to the king. Me thinkes (my Lord) it would full well become your Maiestie, if you may haue it at so easie a rate as he demandeth. Madame, quoth the knyght, I haue a better thing for you if you please to buy it, it is this mantle, the richest and fairest that euer was seene: for beside the pretious stones wherewith it is beautified, it is imbroyded with all sorts of beasts and birds, which nature hath given life to. On my faith, answered the Queene, it is a most rare and curious piece of worke, not wrought (as I thinke) by humaine capacity. You say true, Madame, replied the knyght, for the like hereof is not to bee found, yet may not the riches compare with the property, and great vertue of this mantle, which is such, as it rather belongeth to maried Ladies,

then any other: because ladies that wearre it, shall never be offendred with her husband.

A vertue of cheef regard, answered the Queen, if it haue any such indeede? I haue tolde ye true, Madame, quoth the knyght, if you will buy it, you may proue. Now grew the maruillous desirous of it, what soever price should be paid for it, especially to conserue peace and loue betwene the king and her, wherefore she sayde to the knyght: Say Sir, how do you estimate this mantle and the Crouyne? My Lord, quoth he, and you good Madame, I beseech you to vnderstand my fortune. I am but lately escaped the hands of him, who long time kept me prisoner on a strange condition, which is no little cause of griesse to me, for I am out of all hope to finde remedy while I liue: and because I know not well the value of these iewels, I will leaue them in your custody, until the day you holde open Councell, where you shall deliver them againe to me, or give so much for them as I then demand: In meane while you may make use of them if you please, for haing experimeted what I haue sayd, you may the more willingly pay well for them. Now trusst me, sayd the king, seeing you repose such confidence in mee, affre your selfe to haue whatsoever you sayd, or else they shall bee restored againe. It suffiseth, quoth the knyght, thenseling to the Lord, he thinkeþ ded. Worthy Lords, you haue all heard what the king hath prouised me, that he will restore the mantle & the croune, which I leaue in your presence, or give me wharsoeuer I shall demand. So much his Maiestie hath said, replied the Lords, & we are wisternes therof. Adieu then,

answered the ancient Knight, for perforce I must retorne to the most cruell prison, that ever poore Knight was enclosed in. But here you must note, how during the time of this conference, the two armed Knights, which conducted the old man, was still in presence, the one of them hauing the beaver of his helmet open, and see-

med a young man, the other held downe his head as loth to bee knowne, being of so tall and mighty statur, as no Knight in the Kings Court might bee equalled with him. So departed they againe all three together, leauing the Mantle and the Crowne in the Kings custody.

## CHAP. XXXI.

How Amadis, Galor, and Balays arrived at the Court of King Lisiart, and what happened to them afterward.



Amadis, Galor, and Balays, being all happily met together, rode on without any occasion of trouble to them, vntill they came to the Court of King Lisiart, where they were welcommed with exceeding ioy; because Galor was never there before, nor knowne but by ferowne of his frondis Chivalry. Beside, eft one stroyed to see Amadis, who by the faleste report of Amadis was thought to be dead: and graciously did the King entertain them all, conducting them to a chamber wherto they were wharmed, blasing the vilanous invention of streakes and the Damosell that caused their Combat together, practising the death of two so noble Princes, who were but even now in the prime and flower of their yonge Right: soone: did the King aduertise the Queene of their arrivall, when accompanied with Agnes, Galamer and King Arbas; he went with them among the ladies: but Amadis castinge his eye on Oriane, and she on him, did cast their ioyfull passions to yore judgment, remembryng that when long

absche louers meete, looks, sighs, and teares are familiarly entercourfed, being the only meanes to contente others heart. Yet Amadis thought it not best to stand still thus musing, lest euerie eye shold growe euening in conjecturing the cause: which so avoide, he fell on his knee before the Queen, saying: Madam, according to your charge at my departure from the Court, I haue brought this Knight, whom I present as onelie yours. I thankeye Sir Amadis, quoth the Queen, both he and you are welcome to our presence. In good faith Madam, said the King, you doe me wrong if you take them both: Amadis alreadie is yours, and thinks you should be contente with him, and leauie Lord Galor for mee. You aske no small matter, answered the Queen, but if he be so pleased, I am not against it, albeit such a present was never given in great Britaine: Notwithstanding, seeing you are the best King that ever reigned here, so good a Knight is well bestowed on you: But what say you Lord Galor? the King is desirous to haue you, will you then be his Madam,

Madame, quoth Galor, me thinks that any thing so great & private demandeth, should be granted if it were possible: here am I to obey you in euery respect, so please my Lord and brother to like thereof, because he hath greatest authority over me. It contentis me very well, said the Queene, that you should doe as your brother commandeth, for through him shall I haue title in you, by reason he is mine. I am yours indeede Madame, answered Amadis, and brother you must be my fellowseruant to the Queen. With all my heart replied Galor, I am contente, and seeing you haue given mee to her seruice, for euer I shall remaine at her disposition. I thanke you sir, quoth the Queen, now may I boldly give you to the King, for I see he would be glad of so good a friend: then stepping to the King, she said: My Lord, you are desirous of this knyght, I give him you, on this condition, that you loue and intreate him according to his deserts, which may not be valued at any meane rate. Believe me Madam, answered the King, I take this gift most kindly at your hand, assuring you, he shall soone perceiue how I loue and esteeme him: nor can I be so affectionate to him, as he hath noble vertues whereby to induce me, which none can valuer or compare withall. But if Amadis durst haue spoken, he gladdie would haue maintained the contrary, for he perswaded himselfe, that he loued his Oriane, beyond his brothers desett, or any other whatsoeuer. So remained Galor in the Kings seruice, from which he could not be separated, for any quarrell concerning Amadis, as wee shall haue occasion to declare hereafter.

All this while Orlando, & Oliver had withdrawn themselves from the other Ladies, likewise Amadis webe talking together, when Galor was chagrinously entreated by both King and Queene: wherefore Orlando called his brother, saying: I pray ye cause the knyght to conchide that standeth with you compassing, because we are desirous so to do. Agnes was nedis where he left Amadis, who dissembled as if he thought not on the Ladies; but the Prince thus spake: My Lord, these Gentlewoman shold faine speake with you, and desirte you to eadid a little and to see both the knyghts he present Moldioli But Moldioli being wise and discreete, not ignorant what remedies shold be applied to passionate mindes: after they had three: had saluted them, Moldioli took Amadis by the hand, delivring him to sit between Orlando and him, leaving Agnes in the court his Oliver: they being softheartely churched began: Although I am nowe among those fourte friends, whom I haue most care to loue and to gard: yet haue I such present busynesse else where, as I am farr from certeyn leue you a while. This deuised she bring the louers together and by a pretty wile gaue them opportunity, to contente their thoughts with fester communication.

Now beginneth Amadis to confer with his Ladie, and thinking to declare the great affection, which vnder good hope gaue him life and essence: extreme loue took him fr̄ the facultie of speech, yet his eyes not vnmindfull of that office, supplied the defect of the tongue, deliuering testimony to their diuine obiect, how farr the fat and languishing heart was trans-

transported by easse and pleasure. Which *Oriane* perciuing, she secretly tooke his hand vnder her mantel, and wringing hym by the fingers sighing thus spake. My lord and friend, what dobour and grieve did the traytor procure in me, who brought hitherto tidings of your death? neuer was poore maiden in greater perill, and not without cause: for neuer did woman sustain such a losse, as I shoulde haue done in lossing you. And as I am better loued then any other, so hath my fortune graciously favoured mee, that it shoulde be by him who is of higher deser: then any other. Herewith *Amadis* cast downe his booke as basfull to haite hymself so praied, by her to whom all commendation was due: and feeling his spirites altered, strove to make answere, but the wordes died in his mouth, which caused *Oriane* thus to proceade. How can it be otherwise my Lord, but I must needs loue you aboue all other, when they that neuer saw you, do highly loue, honor, and esteeme you? and I being shee whom you affect most dearely, haue I not great reason to loue you better then my selfe? On my faith Madam, answered *Amadis*, your sweete and gentle wordes, are sufficient to make mee die a thousand deaths, & as many times to reviue me againe: but how? I pray you at this time onely to excuse my extremity with pity, enduring worse then death by louing you too vehemently: for if I had died as *Arcauans* reported, euuen then had begun my rest and quiet, if I had not known you before. And albeit the houre of your acquaintance is my intire felicity, yet am I assaulted with such violent passions, as my heart would altogether consume in grieve, without the

pleasure it receiues in doing you seruice, and the good it susteint by your remembrance of me. But necessity constraineth me, to craue the mercy as yet vndeserved, by such intrestance as no deser: may value, onely to increase my habillity in seruing you, which if you grant me not, a sudden and cruell death will take hold on me. These wordes were accompanied with such abundance of teares, as was no small grieve to her to behold. Alas my Lord, quoth she, forbeare these often repetitions of your death, the thought thereof is insupportable to mee, for should you die, I were vnable to liue one houre after: considering all the pleasure I haue in this world, is in the ioy of your health and welfare. Nor can I but be assured of your wordes, by reason mine owne cast is sufficient therein, being copartener with you in every torment: but if yours seeme more violent, this is the reason, my will being equall with yours, wanteth the strenght you haue in suffering, & cannot effect the desire of our hearts, which vrgeth loue and grieve more in you then me, albeit my share is not onelioare the lesse. But this I promise you on my faith, if fortune or our owne endeauour, can compasse no meane to yelde vs content, my selfe will search some way whatsoeuer happen, bee it hate of Father, Mother, Kinred, & Friends: for we may not thus procrastinate our ioy, and groane vnder the weighty burden of desire the flame whereof climeth so high, as the martyrdome of our hearts may easily bee discovered. No doubt these wordes were pleasing to *Amadis*, and gaue such chearefull life to his hope, that hee was rauished with inward con-

conceit thereof: when shee seeing him mure, trode vpon his foote, saying, Discomfort not your selfe my Lord, for I will not fayle what I haue promised, nor shall you depart till you perceiue it: and shortly will the King hold open Court, where both he and the Queen must depend on your assistance, knowing well that your presence shall honour the company.

As they would haue continued in longer talke, the Queene called *Amadis*, causing him to sit downe by *Galor*, for the King was gone to his chamber. Then began the Ladies to censure on the brethren, but they resembled each other so like, as little difference could bee discerned betweene them: every one being of the opinion, that these twayne were the most perfect amongst all Knights, both in beauty, noblenesse, bounty, and good

## CHAP. XXXII.

How King Lisiart departed from Windsor to the Cittie of London, shewinge to hold open and roiall Court.

**N** the beginning of this book it hath been declared, how the diuine bountie calling *Lisiart* to the Realme of great *Brissaine*, soone after of a disinherited Prince, made him the peaceable King of such a Monarchy, by the death of his elder brother *Felangris*, who dyed without any heire of his body begotten. Likewise how he was reputed such a great Lord through the world, as many Knights came from strange Countries to serue him, not thinking themselves happy, except they might bee named Knights of his Court. But within a whille after,

whether this fortunate king forgot the author of his good, or else it happened by diuine permission: this happy Realme fell into persecution, and the illustrious state of King *Lisiart* was troubled and obscured, that all men might know: how he onely is Lord and King of all living creatures, who exalteth and abaseth when him pleaseith, according as you shall here understand. For King *Lisiart* having concluded, to hold the most roial and stately Court, that ever king did in the Realme of great *Brissayne*, commanded that on the 5. day following, all the Lords of his Kingdome should appaere personally at

London, there to determine on matters of chivalrie, which he intended to maintaine with all honour might be devised. But in the selfe-same place, where he thought the greater part of the world shoud yelde him obeyfance, began the first mutabilitie of Fortune, bringing his estate and person in danger of vtter ruine, according as you shall vnderstand at large.

King *Lisnart* departing with all his traine from *Windsore*, to keepe his Court at the famous Cittie of *London*, it was wonderfull to beholde the Lords, Ladies, and Gentlewomen that gaue their attendance, especially so many young Gentlewomen beeing there present: some to regard the magnificeuce of the Court, other to do seruice to their louely mistresses, and nothing now generally minded but pastime and pleasure. The King likewist (for greater maestic of his Court) ordained that none of this assembly should lodge in the Cittie, but to erect their Pauillions in the fields and meddowes, along the banckes that hemmed in the faire riuier of *Thames*, least the extreame heate might be hurtfull to them: all which being done according to appointment, the fields seemed as a most royll Camp, or as if the greater part of the world were there assembled. But because the king arriuied there two or three daies before the feast, he went to his Pallace, accompanied onely with his Queene, *Amadis*, *Galeor*, *Agrases*, *Don Galuernes*, and certaine other his most fauoured: the rest kept themselues in their tents, according as the herbingers had in quarters limited them. With sundry sorts of pastimes was the King enterained, which continued till

fortune ( enuying his felicitie) changed them into griefe & tears: by the meanes of a Lord, no subiect to the King, but his neerer neighbour then friend, named *Barfian*, a man opulent in riches, and endued with few vertues, as may be gathered by the matter ensuing.

This *Barfian* was Lord of a Countrey, called *Sansuega*, and very familiar with *Arcalans* the chanter, who not long before came to him, and conferred with him in this manner. My Lord, quoth hee, the great desire I haue to doe you seruice, hath made me inuent the meane ( if you like therof) to deliuer in short time the Realme of great *Brittaine* quietly into your hands, without much hazarding your person, or any great expence. When *Barfian* ( who was a very ambitious man) heard the wordes of *Arcalans*, who promised to make him King if he would: he thus replie. In good faith, my deere friend *Arcalans*, if thou canst perfore the thing thou vauntest of, no feare shall hinder me to hazard my person, much lesse will I reckon of expence, if I see any likely-hood in the compassing. It is a thing, saide *Arcalans*, very easie to bee done, and presently shall you vnderstand by what meane: prouided, that you swear to me, after you are seated in the regiment, to make me super-intendent and cheefe maister of your house-holde. That will I, answered *Barfian*, with any thing else thou shalt desire. Marke then the platforme, quoth *Arcalans*. You know how King *Lisnart* hath openly published, this feast of septembre to holde open Court, whether you must goe well accompanied with knyghts, then shall I order the matter in such sort, that I will

will carry away the King prisoner, no man alive being able to succour him: in like manner will I carry thence his Daughter, whom you shall take to wife, and afterward will I send ye the Kings head. Thus in respect the Princesse is right heire to the Crown, and you enioyng her in Mariage, being well accompanied with Knyghts as I tolde ye: easilly may you make scizure on the Realme, nor shall you finde any to speake against it. In sooth, answered *Barfian*, if such an enterprise might sort to effect, I would make thee more rich and mighty then euer were any of thy linage, as also the chiefe comander my house. It sufficeth said *Arcalans*, your selfe shall soone perceiue that seldom I enterprize any thing but it comes to passe: then faile not to bee present in the assembly at *London*. So came the traytore *Barfian* to King *Lisnart*, feigning his intent to do him honor, wherefore the King sent many of his knyghts, entertaining him as a most noble friend, appointing his lodgynge, and all things else necessary for him, and being with the King in his pallace, he entred into these speeches. My Lord, vnderstanding what royll magnificeuce you meane to keepe in your Court, as also the good Knyghts and braue men were here to be seene, this day I intended to honour you with my person: not as your vassalle or subiect, holding my Countrey of God and by the Sword, but as your good neighbour and friend, if you please. Trust me, quoth the King, you do me very great pleasure and honour, and I thanke you for this gentle paines, that you would bee seene in so good company: assuring you Lord *Barfian* and my friend, this courtesie shall bee remembred in what I may, for I make very eschewall account of you. Your Maiesy dealeth very kindly with me, replied *Barfian*, and I protest on my faith, to bee ready to counsell your affaires for the best, according as I haue a long time desired. See how the traytore lied in every word, but the good king misdoubting nothing, requited his offer with many thankes, and to do him the greater honour, appointed his lodging in his owne Palace, himselfe and his Queene going forth of the City with their Tents and Pauillions, imagining he could noe do too much for the traitour. And first he acquainted him with the whole enterprize, and wherefore he caused this great assembly, declaring the names & Sir names of the best commended Knyghts, their haughty prowesse and resolusions, among whom hee forgot not *Amadis* and *Galeor*, whose hardines was impossible to be equalled, they two being accomplished with all the vertues required in Chivalrie. When the king was withdrawn to his Tents, and *Barfian* to the Pallace, he began to consider on the strength of his Maiesy, as also the loue and obeyfance so many great Princes shewed him: which made him vnable to enjoy any rest, and often times he repented his foolish enterprize, seeing how hard it would proue in execution.

Now he minded to alter his determination, when sodainely another opinion entred his braine, so that wauering vp and downe in his thoughts, he could not resolve one any certainty. On the next morning he came to the King, who was now clothed in his royll ornaments, because it was the first day of open Court; and he comande

ded one to goe to the Quecene, willing her to send him the Crown he had of the Knight, and shee to clothe her selfe in the sumptuous mantle. Hereupon shee presently sent for the Coffer, and opening it, found nothing therein, whereat shee was greatly amazed, considering shee trusted no body with the key thereof, but her owne selfe, and euermore carried it about her. But knowing not how to remeide this mishap, shee acquainted the King therewith, who in great displeasure came to her, laying. I meruaile Madam you haue kept so badly, the lavel which would haue so greatly honoured this time, considering vnder what condition it was left with vs. On my faith my Lord, quoth shee, I know not what to say, I found the Coffer fast lockt, and none but my selfe hath kept the key of it. But in a dreame this last night, me thought a Damosell willed mee to shew it her, which I did; afterward shee demanded the key, and I gaue it her, when opening the Coffer, shee tooke forth the Mantle and the Crowne, locking it againe, and laying the key where I tooke it. This done, shee put the Mantle about her, and the Crowne on her head, they be-seeming her so well, as I received great pleasure in beholding her, and thus shee spake. That her selfe, or shee from whom shee came, before fve dayes, shoule rule in the Countrie of a mighty King, who at this time laboured to defend it, and to conquer it from other. Hereupon I demanded what shee was, and shee answered: You shall know at the time I haue spoken of. So shee vanished from me with the Crowne and the Mantle: but on my faith I know not if this vision came to me sleeping, or whether it

be of truth. The King was now in greater meruaile then before, willing her to dissemble the matter, and not to reueale it to any body; then taking her by the hand, they left the chamber, comming among the knights and Ladies in the place appointed for the ceremonies of the Day, where sitting down in the 2. chayres of state, the King called his Knights about him, and the Quecene her Ladies, with whom shee communed. Now had his Maiestie giuen order, that nearest his person should be *Amadis, Galor, Agraises and Don Galuances*, and at his back King *Arbas of Normales*, well armed, holding his Sword ready drawne, and two hundred Knights for his guard, then by a Herald hee commanded silence. But as the King began to speake, there entred a most beautefull Lady vere richly attired, and with her twelue other Damosells in like brauery: for in those dayes, the great Lords and Ladies were wont to bring their people to such assemblies, clothed according to their owne persons, without any difference at all betweene them: this fayre Lady addressed her speeches to the King, deliuering them in forme following. My Lord, most humbly I beseech you to grant me audience, and give mee reason in a matter of difference, which I haue against the Knight that standeth by your Maiestie, meaning *Amadis*. Long time haue I beeene requested by *Angrioste d'Estraneus* to be his wife, who I am assured is in this royll presence: hereto shee added how euery thing happened, the cause why hee kept the vale of the Pines, and how *Amadis* trailling that way, made him perforne to abandon Armes. Neuer thelesse, quoth shee, they

departed friends, and *Amadis* sol-lemnely promised *Angrioste*, that he should enioy me as his Wife: wheroft when I strained knowledg, I withdrew my selfe to a Castle of mine, where I kept such a strong guarde and custome, as it was thought impossible for any strange knight to enter there, without licence: but that knight comming thither, vanquished my guardians, and hath vtterly abolished the drift I intended. Yet afterward of his owne good will he promised mee, to cause *Amadis* recall his offer to *Angrioste*: then chanced an unhappy combat betweene him and this knight mine *Vnckle*, who being at the last extremite of his life, at my request he was spared, on this condition: that on the first day your Maiestie held open Court, I should here present my selfe, to graunt a request he must demand of me. To satisfie my promise I am come hither, and desire to know what he will command me: At which words *Amadis* stepped forward, saying. My Lord, the Lady hath told ye nothing but truth, concerning the severall promises at the Combats: therefore am I ready here to accomplish, that *Amadis* shall call back his word to *Angrioste*, provided, shee performe her owne promise. On my conscience, quoth shee, if you effect what you haue said, you pleasure me more then you can imagine: and to let you know I am ready to fulfill my offer, demand what you please, for if it be in my power you shall preuaile. I request nothing else answered *Amadis*, but that you would accept *Angrioste* as your husband, he loving you so deereley as he doth. Out alas, cryed the Lady, what maner of demand is this? I wish Madame said *Amadis*, that

you would marry with such a one, as is well worthy to haue so faire a Lady. In sooth knight, quoth shee, this is not according to the promise you made me. I promised nothing, replied *Amadis*, but I will perforne it; for if I stand bound to you, to cause *Amadis* discharge his word to *Angrioste*, herein I accom- plishe it. I am *Amadis*, and I re-voke the promise I made him, wherein you must needs confess your selfe satisfied: hee gladly would enioy you as his Wife, and I ioyne with him in the same re-quest, thus stand I free discharged to you both. May it be possible? quoth shee, that you are the than so highly renouned? Credit me Lady, answered the King, this is *Amadis*. Ah wretch that I am, said shee, now do I wel perceiue, that art nor cun- ing can preuent what God hath appointed, for I haue done my vt-ermost to escape *Angrioste*, not onely for the euill I wish him, dis- daining his good and vertuous de- ferts: but carrying this resolution, that keeping my selfe chaste and sin- gle, I would not bring my liberty into subiection: and now when I thought to be furthest from him, I am come neareer then eues I in-tended.

Lady, quoth the King, you haue great occasion to rejoyce, for you being faire and rich, he is a yong and braue disposed knight: as you are rich in goods and possessions, euen so is he in bounty and vertue, not onely in deeds of Armes, but in all other good qualities beset-ting a knight, therefore your mar-riage together is very requisite, and I thinke all in this presence are of mine opinion: heereupon, shee stepped to the Quecene, saying. Madam, you are esteemed one of the most vertuous Princesses in the world,

world, most humbly I desire your  
council what I shall do.

Faire friend, answered the  
Queene; according to the reputation  
Agriote had gotten among  
the good, he well deserueth, not  
only to bee abundant in riches;  
but to bee loued of any Lady he  
shall chuse.

Why Lady? said Amadis, thinke  
you not that by accident or affe-  
ction, my promise was made to  
Angrose, for had he compelled me  
to one of these twaine, then might  
you well haue conderned me of  
folly: but making tryall of his va-  
lour and hardinesse, yea, to mine  
owne cost I date affurte ye, and  
knowing likewise his exhort loue  
to you: me thinkes the iustice of  
the cause commands, that not on-  
ly my selfe, but all such as are ac-  
quainted with him, ought to labouer  
in seeking remedy for you both:  
in him, the exreame passions lie  
endureth through your loue, in  
you, by making his restlesse grieses  
known to you.

Now trust me Sir, quoth shee,  
such prayse haue I heard of your v-  
sage to euery one, as I imagine  
you would not say (before such an  
assembly) otherwise then truth :  
wherefore following your coun-  
sell, as also the pleasure of the King  
and Queene, I will forget my for-  
mer stubborne opinion, and am  
ready to accomplish what you  
shall command mee. Then A-

How King Liliuokalani would have the advice of his Princes and Latas, of sparing, using his former determination, for the high exalting and exaltinging of Chieh-chie.

CHAP. XXXIII.

How King Lisuare would have the advise of his Princes and Lords, of sparing, saving his former determination, for the high exalting and exaltinging of Chivalrie.

After the end of this mariage, which by diversity of opinions caused much talke, as commonly it happeneth in such cases: the King commanded silence againe by his Herald, when every one being attente to heare what he would say, he thus began. My friends, no one of you is ignorant of the heavenly fauour toward me, by appointing me the greatest earthly Lord, that lieth this day in the like of the Queen: Wherefore I think it convenient, that as wee in this countray are the chiefe, so shal we be second to no other Prince, in regarding immortall thankes by good and vertuous workes, whereto we are now minded to determine. In this respect I intreate & command alient Kings, & the heads of their Monarchies, & you the members, that you would altogether take advise, and giue mee counsell even from your consciences, what you think most expedient for mee to do; as well for the benefit of my Subjects, as also for our estate. And I assure ye, I am minded to believe your opinions, as proceeding from loyall and faithfull subiects: wherefore againe I desire ye, that without feare, each one would in particular and generally advise, what we ought to doe as matter most commendable. Hereworth he held his peace, and *Bartholomew Lord of Sanvages* was iurated by all the assistants to speake his opinion, which they did for no other reason but because the King would haue every one honour him: whereupon, after many excuses on his own behalfe, he arose from his seate, & making humble reverence, thus spake: seeing it liketh you I should first declare my censure, I desire the King and this company to pardon my ignorance, being vnworthy of this honorable and gracious fauor. But me thinks (vnder submissiōn to his pleasure, and better aduise of all you my Lords) that wee shalld withdraw our selues a while from the presence of his Majestie, where we may more freely conceiue our severall humors. This answer was generally well liked, wherefore the King and Queene left them together, walking into another of their Pavillions; then *Sir Thomas the Bemng, Countie of Clare*, began in this manner. You haue all heard my Lords, the good zeale the King hath to the government, not only of the common wealth in his Realme, but particularly to the honorable increase of Chivalry, which he deeth to conuincē in greater pre-eminēce then ever it hath bee[n]. And therefore my Lordes humbling my selfe to better opinion, I thinke it good (to supply the intent of our King) that wee all ought to counsell him to strengthen himselfe with men and money: for they are the sunnewes of warre and peace, whereby all Kings on the earth are maintained in their proustant authority. For it is most certaine, that exērcise is for Soldiēs and men

at armes, by whome Kings reigne, nor ought it for any cause to bee else-where dispensed, without committing of true sacrilidge: for these affaers are termed holy, causynge the state to liue in tranquillity, and winne glorious conquests of such as seeke to intuade them. Beside, to attaine the better thereto, his Maiestie must seeke meanes to get all the knyghte he can heare of, as well strangers as other: entreating them with liberallitie, to send his renowne on wings through the world, which will fetch from the furthest parts men to his service, in hope of condigne recompence to their labour. By their aid he may easilly make himselfe Monarch of al the Princes by East and West, for it hath never beeene read or heard, that any Prince could make himselfe great, except by the assistance of valiant and hardy Knights, having bought their valour in braud attempts. I fear me it bought by flouuring honoures, and distributing their treasure among them: that they may receive no occasion of dislike, but with vn-conquerable resolution to pursue victorie. As he would have proceeded in farther perswasion, the greater part of the Lords seemed to allow of his opinion, affirming that better counsell could not bee given: which when *Barfusas* heard, he requested audience for himselfe, and hauing grante therof, he intended to revise this first aduise, because he might very hardly else goe forward with his secret purpose: the silence being made, *Barfusas* thus begins. It seemeth by your countenancie my Lords, that the County of *Clare* opinion is a grounded truth, for I see the most part of you auerre the same, not hauing heard any thing to the

contrary: notwithstanding, I hope to make it knowne to you all, and to the king himselfe hereafter, how much I desire to befriend him, you and the whole Realme. The countie of *Clare* hath laid before you, that the King your maister ought to strengthen himselfe, by the multitude & force of strange knyghtes, whom he would have called from all parts of the world: in sooth his opinion were to bee credite, and you your selues bound to follow it, I am certaine in short time their number would be such, as your king, who is a good Prince and liberal: would not only congratulate them with what he was wont to bestow on you, but likewise take your owne from you, and give to them, for naturaly, matter of noueltie and neuere seene before, is most pleasing. Hereupon it followeth, that whatsoeuer service you performe, bee it of alesso high estimation, yet shall you fall into his disdaine and oblidion, and strangers lift you from the seats, which now do promise your ffectest quiet. Therefore my Lords, before you conclude, this matter is of so great importance, as you all ought to bee aduised by good and discrete deliberacion in your grawe iudgements. I hope there is no one in all this assembly, that will presume I speake otherwise, then reason and the good loue I beare yee doth admonishe me, for I thanke God I am such a one, as neede to regard the greatest Prince my neighbor, no more then he doth me: but considering I am in so noble compay, and have here received such fauour and honoar, I rather desire (God is my witnesse) I had never beeene borayd then to flatter answere with vaine perswasion. You must therefore (by Lords)

Lords) diligently fore-see, least afterward you repent with too much leasure. And heare he paused, for the mourmour was so great among them, as they hardly gaue him time to conclude, because the most part of them that accorded to the first opinion, were now changed and helde with *Barfusas*, by meanes whereof, they could determine nothing, but it was appointed how the king shold bee acquainted with this controuersie, that hee might set downe some better order: and after it had againe beeene debated in his presence, hee thus spake vnto them all.

My honourable friends, I am sure that the loue you beare me, & your forward desire in doing mee seruice, hath brought you into these intricate difficulties: and I thinke there is no one of you all, but hath spoken so neare to truth as is possible, whereby your iudgements are so sound and good, as better cannot bee heard from any. Notwithstanding, it is a thing most sure and certaine, that the Kings of the earth are not esteemed great, by the number of places in their possession, but by the quantity and multitude of their people, ouer whom they rule and command. For what can one king alone doe: it may be rouch lesse the the simpest of his subiectes: and beside, it shal seem a matter aboue his power, to gouerne & mainraian his estate without people, let him a-bound in never so much wealth: nor can these transitorie gifts of fortune be better employed, then distributed among such as well deserue them. Wherby I gather, how every man of good iudgement will say, that good counsell and strength of men, is the very treasure indeede. If yet you will

haue better instance hereof, looke on the liues of great *Alexander*, strong *Julius Cesar*, gentle *Henry*, and many other, whose names beeare the title of immortality: they by the treasure of men, and not mony, were made Kings, Emperours & Monarchs, for they could bountifullly distribute their coynie, so such as they well knew had best deserued it; and likewise would yise them with gracious behaviour, as they might be termed Lords both in heart and hand, the only meane that made them be serued with fidelite. Therefore my good friends, I desire you all, euē in the most intire affection I can yse, that you affist me to your vittermost, in recouery of good Knights, either of our owne or strangers: promising you by the faith and word of a king, to honorably to entreat and esteeme of them, as both they and you shall remaine contented. Nor are you ignorant my noble friends, that the better we bee accompanied, the more we shall be feared of our enemies, our state in greater safery, and your selues more securely defended and loued. If then any vertue at all abide in vs, you may easily iudge, how new friends cannot make vs forgetfull of our olde: let none then differ from the request I haue made, but rather yeilde and consent thereto. Againe I entreat ye, and expressly command, that each of you presently name such to me as you know, happily they being yet vnknowyne to me: to the end if any be in this Court, they may receive such fauour of vs, as the absent may bee the better affected to our seruice, likewise we entreat them, not to depart our company, without giuing vs some aduertisement. All which was presently done, many openly

openly called, and their names set downe: but because the tables were couered for dinner, the King arose from his chaire, withdrawing him selfe into the appointed Hall, where many Tables were prouided, which he commanded to bee well furnished with Knights. You may easilie coniecture, that during the seruice, they diuersly communed together, some on the kings deliberaction, and other, of his magnificence, vntill the Tables were with-drawne againe: when the King caused them all to be called, and thus spake. You see my good friends, how earnestly I loue and desire your company, wherefore you must grant me one request, not to depart this Court without my leave: for I would particularly know the seruice you haue done me, and you tast such reward of my treasure, as may continuall your loue to me. Hereupon they were severally called by name againe, and euery one confirmed the kings request, except *Amadis*, because he was the Queens knight: and al this while was she present at these matters, wherefore after the noise was somewhat appeased, she framed her speeches to the King in this manner. My Lord, seeing it hath pleased you so to fauour and honour your Knights, me thinks it were reasonable that I should doe the like to the Ladies and Gentlewomen, of what part souer they be. Wherefore I humbly desire one boone, with assurance likewise if you consent, these Gentlemen after you shall not deny mee:

considering that in semblable company, good things deserue to bee demanded and granted. Then the King looked on all the assistants, saying: What answer (my friends) shall we make the Queene? Shall we agree to her demand? Yea Sir, if it be your pleasure, answered they. What? said *Galero*, were it possible to deny a priuycesse so vertuous? Seeing you are all so well content, quoth the King, she shall obtaine whatsoeuer she asketh. At these words the Queene arose, and thanking her Lord, said. Seeing it please you to giue place and fauour to my request, I desire henceforth you would doe such honour to Ladies and Gentlewomen, as to take them into your protection and defence: maintaining their quarrells against all such as would molest them any manner of way. Beside, if you haue made promise of some suete to a man, and the like to any Lady or Gentlewoman: you first shall accomplish the womans request, as being the weakest person, and who hath most need to be holpen. This granted, hereafter they shall be better fauoured and defended then euer they were: for villaynes that are wont to do them iniurie, meeting them in the fields, and knowing they haue such knights as you are for their protectors, dare no way wrong them. In sooth Madame, said the King, your request is reasonable, and I thinke none will gaine-say it: wee will haue it therefore registered and set downe as a law inuiolable.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XXXIII.

How while this great and soyfull assembly endued, a Damosell came to the Court cloathed in mourning, requesting ayde of King Llouart, in a cause whereby she had beeene wronged.

**M**eanwhile this hono-  
rable company thus  
continued, free from  
all danger and mis-  
hap, thinking on no-  
thing but pleasure and delights: there entred a Damosell clad in  
mourning, who falling on her  
knees before the King, thus spake.  
My Lord, eech one is merty but my  
poore selfe, who am so crossed  
with gries and sorrow, as death  
were the best friend could come to  
me: yet would your Maiestie take  
compassion on me, I easilly might  
recouer my ioy againe. These  
wordes were dype in such aboun-  
dance of teares, as the King being  
moued therewith to pittie, thus  
answered. Lady, I would be very  
glad to relieue your sadnesse, but  
tell me who is the cause thereof?  
Dread Lord, quoth she, my Father  
and Vnkle are detainted prisoners,  
by a Lady who hath vowed never  
to release them vntill they deliuer  
her two so good knights as one  
was whom they killed in fight. On  
what occasion did they kill him?  
said the King. Because he wanted,  
replied the Damosel, that he alone  
would combat with them, and so  
proud he grew in speeches, as at  
length he defied them. Not long  
after they meeting one day toge-  
ther, the knight vised such reproach-  
ing tearmes of cowardise, as my  
Father and vngle could not indure  
the iniurie: but falling to the com-  
bat, the knight was slaine in the  
presence of a Lady, named *Galende*, who, as she said, procured his  
comming to maintain a difference.

which she had with a neighbour of  
hers, being her great enemy: where-  
fore seeing him dead, she caused  
the conquerors to be taken, & put  
them into the most miserable pri-  
son in the world: albeit my father,  
and vngle often told her, that they  
would performe for her what the  
knight shold haue done. But she  
answered, how shée well knew they  
were not sufficient for the cause, &  
therefore should never be relea-  
sed, vntill they deliuered her two  
knights of like account, each of  
them valuing him in strength whō  
they had slaine, to finish the at-  
tempt himselfe was able to doe.  
Know you not Damosell, said the  
King, against whom they shoulde  
combat, or the place where it is ap-  
pointed? No truely Sir, answered  
the Damosell, but I haue seene my  
father and vngle cruelly put in pri-  
son, where their friends can compas  
no meanes to set them. Herewith  
she began again to weep, that evey  
one pittied to behold her, which  
made the king aske her, if the place  
were far off: In five daies my Lord,  
quoth she, it may easilly be gone & returned.  
Now trust me, said the  
king, you shall not want your ioy  
for two knights, wherefore looke  
among al these gallants, and chuse  
such as you best fancy. My Lord,  
replied the Damosell, I am a stran-  
ger, and know not any one in this  
Court: But if you please, I will  
intreath the Queene to doe me so  
much ioy, as to appoint me  
twaine of the best knyghts.  
Doe as you please, said the King, by your selfe  
S 2

and falling at the Queene's feete, proceeded thus. Madame, you are sayde to bee one of the wifest and most vertuous dames in the world, you understand the cause of my mourning, and the gracious offer the King hath made me: most humbly I beseech ye the, for the honor of God, to take compassion on a poore Gentlewoman, and counsell me which two knyghts I shall chuse, that are best able to support my want. Beleue me Damosell, answered the Queen, you demand a matter of great importance, yet in such sort doe I pittie your cause, as I am the more willing to giue you advise: albeit I would be loth to forgoe them twaine, whome I could name in this company. The shew shewed her *Amadis*, saying: This is my knyght. And pointing to *Galois*, sayde. This oþer is the Kings, yet be they boþ bretheren, and the best knyghts (as I haue heard) this day living. I desire your Majestie, quoth the Damosell, to tell me their names. The one, sayd the Queene, is called *Amadis*, and the other *Galois*. But by your fauour, replied the Damosell, is this *Amadis*, the knyght so much renowned? I am very certaine, Madame, so soone as hee and his brother shall attiuowhere I can bring them, my cause will be sufficiently executed, therefore I desire you to obtaine mee their company. Hereupon the Queen called them, saying: I beseech yee both to succour this woman, who standeth in neede of your assistance. *Amadis* was somewhat slow in answering, for he cast his eye on the Princesse *Oriane*, to note if she would like of his departure: and she who likewise pittied the womans cause, let fall her gloues, which was an appointed signall betweene them,

and thereby he was certified of her consent, wherefore hee thus spake to the Queene. I am at your disposition, Madame, to do whatsoeuer you shall command me. Go then, in Gods name, quoth shee, and retorne again with all possible speed, without taryng for any thing that may happen. Hereto they willingly condescended, and taking leave of her, *Amadis* fained hee would speake to *Mabille*, when comming neare her and *Oriane*, hee sayd to his Goddesse. Madame, well may I say that the fairest Lady in the world, sends mee to succour the most wofull woman I euer did holde. Sweete friend, quoth *Oriane*, I repēt that I gave you so much libertie, because my minde tellith me, this attempt will proue somewhat dangerous to you, which I hope the heauens will powerfully defend. I am perswaded Madame, answered *Amadis*, that as the wonderfull worke-maþ of the world, hath enriched you with beauty beyond all other women, he will not suffer you to feele displeasure, by any misfortune happening to mee: for being yours as I am, I imagine my selfe so happy, as I thinke no euill can chance to mee, if I continue in your gracious fauour. If it lay in my power, replied *Oriane*, I would reuoke your licence of departure: but seeing it may not bee, I will remaine in prayer for your prosperous successe. So taking leaue of her, hee and *Galois* went to arme themselue, then doing their humble duty to the king, they rode away in company of the Damosell. As thus they trauailed about mid-day they entred the forrest, which commonly was called the *unfortunate Forrest*, be cause

cause neuer any knyght errant entred into it, that could escape without some mischiefe: and so these two bretheren deereley experimeted, for such mishap befell them, as they verily thought to lose their liues. Still rode they on without any aduenture, till the Moone begā to grace the euening, yet would not the Damosell shew any signe of stay, which made *Amadis* aske this question: Gentlewoman, shall we rest ouer selues here awhile? Yea mary, quoth shee, here before wee shall finde tents ready prouided, and people in them who expect your comming: make then a little hast I pray you, because I will goe before to aduertise them. They were very well content therewith, and so the Damosell left them, till soone after they esplid the tents, where they saw her among other Ladys and knyghts, who bad the welcome at their arriuall: and beeing alighted from their horses, they were conducted into a Pavillion, having seruants standing ready to take their armour, which they had no sooner put off, but was caryed by them into another roome, where-upon *Amadis* demanded why they did so. Because, replied the Damosell, you must lode where they haue caryed your armour. He imagining shew sayde true, made no further enquirie, but sat downe with his brother on stooles that stood ready for them, attending the houre of supper. Not long had they sitten there, but fve knyghts well armed entred furiously upon them, saying: Yelde your selues, else you are slaine. When *Amadis* heard and saw their bad behaviour, he knew right well they were betrayed, and starting vp, said to *Galois*. By God brother, wee are treacherously decei- ued. Then finding no remedy but present death, after they had strugled with the knyghts, who easily might haue taken their liues, *Amadis* thus spake. Ah villaines, you haue vs now at too much aduantage, deliuer vs our armes, and this quarrell shalbe otherwise decided. These wordes will little profit yee, answered the knyghts, yelde your selues our prisoners, or we will kill yee. So may you doe, sayd *Galois*, like traitours as you are, and I will maintaine my wordes against two or three of you, if you dare deliuer me mine armes. We need no such prooife, replied the knyghts, but if you contend in further speeches, you shall deereley buy them with the losse of your liues. Now trust me, quoth *Amadis*, wee rather will dye, then be prisoners to such villaines as you are. Herewith one of the knyghts went foorth, and comming to a Lady, he said. Madames, they will not yelde, shall wee kill them? Stay awhile, quoth she, and if they graunt not my will, deale as you please with thē. Then came the Lady (who was mavaileous beautefull) into the tent, and shewing the countenance of a very angry woman, thus spake to *Amadis* and *Galois*: Knights yelde your selues my prisoners, otherwise you must die. Brother, answered *Galois*, it may bee shew will pittie vs, let vs yelde our selues to her. And Madame, quoth hee, wee beseech yee deliuer our horses and armes, when if all your seruantes can conquer vs, wee will beþ content to submit our selues: but if you denie vs this reasonable request, wee must esteeme the lesse of you, and they that dealewith vs so discounteously. I will giue no credence to you at this time, replied

plied the Lady, but would counsell ye to yeld your selues to mee. Whereto at length they accorded, seeing they could no way else saue their liues: yet knew she not their names, for the Damosell that conducted them thither, would not tell her, because if her Mistresse vnderstood what they were, she knew they might not escape the death. Wherfore shee was content to conceale them, in respect of the offence she should commit, by causing the death of two so good knyghts: beside, shee repented her vnhonorable iourney, which now she could no way remedie, but only by keping their names vñknown. They being thus prisoners to the Lady, she entred into these speeches. Knights, you may see in what estate I hold ye, and there is no meane but one for deliverance, which I will acquaint ye withall: mery if you doe not fulfill it, in stede of giuing you liberty, I will cause you to be inclosed in such a dolorous prison, as shall be worse to you then death it selfe. Lady, answered *Amadis*, the matter may be such, that we shall easilie consent thereto: and in some sorte againe, we will rather die then obey you. I know not (quoth the Lady) how you may conceiue thereof, but I can assure ye, that if you promise mee not to forfaine the service of King *Lisart*, and to go tell him at your departure hence, how you do it by commandement of *Madesme* Lady of *Gant*, who enuies his welfare, because he keepeth one in his court, that flew the most renowned Knight *Dandor*: you neuer shal escape this mirelesse captiuitie. Madame, said *Galeor*, if you do this, thinking thereby to offend king *Lisart*, you much abuse your selfe: for we are two poore knyghts,

who haue no other riches then our Armour and Horse, and hee hath such store of redoubted Servants, as he will little care whether you imprison vs or no: yet shall it bee such a shame to vs, as you can neuer imagine the like, because wee are vnable to do it. What? quoth she, loue you better to spend your life time in a most miserable prison then to forfaine the seruice of the most disloyall king living? Now trust me Madame, answered *Galeor*, but ill beseems you these bad speeches: for he is one of the best Princes in the World, and against any knyght I will maintaine, that neuer was disloyalty found in him. In lucklesse time for thee, said *Madesme*, hast thou vttered thy loue: wherewith shee commanded their hands to be bound. That shall I do, replied a knyght, and cut off their heads, if you please. Hereupon he laid hold on *Amadis*, who was so offended therat, as he lifted his fist to giue him a blow on the eare: but the knyght escaping, *Amadis* caught him about the middle, throwing him so violently against the ground, that he thought his heart was broken, for he lay still and moued not. Now grew the Lady and her knyghts into such anger with *Amadis*, as presently they would haue slaine him, and he had not escaped, but that an ancient knyght stepped before him with his Sword drawne, vsing such threatnings and other behauour, as he caused them all to goe forth of the Pauillion: yet could he not defend him so well, but *Amadis* was wounded on the right shoulder. Then stepped the auncient knyght to *Madesme*, with these wordes. By God Madame you deale like a very vngre-  
sonable Woman, causing your people

people in your presence to murde two knyghts, after they haue yeelded themselues your prisoners. Why Sir? quoth she, did you not see their presumptuous boldnesse? especially this varlet, who before my face hath so vsed this Man, as he is not able to rise againe? Madame, replied *Galeor*, we rather chuse to die, then any other but your selfe shall binde vs: for you by nature are gentle and courteous, and we as prisoners wil shew obeysance to you. Seing you say so, answered *Madesme*, I will binde you my selfe: hereupon she bound their hands with strong cords, and presently taking downe the Tents, they departed thence, *Amadis* and *Galeor* being set on horses without Saddles, and led along by two Sergeants: as for *Gandalin* and *Galeors* Squire, they followed on foot, hauing their hands bound behinde them, in manner as if they had gone to hanging, and thus were they constrained to traueile al night through the Forrest. But *Amadis* was weary of his life, not so much for his hard vsage, in respect he could gouerne himselfe with wonderfull patience: but for the matter *Madesme* would enforce them to the refusall whereof, gaue hope of no better vsage at her hand, but for euer to be deprived of his faire *Oriane*. And contrarywise, if he consented, he should in like manner be banished from her presence, being compelled to serue king *Lisart* no longer: these two extremitys troubled his thoughts, which the auncient knyght well perceiued that sau'd their liues, yet he imagined the cause to proceede from his hurt, and was moued to pitty him, for the Damosell had told him, that he was one of the best knyghts in the world.

ate her wrath : beleue then what I say, and put it in practise. You are fayre, young, and of gallant stature, beside, *Madafime* hath beeene told, how you are one of the best Knights in the VWorld, whereby shee conceiueth good opinion of you: now must you cunningly close with her, requesting shee would accept you as her husband or perpetuall friend : for she is a woman not to refuse you, if you can never so little dissemble with her. But what you doe, do quickly, because at that place whither we are now going, she intends to send one of her seruants to King *Lisfaerts* Court, whose errand is onely to enquire your names : for she that conducted you hither, (perciuuing you should assuredly die, if her mistresse knew the names of you both) disguised the matter so with her, as she said, she forgot to aske your names : onely thus perwading her, that you were two of the very best Knights in the World. The daunger thorowly considered, I sweare to you by the faith of a Christian, that I can deuise no better meane for your deliuerance ; then this I haue told ye, and shall I say more ? If you do it not, worse will come to you then you suspect. But *Amadis* loued the Princesse *Oriane* so dearely as he rather desired death, then to hazard himselfe in such a composition, wherupon he thus replied. I thanke you Sir hartily for your great kindnesse, but I haue no such authoritie ouer my selfe, as will permit me to proceede so far: though your Lady her selfe intreated never so deepeley, yet liberty nor life can perswade me. Alas Sir, answered the Knight, I wonder you will not consider how mere your death is ? It is all one

to me, quoth *Amadis*, but if you will deale herein with my brother, he is a knight more braue and beautifull then I am : happily hee wil consent to follow your devise. Presently he left *Amadis*, and comming to *Galoer*, deliuered the whole discourse he did to his brother : Which he liking verywell, made this reply. Good Father, if you could bring it to passe, that the Lady would accept me as her friend, my companion and I were for euer at your command. Refere the matter to me, quoth the Knight, immedately will I goe to her, and hope to strike it dead on her behalfe. So departing from *Galoer*, hee went to *Madafime*, who rode formost, and thus began to breake with her.

Madame, you carry two prisoners with you, but you doe not know what they are. Why aske you me such a question ? answered *Madafime*. Because the one of them, quoth the knight, is esteemed the best knight that euer bare Arthes, and the most accomplished in all other good gifts. Is he not then named *Amadis* ? said she, whose death I haue so long desired ? No Madame, answered the Knight, I speake of him which rideth next vs, whose youth and beauty had you well regarded, your selfe would say you haue been too outragious in iniurie. What though he be your prisoner, it is not for any offence committed against you, but onely through the hatred you beate to another : all which you may yet redresse in much better sort then you began, considering if he conceiueth liking of you, you may thereby easily induce him to loue, and vnder that ceremony, draw him to do what your selfe shall desire. In sooth,

plied *Madafime*, I will assay, to know if he be such a one as you report him to be. Do Madame, quoth he, and you shall finde him one of the fairest Knights that euer you beheld.

Here you must note, that the Knight no sooner left *Galoer* when he went to the Ladie, but he tooke occasion thus to talke with his brother. You see (my Lord) the estate wherein we are, which requireth some notable dissimulation at our hands : I beseech ye therefore moderate their anger, because alreadie it endangred our liues, and for a while follow my direction. By Heauen, brother, answered *Amadis*, death had beeene very welcome to mee : but since you wish me to be gouerned by you, I am content, defirring the conseruation of our honours, which being lost, we are vnworthie to live. Furthir they could not proceede, because *Madafime* came and interrupted them, when calling him aside, and faire day was displayed on the earth, his beautie and good grace so especially contented her, as she became surprized with his loue, which she shaddowed vnder demanding how he fared. Madame, said *Galoer*, I fare worse then you should, were you in my power as I am in yours, for I would do you what seruice and pleasure possible I could, and you vse the contrarie to me, I hauing giuen no occasion of offence : reasoun willett I should rather be your knight, to loue and honour you, then your prisoner thus vnkindelie bound as I am.

And surelie I cannot but meruaile hereat, considering the simple conquest you haue thereby : whether such rigor to vs, as women so diuinelie adorned are wont to

do. *Madafime* hearing his gentle language, was more and more enflamed with his loue, yet striuing to dissemble it, she merrilie said: Tell me faire Sir, if I chose you as my friend, and deliuer you from prison, will you (for my sake) haue the letouice of King *Lisfaert*, and afterward tell him how you did it by my meanes ? With all my heart Lady, answered *Galoer*, and to performe it, you shall haue what oath you please, both of mee and my companion, for he will doe no more then I request him. Credic me, quoth *Madafime*, if before this company you wil promise to obey me, presentlie you shall enjoy your libertie.

Bethold me ready, replied *Galoer*. Yet is not this enough, answered *Madafime*, for you shall sweare it in the presence of a Ladie where I am intended to lodge this night : In meane while you will assiure me, not to depart my company. We will not on my faith Madame, quoth *Galoer* : and calling *Amadis*, caused him to assiure as much, wherupon they were unbound and set at libertie, their Squires likewise as friendlie vseth, and mounting on their owne horses, rode at their ease as they did before.

But *Madafime* and *Galoer* still continued their amorous discourses, till they arrived at a Castle named *Albres*, the Ladie whereof received them very honourably, in respect of great friendshipp betweene *Madafime* and her. Needelesse were it to tell you of their good cheare, it could not but be answerable to the time and company, but after supper *Madafime* demanded of *Galoer*, if he meant to keepe his promise he made her by the way. What else Madame ? quoth

ate her wrath : beleue then what I say, and put it in practise. You are fayre, young, and of gallant stature, beside, *Madasme* hath beene told, how you are one of the best Knights in the VWorld, whereby shee conceiueth good opinion of you: now must you cunningly close with her, requesting shee would accept you as her husband or perpetuall friend : for she is a woman not to refuse you, if you can never so little dissemble with her. But what you doe, do quickly, because at that place whither we are now going, she intends to send one of her seruants to King *Lisours* Court, whose errand is onely to enquire your names : for shee that conducted you hither, (perciuing you should assuredly die, if her mistresse knew the names of you both) disguised the matter so with her, as she said, she forgot to aske your names : onely thus perwading her, that you were two of the very best Knights in the World. The daunger thorowly considered, I swere to you by the faid of a Christian, that I can deuise no better meane for your deliuerance ; then this I haue told ye, and shall I say more ? If you do it not, worse will come to you then you suspect. But *Amadis* loued the Princesse *Oriane* so dearely as he rather desired death, then to hazard himselfe in such a composition, whereupon he thus replied. I thanke you Sir hartily for your great kindnesse, but I haue no such authoritie ouer my selfe, as will permit me to proceede so far: though your Lady her selfe intreated never so deepeley, yet liberty nor life can perswade me. Alas Sir, answered the Knight, I wonder you will not consider how more your death is ? It is all one

to me, quoth *Amadis*, but if you will deale herein with my brother, he is a kniȝt more braue and beautifull then I am : happily he wil consent to follow your devise. Presently he left *Amadis*, and coming to *Galoor*, deliuered the whole discourse he did to his brother : Which he liking verywell, made this reply. Good Father, if you could bring it to passe, that the Lady would accept me as her friend, my companion and I were for euer at your command. Referre the matter to me, quoth the Knight, immedately will I goe to her, and hope to strike it dead on her behalfe. So departing from *Galoor*, hee went to *Madasme*, who rode formost, and thus began to breake with her.

Madame, you carry two prisoners with you, but you doe not know what they are. Why aske you me such a question ? answered *Madasme*. Because the one of them, quoth the knight, is esteemed the best knight that euer bare Armes, and the most accomplitshed in all other good gifts. Is he not then named *Amadis* ? said she, whose death I haue so long desired ? No Madame, answered the Knight, I speake of him which rideth next vs, whose youth and beauty had you well regarded, your selfe would say you haue been too outragious in iniurie. What though he be your prisoner, it is not for any offence committed against you, but onely through the hatred you beare to another : all which you may yet redresse in much better sorte then you began, considering if he conceiueth liking of you, you may thereby easly induce him to loue, and vnder that ceremony, draw him to do what your selfe shall desire. In sooth,

plied *Madasme*, I will assay, to know if he be such a one as you report him to be. Do Madame, quoth he, and you shall finde him one of the fairest Knights that euer you beheld.

Here you must note, that the Knight no sooner left *Galoor* when he went to the Ladie, but he tooke occasion thus to talke with his brother. You see (my Lord) the estate wherein we are, which requireth some notable dissimulation at our hands : I befooch ye therefore moderate their anger, because alreadie it endangereth our liues, and for a while follow my direction. By Heauen brother, answered *Amadis*, death had beene very welcome to mee : but since you wish me to be gouerned by you, I am content, deluring the conseruation of our honours, which being lost, we are vnworthie to live. Further they could not proceede, because *Madasme* came and interrupted them, when calling him aside, and faire day was displayed on the earth : his beautie and good grace so especially contented her, as she became surpized with his loue, which she shaddowed vnder demanding how he fared. Madame, said *Galoor*, I fare worse then you should, were you in my power as I am in yours, for I would do you what seruice and pleasure possible I could, and you vse the contrarie to me, I hauing giuen no occasion of offence : reasoun willett I should rather be your knight, to loue and honour you, then your prisoner thus vnkindelie bound as I am.

And surelie I cannot but meruaile hereat, considering the simple conquest you haue thereby : whether such rigor to vs, as women so diuinelie adorned are wont to do. *Madasme* hearing his gentle language, was more and more enflamed with his loue, yet straing to dissemble it, shee merrily said: Tell me faire Sir, if I chuse you as my friend, and deliver you from prison, will you (for my sake) leave the seruice of King *Lysaart*, and afterward tell him how you did it by my meanes ? With all my heart Lady, answered *Galoor*, and to performe it, you shall haue what oath you please, both of mee and my companion, for he will doe no more then I request him. Credic me, quoth *Madasme*, if before this company you wil promise to obey me, presentlie you shall enjoy your libertie.

Behold me ready, replied *Galoor*. Yet is not this enough, answered *Madasme*, for you shall sweare it in the presence of a Ladie where I am intended to lodge this night : In meane while you attell assure me, not to depart my company. We will not on my faith Madame, quoth *Galoor* : and taling *Amadis*, caused him to a streate as much, wherepon they were vnbound and set at libertie, their Squires likewise as friendlie vse, and mounting on their oure horses, rode at their ease as they did before.

But *Madasme* and *Galoor* did continue their amorous discourses, till they arrived at a Castle named *Albres*, the Ladie whereof received them very honourably, in respect of great friendshipp betweene *Madasme* and her. Needelesse were it to tell you of their good cheere, it could not but be answerable to the time and company, but after supper *Madasme* demanded of *Galoor*, if he meant to keepe his promise he made her by the way. What else Madame ? quoth

quoth he, prouided you be so good as your worte to me. Make no doubt thereof, replied Madasme: then framing her speeches to the Lady of the Castle, and also to two knights that were her Sonnes, she proceeded in this manner. My good friends, I pray you heare a couenant betweene me and these two Gentlemen, because hereafter you may be my witnessies. They are my prisoners, and vnder these conditions I haue released them, that one of them shall continue my friend, and both of them for-sake the seruice of King Lisiuarts, telling him: how for my sake, and in despight of him they haue done it. Hereupon I intreate this fauour at your hands, as to meete me at the Court of that wretched King, on the day they must declare this message, to see how contentedly he will take it: But if they fullfill not their promise, henceforth you shall publish in all places the heynous offence by them committed, and ten dayes I giue them to execute this charge. I am well pleased, said the Lady of the Castle, to doe a greater marke for you then this, if they as willingly consent thereto. We pray you, quoth Galor, not to faile herein, for we haue promised and will performe it. Receive then your libertie, answered Madasme, yet must you not depart this

night: These words she spake, because she intended to seal the bargaine with Galor.

When the time came that summoned them to rest, Amadis was conducted to one chamber, and Galor to another, whither soone after Madasme repaired, she being young, beautifull, and aduenturously given: Galor likewise, a man forward to such fortunes, when Loue had erected his scaling-ladders to the walls, quickly got possession of the Forte. And so well liked shee these amorous skirmishes, as afterward she reported in many places, how she neuer tasted a more pleasant night, and had she not promised his departure, hardly would shee haue let him goe so soone, nor did shee but in hope of his speedie returne.

Thus was shee enclined to voluptuous desire, as without care of her honour, she often fell in this sort. By these meanes escaped Amadis, and Galor, vnder the conditions you haue heard, which they hoped to prevent without impeach, as hereafter shall be declared vnto you. All that day they rode, not hindered by any thing, and at night were friendly entertained in an hermitage, setting forward the next morning to the Court of King Lisiuarts.

## CHAP. XXXV.

How King Lisiuarts was in danger of his person, and his friends the unlandfoll promises he made too rashly and unadvisedly shew this in his letter to Galor.

Oute dayes after Amadis and Galor departed from the Court, the attente Knight came to the Cittie of London, who left the Crowne and the mantle with the Queene, as you haue heard: when falling on his knee before the King, he began in this manner. I marke my Lord, that in a time of such honor, you weare not the Crowne I left with you. And you Madasme, quoth he to the Queene, is it possible you should make so slender account of the sumptuous mantle I gaue you in charge, not deigning asynt to proue it, or how it will become yet? When the King heard his words, knowing they were lost, he saue a good while without any answere, which made the knight thus begin againe. On my faith I am glad you like the not, for had you pleased to keepe them, you must likewise haue granted my demand; and happily it would proue greater then you expect: otherwise, in falsifying your promise, you might procure the losse of my head. Most humbly therefore I beseech ye my Lord, to will them be deliuered me againe, because I may tarry no longer here.

At which words the King seemed much offended, and not being able any longer time to conceale his hidden anger; earnestly fixing his eyes vpon him ( which were then ouer-clouded with a discontented brow ) he brake forth

Ah wretched and miserable old man, now comes the time I so much feared, bringing with it, my latest and vnluckie exigit: haue I not long enough endured torments, but now must after all those miseries, finish mine olde age in the most sore, cruell death was

wag euer heard of, hauing by no offence deserued it? While thus he complained, the teares aboundingly trickled downe his white beard, which moued the most constant to pity his griefe, and the King himself ouercom with cōfassion, returned this answere. Fear not (Knight) to spedde any thing the worse for my losse, you must be satisfied whatsoeuer it cost me, according as I faithfully promised. At these words the Knight would haue kissed his feete, but the King restrained him, saying: Demand what thou wilt, for thou shalt haue it. I know my Lord, quoth the Knight, you remember your promise to deliver my Crowne and Mantle, or whatsoeuer I requested for them: God is my witness, I intended not to desire what now I must needs, by reason I haue no other meane whereby to bee deliuered, if I had, I would acquit you of the griefe I know you will endure, granting me the thing I must of necessitie demand: but now it may not be otherwise, except you infringe your faith & loyaltie. Rather will I lose my Kingdome, replied the King, then make a promise and not fulfill it, say boldly therefore thy minde. I thanke your Maiestie, quoth the knight, there now remaineth nothing, but to haue assurance from the Lords of your Court, that they seeke not to take from me the gift you must deliver: otherwise your promise cannot be perform'd, or I satisfied, hauing a reward now, and taken from me anon. Great reason, said the King, my word shall stand for their warrant. Seeing my Lord, quoth the knight, Fortune hath so permitted, that you haue lost my Mantle and the Crowne, it is impossible to saue my head, except

you give me Madame *Oriane* your Daughter. Be therefore now advised, either restore my lewells, or give me her, albeit I loue the one better then the other: for never can I haue so much good by her, as I sustaine harme by your unhappy losse. Now began all the Lords and Barons to murmur against the knight, persuading the King, by his word, but he rather minded death, he was such a good and lawfull Prince, and this answere he made them. Be not offended my good friends, the losse of my Daughter will not be so prejudicall to me, as the breach of my promise: for if she one be eniuious, the other is iniurious, and to be shamed every way. The proofe is ready, if Subiects finde not that Prince faithfull, and his word inviolable, what care will they haue of the loue and fidelite they owe to him, much better yaborne thena, my such blemish: this knight therefore must haue my daughter, and will deliver her according to my promise. Hereupon he stant for her but the Queene being present all this while, little thought the King would so forget his fatherlie loue: and when she heard this rigorous sentence pronounced against her Daughter, shee good Lady fell at the kings feete, when weeping (as a Mother for the losse of her Childe) she said. What will ye doe my My Lord? will ye haue more inhumane to your owne blood, then the bruite Beasts are to their contraries? Notwithstanding all their brutish qualities, yet be they never so vnnatural to shew any violence to their young ones. May it then be thought reasonable under shaddow of an accorded promise (without knowldg thereof) to commit so great wrong, nor only

only against your selfe impititious father, or mee a wofull and vnfotunate mother, but likewise against the whole common weale of this Realme? Alas Sir, let my incessant teares perswade you, to bethinke some other meane for your discharge, and also to content the knight. Madame, quoth the King, my word is past, I pray you talke no more thereof to me. Thus speaking, the teares stremed downe his cheeke, whereat the Lords were not a little agriued; and that which most troubled him, was the acclamations of the Ladies, wherefore the King commanded them to their chambers. The Queene seeing she might not preuaile, fell in a swoone, but by her Ladies she was conueighed thence, the King giving charge on paine of death, that no one should seeke to alter his promise. My daughter, quoth shee, I commit to the pleasure of God, but my promise shall not be broken if I can help it.

By this time the newes came to *Oriane*, how her Father had consented to her departure, whereat shee fell downe in such a traunce, as they never expected life in her againe: when *Mabille* and the Ladies reputing her dead indeede, thought best to acquaint the King therewith, yet by forced remedies shee reviued againe, breathing forth many dolorous sighes. Now the most of the women seuered themselues, some neare, and some further from her, because shee should not haue their complaing: and such compassion tooke they on her, as would haue conuerted a stony heart into teares, especially, when the Princesse recouered the power of speach, and faintly uttered these regreets. Full wel, quoth shee, doe I well beholde

mine owne ruine. Ah sweete friend, were thou heere, easily wouldst thou deliuer me from this paine: but thus much my heart fortolde mee, euen at the very houre of thy departure. Ah cursed bee that houre, because I consented to it. When thou shalt haue of these tydings, I feare (being vnable to endure them) thou wilt die immediately: yet this is the best hope, we shall not be long one after another. Ah death, the only refuge to the vnfotunate, seest thou not me foremost in this ranke? why stayest thou? Fortune will triumph ouer thee, in dealing so extreame as shee can with me, albeit I knowe thou art able to revenge thy selfe: make haaste therefore, and let her not get such pre-eminence on mee, in despight (as it were) of thy authority. Adiew then sweete friend, for never shall wee see each other more in this life: at these wordes shee fell in a swoone againe. When the King saw shee tarryed so long, hee sent to command her make stord speed: but the messenger found her in the deadly agony, and staying till shee was recouered againe, as shee began to renew her moanes, hee thus spake to her. Madame, the King is offendid because you come not to him.

When shee heard this mes-sage, shee arose, hauing her heart so sealed vp with griefe, as it seemed, to enable her vitall forces, and being followed by none of her women, but the Damsell of Des-marke, shee came before the King, and casting her selfe at his feete, sayde. My Lord and Father, what is your pleasure with mee? Faire Daughter, quoth hee, I must accomplish my promise. Those speches prouoked her fainte paines, when

when the King grieuing to behold the sight therof, turned his head aside, saying to the knight. See my friend, here is the gift you demand, and the onely thing in the world I most loue: but intend you to carry her hence alone? My Lord, sayd the knight, she shall be accompanied with two Gentlemen and their Squires, which were in my company when you made mee this promise at *Windfors*: & more may I not allowe, vntill hee haue her, vnto whom I am constrained to deliuer her. Yet let her haue the company of this Damosell, saide the King, for it were vnseemely, she should bee alone among so many men. Well, quoth the knight, for one woman it matters not. So taking the Princesse in his armes, shee being scant reuied from her swoune, he set her vp on horse-backe, & caused a Squire to sit behind her on the horse, who might hold her fast lest she should fall: and a very sad countenance shewed the knight, saying, there was none in the Court more sorrowfull then himselfe. After the Damosell of *Denmarke* was mounted, the King intreated her not to leaue his daughter whatsoeuer happened. And while they were thus preparing, the Princesse looking woefully about her: a tall knight well armed came among them, who not taking off his helmet, or saluting the company, tooke *Orianaes* horse by the bridle. This was *Areslaw* the enchanter, and came in this sort lest he should bee knownen: soone after he commanded the Squire to ride away with her, which the Princesse perceiving, and seeing there was no other remedy, deliuering a sigh as if her heart would haue split, shee sayde. Ah my deere friend, in a

happelße hour for you was the boone granted, because it will bee both your death and mine. Here in shee meant *Amadis*, whom shee gaue leaue to depart with the Damosell, yet the standers by vnderstood it of her father and her selfe.

Thus departed *Oriana* with them that conducted her, who rode a pace till they were entred the Forrest neere at hand: and the King himselfe was mounted on horse-backe, to conduct his daughter somewhat on the way, as also to forbide any rescue from following, according to his former promise. But the Princesse *Mabila* standing at a windowe, to see this sad and pensiue separation, could come no nearer to *Oriana*, her heart was so surprised with griefe: yet by hap shee espyed *Dardan* the Dwarfe that serued *Amadis*, making speed after the Princesse on horse-backe, when calling him to her, she saide. *Dardan*, if thou loue thy Master, stay not any where till thou acquaint him with this mishappe: if now thou faile him, it may retume to thine owne daunger, for this is the time of greatest necessity. By God Madame, answered the Dwarfe, I will with all diligence performe my duty. So giving the spurres to his horse, hee galloped the same way his Master rode with the Damosell.

But leaue wee him postling, and tell what now happened to King *Lisuart*, who accompanied his Daughter to the entrance of the Forrest, causing all such to retume as followed him. Even in the houre of his trouble, a Damosell came to him mounted on a swift Palfrey, with a sworde hanging about her neck, and a Launce richly painted, haing the point gilded over: at

ter shee had saluted him, shee thus spake. My Lord, God increase your ioy, and make you willing to performe what you haue promised me at *Windfors*, in the presence of all your worthy knights. At these wordes the King knew her, remembryng it was shee that sayde, how shee would prooue the vertue of his heart, whereupon hee thus answered. In good faith Damosel, I haue now more neede of ioy then euer I had: notwithstanding, I am readie to accomplish any thing I promised you. It is the only thing my Lord, quoth shee, of my retурne to you, being the most loyall King in the world, wherefore humbly I intreate yee, presently to reuenge my cause on a knight that passed through this Forrest, who not long since slew my father, by the most horrible treason that euer was heard of: yet not content therewith, the villaine violently tooke mee away, and perforce made me yeeld to his vnlawfull will. But in such sort is hee enchanted, as hee cannot bee done to death, except the most vertuous man in the Realme of Great *Brittaine*, giue him a wound with this Launce, and another with this sworde: both which hee gaue in keeping to a Ladie, of whom hee had good hope to be loued, yet therein hee was deceiued, for shee hateth him aboue all others, for which cause shee gaue mee this sword and Lance, whereby we might both be revenged on him. Nor can it bee done but by you onely, who are the chiefe and most vertuous man in this countrey: wherefore as you promised mee before so valiant men, may it please ye to execute this iust action of vengeance. And because I haue often tolde him, that by this day I would bee provided of a

for they strugled together, as they both fell to the ground, the knight vnderneath, and the King vpon him, by meanes whereof, hee got his sword from him, and vnlaicing his helmet to smite off his head, the Damosell cryed out so loude as shee could: Sir *Arealans*, helpe your Cosen quickly, or else hee dies. When the King heard her name *Arealans*, hee looked vp, and sawe ten braue knights come running vnto him, the one of them vsing these wordes: King *Lisuart*, spare the knight, otherwise thou shalt not reigne one houre. If I die, answered the King, so shall you all for mee, like traytours as you are. Then one of them gaue him such a blowe with his Launce, as not onely sore hurt him, but made him fall on his face to the ground: yet did hee recover himselfe very quickly, like one resolued to defend his life, albeit hee sawe death present before his eyes. But beeing vnable to resist so many, at length they got sure holde on him, when renting off his helmet & his shield, they bound him fast with a double chaine. Afterward they set him on a simple horse, two knights full holding the ends of the chain, and so leading him along, sought where they might finde *Arealans*, *Oriana*, and the Damosell of Denmark: but the knight against whom the King first fought, rode before space, and wauing his gauntlet a-lost to *Arealans*, sayde, Beholde Cosen, kin *Lisuart* is ours. A very good prize, answered *Arealans*, henceforth shall his enemies haue no cause to dread him. Villaine, quoth the King, well know I thou wast never other then a traytour, and though I am wounded, yet will I maintayne my words if thou darest combarde with me. By God,

sayde *Arealans*, never shold I make reckoning of my selfe, to vanquish such a Lord as thou art.

Thus contending as they rode, they came to a double way, where *Arealans* stayed, thus speaking to his Page. Sirra, ride with all speed to London, and say to Lord *Barsen*, that hee must execute what I willed him, for I haue begunne indifferently, if hee can make an end as well. Gone is the Page toward the Citie, in meane while *Arealans* devised, to send the King one way, and *Oriana* another, wherefore hee sayde to his Cosen. Take tenne knights with you, and conduct *Lisuart* to my prison at *Deguane*: these other fourre shall keepe mee companie, for I will leade *Oriana* to mount *Aldin*, where I will shew her strange and wonderfull things. This mount *Aldin* was the place of his most swall aboade, beeing one of the strongest and fairest in the worlde: thus the ten knights carried away the King, and *Arealans* with the rest had charge of the Princesse. But certainly, if heere wee consider the properties of fortune, we may easily repute her as mutable, or rather more, towardes great Princes and Lords, then the meaner sort: as well shew witnessed by king *Lisuart*, eu'en in the time when he intended most honourably, to bee twharted with such a contray chance. For at one instant, hee sawe himselfe in the hands of his greatest enemies, his Daugter (and heire to his kingdome) taken from him, and all his estate in danger of ruine. Hee that was wont to be honored of all, was now iniuriously despised, bound and led as a theefe, by a villainous enchanter, a meane Gentleman, and out

out of any other hope then death: Is not this then a faire example for such, as at this day are called to the greatest honours in the world? wherewith oftentimes they are so blinded, that they forget both God and themselves. King *Lisuart* was a right good, vertuous, and wise Prince, yet the diuine or-

## CHAP. XXXVI.

How Amadis and Galaor understood, that King *Lisuart* and his Daughter were carried away prisoners, wherfore they made hast to give them succour.

**A**ND E haue before declared, by what meanes Amadis and Galaor escaped from Madafis the Lady of *Gandalis*, who would haue put them to death if shew had knowne their names: likewise how they rode their way toward London, as men right joyful of their good succoeur. But by the way, they met *Dardan* the Dwarffe, so fast as horse could gallop, whereupon Amadis thus spake to Galaor. Brother, haue my seruant *Dardan* comyneth toward vs, and dubbyless about some matter of importancce, for do you not see what speed he maketh? By this time *Dardan* brake off their talke, rehearsing every thing that happened since their departure: but when he tolde how the Princesse *Oriana* was carried from the Court against her will, and what sorowfull lamentacions she made: Amadis entered into adespaising fury, demanding, whidh way shew went that had her in chargin: he sooth my Lord, answered *Dardan*, they rode thorough the Forrest, which lieth on the other side of the City. Without more words Am-

his maister, whose impatience vringing him to more hast, then care of his iourney, made him ride so farte into a foule slough, as he was faine to alight ere hee could get soorth againe. And leading his horse by the bridle to escape the mire, *Gador* & *Gandalin* ouer-took him, acquainting him with the Queenes message, and deliuering the sword she sent him. When hee heard how the King was likewise gone, his desire of speede encreased to give him succour, but his horse was so wearied with striuing in the bogge, as hee was constrained to take *Gandalins*: which traualled much worse then his owne, yet with the helpe of his spurres he made him goe. At length they found the tracke of horses, and by good hap met with certaine poore labouring men, whom they asked if they mett no any by the way? Yes my Lord, quoth one of them, wee mett certaine men leading a knight and two Ladyes, albeit wee durst not shew our selues, but kepe vs hidde in the thickest of the wood, for doubtless they be some bad people: hereto they adid such a description of the prisoners, as they easly gathered them to be the King and *Oriane* betraied. But tell me good friends, saide *Amadis*, know you none of the other? for the prisoners are the King and his daughter. In sooth, replied the poore man, wee are altogether ignorant what they are, yet we heard one that led the horse of the fairest Lady, oftenentimes name *Arcalans*, Now trust mee, quoth *Amadis* to his brothres, it is the villaine that enchanted me: Oh that it might be my hap to finde him. Gentle-men, said the man, two of them went this way on the night hand, with the Knight prisoner, and five

more this way on the left hand, with the Ladyes. Brother, quod *Amadis* to *Gador*, I beseech ye to follow the King, least worse befall him then we can remedy, and I will after the Princessse *Oriane*. So shaking hands in equall resolution, they parted the severall wajes: but *Amadis* found his horse so ouer labored, as he was able to hold out no longer. Being thus hindered by chance he looked aside, and sawe where a Knight lay slaine, with a Squire standing by holding his horse: whereupon *Amadis* stepped to him, demanding who committed that murther. A traitour hath done it, answered the Squire, who is not yet gone very farre, and leatheth with him the fairest Lady in the world: no other reason had he for my maisters death, but because he asked what the Lady was. What will thou do, sayd *Amadis*, tarrying heere? I stay Sir, quoth he, till some one come, who may helpe me with my maisters body to some buriall, and afterward I intend to seeke my fortune. If thou, answered *Amadis*, wilt give me the horse thou holdest, I wil leauethe mine, and my Squire to helpe thee, and one day will I give thee two bents beside. The squire was to tent, wher *Amadis* mounting on the horse, commanded *Gandalin* to help him bury his maisters body, and afterward to follow him the same way he rode.

Thus *Amadis* hies so fast as horse can run, and espying an hermitage, went to see if any body were within at his call: the hermit came forth of whom he asked, if he saw not faire Knights passe by, leading two Ladyes. No verily, answered the old father: but do you not require for a Castle, which is not far from this place? Why askeyes such

such a question? quoth *Amadis*. Because a Nephew of mine tolde mee, saide the Hermit, how *treacherous* the enchanter is going thither, and two Ladies with him, whom hee carryeth perforee. Ah Father, replied *Amadis*, you name the traytour I looke for. Trust me Sir, quoth the Hermit, hee hath done many mischies in this countrey, would God wee were either rid of him, or else his life amended: but have you no bodie to helpe you? Nobody, but God and my selfe, answered *Amadis*. Why Sir? sayd the Hermit, you tell mee they bee five in company, and you but one: beside, *Arcalans* is counted one of the best knights in the world, and with whom few or none dare meddle. Whatsoeuer hee boe, quoth *Amadis*, I am certaine hee is a disloyall traytour, and they no lesse that kepp hir company: what lesse cause then haue I to feare him? for God is just, in whom is onely my confidence. I pray you Sir, replied the Hermit, knowe you of whence the Ladys be? One of them, said *Amadis*, is the Princessse *Oriane*, daughter and heire to the vertuous king *Lisart*: the other is a Lady attending on her. The God of heauen, answered the Hermit, further your intent, that so good a Princess may not be long in such a wretched custody. If you haue any prondier Father, quoth *Amadis*, I desire you give my horse a little. The Hermit brought forth such as hee haue had, and while the horse fed, *Amadis* deniunded, to whom the Castle belonged: To a knight called *Gramet*, sayde the Hermit, Cosen germaine to proud *Dider*, who was flaine at the Gourt of king *Lisart*: which makes me the rather conjecture, that he will lode such as are enemis to so good a Prince. Good father, replied *Amadis*, I beseech you haue minde of mee to your prayers, and now shew me the nearest way to the Castle. Which the Hermit did, when *Amadis* mounting on horse-backe, tooke his leaue, following the way hee was directed. Not long after he got a sight of the Castle, which was compased with strong Towers and high wals, wherefore so closely as hee could hee appraoched neare it, where hee heard what ioy they made for the arruall of *Arcalans*: wher marking howmany gates of it hee had, hee found there was no more but one, wherefore tying his horse, where he might not be seen, he hid himselfe so conueniently, as none could passe in and out but he might needs see them: thus was hee glad to watch there all that night. At the breake of day, doubting left the watch of the Castle should desory him, hee entered a little thicket, where long hee had not staid, but hee sawe a knight come forth on a little hill before the Castle, looking att about if he could discerne any ambush: which done, hee went in againe, and very soone after, *Arcalans* with his fourt companions issued forth well armid, conducting the two Ladys, whom *Amadis* well knew so soone as hee sawe them. Heereupon hee fell downe on his knee and prayed, that God would strengthen him in this enterprise, then looking to the well guiding of his bothe, and that every part of his Armes were as it ought to be, taking his Lance, hee mounted, carrying till they passe by him. But because this place was vnfite for the combatte, hee intended to luffer them ouer on the plaine neare at hand, still keping himselfe in the thicket: and so neer

did *Arcalans* with his company passe by *Amadis*, as hee heard the *Princesse Oriana* thus complaine. Alas sweet friend, quoth she, great reason have you to bid mee adiew, when I would permit you to goe succour her, that seemed the most wofull woman in the world: for I feare this shall bee our last conge, and never may you see me againe, because death giueth such due attendance, as it is impossible for me to escape. These words were of such vertue, that albeit *Amadis* could not restraine from teares, yet did they so liuely inflame his heart, as ouer-reaching them ere they knew any thing, hee thus spake to them. You lye false traitours, for these Ladys shall passe no further. The voyce of *Amadis* was quickly knowne by *Oriana* and the Damosell of *Denmarke*, when imagining themselves already reskewed, their mindes were ioysfully cheered, especially to see their conductours so suddenly amated. But *Arcalans* perceiving how *Amadis* out-raged his friends, approached more neare him, and *Amadis* well knowing him from the rest, met him so brauely, as hee sent him headlong to the ground: the entring among the other four, hee gaue such a charge to *Gramus*, the Lord of the Castle where they lodged, that his Launce passed quite through his body, and breaking therein, hee fell downe dead from his horse. Now drew he the sword the Queene sent him, wherewith he laide so valiantly about him, as his enemies were cleane dismayed in their hope, whe they beheld *Arcalans* not yet recovered, whose power they reputed able to ouer-throw an armie. As hee contynued the combatte with them, the Damosell of *Denmarke*, seeing the friends of *Arcalans* fight

so timorouslly, and himselfe lie still as one in a traunce, she sayd to *Oriana*. Madame, beholde how your *Amadis* honoureth your loue, see you not how he hath vsed *Arcalans* and our hoste? in sooth wee are already succoured, for these other villaines can holde out no longer. Ah happy *Amadis*, quoth *Oriana*, the mirrour of all vertue and chivalrie, heauen giue thee grace to finish our deliuerance, with victorie ouer these malicious traitours. When the Squire who had the charge of *Oriana*, as you heard, understood that shee named *Amadis*, he was in such feare, as presently hee leaped from the horse, saying. By my faith I might full well be reputed a foole, to tarry for such blowes as my companions haue, and with these words he run away so fast, that hee neuer looked behinde if any pursued him. In this time *Amadis* had dispatched three of the knights, and the fourth neare-doubting like lot wold fal to him, trusted to his horse legges for saftey of himselfe: but as *Amadis* followed him, he heard the *Princesse* give a loude crye, when looking backe, hee saw that *Arcalans* had got her with him on horse backe, and gallopped away so fast as hee could. Hereupon hee let goe the knight, to helpe *Oriana*, ouer-taking *Arcalans* ere hee got much ground. and lifting his sword to strike at him, hee doubted least hee should hurt the *Princesse*: but turning to the other side, he gaue him such a wound on the shoulde, as he was glad to let fall *Oriana*, that himselfe might escape more lightly: for he knew if *Amadis* laid hold on him, glaþ the creature in the world could not save his life. When *Amadis* saw himselfe sure of his Lady, hee still pursued the cowardly

run-away, saying: Tarry *Arcalans*, tarry, and thou shalt see if *Amadis* be dead, according as thou lyedst not long agoe. But *Arcalans* had no leasure to answere, hee rather tooke his shield from his neck and threw it to the ground, because nothing might hinder his horse in running. At length as *Amadis* strook at him, the blowe fell shott on the horse buttock, and the beast feeling himselfe wounded, made greater haste away then he did before, leauing *Amadis* very farre behinde, who earnestly desired the death of *Arcalans*: but seeing all his labour was in vaine, and doubting least some harme might happen to his Mistresse, to lose her againe by negligence, hauing by hardy valour so well recovered her: he turned back againe, and attayning the place where she stayed for him, hee alighted from his horse, then falling on his knee humbly kissed her hand, saying: Madame, heauen hath affoorded mee more grace, in strengthening me to succour you, then euer it did to any other knight, for I was out of hope to see you againe. But she good Lady remained still so passionate, in respect of her vngentle v-sage, as also affrighted with feare when *Arcalans* let her fall: that she could retorne no answer, but gaue him thankes by many kind embracings. By this time, the Damosell of *Denmarke* came to them, and by the way found the sword of *Arcalans*, which shee bringing to *Amadis*, thus spake. See heere (my Lord) a very faire sword. Right soone did *Amadis* know it, to bee the same was found with him on the Sea, which *Arcalans* took from him when he lay enchanted, being nor a little glad hee had recovered it.

While many affable speeches passed betweene them, *Amadis* all comforting his dismayed Mistresse, and shee reioycing in her joyous friend: *Gandalin* attived, who had sought his Master all this tyme, and happily found him there with his Lady. Now minded they to tarry no longer in this place, where making choyce of the knights horses to their owne liking, they all mounted, *Amadis* leading *Oriana*es Palfrey by the bridle, and shee rehearsing to him by the way, what iniury the dead knighes had done her, as in her life time shee neuer endured the like: Madame, answered *Amadis*, much greater grieve haue I suffered by a living creature, yet leſſe to be feared then the dead, who can doe no harme: but beauty onely hath hazarded my life. Albeit *Oriana* well knew his meaning, yet shee demanded who was the caule thereof. Even you Madame, quoth he, who hold mee in a life more irkesome then death. My Lord, said the *Princesse*, neuer with my consent did you sustaine any harme, and very toris would I be you should thinke me so vnkinde: for rather could I affoord to ease your grieve, wot it in my power to compasse the meane. Ah Madame, replied *Amadis*, as by you onely I took my hurt, so from you onely must I haue my help, and reason repaires it a matter of great inconuenience, that such rare perfections should cause so rough passions. But if you be indued with such pity, as the rest of your excellencies do plainly promise, you will not beholde that in me, which you grieve to see in your chieſt enemies: even death, gentle *Princesſe*, who in my torments awaiteth on me, forbearing to strike, beeing conquered with

with this hope, that did opportunity and place serve, your passed promise hold ease your thoughts, and deliver me from this weighty oppression. But see how sweete occasion fauoureth vs, and fortune stands aloose from hindering our content: doe not you then ( good Madame) let slip this gracious offer, when time and place challenge it at your hand, considering the argument is vrgent, and being now loytered, may hardly be againe so well recovered. *Oriana* ( not so much for these reasons, as because her pain was equal with his, & had not he begun the motion, her selfe would haue solicited the same) thus answered. Great is the force of your persuasib[le], but greater the vnsainted loue I beare you, which hath such authority ouer me: as when you shall haue least occasion to demand, I am content and constrained to obey, yea, to repose such a thing in your trust, as very hardly can I holde fast in my thoughts. Yet I desire you, albeit you see me not stored with prouidence, that you will carefullly manag[e] our enterprise, by warie keeping it from knowledge or suspect: rather submitting our selues to the highest displeasure, then common reprove, which is containd within no limits. Sufficient protestation made *Amadis* hereof, but little batterie needed when the hole was won, and riding through a verie thick wood, the Princesse became desirous of sleepe, because the night before she enjoyed no rest: whereupon shee acquainted *Amadis* therewith, saying, shee must needs sleepe ere she went any further. Hee beeing no unprofitable counsellor, and seeing a daantic plot by a riuers side, shaddowed with boughes from the heate of

the sunne: advised her to rest there awhile, and dismounting from their horses, hee thus spake. To please you Madame, in this place we may stay till the heate be gone, and you rest in taryng for the cold euening: in meane space I will send *Gandalin* to the Towne, to bring some viands to refresh vs within. Your reason is good, saide *Oriana*, but how shall hee come by meane? He shall leaue his horse in pawn, answered *Amadis*, and returne on foote. Yet I ( quoth *Oriana*) haue a better helpe then that: hee shall sell this ring, which can doe vs no better seruice then now in our neede. So pulling the ring from her finger, shee gaue it to *Gandalin*, who taking his leaue, as hee came by his Maister, saide: So good time lost, will never bee had againe. *Amadis* knew his meaneing well enough, yet made he no shew thereof, but vnaarmed himselfe, and *Oriana* spreading the Damosels mantle on the grasse, laide her downe vpon it: the Damosell likewise went aside into the wood, where shee fell soundly-sleepe, by reason shee watched all the night before. Thus remained *Amadis* alone with his mistresse, so glad of her gentle grant, and the fauourable houre at hand: as hee could not withdraw his eyes from comfort, which made him delay time in needelesse gazing. In the end, though his hands had bee slow in vnaarming him, all his other members were in better state, for not one of them but did his duty. The heart was rauished in thoughts, the eye, in contemplation of excellent beauty, the mouth, with sweete kisses, the armes, with kinde embracings: and no oncselv[er] consent in any poyn[t], excepte the eycs, which wished them selues in number

number like the states in heaven, for their better ability in function, thinking they could not sufficiently beholde so divine an obiect. In great paine were they likewise, because they were hindered from the pride of beauty, for the Princesse held her eyes closed, as well to disguise her desire of sleepe, as also for the discreet shame conceiued by this pleasure, so that shee durst not boldly looke on him shee most loued. Hereupon, carelesly spreading her armes abroad, as though she slept in deed, and by reason of the exceeding heate, leauing her gorget open, two little alabaster bowles liuely shewed themselves in her bosome, so faire and sweetly resiping, as Nature never shewed more curious workmanship. Now *Amadis* forgereting his former bashfulness, seeing Fortune allowed him so quaint a fauour, let loose the reines of amorous desire with such aduantage, as notwithstanding some weak resistance of the Princesse, she was enforced to prooue the good and bad together, which maketh friendly maidens become faire women. Dainty was the good gracie and subtiltie of *Oriana*, in shadowing her surpassing pleasure, with a feminine complaint of *Amadis* boldnesse, shewing in countenance such a gracious choller & contented displeasure: as in stead of consuming time in excuses, *Amadis* resalued her with sundry sweet kisses, as also another cause to chide if she wold. But she being loth to mixe angry speeches with amiable sollace, or with frowning looks to crosse an equall content, thought it better to commend the conroule of so kinde a louer, and therefore continued this pleasing recreacion, as neither party received occasion of mislike: rather with kisses (which are counted the festes of loue) they chose to confirm their vvanity, then otherwise to offend a resolued patience. Ah, how many repenti[n]ts made *Oriske*, of the paines she suffered in expectation of this day: confessing those private particularities, which none but shee & her desire were acquainted withall. How many masters likewise alledgad *Amadis*, expressing thereby his singular contentment, and credible assurance of his perpetuall faijh: now reckoning all his trauels well imployed, & more then sufficien[t]ly recompensed. In these discourses and pleasures they spent most part of the day, carried so farre from remembraunce of any thing else, as they thought not on the time, how day wassled, & night ensued, whether *Gandalin* were returned, or the Damosell awake, all these things were now cast into obliuion. They imagined to haue vianda good store, being thus delighted the one with the other, which seemed more delicious to them, then all the Nether or *Ambrasie* of *Isipot*. Yet at length they remembred themselves somewhat better, when hearing the Damosell and *Gandalin* so neare them, their pastime ended, and taking each other by the hand, walked among the trees to take the ayre: in the meane while *Gandalin* and the Damosell spread a cloath on the grasse, and set thereto such victuals as they had. Now though there wanted rich cup-boords of plate, as were in the houses of King *Lisart* and *Perion*, as also the solemnity of great seruices: yet the sumptuous entertainment at this time, was held by them of higher estimation. During their repast, as they regarded

garded the woods and fountaines, they began to esteem it no strange matter, why the Gods sometime forsooke the heauens, to dwell in groves and delightful Forests. *Es-  
picer* they imagined wise, when he followed *Europa*, *Io*, and his other friends. Beside, *Apollo* had reason to becorne a Shepheard, for the loue of *Daphne*, and the daugheer of *Admetus*. They being willing to imitate their example, wished

continually to tarry there, without returning to the Pallace and royal pompe: reputing the Nymphes of the woods most happy Goddesses, excelling such as remayned in the walled Cities. Pitry were to trouble these louers in their amorous deuises, wherefore wee will leave them, and see what happened to *Galaor*, following the search of King *Lisuare*.

## CHAP. XXXVII.

*How Galaor rescued King Lisuare from the ten Knights that led him to prison.*

  
After parting from his brother *Amadis*, in such sort as you heard, followed the way whereby the King was led prisoner, and making great haste, in respect of his earnest desire to ouer-take him, had minde of nothing else hee met by the way. As thus hee continued galloping, hee saw a Knight well arm'd come riding towards him, who maruellung why the Prince vised such extreme diligence, when hee came neare him, sayd: Stay a while knight, and tell mee what affaires cause you make such speed. Forbear Sir I pray yee, answered *Galaor*, for by my tarrying may happen too great an inconuenience. By God, sayde the knight, you must not so escape, for you shall tell mee whether you will or no. I may not trifle the time, quoth *Galaor*, and so rode on still without any variance. Nay *Gallane*, replied the knight, I will bee resolued in my demaund, though to your cost. Hereupon hee passed after *Galaor*, still exclaiming

on him with hard words, weening hee fled away for feare of him, and often-times hee thought to smite him with his Launce, but the Prince euermore escaped his attempt: yet his horse beeing sore weated, hindered him very much, when the knight ouer-taking him, thus spake. Infamous pallard, and without heart, of these three things chuse the best, either to combatte, retorne or answeare my demand. Now trust me, sayd *Galaor*, the easiest of these three is hard to mee, wherein you make no shew of certes: for retorne I may not, and if I combatte, it must be against my will. But if you desire to know the cause of my haste, followe me and you shall see: for I should tarry too long in telling it, and happily you would scant beleue mee, so horrible and distroyall is the deed which compelleth me to this impatience. Beleue mee, quoth the knight, & I will follow thee three whole dayes, onely to see whether thou lyest or no.

Thus *Galaor* held on his way, & the knight hasting after, till ha-  
ving

uing ridden the space of a mile, whē they espied two other knights, the one being on foote running to catch his horse, and the other galloping away so fast as hee could. Hee on foot was *Cosen germaine* to the knight that followed *Galaor*, who in iousting with the other knight, had bee dismounted: & knowing his kinsman, acquainted him with the whole accident, requesting his assistance in reuenge of his wrong. It may not be now, answered the other, till I haue followed the knight you see before, three dayes together: hereto hee added all the speeches betweene *Galaor* and him. In sooth, replied his *Cosen*, hee should seeme (by your wordes) the greatest coward in the world, else mindeth he some enterprise of higher consequence: therefore I will adiourne the reuenge of mine iniury, and beare you company, to the ende I may beholde the sum of your attempt. While thus they talked, *Galaor* had gotten very farre before, which caused them make the more haste after him: till at length the Prince spied the ten knights that conducted the King, they riding vppe a narrow straite, fife before him, & fidebehinde. Now did he fully resolute to die, or purchase his deliuerance, for hee was so offended to see the King bound with chaines, as hee imagined himselfe able to conquer them all, & as many more if they had been there, whereupon he thus cryed to them: Fraytours, durst you vreuerently lay hand on the best King in the world? With these wordes he met one of them so directly, as his Launce passing through his body, hee fell downe dead beside his horse. When the other foure saw their companion slaine, they willed the formost fife

hee resisted his enemies brauely. As the cosin to *Arcalans* followed his intent, the king gaue his horse such a blow ouer the face, as by rearing vp, hee fell downe backward; yet the Knight recouered himselfe, and *Galoar* seeing one fight with the king, came to assist him, when snatching off his helmet, hee would haue smitten his head from his shoulders: but the king would not suffer him, saying, hee should liue and dye a theefe. The two cosins, who were named *Don Guilan* and *Ladasin*, pursued another knight, whome they slew, and returning backe againe, they knew the king, which stroke them into no little maruaile, because they heard nothing of his misfortune: then alighting from their horses, they took off their helmets and did him reuERENCE, when hee knowing them right well, embrased them in his armes, saying. My friends, you haue succoured me in a needfull time, for which I may liue to requite you with thankes: yet haue you wronged me by your absence from the Court, and for your loue to each other I lost you both, especially, you Lord *Guilan*, your mindes being else-where, made you forget me. These words caused a modest blush in *Don Guilan*, beaute the king disciphered his loue, which was the Duchesse of *Brijoya*, who was not one iot behinde him in affection: as well witnesseed the good entertainment she gaue him, tasting together the fruit of their contentment. Which the Duke so doubted, and dayly conceiued such strange suspition thereof, as it procured the iniurie was done to *Galoar*, when the Dwarffe espied him in the garden, at his retурne from faire *Aldene*, whereby the Damosell was in dan-

ger of burning, as the history haue tofore hath declared to you.

But while the king thus communed with *Don Guilan*, *Galoar* had got the Nephew of *Arcalans* beside his horse, and tyed the chaine about his neck, the king was bound withall: then taking the best horses belonged to the dead knightes, they rode toward *London*. And by the way, *Ladasin* recounted to the king, how he contended with *Galoar* for riding so fast, offering him the combate, which he refused, because he would delay no time for his succour: which caused the king to require him with many thankes, that he could so well forbeare in a case of such necessity. But my Lord, quoth *Don Guilan*, my hap was more hard, for by thinking on her, who oftentimes makes mee to forget my selfe, a knight encountring with mee, and by force of his Lance, cast me from my saddle. In sooth, answered the king, I haue heard talke of many louers, and what they enterprise for their Ladies, yet never of any folly comparable to yours: which giueh me good cause to coniecture, that you were not in vaine named *Guilan* the pensiue, for you are the greatest muser I ever heard of. As thus they beguiled the time, they arived at the house of *Ladasin*, which was not farre thence, whither soon after came *Galoars* squire and *Darden* the Dwarffe, who thought his maister had taken that way. Then did *Galoar* tell the king, how his brother *Amadis* was gone to reskew his daughter, and in what manner they heard of their seperation by the poore labourers, wherefore he aduised him to send speedily to *London*, least his mishap being published in the Cittie, might raise some cōmotion amog

the people. Credit me, quoth the king, seeing *Amadis* vndertooke to follow my daughter, I will not as yet account her lost, if the traytor *Arcalans* work no new villany by his enchantments: but as concerning my happy deliverance, I like well that my Queen should vnderstand thereof. Wherupon *Ladasin* called a Squire, whom the king presently sent to the Court as *Galoar* aduised. After they had well refreshed themselves, they were

conducted to their chambers, and on the morrowe set forward on their iourney, the king cōmoning with the Nephew of *Arcalans*, as concerning the enterprise of his kinsman: which mad him reueale the whole determination, and how *Barfiman* was in hope to be King of Great Brittain. Hereupon the king concluded to make the more hast, thinking to finde *Barfiman* as yet at *London*, and to punish him for his audacious presumption.

## CHAP. XXXVIII.

*How newes came to the Queene that the King was taken: And how Barfiman laboured to vsurpe the City of London.*

**I**f you haue well noted the former discourse, you may easilly remember, how the poor labouring men, (not knowing the king & *Oriane*) seeing how iniuriously they were intreated by *Arcalans* and his complices, were glad to hide themselves in the wood: in like manner, how afterward they vnderstood by *Amadis* and *Galoar*, that the prisoners were king *Lislaers* and his daughters. Wherupon, so soone as the two knightes were parted from them, they hasted to report these newes in *London*: which caused such a murmur through the Cittie, especially among the knightes, as they presently armed themselves, and mounted on horsebacke in such troupes, as the fields were quickly couered with men & horses. At this time was king *Arban* of *Norwales* talking with the Queene, little thinking on any misfortune: when one of his Squires bringing his Armour, sayde My Lord, you tarry heere trifling, too

long, arm your selfe quickly & followe the rest, who by this time haue goтен so fatre as the Forrest.

What is the matter, answered King *Arban*. Ah my Lord, quoth the Squire, newes is brought to the Cittie, how certaine villaines haue carried the King away prisoner. Prisoner? replied king *Arban*, may it be possible? Too true my Lord, answered the Squire. When the Queene heard these vnhappy tydings, not able to vndergoe so great an oppression, she fell downe in a swoone: but king *Arban* haing more minde on the King, left her in her Ladies armes, hasting with all speed hee could to horsebacke. When he was setting foot in stirrop, hee heard the alarme sounded, and the assault which *Barfiman* gaue to the Castle, whereby hee gathered they were betraied: wherefore hee caused the Queenes lodging to bee guarded, and returning to the Cittie, sowe every one ready in Armes, when chusing so many as hee pleased,

as also two hundred well approued knights, hee sent two of the cheefest to the Tower of London, to understand the cause of the allarme. To them it was reported, how *Barfman* had forcibly entred with his traine, killing and casting ouer the walls at that he met. Herein he followed the message of the Page from *Areolus*, finding very slender resistance: for most part of the knights and men of account, were gone to succour the king. Highly displeased was king *Arban* at these newes, perswading himselfe the king had been betrayed, wherefore to prevent such other inconueniences that might happen, he ordained his men in battaile, placing good watch about the Queenes lodging. And thither *Barfman* now prepared, hoping to take the Queen as hee had done the tower: but he met with stronger resist the he expected, and the skirmishes proceeding on either side, *Barfman* took a prisoner, by whō he was aduertised, how king *Arban* wold withstand him even to the death. Now began hee to devise, how by faire speech and falsehood he might take the king, crauing a parle with him, whereto king *Arban* willingly agreed, and silence being made on both sides, *Barfman* began in this manner.

I ever thought til now, my Lord, that you were one of the best aduised knights in the world, but by prooef I perceiue a man may finde the contrary: yet this I think withall, that what you doe, is for the safetie of your honor. Herein you appeare of simple iudgement, considering in the end, it will bee but the losse of you and your men: in respect king *Lisart* your late Lord is dead, for prooef whereof, euen he that slew him will ere long send

me his head. Sith fortune then hath dealt so hardly with him, and I at this instant am the greatest Lord in this countrey: dare you denie to make me king? Alas, you abuse your selfe! the best will be for you, to yeelde your selfe louingly, and I shall entreat you so well as any Prince in my Realm: suffering you still to enioy the countrey of *Wales*, and particularly beside will so honor you, as you shall have great reason to be content. Auaunt villaine, answered king *Arban*, full wel doost thou manifest thy horrible treason: for beside thy treachrie in compaeting the death of my Lord, thou wouldest haue mee become a traitour to his friends, as thou thy selfe hast prooued. Thou art deceiued, doe the worst thou canst: thy villainie onely will take vengeance on thee according to desert, with such good helpe as we will put thereto. What said *Barfman*, think'st thou to hinder me fro sitting as king in *London*? Never shall traitour, replied *Arban*, bee king of *London*, by Gods leave, while the most honourable king of the world liueth. I called for thee, quoth *Barfman*, in respect of thine owne good, because I favoured thee more then any other, imagining thou wert of sound discretion: but (as I haue said) I findemy selfe deceiued, wherefore reason requireth, that thy ouer-weening should fall, and (in despite of thee) I will reigne king in great *Brittaine*. Assure thy selfe, answered *Arban*, I will keepe thee fro such climbing, as if the king my maister were here personally present. Then began the assault afresh, king *Arban* withdrawing himselfe to harden his men, being maruailously offended at *Barfman* words. Now though he were very sharply assailed, yet

stood hee brauely on his defence, many being slaine and sore wounded: neuerthelesse, he was euer more formost in the fight, and last in the retreats which was caused by the night ensuing. Nor neede wee doubt, considering the puissance of *Barfman*, and they fewe on the contrary side, but king *Arban* would take his aduantage in resistance, by compelling them to narrow streets, where foure on a side could hardly deal together, which turned to the great disaduantage of *Barfman*, because *Arban* well forfited every place in good order, and with fresh supply still encouraged his men. The retreit being sounded, and either side with drawne, King *Arban* seeing his souldiers sore weared, by the hotte skirmishes they had endured: as is the office of a good Capitaine indeede hee came and comforted them in this manner. My louing companions and friends, this day haue you worthily fought, as none of you but deserueth estimation, among the most forward men in the world, and hauing begun so well, I hope you will proceede better and better. Remember the cause of your fight, not onely to maintaine your good king, but your owne liberty: against a tirant, traitour, and what worse? who would buy his usurping in this Kingdome, with the blood of you, your wiues and chilidren. Saw y ou not how he vsed them hee tooke in the Tower? Beholde you not the end of his purpose? which is to ruinate this noble Realme, that hath (by diuine prouidence) beeene so long time preserued, and euer more continued in reputation, flourishing with loyal subiects to their Prince? Heard you not the flattering per-

dead. Madame, answered king *Arban*, all will go well if God be pleased, in vaine doe you thus discomfor your selfe, for I hope to heare good tydings of the King: and his traytours that seeke to vsurpe the kingdome, by your good and loyall subiects shall receiue deserued punishment. God grant it, quoth she, but you are so wounded, as I thinke it impossible for you to bee at the battell, if *Barfinan* come to morrow againe, nor can our men doe any thing without you. Be not you troubled therewith Madame, replied king *Arban*, for while my soule sucks her spirit from the ayre, I will not forsake my charge. So bidding her good night, hee went to haue his wounds dressed, and afterward turned to his souldiers, merrily passing the night among them.

*Barfinan* on the other side, got into the Tower of *London* which he had wonne, and numbring his men, found that his power was greatly weakened: yet would hee make no shew thereof for dismayng the rest, but shewing a dissembling countenance, thus spake to them. My friends, it sufficeth that I haue shewen mine enemies what you are, and they (if I think good) to stand at my mercy: wherfore I am determined (without any further losse of you) to rest our selues fve or sixe dayes, till *Arcalans* send me the head of king *Liswart*, and then the sight therof, wil make the not dare to resist mee any longer, but in hope of fauour, will yeeld themselues. Each of you therefore reioyce and be of good cheere, for when I am King, right richly will I reward you all. So went they to rest till the next morning, when

*Barfinan* (being armed) mounted on horse-backe, with twenty knigths in his company, and came to a Port which onc of king *Arban* knights kept, who seeing this troupe, presently sounded an alarme. But *Barfinan* sent him word how hee came to parle onely, and desired truce beside for six hours: whereof king *Arban* was immediatly aduertised, who granted the truce *Barfinan* required, & likewise for fve dayes. Conditionally, that he should offer no violence to any house in the City, or practise any entrance during the limited time: beside, if the King returned in that space, the difference should bee left to his disposition. *Barfinan* was contented with these condicions, because hee accounted king *Liswart* death certaine, whereupon hee saide to *Arban*. I hope this little truce, will be an entrance into a perpetuall peace betweene vs: for I dare assure yee, king *Liswart* is dead, and his daughter must be my wife, as within these fve dayes ensuing you shall evidently see. What? quoth king *Arban*, thou hast then put him to death: and couldst thou deale so treatorously with him, that gave *thee* such honourable entertainment in his Court? rather will I presently die, then continue one houre of peace with *thee*, get *thee* gone therefore quickly, or I will send *thee* hence in peeces. Is it true? quoth *Barfinan*, well mayest thou threaten me, but it is in me to make *thee* repent it. Thus returned *hee* to his souldiers, acquainting them with his honest offers to king *Arban*, and the audacious answere hee returned for them.

## CHAP. XXXIX.

*How Amadis came to the succour of the City of London, when it was in this distresse.*

**N**ot long agoe we left *Amadis* in the wood, familiarly deuising with the Princesse *Oriana*, thinking on nothing but their sweete contentation: and among other discourse, *Amadis* intreated her to tell him, what speeches *Arcalans* had with her by the way. On my faith Sir, quoth she, he confounded my senes with perswading mee to rejoyce, saying. Before fve dayes were expired, I should raigne as Queene in Great Brittaigne, enioying *Barfinan* to my husband: him selfe likewise should be chiefe Gouvernour and Maister of his house, in recompence of the seruices hee did for him, in giving him my fathers head, and mee to be his wife. Ah heauens, sayde *Amadis*, what treason is this in *Barfinan*, who shewed himselfe such a friend to the king? God shield hee doe no wrong to the Queene. In sooth, I greatly doubt it, replied *Oriana*, it were good therefore wee hasted to see. With all my heart, quoth *Amadis*: so mounting on horsebacke, they rode toward *London*, meeting many knigths by the way that followed the King, whom still hee directed in their course, certifying them that *Galor* was gone likewise in his search. Within a while after, *Oriana* espied *Don Grumadan* an auncient knight of honour to the Queene, and twenty knigths more with him, who all that night had searched the Forrest for the king: but when hee sawe her, the teares stooode in his eyes

with ioy, desiring to heare some newes of the King her father. Credit mee Sir, quoth shee, not farre from the Cittie were we fundered, when God ordayned so well for me, that *Amadis* deliuered me fro the villaines, and ransomed mee with the price of their liues. They were vnwise to resist, saide *Grumadan*, when you had so good a Champion: but I pray you my Lord, what is become of your brother? Euen in the same place, answered *Amadis*, where they separated the father from the daughter: we seuered our selues, hee postling after the King, and I followed *Arcalans*, who led away Madame *Oriana*. The better hope haue I of his succour, quoth *Grumadan*, seeing so good a knight hath taken it in hand.

Hereupon, *Amadis* tolde him the horrible treason of *Arcalans* and *Barfinan*: Let me therefore intreat yee, quoth hee, to conduct the Princesse leasurably after, while I make haste before least the Queen be distressed, because I doubt the traytor will her offer iniury. I think it likewise expedient, that you cause all the knigths to returne you meete withall: for if the King should bee reskewed by multitude of men, there is enow before already, and more then needs. So leauing his Lady with *Don Grumadan*, hee made all the haste hee could toward *London*, hauing the Squire by the way that came from the king, who told him all the newes of his deliuerance, which was no little ioy to *Amadis*, hea-

hearing the fortunate successe of his brother *Galaor*. There met hee with another likewise, who made report of *Barfian* dealings at *London*, wherefore entring the *Citie* so couertly as hee might, the first hee met withall was king *Arban*, of whom hee was louingly embrased and welcommed, with request of what newes he brought. None but good, answered *Amadis*, and such as you are desirous to heare: but because I doubt the *Queene* is fearefull, let vs goe see her, for happily shee will bee glad of our coming. So rode they to the Court together, *Amadis* still keeping the Squire with him that came from the king, and when they entered the *Queenes* presence, *Amadis* falling on his knee, beganne in this manner. Madame, this Gentleman left the King well this morning, and at liberty, whereof his Maiestie certifieth you by him: my selfe likewise (not long since) left your daughter with *Don Grumeda*, and very shortly they will be with you. But because I understand that *Barfian* molesteth you with treachery, suffer vs I pray you to goe see what hee can doe. When the *Queen* heard these ioyfull tydings, her inwarde content tooke away the liberty of her speech, nor could she doe any thing but lift her hands & eyes to heauen, applauding his name from whence this good proeceeded, and by gestures deliuering some signe of thankes to *Amadis*. At length hauing overcome this delightfull passion, and intending to question further concerning these newes: the allarme was sounded, wherefore king *Arban* and *Amadis* hyed to the barres, where they found *Barfian* men giuing an eager charge, as hoping to con-

quer the contrarie part. But *Amadis* thrusting himselfe for-most, caused the bars to be taken down, and accompanied with king *Arban*, brake in couragiously vpon the enemy, a noble president to their souldiers, who beeing cheerd by this onset, tooke heart and followed. Now waxed the skirmish to be hot indeed, so that on both sides very many were slaine, which *Barfian* perciuing, & trusing in his multitude to suppress the weaker part, came for-most himselfe in person, thinking (now hee saw the barres open) to drue his aduersaries backe againe into the *Citie*. When *Amadis* noted his forwardnesse he stepped backe, & changed his Creast and Shield with a simple mercenary souldier: yet reseruing his Launce, which with a strong career pierced thorough his Armour, and wounding *Barfian*, brake in peeces in his flesh. Then drawing his sword, he gaue him such a stroke on the helme, as hee was astonied therewith, and redoubling his blowe, cut his right arme quite from his shoulde: when *Barfian* (feeling himself so wounded) would haue retred backe, to sauе himselfe by the speed of his horse, but hee fell to the ground as depriued of his fences. Wherefore *Amadis* left him, and set vpon the rest, who beeing vnable to endure these hotte assaults, likewise beholding their Lord dismounted: took theselves to flight for safety of their liues, yet were they so closely followed, as the most part of them were slain in the field, and some few of them escaped into the *Tower*, causynge the bridge to be quickly drawn vp after them.

Herteupon *Amadis* returned where he left *Barfian* & because he

was not yet dead, commanded he should be carried to the *Queenes* lodging, there to bee kept till the Kings returne: and as hee would haue put vp his sword, hee sawe it soylid with blood, wherefore in wiping it, hee saide: Thou triste sworde, in a happy houre was the knight born to whom thou belongett: and as thou art one of the best in the world, so is thy Master the most vertuous Prince living. He vsed these words, because it appertained to King *Lisuart*, and was sent him from the *Queene* by *Gandalin*, as you heard before: but now returnes hee with king *Arban* to the *Queenes* lodging, to comfort her with newes of happie vi-sitory.

All this while the King is hastynge toward *London*, giuing order to returne all the knyghts hee met by the way, among whom were *Agues*, *Galaor*, *Solimes*, *Galdan*, *Dinedor*, and *Bernas*: all which were highly in the Kings fauour, as men of vertue and no small deseruing: and his Maiestie hauing imbraced them, said. My noble good friends, you had almost lost mee, but God be thanked, you haue recovered mee againe, by the helpe of these three worthy knyghts *Galaor*, *Galdan*, and *Ledesir*. In sooth my Lord, answered *Dinedor*, so soon as your mishap was knowne in the *Citie*, each one prepared to bring you succour. I knowe my good Nephew, quoth the king, that I am greatly beholding to you all: but I pray you take good store of these knyghts, and post with speed to assit the *Queene*, for I doubt she is in no little danger. This *Dinedor* was one of the best knyghts of the kings linage, and well esteemed among men of account, as well in respect of his vertues, as also his

braue behauisour in chivalry: so according to the kings command, he rode away presently very brauely accompanied.

The king likewise followed an indifferent pace, lest his Nephew shold stand in need of helpe, and by the way he overtooke *Don Grumeda* with his daughter *Ortens*. How ioyfull this meeting was, you may easly conceiue, that the separation was not so grievous, but this was as gladsome. *Grumeda* told his Maiestie, how *Amadis* left the *Princesse* with him, while hee rode before to assit the *Queene*: thus with repetition of many matters, they beguiled the time till they arrived at *London*, where hee vnderstoode the successe of *Barfian* enterprise, and how valiantly King *Arban* had resisted him, not forgoing the worthy behauisour of *Amadis*, in taking him prisoner and disconfititng his men, except a few that sau'd themselues in the *Tower*.

Here would it take a world of time, to report the ioy, pleasure, and contentement betweene the King and *Queen* at their meeting, likewise the mothers comfort haing receyved her daughter againe: but as your iudgements can better conceiue then I let downe, matter above the reach of common capacity, so doe I leue it to you, and proceed to the King. Who to terrifie the traytors thus gotten into holde, besieged them feuerally, and to disbeare them the more, brought *Barfian* & *Arban* Nephew before the waller, where before all the people they confessed their treason. Whiche being done, a great fire was made, wherein they were alue consumed, but when they in the *Tower* beheld this spectacle, and that they

hearing the fortunate successe of his brother *Galaor*. There met hee with another likewise, who made report of *Barfinans* dealings at *London*, wherefore entring the Citie so couertly as hee might, the first hee met withall was king *Arban*, of whom hee was louingly embrased and welcommed, with request of what newes hee brought. None but good, answered *Amadis*, and such as you are desirous to heare: but because I doubt the Queene is scant merry, let vs goe see her, for happily shée will bee glad of our comming. So rode they to the Court together, *Amadis* still keeping the Squire with him that came from the king, and when they entered the Queenes presence, *Amadis* falling on his knee, beganne in this manner. Madame, this Gentleman left the King well this morning, and at liberty, whereof his Maiestie certifieth you by him: my selfe likewise (not long since) left your daughter with *Don Grumadan*, and very shortly they will be with you. But because I vnderstand that *Barfinan* molesteth you with trechery, suffer vs I pray you to goe see what hee can doe. When the Queen heard these ioyfull tydings, her inward content tooke away the liberty of her speech, nor could she doe any thing but lift her hands & eyes to heauen, applauding his name from whence this good proeceeded, and by gestures deliuering some signe of thankes to *Amadis*. At length hauing ouercome this delightfull passion, and intending to question further concerning these newes: the allarme was sounded, wherefore king *Arban* and *Amadis* hyed to the barres, where they found *Barfinans* men giuing an eager charge, as hoping to con-

quer the contrarie part. But *Amadis* thrusting himselfe for-most, caused the bars to be taken down, and accompanied with king *Arban*, brake in couragiously vpon the enemy, a noble president to their souldiers, who beeing cheerd by this onset, tooke heart and followed. Now waxed the skirmish to be hot indeed, so that on both sides very many were slaine, which *Barfinan* perciuing, & trusing in his multitude to supprese the weaker part, came formost himselfe in person, thinking (now hee saw the barres open) to drise his aduersaries backe againe into the Citie. When *Amadis* noted his forwardnesse he stepped backe, & changed his Creast and Shield with a simple mercenary souldier: yet reseruing his Launce, which with a strong career pierceth through his Armour, and wounding *Barfinan*, brake in peeces in his flesh. Then drawing his sword, he gaue him such a stroke on the helmet, as hee was astonied therewith, and redoubling his blowe, cut his right arme quite from his shoulde: when *Barfinan* (feeling himself so wounded) would haue retyred backe, to saue himselfe by the speed of his horse, but hee fell to the ground as depriued of his fences. Wherefore *Amadis* left him, and set vpon the rest, who beeing vnable to endure these hotte assaults, likewise beholding their Lord dismounted: took theselves to flight for safety of their liues, yet were they so closely followed, as the most part of them were slain in the field, and some few of them escaped into the Tower, causing the bridge to be quickly drawn vp after them.

Hereupon *Amadis* returned where he left *Barfinan* & because he

was not yet dead, commanded he should be eartied to the Queenes lodging, there to bee kept till the Kings returme: and as hee would haue put vp his sword, hee sawe it soyled with blood, wherefore in wiping it, hee saide: Thou triste sworde, in a happy houre was the knight born to whom thou belongeth: and as thou art one of the best in the world, so is thy Master the most vertuous Prince living. He vseid these words, because it appertained to King *Lisuart*, and was sent him from the Queene by *Gandalin*, as you heard before: but now returnes hee with king *Arban* to the Queenes lodging, to comfort her with newes of happie vi-

gory. All this while the King is hasting toward *London*, giuing order to returme all the knyghts hee met by the way, among whom were *Agriates*, *Galmes*, *Solmes*, *Galdon*, *Dinadan*, and *Bernas*: all which were highly in the Kings fauour, as men of vertue and no small deserving: and his Maiestie hauing imbraced them, said. My noble good friends, you had almost lost mee, but God bee thanked, you haue recovered mee againe, by the helpe of these three worthy knyghts *Galaor*, *Gulen*, and *Zedafie*. In sooth my Lord, answered *Dinadan*, so soon as your mishap was knownen in the Citie, each one prepared to bring you succour. I knowe my good Nephew, quoth the king, that I am greatly beholding to you all: but I pray you take good store of these knyghts, and post with speed to assist the Queene, for I doubt she is in no little danger. This *Dinadan* was one of the best knyghtes of the kings linage, and well esteemed among men of account, as wel in respect of his vertues, as also his

braue behauisour in chivalry: so according to the kings command, he rode away presently very brauely accompanied.

The king likewise followed an indifferent pace, lest his Nephew should stand in need of helpe, and by the way he overtooke *Don Grumadan* with his daughter *Orlana*. How ioyfull this meeting was, you may easly conceiue, that the separation was not so grievous, but this was as gladsome. *Grumadan* told his Maiestie, how *Amadis* left the Princessse with him, while hee rode before to assit the Queene: thus with repetition of many matters, they beguiled the time till they arriued at *London*, where hee vnderstoode the successe of *Barfinan* enterpris, and how valiantly King *Arban* had resifted him, noe forgetting the worthy behauisour of *Amadis*, in taking him prisoner and discomfiting his men, except a few that fayled themselues in the Tower.

Here would I spake a wordle of time, to report the ioy, pleasure, and contentment: betweene the King and Queene at their meeting, likewise the mirthfull comfort hausing: remoued his daughter againe but as you iudgements can better conceive then I set downe, matter about the reach of common capacity, so doe I leane it to you, and proceed to the King. Who to terrifie the traytors thus gotten into holde, besieged them severally, and to disheaten them the more, brought *Barfinan* & *Arban* Nephew before the walles, where before all the people they confessed their treason. Whiche being done, a great fire was made, wherein they were alue confirmed, but when they in the Tower beheld this spectacle, and shas

they

they were in great want of victals, they yelded themselves to the King's mercy, the most part of the being (for examples sake) hanged on the battlements, and the rest set at liberty vpon humble submision. Yet this matter bred very great trouble afterward, betweene them of Great Britaine & Sancus: for the sonne of Basinan being a good knight vexed king Lisiart with contagious warre, as in the History hereafter at large is mentioned.

After the King had escaped these misfortunes, the former ioyes and pastimes beganne againe: during which time, the Lady and her two sonnes (the messengers of *Madafima*, who were witnesses when *Galaor* and *Amadis* promised to forsake king *Lisiarts* seruice) arriued at the Court. When the two Princes were aduertised thereof, they went and friendly entreated her, shee saying: Gentleman you know the cause of my comming, are you determined to keepe your promise? We arb, quoth they, and will not breake our eddicame with *Madafima*, but presently will perforne it before the King. Entring the great Hall, the Lady fell on her knees before his Maiestie, delivering these speeches. My Lord, I am come to your Court, to see if these two knights will obserue a couenant, which in my presence they made to a Lady. What was it? answered the King. A matter that will scant like you, quoth the Lady, or any such as beare you affection: and thereto shee added the whole circumstance. Wherat the King waxing somewhat offended, told *Galaor* that hee had very much wronged him. My Lord, replied *Galaor*, it was better to do so, then be trecherously slaine, for had wee beene

knowne, neither you, nor all the world could haue saued our liues: but let not your Maiestie be offended, for the remedy shall be more ready then you expect. In accomplishing my promise to *Madafima* of *Gantasi*, my Lord I take my leaue of you, departing altogether from your seruice: certifying you that it is her will to doe you this displeasure, and worse if she should compasse it, for the extreme malice she beareth to you. *Amadis* affirmed what his brother had done, then *Galaor* turning to the Lady & her two sonnes, sayd. Haue we not now accomplished our promise? Yes truely, quoth the Lady, wee must needs auouch so much. You may then returne when you please, answered *Galaor*, but tell *Madafima*, she did not so much as she wheeted, as you may perceiue by the present effect. Now my Lord, quoth he to the King, we haue fulfilled our promise to *Madafima*, and because in graunting her earnest desire, the time was not limited how long we should leaue your seruice: we may enter thereinto againe when you please to command, so that weare yours as faithfull as before. When the King and all that were present heard what had past, they rejoyced exceedingly, esteeming *Galaor* & *Amadis* well aduised herein: whereupon the King thus spake to the Lady. According to her great treason vnder shaddowe of good meaning, they are bound to no more then they haue accomplished: for to deceiue the deceiuer is no deceit. And say to *Madafima*, seeing she hateth me so vnreasonably, she once had the in her power, who might haue grieued me all my life time: but God hauing in other places deliuer'd me frō many perils wil not suffer me to perish by so bad a woman

woman as she is. I desire yee my Lord, quoth she, to tell mee their names. The one is *Amadis*, answered the King, and the other his brother *Galaor*. May it be possible, sayde the Lady, that *Madafima* had *Amadis* in her power? Credit me, quoth the King, I haue tolde yee truth. Their fortune was good, replied the Lady, for they might

not haue escaped if she had known them: and in sooth the deede might bee reckoned ominous, if two such worthy persons had perished. Yet when she shall knowe hereof, sayd the King, I thinke she will forbear to wrong me any further. With that the Lady tooke her leaue, shaping her course the same way she came.

## C H A P. X L.

How King Lisiart held open Court in the Cittie of London many dayes, in which time sundry great personages were there feasted, the greater part whereof remayned there long time afterward.

**T**WELVE dayes together (after these mis-haps) did King Lisiart continue his Court in all magnificence, many noble personages being there assembled, as wel strāgers as others, hoping now to make little stay but to return home to their owne houses: yet the greater part of them aboad with the King, in like manner did sundry worthy Ladies accompany the Queene. Among other knights attending on the King, were *Dex Guilan* the pensiue, and his Cosen *Ledesis*, who (as I haue sayde) were very good knights: but *Guilan* was the better of the twaine, for very fewe were found in the Realme of Great Britaine, that carried more account for deeds of Armes, and all other graces beseeming a knight, setting aside his musing and melancholy. By meanes whereof, fewe or none could bee pleasant with him, or haue any words from him in company: but loue procured theire extremes, busying his thoughts in such sort with his Lady, as hee had minde of none but her. And shee

of whom wee speake, was endued with singular beauty, being named *Brandalisie*, sister to the Kings wife of *Sobradise*, and ioyned in mariage with the Duke of *Brisoya*: who now was arriued at the Court, to answere the accusation *Oliuas* laide against him. The King gaue him very gentle welcome, and beeing in the presence of many great Lords, the Duke beganne in this manner. Sir, you haue commanded my appearance here this day, to iustifie my selfe before your Maiestie, concerning a crime *Oliuas* chargeth mee withall: whereof I hope sufficiently to cleare my selfe, by the rightfull iudgement your selfe shall giue, and hee rest condemned like a varlet as hee is: for here am I ready to approue against him, or any other hee shall bring, that I never committed treason or so foule a deed.

At these wordes *Oliuas* arose, and with him a great nûber of knights errant, all resolued to maintayne this quarrell against the Duke: when the King beheld them in such a motiny, hee maruelled whence the cause should proceede; when

Grumedes speaking for all the rest, sayd. My Lord, because the Duke of Bristoia hath threatened and defied all knights errant, we are ready to answere his challenge. In good faith, answered the King, if it bee so, hee hath attempted an ouer fond warre, for I thinke there is no knight in the worlde so puissant, that will bee induced to such an enterprise. But forbeare at this time, and offer him no iniury, because he is heere to receiue iustice: which shall be done, according to the counsell of the Princes and Lords present, without fauouring any one. Then *Oliuas* falling on his knee before the King, beganne in this manner. My Lord, the Duke who standeth before your Maiestie, hath slaine a Cosen getmaine of mine, hee never giuing him occasion of offence: wherefore I will iustifie him to bee a villaine and a traytou'r, and will make him confess it with his owne mouth, else shall I kill him and cast him forth of the field. The Duke tolde him hee lyed, and hee was ready to accomplish what the King and his Court should ordaine: wherupon it was determined, that this emulacion should bee decided by combatte, which the Duke accepted, desiring the King to permit him & his two Nephewes in this cause, against *Oliuas* and two other knights. This being granted, the Duke was very glad thereof, for he made such account of his kinsmen, as hee thought *Oliuas* could not bring the like: notwithstanding, all was deferred till the morrowe following.

In meane while, *Don Galuane* asked his Nephew *Agraises*, if hee wold assist *Oliuas* against the Duke, and hee consenting thereto, *Galuane* came to *Oliuas*, saying. Sir O-

*liuas*, seeing the Duke is desirous to fight three against three, my nephew and I are determined to take your part: which when the Duke heard, hee remembred that he had defied them in his owne house, when *Agraises* combated with the Dwarffes champion, at what time the Damosell should haue beeene burned: wherefore hee became very pensiue, in respect though hee esteemed his Nephewes approued good knights, yet he repented his wilfull offer, & gladly would haue excused the matter if hee could, being so well acquainted with the behaviour of *Galuane* & *Agraises*. But considering his promise past before the King, and so many noble personages there present, hee must of necessity stand thereto: wherefore the next morning hee entered the Listes with his Nephewes, and *Oliuas* on the contrarie with his copartners. Now were the Ladies standing at the windowes, to beholde the issue of this quarrell, and among the rest stood *Oliuas* the faire friend to *Agraises*, who seeing him ready to enter such perill, was so dismayed, as she could scant tell what countenance to vse. By her stood *Mabila*, shee being in no lesse grieve for her Uncle and brother together: likewise the Princessse *Oriana*, louing them both, in respect of the reasons heretofore declared, accompanied the two Ladies in sorrowe, fearing their danger: but the knights being ready to the combate, the King by a Herald commanded the Champions to doe their deuoyre. Heereupon with a braue career they encountred together, *Agraises* and *Galuane* vnhorsing the two Nephewes, and albeit *Oliuas* receiued a wound on the stomacke, yet had not the Duke caughte hold

hold about his horse neck, his fortune had proued as had as his Nephewes. The drawing their swords, they smote so violently against ech other, as the standers by wondered at their fiercenes: beholding their shields defaced, their armour battr'd & coulled with their blood, that the victorie hung a long time in suspence. For *Agraises* horse being slaine vnder him, brought his life in maruulous hazard, because the Duke and one of his Nephewes strooke to keep him downe, seeking to thrust their swords into his belly, or else to smite his head from his shoulders: but he was so well armed, and of such courage withall, as hee held them both play, though with exceeding perill. Well may you thinke, that his friends grieued to see him in this distresse, especially the three Ladys, of whom we speake so lately, whose cheeke were bedewed with whole fountaines of teares, and wofull *Oliuas* seemed rather dead then living. But had he long continued in this extremitie, her latte houer must needs haue ensu'd, yet at length he recovered himselfe, charging the Duke and his Nephewes with such puissant strokes, as well declared his hardy courage. *Oliuas* all this while was in such case, by reason of the sore wound the Duke gaue him, that he could hardly defend himselfe: which the Duke perciuing, hee left his Nephew with *Agraises*, and assailing *Oliuas* very roughly, made him fall downe in a great astonishment. But as he wold haue slaine him, *Agraises* stepped betwene the (having dispatched his enemie of his head) and hindred the Duke from his determination, wounding him in many places on his body, that he could scante which

way to turne him. *Don Galuane* likewise hauing slaine the other Nephew, came to assist *Agraises* against the Duke, who seeing his life at the latest exigent, turned his horse to escape away: but *Agraises* gaue him such a stroke on the helme, as hee fell beside his saddle, with one of his feete hanging in the stirrop, when the horse being at libertie, feeling his burthen hang on the one side, ranne flinging vp and downe, none being able to reskew the Duke, till his necke was broken with draging along. Hereupon *Agraises* left him, returning to his vncle to know how he fared. Very well I thanke God, answered *Galuane*, but it grieueth mee that *Oliuas* is dead, for hee lieth still and moueth not. Right sorry likewise was *Agraises* to heare these words, wherefore commanding the Duke and his Nephewes bodyes to be throwne foorth of the field, they came both to *Oliuas*, and finding him aliue, as also his wounds not to be mortall, they bound them vp so well as they could, saying. Friend *Oliuas*, be of good cheere, for though you haue lost very much blood, yet doubt wee not of your health, because wee finde little danger in your hurts. Alas my Lords, quoth *Oliuas*, my heart fainteth, and albeit I haue beeene heeretofore wounded, yet never was I in such debilitie. Then the King desired to knowe whether hee were dead or no, and when it was tolde him, how hee wanted nothing but speedy cure: hee commanded him to bee honourably caryed into the Cixis, and his owne chirurgions to attende on his health, euena as it were his owne person: which he did, promising to deliuer him well againe within few daies.

Thus every one returned, disputing diuersly on the end of the Combat, and according to their particuler affections, so that soone after, the Queene ( who was one of the best Ladies in the world ) was aduised to send for the wife to the deceased Duke , that in the Court shée might weare away the cause of her melancholly , and to dispatch this busynesse , shée sent *Don Grumedas* to her requesting shē would bring her, *Neece Aldena* with her, whereof *Galuanes* was not a little glad, especially *Don Guilan*, who was the friend and beloued of the Dutchesse. Not long after, she and her Neece arriued at the Court, where they were right no-

bly feasted and entartayned. Thus the King spent the time in the City of *London* , accompanied with many great Lords, knights and Ladies , because the fame was blazed throught the world, of his honourable courtesie to strange Knights: which drew an exceeding number to his court, whom he rewarded very bountifullly, hoping ( by their meanes ) not onely to confirme his Realme in peace , but likewise to conuerc other , which sometime had beene subiect and tributary to his Crown, yet through the pusillanimity and negligence of the Kinges his predecessors, were lost and discontinued their former obedience.

## CHAP. XLI.

*How Amadis determined to goe combat with Abiseos and his two Sonnes, to reuenge the Kings death, who was Father to the fayre Briolania, and of that which followed.*

 Eretofore it hath beene declared, how *Amadis*, being with *Briolania*, promised to reuenge the King her Fathers death, against *Abiseos*, and his two Sonnes, which in one year after he shoulde perorme, being accompanied with two other Knights. Also how when he tooke his leaue of her, shē gaue him a *Sword*, because his owne was broken, desiring him to weare it for her sake: which *Sword* was afterward broken at the Ladies Castle, who was the beloued of *Angrioste Estramans*, when he combatted with *Gefian*, and commanded *Gandalin* to bring away the peaces thereof: which occasioned great harme not long after, not by any fault of him, but by the indirection of *Dordan* the Dwarffe, who imagined his master loued the

fayre *Briolania*, in respect he offered himselfe to be her Knight.

One day therefore, *Amadis* being with King *Liswart*, euermore delighting with his Lady *Oriana*, to the no little contentation of the both: *Loue*, who often-times prouoketh his Subiects, would no longer continue them in so great case, but rayse some cinders of diuision, wherby they might receive discontentment. For this cause he made *Amadis* remember his promise to *Briolania*, that he should combat *Abiseos* within one yeare the end whereof was now at hand: and being loth to faile therein, he sought all conuenient meanes to take his leaue of the Princesse *Oriana*, determining to acquaint her with the whole cause, in what sorte *Briolania* was disinherited of her fathers kingdom: such wete his discourses on her behalfe, that altho<sup>g</sup>h

*Oriana* was loth to grant what hee demanded, or to permit his absence from her: yet being ouercome with compassion, she restrained her will, and in middest of her sorrow, said: Deere friend, I know well that your speeches are reasonable, but the wrang you do me; aloweth no excuse: Yet in respect I loue ye, as you are well assured, it is conuenient I should preferre your honor before mine own pleasure. You haue promised (as you tell me) to succour a disinherited Lady, I am content, seeing there is no other remedy, though my consente be with greater griefe then you weene: for my minde is perswaded, some mischiefe will happen to me by this voyage. Madam,

answered *Amadis*, vnwilling am I to give you any occasion of dislike or to attempt any thing against your minde, rather could I wish neuer to haue beene borne: Let *Briolania* then pardon my tarrying, for I hold my selfe sufficiently excused; seeing my departure is not agreeable to you. Not so sweete friend, replied *Oriana*, I am willing you shall go: but make a speedy returne I pray you. With twenty kisses was this separation sealed, and shē desired him to acquaint the Queene therewith, that this iourney might be shaddowed vnder her commandement: which he did, and on the morrow departed with *Galae* and *Agraeis*, when they had not ridden past halfe a Mile, but he asked *Gandalin*, if hee had brought with him the peeces of the *Sword* that *Briolania* gave him when hee left her. No my Lord, answered *Gandalin*. Returne then quoth *Amadis* to the Dwarffe, and when thou haft them, make what spedee thou canst to ouertake vs. Alas, had he but mifdoubted the

mishap followed heron, hee never would haue sent such a mesenger: For by his ticklesse speches, he endaugered the lives of *Amadis* and *Oriana* together, as shall hereafter be largely descripted.

Gone is the Dwarffe, to his Masters lodging, and finding the peeces of the *Sword*, in the place where *Gandalin* had directed him, returned hastily toward his Master but passing by the Queenes lodging, he heard one call him, when looking about, he espied the Princesse *Oriana* and *Mabila*, who demanded wherefore he had left *Amadis*. Madame, quoth he, I haue not beeene so long from him, but I can quickly ouertake him: for this which I carry, will let him make no great hast till I come. What is it? said *Oriana*. What answered the Dwarffe, I can assure ye Madame, he prizeth them more then they be worth, for her sake that gaue him the *Sword*. What is she? quoth *Oriana*. The Lady, replied the Dwarffe, for whom he now vndertakes the combat. And thought you be daughter to the best King in the World, as also fayrer ( in mind opinion) then any other: yet rather should you haue gained her conquest, then all the wealth in this kingdome.

I know not what thou meaneſt, said *Oriana*, vnlesſe thy master haue giuen himselfe to her? You haue guessed right Madam, answered the Dwarffe, he is altogether at her commandement, thinking himselfe happy to be her Knight. So taking his leaue, hee posted to ouer-take his Master, who little thought on these slanderous reports: But *Oriana* entred into such a Ialousie, as without regard of any thing whatsoever,

shee would haue cast her selfe forth at the window, had not *Amadis* and the Damosell of Denmarke stayed her. Now riseth frowning anger in her brows, and shee to misconceive of the man, whose onely desire was to do her seruice, With often wringing her hands, shee calleth to remembrance, in what earnest affection he desired leaue for this voyage, which augmented her suspition of the Dwarffes wordes : and in such sort was her heart shut vp, as no teare might fall from her eyes, because those vapours were withdrawne to the most worthie places in her. Hereupon her torments redoubled in extremes, as *Dido* for the the tromperie of *AEneas*, or sad *Medea*, seeing her selfe forsaken of her friend *Iason*, never felt such anguish : and in fatall fortune shee would haue succeeded them, but that she was hindred by them about her, who found the meanes to defend her from such mishap.

By this time the Dwarffe over-tooke *Amadis* and the rest, when they began to ride somwhat faster, *Amadis* not requiring any thing of him, nor he reciting what he tolde the Princesse, but shewed him the peeces of the Sworde he brought. Not farre had they ridden, but they met a Damosell, who after shee had saluted them, demanded whither they traualled, saying, shee would aduise them to forfalte that way. Wherefore answered *Amadis*. Because, quoth she, for the space of fifteene dayes, no Knight errant passed this way, but he hath beene cyther wounded or slaine. And who hath done them such displeasure? said *Amadis*. A Knight, answered the Damosell, the most valiant man at Armes that ever was scene. I pray ye Damosell,

quoth *Agrales*, bring vs where wee may see him. You cannot ride far in this Forrest, said she, but he will quickly shew himselfe. So traual they on with the Damosell, and long time they neyther heard nor saw any one, which made them thinke shee spake these words to feare them : yet soone after, *Amadis* espyed the Knight, who seemed a man of goodly stature, and ready prepared for the combat. As hee and his companions stood beholding him, they heard him speake to a squire, who reared four Launces against a Tree, and afterward came to them, saying. Gentlemen, my Maister giuerth you to vnderstand, how during the space of fifteene dayes, hee hath vndertaken the guard of this Forrest, in all which time his fortune hath beene, not to be vanquished by any one : And though it be a day and a halfe since his intended tearme is expired, yet stayeth hee here till now for the pleasure he hath in Iouesting. And as he was departing hence, he espyed you comming : wherefore hee letteth you know, that if each of you will break a Launce, he careth not to try his fortune with you, provided, that the combat at the Sworde be spared, because hee silfome proceedeth so farre without doing more harme then willingly he would.

When *Agrales* heard this meassage, hee tooke his Armes, returning this answere : Friend, goe tell thy Maister I am content to try the loust with him. Hereupon, he gaue the spurres to his horse, and the knight seeing him coming, gaue forth to meeete him, their Launces being broken in the encounter : But *Agrales* was easly cast from his Horse, of which soyle he could not but be ashamed.

*Galois* beholding his Cozin dismounted, determined to revenge his wrong, bidding the knight to prepare himselfe, who taking another Launce, ran against *Galois* with such furie, as after their staves were broken, their bodies met together so vehemently, that *Galois* horse being more feeble then the other, fell downe with his Master on his back, but the Prince not recouering himselfe, was left on the ground, when the horfe arose, and ran about the field, as the other of *Agrales* did. *Amadis* abashed at these accidents, preparing himselfe, said to the Knight. I know not what thou art, but thou maist vant, that thou haft dismouned two approued good Knights. So couching his Launce, proceeded forward, but *Galois* stayed him, calling the Knight to the combat, which made *Amadis* thus to answere. Brother, finde not your selfe agrued with him, because he sent vs word before the Iouest, that he would not combat with the Sworde, but I hope to take reuenge for all.

Herewith they encouered valiantly together, breaking their Launces soonegipously, and meeting with their bodies so violently, as *Amadis* was thrown to the earth, his horses sholdier being broken in the fall : in like maner was the Knight disengaged, but keeping the reynes of his bridle in his hand, he quickly mounted on horseback againe, where *Amadis*, thus spake to him. We must tie one course more, if thou wilt haue the honor, for as yet it is not won, because we both were vanquished. I will not now loust say grace, answered the Knight. Then you do me wrong, replied *Amadis*. Redresse it, if you can finde the Knight : for according to my order before the Iouest, I am bound to no more then what I haue done. After these words, he galloped away through the Forrest so fast as he could: which when *Amadis*, and his companions saw, they being all on foote, they stood as men ashamed, for they could not imagine what he was that thus intreated them, whereupon *Amadis* mounted on *Gandalins* horse, saying to his friends : Follow me if you please, for it would grieue me not to know the name of this Knight. In sooth, answered the Damosell, it were the greatest folly in you, aboue all the knights belonging vnto King *Lishart*, to thinke you can finde him in one whole yere, vnlesse you be directly guided. Faire Damosell, said *Galois*, it may be you know what he is, and the place where he abideth. On my faith, quoth she, if I know any thing thereof, I meane not to tell it you, for never will I injurie so good a Knight. Damosell, replied *Galois*, by the affection you beate to the thing you most loue in the World, tell vs I pray ye what you know in this matter. You coniure me in vaine, quoth she, for never will I discouer his affaires, except you deliue me some good present, which are, I haue bin told, to be Demanded what you will answere, said *Amadis*, and you shall haue it, on condition you helpe vs to finde the knight. I am content, replied she Damosell, if first you will tell me your name, and afterward each of you greate me a boone, at what time I shall demand them of you. With all our hearts, quoth *Amadis*, on for our names, the one is *Galois*, the other *Agrales*, and my selfe am *Amadis*. When the Damosell heard this, shee was very glad, saying:

Certes my Lord, my iourney is shortned, for I seeke you. Then you haue now found me, answere Amadis, what is your will with me? That you shall know, quoth shee, when time serueth: but do you not remember the combate, which you promised to performe for the king of Sobradises daughter, when shee succoured you by meanes of the Lyons? Yes that I doe, sayde Amadis, and now am I riding toward her. Would you then, quoth the Damosell, follow a knight so hard to be found, and the time for the combate beeing neerer then you weene? She saith very well my Lord, answere Galaor, doe you therefore and Agraises proceede on your iourney, and I will seeke the knight with this Damosell: for neuer shal I rest til I haue found him: & if it be possible, I will be with you before you deale with Abyses. Be it so, replied Amadis, but shal I promise vs to tell his name, & shal we may find him. His name, quoth the Damosell, I cannot tell ye, for I know it not my selfe, and yet I haue beeene a moneth with him, in which time I haue seene him doe such deedes of armes, as without sight thereof I would never haue credited: but where he is now, I can conduct him thither that will goe with me. It is all I request, answere Galaor. Follow mee then, quoth she: so taking their leaue, they seperated them selues.

Thus Amadis and Agraises hold on their way, arriuing within fewe dayes after at the Castle of Tuan, where they found the faire Briolanis, with the auncient Lady: but when Amadis beheld her, he found her manitudinally changed, for if shee were faire when shee first sawe her, shee now seemed of such excellent perfection, as (except Oriana)

he reputed her the most beautifull creature in the world, whereupon he sayde to Agraises. If nature was desirous to expresse her cunning in a creature, in this Lady she hath most suffisiently accomplished it. My Lord, quoth she, full long haue we expected your comming, for in you consisteth our onely hope. Madame, answered Amadis, by the helpe of God, I trust you shall recover your losse, and we will doe our vttermost therein. As thus they deuised, they entred a faire chamber, where mantles were brought to wrap about them, and Briolanis holp to vnamre Amadis, for she could not be satisfied with beholding him, because shee commed him the fairest knight that euer was seene, being now but twenty yeeres of age. And lookeingly did hee regard her, as long time after shee waved amounth, so that when shee had recovered her Kingdome, shee wished him sole Lord of her and her countrey together, as shal heereafter be declared. But Amadis was elsewhere addited, and gaue suffi-  
cient prooef to her, that the extreme anguishes hee endured for his Oriana, were manifester examples of his stedfast loyalty. Nevertheless, the young Lord of Portugal pittyng faire Briolanis, would disguise this historie in another manner, describing fayre therwile the loue of her & Amadis, which report is worthy of credit. For he saith, that Briolanis being restored into her Kingdome, prouiding for the health of Amadis and Agraises, who were wounded, shee continuing evermore amoung of Amadis, seeing by his meane shee could winne him to be her friend, tooke aside the Damosell, to whome Amadis, Galaor and

and Agraises made the seuerall promises, at what time shee conducted Galaor to the knight that iousted with them in the Forrest, and discouering the chiefe secretes of her Heart to her, with abundance of teares and affectionate sighes, requested her counsell and remedy in these amorous passions. The Damosell compassionate on her Ladies sicknesse, promised to giue her redresse for it, whereupon she said to Amadis, that the boone shee would desire of him, was his entrance into the Tower, from whence he should not depart, vntill he had begotten of Briolanis a Sonne or a Daughter. Amadis willing to keepe promise with the Damosel, yelded sherto, yet without any will to touch Briolanis: whereby he grew into such melancholly, as he refused all bodily sustenance, and fell into such danger of his person, as every houte he expected death. Which being heard in the Court of king Lysuert, as also his deadly dangerous ex-

## CHAP. XLII.

How Galaor went with the Damosell after the Knight that dismounted him and his compaines in the Forrest, whom when he found, they combated together, and afterward in the sharpest point of their combat, they knew each other.

**G**OOD Our daies together, brode Galaor with the Damosell, seeking the Knight that vahorsed him in the Forrest, for which he was so ouckome with anger, as every knight hee mett withall dearely felte it, becausse in combat many received their death. Then espynng a faire Castle on the top of a high mountaine, the Damosell told him, there

was no other place neere where they might lodege that night: wherefore he being glad to accept thereof, they came to the Castle, finding many Gentlemen and Ladies sporting together, among whom was a Knight aged about threescore yeaers, who taking Galaor by the hand, did him all the honour might be deuided. My Lord, quoth Galaor, your coutrie to vs is so great, that albeit we were deuided

ned to passe further on our way, yet for your sake we are content to stay with you this night. Then the knight conducted *Galoar*, into a faire Chamber, leauing the Damosell among the other Ladies; and after the Prince was vnarmed, the knight spake to him in this manner. Here Sir may you rest and take your ease, calling for any thing you stand in neede of: for God knows I haue vsed such entertainment not onely to you, but to all knights errant that passed this way, because some time I haue beeene as now you are. Yet hath nature giuen mee two Sonnes, whose onely delight is in search of aduentures, but now they lie sick in their beds, beeinge cruelly wounded by a Knight, who with one Launce cast them both from their Saddles. But they were so ashamed at this foyle, as they mounted againe and pursued the knight, ouercaking him as hee entred a Barque to passe the water, where my Sonnes said to him, that in respect he had iousted so well, they would trie his fortune in combat with the Sword: but the knight made answere he could not now intend it, yet would they needs preesse him so farre, as to hinder his entrance into the Barque. Wherupon a Lady being in his company said, they wronged her ouer-much to stay her Knight: but they were not to depart, til he had combated with them at the Sword. Seeing it will be no otherwise replied the Lady, he shall enter fight with the better of you both, on condition, that if he haue conquerid, the other do forbeare the Combat. They answered, if shee wiste vs vanquished, the other would revenge his foyle, which when the Knight heard, he was so angry, as

he bad them both come together, in respect they were importunate and would not rest contented. In the triall, one of my sons sustaine the worst, wherefore his brother seeing him in such perill, stroue to reske him from death: yet all was in vaine, for the knight handled them so roughly, as he left them like dead men in the field, and afterward passed away in the Barque. No sooner heard I of this mishap, but I sent for my Sonnes, & home were they brought in this daungerous plig: but that you may giue credit to my words, behold here their Armour cut and mangled, as I thinke the like strokess never came from any mans hand. *Galoar* maruailing at this discourse, demanded what Armes the conquering knight bare: when he was answered, his Shielde to be of vermillion colour, with two black Lions figured thereon. By these tokenes *Galoar* knew him, that it was the same man he traualid to finde, which made him demand of his friendly host, if he had no further knowledge of the Knight. No verily Sir, quoth the auncient Gentleman. For this night, answered *Galoar*, let vs take our rest, and to morrow I intend to seek the man you falke of. For already I haue traualid fourre daies in his search: but if I meete with him, I hope to revenge the injurie of your Sonnes, and other like vs whom he hath offendid, or else will cost the price of my life: I could rather wish said the Knight, that leauing this perillous entow psise, you would take some other course, seeing my two Sonnes haue beeene so hardly iudicid: they own wilfull folly being causid thereof. So breaking off talke, *Galoar* took his rest till the next mor-

ning, when taking leaue of the auncient knight, he rode away with the Damosell, who brought him to the place of passage in the Barque: where crossing the water to the other side, they came to a very beautefull Castle, whither the Damosel rode before, aduising the Prince to stay her returne. She taryed not long, but comming back againe, brought another Damosel with her of excellent beauty, and ten men beside all on horse-back: after the faire Gentlewoman had saluted *Galoar*, she said. Sir, this Damosell that came in your company, telleth me, how you seeke a knight, who beareth two black Lyons in a vermillion shield, and are desirous to know his name: this is very certaine, that you nor any other can finde him for three yeeres space, but onely by force of armes, a matter not so easie to be accomplitshed by you, for perswade your selfe, his like is not to be found in all the Isles of great *Brittaine*. Lady, quoth *Galoar*, yet will I not giue over his search, although hee conceale him selfe in this sort: and if I meete with him, it shall like mee better to combate with him, then to know my demand by any other way. Seeing then, answered the Damosell, your desire is such, I will shew you him within three dayes ensuing, for this Gentlewoman sake, being my cosin, who according to her promise hath earnestly entreated me. *Galoar* requited her with many thankes, and so they traualid on, arriuing in the euening at an arme of the Sea, where they found a Barque ready for passage to a hule Island, and certaine mariners in it, who made them all sweare, if they had any more then one knight in their company. No, credite me, replied the Damosell: herupon they set sayle and away. Then *Galoar* demanded of the Damosell, the reason why they tooke such an oath. Because, quoth she, the Lady of the Isle whither we goe, hath so ordained it, that they shall let passe but one knight at one time: and no other must they bring till his returne, or credible intelligence of his death. What is hee, saide *Galoar*, that vanquisheth or killeth them? The selfe same knight you seeke, answered the Damosell, whom the Lady hath kept with her more then halfe a yeere, inticly louing him: and the cause of this affection proceedeth from a Tounay, which not long since hee maintained in this countrey, for the loue of her and another faire Lady, whom the knight (being a stanger here) conqueted, defending her cause with whome he now is, and ever since shee bare him sych affection, as without grant of his loue she wold haue dyed. Sometime hee is desirous to seeke after strange aduentures, but then the Lady to detaine him still in this place, causeth such knights as come hither to passe one after another against whom he combateth, and not one hath yet returned vnuanquished: such as die in fight are there interred, and the foyled sent back againe, depoyled of their horse and armes, which the knight presenteth to his Lady, shee being one of the fairest creatures in the world, named *Corsanda*, and the Isle *Brenisande*. Know you not the cause, said *Galoar*, wherefore the knight went not many dayes since, to a Forrest where I found him, and kept the passage there fiftene dayes together, against all such as traualid that way? Yes mary, quoth the Damosel, he promised a boone to a Lady

Lady before he came hither, wher-  
fore she intreated him to keep the  
Forrest for the space of fifteene  
dayes: yet hardly hee got licence  
of his faire Mistresse, who allowed  
him but a moneth to stay and re-  
turne.

By this time they were landed,  
and come before a goodly Castle,  
where stood a pillar of Marble,  
with a horne hanging on it, which  
the Damosell bad him winde, and  
the Knight would come forth at  
the sound thereof. After he had  
giuen a good blast, certaine Pa-  
ges came forth of the Castle, who  
set vp a Pauilion in the middest of  
the field, and six Ladies (soone af-  
ter) came walking forth one of  
them seeming by her gesture and  
countenance, to be commander of  
the rest, taking her place accord-  
ingly in the Tent. I maruaile,  
said *Galaor*, the knight tarryeth so  
long, I desire one of you to will the  
Lady send for him, because busines  
else-where of great importance,  
forbiddeth me to trifle time here  
in vaine. One of the Damosells ful-  
filled his request. What? answe-  
red *Corisanda*, maketh he so small  
account of our Knight? thinketh  
hee so easily to escape from him?  
hath he such mind of other affaires  
before hee see the end of this at-  
tempt? indeede I thinke he shall  
returne sooner then he expecteth,  
but with slender aduantage for him  
to bragge of: then calling a Page,  
she said. Goe and bid the strange  
Knight come forth. The Page  
quickly did his message, and soone  
after, the Knight came forth on  
foote, being all armed except with  
his Helmet, which was brought af-  
ter him with his Launce, and ano-  
ther Page leading his Courser:  
when he came before his Lady, she  
said. Behold Sir, here is a braue

Knight, who thinketh lightly too-  
uercome you, & accounteth him-  
selfe assured of the victory: I pray  
you let him know the price of his  
folly. After these wordes *Galaor*  
kissed and embrased him, but *Galaor*  
noting all these mysterie, thought  
he tarried too long from the com-  
bat: at length the Knight being  
mounted, they prepared themselfs  
to the cariere, and breaking their  
Launces in the encounter, were  
both wounded. *Galaor* prestly  
drew his Sword, but the knight in-  
treated him to loust once more.  
With all my heart, replied *Galaor*,  
yet I am sory my horse is not so  
good as yours, for if it were: I  
could be content not to givewer  
till one of vs lay along on the  
ground, or all these Launces bro-  
ken in peeces. The Knight made  
him no answere, but comandedyd  
a squire to bring them other staves,  
and meeting together, *Galaor*'s  
horse was almost down: the knight  
likewise lost his stirrups, be-  
ing glad to catch hold by the  
mane of his horse, whereas he  
somewhat ashamed, he said to *Galaor*.  
You are desirous to combat  
with the Sword, which I haue de-  
ferred, not for any doubt of my  
selfe, but only to spare you, notwithstanding,  
we must needs now  
try the issy thereof.

Do what you can answered *Galaor*, I meane to bee reuenged for  
your kindnesse in the Forrest: these  
words made the Knight fooste to  
reremember him, saying: You shall  
do no more then you can, and hap-  
pily before you depart hence, you  
may sustaine a foyle worse then the  
first. Hereupon they fell to the  
combat, which began and con-  
tinued with such fury, as the Ladies,  
were driven into wonderfull a-  
mazement, yea; themselues were

bashed that they held out so long,  
hauing their Armour mangled,  
their Shields defaced, their Bodies  
sore wounded, and the blood stre-  
ming downe vpon their horses:  
*Galaor* never being in such daun-  
ger of his life, but when hee fought  
with his brother *Amadis*, which  
made him carry better opinion of  
the Knight, and both of them be-  
ing glad to breath a while, *Galaor*  
entred into these speeches. You  
see Sir I haue the better of the  
combat, let me therfore know your  
name, and why you conceale your  
selfe so closely: wherein you shall  
doe me very great pleasure, and  
wee may continue friends, else  
worse will ensue then you imagin.  
Be wel assured answere the knight  
our strife shall not be ended so eas-  
ily, nor am I to bee ouercome so  
lightly as you weene, beside, I was  
neuer more desirous to prolong a  
combat, then I am at this instant,  
because I neuer met with the  
knight that tryed me so well: but to  
you nor any other will I bee  
knowne, except one Knight who  
hath power to command me. Be  
not so opinitiue, replied *Galaor*,  
for I sweare to you by the faith I  
owe to God, neuer to leaue you  
till I know whar you are, and why  
you conceale your selfe so secret-  
ly. And I sweare to you, quoth  
the knight, while breath is in my  
body you shall not know it by me,  
and rather would I presently die,  
then any but two should vnder-  
stand what I am: yet I know not  
them, but they may and shall haue  
knowledge of me. And what are  
they, said *Galaor*, you esteeme so  
much? Neither will I disclose them  
to you, answered the knight. Both  
them and my former demaund,  
quoth *Galaor*, I will know, else one  
of vs shall die, or both together. I

am well pleased therewith, replied  
the Knight.

So began they to charge each  
other a fresh, as if they had not  
fought together before at all: but  
the strange knight received many  
cruell wounds, which made his  
strength more and more to faile:  
and the Lady seeing the great dan-  
ger of his life, would suffer him to  
endure no longer perill, but com-  
ming to *Galaor*, said. Forbear  
Sir Knight, would God the Barque  
and Mariners had sunke, before  
they brought you hither. Lady,  
quoth *Galaor*, you ought not to  
blame me in doing my deuoire a-  
gainst this knight, who hath ourra-  
ged me, & many beside, for which  
I meane to bee [reuenged] this day.  
Forbear, said the Lady, to wrong  
him any more, otherwise you may  
fall into an extremity without any  
mercy.

It matters not what may happen  
answered *Galaor*: but nothing  
shall make me giue ouer, vntill he  
haue satisfied my demand. And  
what is that? quoth she. He must  
tell me his name, replied *Galaor*,  
and why so closely hee concealeth  
himselfe, likewise what the two  
Knights are of whom he told mee  
but even now. Proceede no fur-  
ther in combat said the Lady, and  
I will satisfie your demand. This  
Gentleman is named *Dos Flores*,  
concealing himselfe in this secret  
manner to finde his two brethren,  
who are in this country accounted  
such men at Armes, that albeit hee  
hath well tried himselfe with you,  
yet will hee not bee commonly  
knowne, till he haue accomplished  
such deedes in chivalrie, as ma-  
deserue to equall him with them, who  
are at this time in Kiug *Lesuarts*  
Court, one of them being named  
*Amadis*, the other *Galaor*, and all  
three

thre the Sonnes to King Perion of Gaul. Alas, what haue I done ? quoth *Galaor*, heere brother take my Sword , and therewithall the honor of the fight , for I haue offended ouer much . What ? said the knight am I then your brother ? According to this Ladies speches , answered *Galaor*, you are , and I am your brother *Galaor*. *Florestan* amazed at this accident , fell on his knee , saying . My Lord , I desire you to pardon me , for this offence in combatting vnown known with you , was caused by no other reason : but that I durst not name my selfe your brother , till I had made some immitations of your noble vertues , *Galaor* courteously embrased him in his armes , the teares streaming

from his eyes with ioy , and greeing to see him so sore wounded , doubting least his life was in great danger : but when the Lady saw them so good friends , and the enmity conuerted into such Humilitie , as one right glad thereof , she said to *Galaor*. Worthy Sir , though first you gaue me occasion of grea heauiness , yet now with sufficien ioy you haue recompensed me . So taking each of them by the hand , she walked with them into the Castle , where they being lodged in two sumptuous beds , her selfe (skilfull in Chirurgerie ) cured their wounds . Thus remained the two brethren with the rich and beautifull Lady *Cordisanda* , who desired their health as her owne wel-fare .

## CH AP. XLIII.

How Don Florestan was begotten by King Perion , on the faire Daughtier the Countie of Zealand .

 T what time King Perion fought after strange Aduentures , he arived in the countrey of *Almaigne* , where he soioured the space of two yeres , accomplishing many braue deedes of Armes , the renowne whereof continueth to this day . And as he returned toward *Gaul* hee lodged in the Counties house of *Zealand* , where he was entertained very royally , as well in respect of his owne reputation , as also because the County himselfe had sometime beene a Knight errant , which made him loue all such as followed Armes . After supper , the King was condueted to his Chamber , where being in bed , and somewhat wearie with trauaile , he fell a sleepe soundly : but to shake

off this heauiness , he felte himselfe embrased and kisst he knew not by whom , when starting vp to aile , he was so held down that he could not . Why Sir ? quoth she that thus maistered him , take you no pleasure in me who am alone with you ? the king looking on her , by meanes of the light which still burned in his Chamber , he discerned her to be a most beautifull Lady , wherefore he thus answered . I pray you faire friend , tell me what you are . What soever I am , quoth she , I loue you exceedingly , as one that freely giues her selfe to you . In sooth , replied the King , I very gladly would know your name . You trouble me , said the Lady , with this importunity , yet can I vse no other continence the you see : but it were necessary quoth the king , I should know

and she (desirous to cover her shame) determined to goe vnto her Aunt of hers , whose dwelling was not past two or three miles off , and many times she resorted thither for her pleasure . So taking no other company with her but a Damosell , as shee rode through the Forrest , the payne of travayle made her alight from her Palfrey , she being soon after deliuert of a goodly Sonne . The Damosell that was with her , seeing what had happened , bringing the childe to the mother , said . Madam , as your heate serued you to commit the offence , so must it now practise some present remedy , while I returne from your Aunt againe . Then getting on horseback , shee rode apace to her Ladies Aunt , and acquainted her with the whole matter : which caused the old woman to be very sorrowfull , yet she prouided succour for her Niece , sending a Litter with all conuenient speede , wherein the Lady and her childe were brought to her Castle secretly , euery thing being so cunningly handled , as the Countie never knew his Daughters fault . After such time as these matters require , the Lady returned home to her Father , leauing her Sonne in her Aunts custody , where he was nourished till the age of eightene yeeres , hauing Squires and Gentlemen attending on him , who daily instructed him in managing Armes , and all braue qualities be-seeming a man of value . He being growne of goodly stature , the old Lady brought him one day to the Countie his Grand-father , who gaue him his knight-hood , not knowing what he was : & returning againe with his motherly Nurse , by the way she brake with him in this manner . My Sonne , I am cer-

certaine you are ignorant of your parentage, but credit my words, you are the son to King *Perion* of *Gaule*, begotten on his daughter that gave you your order of knighthood: endeuour your selfe therefore to follow your fathers steps, who is one of the most renowned knights in the world. Madam, quoth *Floresian*, oftentimes haue I heard great fame of King *Perion*, but never imagined my selfe to be his son: wherefore I vow to you, being my long and carefull nurse, that I will trauaile to finde my father, and not make my selfe known to any one, till my deedes declare me worthy to be his son. Not long after, hee departed from the olde *Ladic*, and accompanied with two squires, iournied to *Constantinople*, which at that time was greatly vexed with warre, where he remained the space of fourre yeres, performing such haughty deedes of Chivalrie, as he was counted the best knight in all those parts. When he perceiued himselfe in some account, he intended to visit *Gaule*, and make himselfe knowne to the king his father: but coming into great *Brittaine*, hee heard the fame of *Amadis* to be maruaillous, which was the cause of his stay there, to win some report by armes, as his bretheren had done, whom he longed to acquaint himselfe withall. At length he met with them both in the forrest, as you heard, and afterward combated with his brother *Gauor*, which caused their a boad at the Castle of *Corisande*, vntill such time as their wounds were healed.

But now let vs retorne to *Amadis* and *Agrais*, who staied with faire *Briolanis* ffe daies together, preparing their armour and euery thing in order: which being done,

they set forward on their way, accompanied with *Briolanis*, her Aunt, certaine waiting Gentlewe men, and squires to doe them seruice by the way. When they drew neare the Realme of *Sobradis*, they came to the Castle of an ancient Lady named *Galumba*, who sometyme liued in *Briolanis* fathers Court, and there they were welcomed very honourably: yet whether *Briolanis* traualled thus accompanied, the olde Lady *Galumba* could not chuse but maruaile, which made her request to be satisfied therein. *Briolanis* Auge tolde her, how *Amadis* was one of the best knights in the world, and had promised to reuenge the murthered kings death: likewise how hee discomfited them that guarded the Chariot, and afterward ouercame the rest in the Castle, at what time the Lions escaped, as you haue heard. *Galumba* wondering at such singuler prowess, answered. If he be such a one as you make report, his companion must needs be of some estimation, and well may they bring your enterprise to end, considering the truth and iustice of the cause: but take heede least the traiterous king worte some treason against them. That is the chchett pointe of my fear, ianswered *Briolanis*, wherfore wee came to craue your advise herein. Heereupon shee wrote letter, and sealed it with the Princesses seale at Armes, then caling a Damosell, after shee had given her instructions, she bad her make hast in delivering the letter. Presently went the Damosell to horseback, and traualled so speedily that she arrived at the great Cittie of *Sobradis*, which the whole Realme tooke this name by. There was *Abisces* and his Sonnes, *Darifon* and

and *Dramis*, and these three must the Combat be waged withall: for *Abisces* slew the Father of *Briolanis*, by couetous desire he had to the Crowne, which he euer since vsurped and held, more by tyranny then any consent in the Subiects. The Damosell entred the Palace on hors-back, when diuerse knights came to her, requesting her to alight: but shee made answere she would not, til she saw the king, and that hee commanded her to leaue her Palfrey. Soone after came the king, accompanied with his two Sonnes and many great Lords, and after shee had saluted him, hee boldly bad her say what shee would. My Lord, quoth shee, I shall fulfill your command, on condition I may abide in your protection, and receiue no iniurie for any thing I say. By my Crowne, said the king, I warrant your safety: wherenpon the Damosell thus began. Sir, my Lady and Mistresse *Briolanis*, disinherited by you, greetes you with this letter, which may openly bee read before this royll company, and I afterward receiue answere for my discharge: whē the king heard openly the nāe of *Briolanis*, remorse of conscience touched him with the wrong hee did her: yet was the letter openly read, which was to give credit to the Damosells words. The most of the Lords there present, who sometyme were subiects to the slaughtered king, seeing the messenger of their lawfull Queene indeede: pittyed shee was so vnjustly disinherited, and in their hearts desired of God to plague the treason done to her Father: Proceede Damosell, quoth the king, and let vs heare your message. My Lord, said she, by treason you murdred my Ladies Father, and vnjustly keepe her from her inheritance: wherefore according to your former promise, which you haue not once but often times made, that you with your two Sons would maintaine by Armes, the right you pretend to haue in this Realme: shee sends you word by me, if still you stand vpon such triall, shee will bring two knights hither, who shal in combat maintaine her cause, making you know your disloyalty and treason committed. *Darifon* eldest Sonne to the king, hearing his Father menaced in this sort, grew into great choller, and as one mothed with despight, he arose, when (without the kings consent) hee thus spake. Damosell, if your Mistresse *Briolanis* haue two knights with her, men resolued to fight on her behalfe: here do I accept the combat for my father and Brother, and if I faile, I promise in the presence of all these Lords, to send her my head in requitall of her fathers; whose death was not accomplished without great reason: In sooth Sir *Darifon*, answered the Damosell, you speake as a knight of haughtie mind, yet may I doubt these words to proceede from choller, because I discerne an alteration in your countenance: but if you will request the king to confirme your speeches, I shall thinke your proffer came from a heart of courage.

This answere Damosell, quoth he, may you boldly make her that sent you hither. Causē then his Maiestie, said the Damosell, to giue my Ladies knights assurance, that for any mishap you may receiue in the Combat, they shall sustaine no iniurie, nor be medled withall but by you three: And if you purchase them such a safe conduct, they shall bee here within three

three dayes at the vttermost, *Darison* falling on his knee before the King, said. You heare (my Lord) the Damosells demaund, and the promise I haue made before your Maiestie, in the presence of all these great Princes and Lords: humbly therefore I beseech you, seeing my honor is yours, that both you and all the rest will confirme her request, otherwise, to our great aduantage, the presuming knights, who dare aduenture in the cause of foolish *Briolanis*, will imagine themselues conquerors, and vs dismaide faint-hearted Cowards: hauing openly published, that if any one will touch your illustrious renowne for matters past, by the combat of vs three you intend to be purged. And albeit you would make them no such promise, yet ought not we to refuse them, for as I vnderstand, they be some foolish knights of King *Lisnarts* Court, who by their ouer-weening and aspiring thoughts, make high acompt of their owne deedes in the contempt of others. The King who loued *Darison* as himselfe, though the death of his brother condemned him culpable, and thereby made him feare the combat: granted them safe conduit, according as the Damosell requested for the two knights, and such as came in their company. Here is to be considered, that the period of this traitours Fortune was now limited, and the iust auenger of all wrongs, pointed out rewardes for the treason of him and his Sonnes, as in this discourse may bee evidently seene.

The Damosel seeing her mesage had taken such effect as shee desired, said vnto them: Make your selues ready, for to morrow without fayle shall this difference bee

desid. So mounting on her *Palfrey*, she returned to the Castle of *Galumba*, where being arriued, before the knights and Ladies, she reported her awnswere: but when she told them, that *Darison* reputed them foolish knights of king *Lisnarts* Court, they were so offendid, as *Amadis* entred into these speeches. By God, there are such in company of that good king, as can easily abate the pride of *Darison*, and humble his head so low as they list: but I thinke his choller ouer-mastred him, when he uttered words of such great indiscretion. Trust me my Lord, answered *Briolanis*, you cannot say or doe so much against these traytours, as they iustly deserue. You know what vilanie they did to the king my Father, and how long time they haue disinherited me: let pitty then preuale on my behalfe, soing in God and you I haue repoled my selfe, with assured hope of sufficient reuenge. *Amadis* whose heart was submisse to vertue and all gentlenesse, moued with compassion, said.

Madam, if God be so pleased, ere to morrow at night, your sorrow and sadnessse, shall be conuertered into pleasure and content: herupon they concluded, to set forward very early the next morning, which made them depart to their chambers, except *Briolanis*, who sat conferring with *Amadis* on many matters, when often times she thought to motion marriage between him and her: but suspecting by his continuall sighs, as also the teares streaming from his eys, that some other Lady was cause of these passions, she kept silence, and taking her leaue bad him good night. On the morrow they go all to horse-back, & comming to the

Cittie of *Sobradis*, their arriuall was very welcome to many, who seeing the Daughter of their late soueraigne Lord, and knowing the monstrous treacherie of his brother, they instantly desired her prosperous successe, because they bare her singuler affection. *Abisos* remembryng the wrong hee had done her, and his bloody treason so vnnaturally committed, seemed terrified in countenance, because the worme of conscience reviued his heinous offence: yet hauing beeene so long abstinate and indurate in his sinne, thought fortune would now assure his quietnes, and confirme his estate to continue in tranquility. But when he saw how the people stoked about her, not shewing any reverence to him and his sonnes, albeit they were royally accompanied with Lords, hee exclamed on them in this manner. Ah wretched and bad minded people, I see what comfort you take by the presence of this Girle, and how your sences are caryed away with her: now may I well iudge, you rather could except her as your soueraigne, she beeing a woman not capable of such an office, then I that am a hardy knight. Her weaknesse you may note, because shee hath in so long time gotten but two knights, who are come to receiue an ignominious death, which in sooth I cannot chuse but pittie. When *Amadis* heard these taunting words, he was so enraged, as if the blood would haue gushed from his eyes, and raising himselfe on his stirrops, that every one might heare him, hee thus answered. *Abisos*, it may bee easily discerned, that the arriuall of the Princesse is least pleasing to thee, in respect of thy horrible treason committed, murdering her father thy eldest brother: but if thou haue any feeling of vertue, & art repenant for thy soule mis-deed, yeeld to her what thou hast vniustly vsurped, so shall I discharge thee of the combate: provided, thou aske God forgiuensse, and vsé such re-pentance as besemeth a sin so heinous, that by losing honour in this world, thou mayst seeke the saluation of thy soule hereafter. *Darison* prouoked to anger by these speeches, aduaneed himselfe, & before his father had leisute to reply, hee preuented him in this manner. Thou foolish Knight of King *Lisnarts* Court, hardly can I endure thy iniurous words to my father in my presence: but I am content to defer them, till we proceede to the effect of thy demand, then shall I take such vengeance for them as I desire, for when thy heart shal faint in time of neede, weening to save thy life by flight: if thou make not good haft I will so chaste thee, as each one shall pittie thy miserable estate. This is too long a processe, said *Agreias*, to defend thy fathers treason withall, goe arme thy selfe, and come to the combate as thou didst promise, then shal thou see if fortune bee so fauourable, to give thee the victory which thou reckonest assured: if shee doe otherwise, perswade thy selfe, both thou and thine shal haue the meed of your wicked deserwing. Say what thou wilt, answered *Darison*, ere long thy iniurous tongue puld from thy head, shall be sent to the court of thy maister king *Lisnart*, that such as behold thy worthy punishment, may be afraid to hazard the like by their liberal language. So calling for their armour, the king and his two sons were quickly armed, then mounting on horsebacke, they went to the place appointed

appointed for Combats. Whereupon, *Amadis* and *Agraeis* lacing their Helmets, tooke their Shields and Launces, and afterward entered the field. Then *Dramis* (who was the youngest brother, yet a Knight so valiant, as two of the best in that Countrey durst not deale with him in Combat) said to his Father. My Lord, where your Maiesty and my brother are present, wel may I be excused from speech, but now effects must shew it otherwise, by such strength as Heaven hath enabled me withall: therefore I desire to try my Fortune with the Knight who hath so wronged you, and if I kill him not at the first taint of the Launce, never shall Armor come on my back againe: but if I meeet him not so right as I desire, he shall haue but little respite of life, for at the first stroake of my Sword, I will dispatch him. Many heard the words of young *Dramis*, and esteemed highly of his enterprise, nor did they greatly doubt the performance, considering what deedes of Armes they had seene him accomplish. Now place they their Launces in their rests, and *Dramis* prepared himselfe against *Amadis*, who met him so full in the cariere, as his heart brake in his belly, and he fell to the ground so waightily, as if it had beene the fall of an Oxe. Get thee to all the Diuels, said *Dardas* the Dwarffe, my master is very well rid of thee: but methinks his threatening hath lighted on himselfe, which commonly falls out so with such great crakers. *Agraeis* and *Darijor* brake their Launces in the encounter, but no other harme happened betweene them as yet.

When *Abisces* saw his Son *Dramis* was dead, he was meruailously displeased, and intended to re-

venge his death on *Amadis*, whereupon he gaue forth to meeet him, and piercing his Launce thorow the Princes shield, gaue him a sore hurt on the Arme, which made the beholders doubt, that *Amadis* could hold out no longer. If then the young Princesse *Briolanis* was dismaide, it were in vaine to demand the question: for now her heart dreaded further mishap: but he who could not be daunted with common wounds, drew the sword which he recovered from *Arcalass*, giuing *Abisces* such a sound greeting therwith on the head, as made him couch his neck to his shouders, and the Sword sliding downe vpon his right arme, gauchima wound to the very bone, by means whereof *Abisces* found himselfe so distressed and amazed, that hee fell down from his horse as it were in a Trance. Now did the people meruail not a little, to see *Amadis* at two stroakes ouerthrow two such puissant Knights, esteemed amongst them the best in the World: but *Amadis* beholding no other resistance, returned to *Darijor* who fought with *Agraeis*, they behauing themselues so manfully against each other, as the people thought they never saw a braver combat.

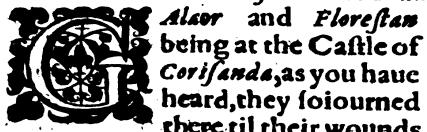
At length *Abisces* recovered againe, and seeing his Sonne *Darijor* in danger of his life, came to assist him, giuing *Agraeis* such a wound in the throat, as his Cozin thought he had beene slayne outright: But soone did hee requite *Abisces* for it, by seperating his wounded Arme from his body, euen the same Arme wherewith he killed the King his Brother, which made him fall downe dead to the ground, whereupon *Amadis* called to him, saying. *Abisces*, this

this is punishment in membet, whereby thou didst thrust thy selfe into the Crowne, and now hast receiued death according to thy deuert. Then hee turned about to helpe *Agraeis*, but he met him with the head of *Darijor* in his hand: whereat all the people gaue a great shoute, and humbled themselues to *Briolanis* as their lawfull Queen. This was the end of the wretched Father and his Sonnes, seruing at this day for an example to such as shamefully vsurpe the right of others: which though they enjoy for a small season, yet when the God of power letteth loose his arrows against them, they fall into open and detested ruine. Let every man therfore set before his eys that no euill remaineth vnpunished, and the end concludeth these two principles, the eternall beatitude of the celestiall Soules, and the mercilesse excruciations of miserable damned creatures.

Thus see you what lot fell to *Abisces* and his children, vsurping the kingdome by homicide and tyrrany, euen by the death of his own naturall brother: therefore heauen repayed him with a miserable end, by the conquering Sword of *Amadis* and *Agraeis*, who dragged them along out of the field, demanding if any other would withstand the right of *Briolanis*. By one of the chiefeſt Lords in the Country named *Goman*, they were answered, she had no more enimies to gaue: say her, which he testified with an hundred knights of his owne kinred: All the people being these

## CHAP. XLIII.

How Galaor and Florestan riding toward the Realme of Sobradisa, with three Damosels at the Fountaine of Oliues.



*Galaor and Florestan* being at the Castle of Corisanda, as you haue heard, they soioured there til their wounds were healed: afterward they concluded on their departure, to seek *Amadis* in the realme of Sobradisa, desiring they might come thither before the beginning of the cōbat, to haue part of the perill in fight, and glory in conquest. But when *Florestan* should take leaue of his Lady, her griefe and teares vnspeakable, able to mooue ruth in a heart of stony, although *Florestan* assured her of his speedy returne. Notwithstanding all these mones, forward they set to the Realme of Sobradisa: *Florestan* craving a boon of his brother by the way, to wit: that he would not combat on the way for any thing which might happen, vntill he were able to hold out no longer. With much a doe he obtained his request, & so rode they on foure dayes together, not meeting with any aduenture worthy the rehersall: but toward Sunsetting they met a knight hard by a Tower, who intreated them earnestly to lodge there that night, which gentle offer they accepted, and entring with the knight, they conferred on many matters till supper was ready. The knight was of comely stature, & well spoken, but his countenance was so sad & melancholly, as *Galaor* began thus to question with him. Me thinkes Sir you are not so merry as you should be, but if wee may any way help your pensuencie, tell vs, and you shall finde vs willing to per forme it. I beleue assuredly, quoth their host, that like good knights

you would doe as you say, but my sadnesse is caused through extream loue, a matter not to be reuealed, and therefore the rather to be pardoned. So sate they downe to supper, which beeing ended, *Galaor*, and his brother were condit to their chamber, where they reposed themselves till the next morning: when mounting on horse-backe, their host would accompany them a little on the way, and calling for his Iennet, but putting on no Armour, hee rideth with them: this did hee to see what should happen to them, because in the way hee guided them, he hoped to see some prooef of their manhood, when if they were vanquished or slaine, he might the more easily escape from them.

Not farre had they trauelled, but they came to a place called the fountaine of Oliues, because in the midst of the water grew three high Oliue trees. Heerby they espied three beautifull Damosels, and a Dwarfe sitting aloft in one of the trees: whereupon *Florestan* saluted them very curteously, as one not to learme his behauior toward Ladies, then one of the Damosels requiting his salutation, sayd. Sir knight, if heauen haue endued you with as great bountie as comely perfection, no doubt but you are sufficiently enriched. Faire Damosell answered *Florestan*, if my outward appearance doth please you, my inward vertue you may try if you haue any need. You speake so kindly, quoth she, that I will presently make prooef of your valour, to see if you can carry mee hence from this place. In sooth Lady, replied *Florestan*, if of your selfe you

be

Ch. 44.

## Of Amadis de Gaule.

249

bewilling to goe, I know no reason to the contrary why you should not. Herewith he commanded the squire to set her on a palfrey, which was tied (ready furnished) at one of the oliue trees: but whē the dwarfe behelde it, hee cryed out aloude. Come forth sir knight, come forth, for here is one will carry away your friend. Presently came out of a valley a knight brauely prauincing, & well armed, who said to *Florestan*. What moues you sir to touch my Lady? I cannot think she is yours, answered *Florestan*, seeing shee entreateth mee to carry her hence awaie. Albeit shee would, quoth the knight, yet I thinke it not at this time so conuenient, because I haue defended her from better then you are. I know not how well you haue defended, replied *Florestan*, but she shall goe with me if I can helpe it. By God sir, answered the other, you must first talk with the knights of this valley, and seeke how safelie they can keepe such as they loue. So placing their Lances in their rests, they ran couragiously against each other, the knight breaking his stiffe: but *Florestan* smot his shield so strongly against his helmet, as the lace brake, and his head was bare, but worst of all, he fel so heauily vpon his sword, that with his weight brake in two pieces. *Florestan* finished his carrie, hauing his Launce whole and sound, when turning againe to the knight, hee saw that he moued neither hand or foote, wherefore punching him with his Lance vpon the stomack, said: Pillard, thou art dead, if thou yeeld not. The knight being receuured frō his graunce, & beholding the present danger of his life, desired mercy: which *Florestan* granted, so he would freely resigne the Damosell. She is at your pleasure, replied the knight, but cursed bee the hour when first I saw her. For by her folleys she hath oftentimes endangered my life, *Florestan* leaving him, came to the Damosell, saying: Faire Lady, now you are mine. You haue so nobly won me, quoth she, as I remaine at your disposition. As they were departing thence, one of the other Damosels thus spake: Alas sir, will you separe so good company? it is a yere and more since wee haue liued together, and we would be loth now to depart in this manner. If you please to accompany her, answered *Florestan*, I can be content to conduct you together: and more I hope you will not request, because I meane not to leaue my conquest. I thinke not my selfe so soule, repli the other damosel, but some good knight may enterprise as great an aduenture for me: mary it is to be doubted, whether such hardinesse remaine in you or no. Why Lady quoth *Florestan*, thinke you that feare can make me leaue yef I promise you on my faith, but that I would not forcibly carry you away, you should presently goe with me: but if your will be so good, let my squire helpe you vp on your hackney. Which she did, & the dwarfe cryed againe as he did for the first, whereupon another knight came immediatly foorth, and after him a squire bearing two Launces, the knight vsing these words to *Florestan*. You haue ( sir ) already won one Lady, and ( not content with her ) you seeke for another: but now in one instant you must loose them both, and your head I doubt to keepe them company, because you beeing of no better race, are vneworthy a Lady of so high calling. Thou vauntest very much, answered *Florestan*, yet haue I two Y<sup>5</sup> knights

knights of my linage, whom thou, nor three such as thou art, may bee thought worthy to serue. Thy commendations extend very far, sayde the knight, yet am I to meddle with none but thee, who hast got a Lady from him that could not defend her: but she must be mine if I conquer thee, else by vanquishing me, thou shalt be maister of them both together. Now thou speakest reason, quoth *Florestan*: defend thy Lady well, or without doubt shee will fall to my share. So giuing the spurres to their horses, they committed this controuersie to be tryed by the Lance, when though the Prince failed in the race, and the other brake his staffe very manfully: yet (being angry at his mis-hap) at the second course he set the knight so violently to the ground, as hee thought every bone of him was broken in pieces. Thus was he safely possessed of the second Damosell, and very loth hee was to leaue the third there alone, but shee beholding their host that conducted them thither, spake to him in this manner. My friend, I would advise ye to bee gone, because you know these two knights cannot resist him will presently come: then if you be taken, you are sure to dy the death. Beleeue mee Lady, quoth hee, I meane now to see the end of all, for my horse is quick of pace, and my tower strong enough to defend me from him. Well, looke to your selues, said the Damosell, you bee but three, and one of you vnaarmed, but if he were, it might not auiale him. When *Florestan* heard how shee praised him that was to come, he was more desirous to carry her away then before, onely because hee would haue a sight of him, and therefore bad his Squire to set her on horse-backe as he did

the other, when the Dwarf in the olive tree deliuered these wordes. Beleeue me Sir knight, in an euill houre came this boldnesse on you, for presently commeth one who will reuenge his companions. Foorth of the valley came a knight in gilt armour, mounted on a lully bay courser, the man resembling a Giant in proportion, and reputed to be of incredible strength. After him followed two Squires armed, each of them carrying a hatchet in his hand, and so soone as he came neere *Florestan*, he thus spake. Stay knight & fly not, for by flight thou art not able to saue thy life, better is it for thee to dye like a good knight then a coward, especially when by cowardise thou canst not escape. *Florestan* hearing such menaces of death, contemning likewise a man of no value, incensed with anger, hee returned this answere. Monster, Beast, Divell, or whatsoeuer thou art, reason I see thou wantest: so little do I esteeme thy prodigall words, that I think thou hast no better weapons to fight withall. I greeue, saide the Knight, that I cannot haue my fill in reuenge on thee, but I would foure of the best of thy linage were here with thee, for mee to slice off their heads as I wil do thine. Look to thine owne thou wert best, answered *Florestan*, for I hope I am sufficient to excuse them, and bee their Lieutenant in this matter on thee. Thus sundring themselves, in rage and fury they met together, that the beating of their horses hooes made the earth to groan and the breach of their Lances made a terrible noise: but the great knight lost his stirrups, and had fallen to the ground, if by catching hold about his horse necke hee had not escaped. As *Florestan* helde on his

his course, hee caught a hatchet from one of the squires, wherewith he smote him quite beside his horse: and by time he returned, the Knight had recouered his seate againe, and the hatchet which the other Squire held. Now begins a dreadfull combat betweene them, such cruell strokes being giuen at each other with their hatchets, as though their helmets were of right trusty steele, yet they cut and mangled them very pittifullly. Many times was *Florestan* enforced to staggering, by the mighty blowes of his monstrous enemy, yet at length the Prince smote at him so furiously as he was faine to lie a-long vpon his horse neck, when redoubling his stroake betweene the helmet and the brigandine he parted his head from his shouolders. Being thus conqueror of all the Damosells, and they not a little merrailing at this strange victory, the Knight who had beeene their host the night before, spake to *Florestan*. My Lord, this Damosell haue I long time loued, and she me with like affection, but for the space of this yeare & more, the great knight (whom last you sue) hath forcibly detained her: yet beeing now recouered by your worthy proesse, I beseech ye Sir, I may enioy her againe. If it be so as you say, answered *Florestan*, my pains haue stood you in some stede at this time, but against her will, neither you or any other can get her from me. Alas my Lord, quoth the Damosell, no one but he hath right to my loue, then sunder not them that should liue together. Nor will I said *Florestan*, you are, Lady at your owne liberty, and may depart with your friend when you please. They both requited him with manifold thanks then taking leaue of *Galoer* & *Flo-* *refan*, the knight rides home ioyfully with his new conquered Lady. The other two Damosells desired the Princes to accompany them to their Ants house which was not far off, *Galoer* questioning with them by the way, why they were kept in such sort at the Fountaine, where to one of the Damosells thus repli- ed. Understand my Lord, that the great Knight who was slaine in the combat, loued the Lady which your host carried away with him, but she despised him aboue all other, fancyng no other then him who now enioys her. But in respect this knight was so puissant, as none in this country durst contend with him, he kept her violently whether she would or no, yet offering her no iniury, because he loued her dearely, and one day among other he thus spake to her: faire Mistresse, to the end I may compasse your gentle affection, and be esteemed of you the only knight in the world listen what I will do for your sake. There is a Knight named *Amadis* of *Gau*, accounted the onely man for valour this day living, who slew a Cozin of mine in the Court of king *Lisnart*, a knight of great fame called *Dardan* the proud: him (for your sake) will I seeke, and by cutting off his head, conuert all his glory to mine owne commendation. But till I compasse what I haue said, these two Ladies (meaning vs) and these two knights of my linage shall attend on you, and each day conduct you to the fountaine of *Olivues*, which is the only passage for knights errant through this Country: if any dare be so bold to carry you thence, there shall you see many braue combats, & what the honour of your loue can make me do, to cause the like opinion in you towards me, as your diuine prefe- ons

ons, haue wrought in me to you. Thus were wee taken and giuen to the two Knights who were first dismounted, and with them we haue abode the space of one whole yere, in which time many combats they fought for vs, yet neuer conquered till this present. In sooth Lady, answered *Galoer*, the knights intent was too high for him to accomplish, because he could not deal with *Amadis*, and escape the Fortune now fallen vpon him: but how was he named? He called himselfe *Alimias*, quoth she, and had not ouer-weenig pride too much ruled him, he was a most gentle & courteous Knight. By this time were they come to their Aunts Castle, where *Galoer* and *Florestan* found gracious entertainment, the old Lady being very glad to see her Neeches, as also to vnderstand the death of *Alimias*. After they had taken leave of the friendly Ladies, they iourney toward the Realme of *Sobradis*, where they heard before they entred the City, how *Amadis* and *Agraises* had slaine *Abises* and his Sonnes, by meanes whereof, *Briolanis* ruled as a peaceable Queene, which news highly contented them, & made them reioyce for their happy fortune. To the palace they come vnown of any, till they were brought to *Amadis* & *Agraises*, whose wounds were already indifferently recured, and they deuising with the Queene at her arruall. Here you must note, how the Damosell that conducted *Galoer* to finde *Florestan*, left them after the combat, and comming before to her Mistresse, told her and *Amadis*, how *Galoer* and *Florestan* knew each other, and what issue their combat

had: which made *Amadis* very kindly to embrace them both, and *Florestan* offered on his knee to kisse his hand, which *Amadis* would not permit, but causing him to arise, satte downe & communed of their aduentures past. But one day among other, the new entallled Queen *Briolanis*, after many honorable feastings she had made the, seeing these fourre knights determined to depart, considering the good she had receiuied by *Amadis* and *Agraises*, & that she (being before a disinherited Princesse) was by their meanes restored to her Kingdome: beholding likewise the wheele of fortune turned, and how such personages were not alone to aide and defend her Countrey, but puissant enough of themselves to be Kings and mighty Lords: falling on her knaes before them, first rendring thankes to God, who had done her such grace as to regard her in pitty, continuing her discourse, she said. Thinke my Lords, these mutrations are the mervauiles of the Almighty, which are admirable to vs & held of great accouit, but to him they are (in manner) nothing. Let vs see if it be good then to shun Signories & riches, which to obtaine we take such paine and traualle, and to keepe, endure immumerable anguishes and distresse: as superfluous therefore vterly to deie & them, because they are tormentes of body & soule, vncertaine and haue no permanence. As for my selfe, I say no, but affirme, that they being lawfully begotten, modestly vsed, & according to Gods appointment: they are in this world, rest, pleasure and ioy, and the way to bring vs to eternall glory.

The End of the first Booke.



A Table for the ready finding of the Chapters  
Contayned in this Booke, directing by the  
Number to every feuerall Leafe.

CHAPTER I.

**O**f whence the Kings Garter and Perion were, & the Combat betwene Perion and two Knights, as also how hee fought with a Lion that devoured a Hart in their presence: with the successe following thereon.

Fol.1.

**C**hap. 2. How the Princesse Eli-sena, and her Damosell Darioletta, went to the chamber where King Pe-  
rion was lodged.

Fol.6.

**C**hap. 3. How King Perion parting from little Brittaine, travailed on his iourney, leauing his heart filled with griefe and melancholy.

Fol.12.

**C**hap. 4. How King Languines carried away with him the Gentleman of the Sea, and Gandalin the Sonne of Gandales.

Fol.19.

**C**hap. 5. How King Lisuwart sayling by the Sea, landed in Scotland, where he was greatly honoured, and wellentertained.

Fol.24.

**C**hap. 6. How Vrganda the Un-  
knowne, brought a Launce to the Gentleman of the Sea.

Fol.33.

**C**hap. 7. How the Gentleman of the Sea, combatted with the guarders of Galpans Castle, and afterward with his Brethren, and in the end with Galpan himselfe.

Fol.39.

**C**hap. 8. How the thrid day af-  
ter the Gentleman of the Sea de-  
parted from King Languines, the  
three Knights came to the court, bring-  
ing with them the wounded Knights  
in a Litter, and his disloyall wife.

Fol.43.

**C**hap. 9. How King Lisuwart sent for

his Daughter the Princesse Orianas; for that long before he had left her in the Court of King Languines: who sent her accompanied with the Princesse Mabila his onely daughter, as also a noble traine of Knights, Ladies and Gentlewomen

Fol.46.

**C**hap. 10. How the Gentleman of the Sea fought the combat with King Abies, on difference of the warre he made in Gaul.

Fol.53.

**C**hap. 11. How the Gentleman of the Sea was knowne by King Pe-  
rion his Father, and by the Queene Eli-sena his Mother.

Fol.60.

**C**hap. 12. How the Giant bring-  
ing *Galoer* to King Lisuwart, that he  
might dub him knight: met with his  
brother *Amadis* whose båd he would  
be knighted and by no other.

Fol.66.

**C**hap. 13. How *Galoer* vanqui-  
shed the Giant at the Rock of Galte-  
res.

Fol.76.

**C**hap. 14. How after *Amadis* de-  
parted from *Vrganda* the Un-  
knowne, he arrived at a Castle, where  
it chanced to him as you shall reade in  
the discourse.

Fol.81.

**C**hap. 15. How King Lisuwart car-  
sed a sepulchre to be made for *Dardan*  
and his friend, with an Epitaph in  
remembrance of their death: and the  
honor he did to *Amadis*, after he was  
found and knowne.

Fol.91.

**C**hap. 16. How *Amadis* made  
himself knowne to King Lisuwart, as  
also the Princes and Lords of his  
Court, of whom he was honorably re-  
ceived and feasted.

Fol.100.

**C**hap. 17. What were the adven-  
tures

## The Table.

tures of the Prince Agraeis, since his returne from Gaule, where he left Amadis.

Fol.108

Chap. 18. How Amadis tarrying with his good will in the Court of King Lisuare, heard tidings of his brother Galaor.

Fol.206.

Chap. 19. How Amadis combated against Angriote and his brother, who guarded the passage of the valley, against such as would not confess, that their Ladies were inferior in beauty to Angriotes choyce. F.122

Chap. 20. How Amadis, was infected by Arcalaus, when he would have delivered the Lady Grindaloya and other from prison: and how afterward he escaped the inchauntments by the ayde of Vrganda.

Fol.131

Chap. 21. How Arcalaus brought news to the Court of King Lisuare, that Amadis was dead, which caused his friends to make manifold lamentations and regrets, especially the Princeesse Oriana.

Fol.136.

Chap. 22. How Galaor came very sore wounded to a Monastery, where he sojourned five dayes attending his health, and at his departure thence, what happened to him. F.141

Chap. 23. How Amadis departed from the Ladies Castle, and of the matters which were occurrent to him by the way.

Fol.150.

Chap. 24. How King Lisuare being in the chace, saw a farre off three knights armed comming toward him and what followed therupon. F.154.

Chap. 25 How Amadis, Galaor, and Balays determined to travaille to King Lisuare, and what adventures happened by the way betweene them.

Fol.159.

Chap. 26. How Galaor revenged the death of the Knight, whom hee found slaine on the bed under the Tree.

Fol.164.

Chap. 27 How Amadis pursuing the Knight that misused the

Damosell, met another knight with whom he combatteth, and what happened to him afterward.

Fol.168

Chap. 28. How Amadis combated with the Knight that did steale the Damosell from him when he slept, and vanquished him.

Fol.174.

Chap. 29. How Balays behaved himselfe in his enterprise, pursuing the Knight that made Galaor loose his Horse.

Fol.176.

Chap. 30. How King Lisuare held open Court most royally, and of that which happened in the meane time.

Fol.179.

Chap. 31. How Amadis, Galaor, and Balays arrived at the Court of King Lisuare, and what happened to them afterward.

Fol.182

Chap. 32. How King Lisuare departed from Windsor to the gnd City of London, there to hold open and royll Court.

Fol.185.

Chap. 33. How King Lisuare would haue the advise of his Princes and Lords, as concerning his former determination, for the high exalting and entretaining of Chiualrie. F.191

Chap. 34. How while this great and ioyfull assembly endured, a Damosell came to Court, cloathed in mourning, requesting ayde of King Lisuare, in a cause whereby she had beeне wronged.

Fol.195.

Chap. 35. How King Lisuare was in danger of his person and his state, by the unlawfull promises he made too rash and vnaudisely. Fol.201.

Chap. 36. How Amadis and Galaor understood, that King Lisuare and his Daughter were carried away prisoners, wherefore they made best to give them succour.

Fol.209.

Chap. 37. How Galaor rescued King Lisuare from the ten Knights that led him to prison.

Fol.216.

Chap. 38. How news came to the Queene that the King was taken: and how Barsinan laboured to vsurpe the City

## The Table.

City of London many dayes, in which time sundry great personages were there feasted, the greater part whereof remained long time afterward.

Fol.227.

Ch.41. How Amadis determined to goe combat with Abiseos and his two Sons, to revenge the kings deasb, who was father to the faire Briolania, and of that which followed.

Fol.230.

Chap. 42. How Galaor went with the Damosell after the Knight that dismounted him and his compa-

nions in the Forrest, whom when hee found they combated together, and afterward in the sharpest pointe of their combat, they knew each other.

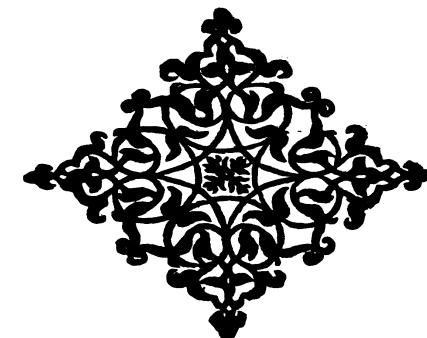
Fol.235.

Chap. 43. How Don Florestan was begotten by King Perion, on the faire Daughter to the County of Zealand.

Fol.240.

Chap. 44. How Galaor and Florestan, riding towards the Realme of Sobradisa, met with three Damosell at the Fountaine of Oliues. Fol.248.

FINIS.



THE  
SECOND BOOKE  
Of Amadis de Gaule.

CONTAINING THE DESCRIPT  
tion, Wonders and Conquests of the Inclosed  
or Firme-Island: *As also the triumphes and*  
troubles of *Amadis*, in the pursuit of his  
fayrest Fortunes.

Moreover the manifold Victories hee obtained, and  
admirable seruices by him performed for King *Lijuart*:  
*And his notorious ingratitude towards him, which was*  
*the first occasion of the broyles and fatall warres*  
*that (no small time) continued betweene*  
*him and *Amadis*.*

---

*Translated out of French, by A. M.*

---



---

London,  
Printed by NICHOLAS OKES, dwelling in  
Foster-lane. 1619.

TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE,  
Sir Phillip Herbert, Earle of Mountgo-  
merie; And Knight of the most noble  
*Order of the Garter.*

**A** Madis, in his first Booke kissing your noble hand, the second followeth to finde the like fauour, encouraged thereto by your euer knowne most honourable nature, and affable graces affoorded to the very meanest deseruers. The third and fourth Bookes successiuely ensue, to make vp the first volume of so famous an history; till foure more may in the like manner be finisched, to present themselues to you their gracious Patron.

*Your Honours ever so  
be commanded.*

*A. M.*

THE SECOND BOOKE

OF AMADIS DE GAVLE

14

1.



## THE SECOND BOOKE OF AMADIS DE GAVLE.

### CHAP. I.

*The Description of the firme Island, who made the enchantments, and placed those great riches which were found in the same.*



Here was a King in  
Greece, who was  
married vnto the  
Emperours daughter  
of Constantiople,  
by whom hee had  
two sonnes, excelling  
in all perfe-  
ction, both of body and minde.  
Especially the eldest (named *Apolidon*) who was so well brought vp  
and conditioned, that hee found  
not his equall in any vertuous qua-  
lity wherein he exercised himselfe.  
This *Apolidon* studied all sciences,  
wherin he profited so much, that  
hee was not onely counted one of  
the best knights in the world, but  
also surpassed all men of his time  
for wisedome: excelling them in  
leaming, as farre as the moone ex-  
ceedeth the startes in light, and  
chiefly in the art of Nigromancy,  
by the which he brought to passe  
many great matters, which seemed  
beyond the capacity of men. Now  
was the King (father of these two  
young Princes) most mighty in  
lands, and wealthy in treasure: but

very weake in body by reason of his  
age. Wherefore knowing the end  
of his daies to approach, he wold  
before his death, make partition  
of all his goods vnto his children,  
because no contention or debate  
should happen betweene them af-  
ter his decease. And for that end  
he appointed the kingdome to *Apolidon*, being his eldest sonne and  
heire, the other he invested with all  
his riches, and moneable goods,  
among which there was many ex-  
cellent booke, of inestimable va-  
lue. Yet the youngest nothing  
king this partition, bewayled his  
estate vnto the King, beseeching  
him most humbly to consider, that  
his patrimony being so small, he  
was not onely left poore, but in a  
manner disinherited. Then the  
aged father perceiuing the discon-  
tentment of his sonnes (being the  
thing hee most feared) was exceil-  
ding sorrowfull, but yet would he  
not alter that which hee had done,  
without the consent of *Apolidon*:  
who being aduertised thereof,

B came

came vnto him, and in the presence of his brother saide thus. It may please your Maiestie, I heard with- in these few dayes that my brother is not content with that portion, which it hath pleased you to appoint vnto him: and therefore because I knowe how grievous the farrre is vnto you, seeing the brotherly loue betwixt him and mee likely to be broken: I most humbly beseech your highnesse, to take all that againe which it hath pleased you to giue vnto mee, and dispose therof as it shal seeme best to your owne minde, for I shall thinke my selfe thrise fortunate, to doe any thing that may breede your soules felicity, and very well apaid, with that which to him was appointed.

When the King behelde the bouny of his sonne *Apolidon*, and the obedience hee shewed vnto him, hee was therewithall so pleased and exceeding ioyfull, that his soule (knowing it, could not leaue his body in greater contentment) fled vp into heauen: leauing his two sonnes in such friendship as he desired. Notwithstanding, after the body was buried, and all accustomed funerall rights ended, *Apolidon* caused certaine shippes to be rigged and furnished for the sea, wherein being embarked, with diuerse Gentlemen of his friends, seeing the winde and weather fauour them, he commanded the ankers to bee waiied, and the sailes to be let fall; the which were incontinently filled with so stiffe a gale, as in lesse then one houre they were past the countrey of Greece. And yet *Apolidon* had not determned to bende his course vnto any certaine coast: but following his fortune, driuen by the winde, he discouered the Countrey of Italie, wherewunto approching, he lan-

ded in a certaine port thereof. The Emperour *Sindan* beeing adpossed of his landing, sent many great Lords vnto him, to request him to come to Rome: where hee should be as royally entertained as might be devised. To which request *Apolidon* willingly condiscended, and beeing there already arrived, the Emperour receiued him with honor, yet although at his comming hee determined to soiourne more then eight daies with him, hee changed his purpose, and remained there a longer season: in which time hee accomplished such haughty deedes of armes, and behaued himselfe so worthily, that amonst the Romans he gained the reputation of the best knight in the world: and obtained the loue of a young Princesse, the onelie fitter to the Emperour, named *Grimanesa*, the fairest Lady then living. And although that their loue was alike, yet was this faire Lady so strecthly looked vnto, that neither could her affection bee satisfied, nor the common desire of them both bee performed. Wherefore one day consulting more priuately, then they euer yet before had done, loue wrought such a consene in them, as they agreede to depart vnto such a place, where they might without controle, enjoy the fulnesse of their content: so as what they secretly intended, they as suddenly executed. For euen as they had appointed it, so the faire *Grimanesa* came forth one night to meet her loue *Apolidon*, who stayed for her at the water-side, having prepared shippes ready for their flight, and wherein they presently embarked themselues. Then by force of the winde, they were in few dayes driuen to arraine at the foote of the Firme-Island, which was

was then inhabited by a mighty Giant, whereof *Apolidon* and those in the ship were ignorant. Whereupon thinking they were in a place of safety, came on shoare, and tents and Pavilions were set vp, wherein they might refresh them: for *Grimanesa* (who was not vsed to trauaile by sea) was as wearie as might be. But at that instant when they thought themselves most secur, the Giant which had discouered them, took them so suddainly, that *Apolidon* had scant so much leisure, as to arme himselfe: wherewith *Grimanesa* was so amazed, that she was ready to die for feare: for the Giant taking her by the hand, said vnto *Apolidon*. Base slauie, although I am not accustomed to be kind vnto any, yet am I content for this once, to suffer thee to fight against me alone, on this condicton, that if thou be overcome, this faire Lady shall be mine, and then afterwards I shall cause thee to bee hanged vpon the pole of this tent. When *Apolidon* heard that by fighting with such a monster, he might both saue himselfe & his mistresse: his hart was so great, as he thought it a very easie matter to overcome him: and esteemed himselfe happy, that fortune had offered him so fit an occasion, as to make known vnto *Grimanesa* how much was his courage, and how great was his Knight-hood. Wherefore without longer delay the combate began betweene them, the which lasted but a while, for the Giant was pursued so valiantly, as hee fell downe back-ward. Then *Apolidon* strecth stepped ouer him and cut off his head. Whiche the inhabitants of the Isle vnderstanding, they all came and offred themselues vnto him, beseeching him to remaine with them, and to bee

their Lord and protector. Vnto this their request he condiscended: wherefore they conduced him with great triumph to the cheefe Fortress of the Countrey, all which he found so well fortisched, and furnished, as from that time forward hee nothing feared the power of the Emperour, if he shold attempt war against him for the taking away of his sister. Afterwards by the perswasion of *Grimanesa* he caused to be builded in that place, one of the fairest places that was to be found in all the Isles of the Oceane: the which he beautified so gorgeously, and furnished so richly, that the greatest monarch of the earth would haue found it a very difficult matter to haue builded the like. But it chaunced that fifteene daies after his thare arriall, the Emperour of Constantinople (his vncle) died without heirs of his body; by meanes wherof, they of the Countrey dispatched Embassadours vnto *Apolidon*, to beseech him to take vpon him the Empire, the which hee willingly accepted, being (as most men are) neuer contented with their estate, but still desirous of change, especially of a peticie Island, for an Empire. Yet *Grimanesa* sorrie to leaue so pleasant an Island, did most instantly entreat her Lord, that before their departure, (in remembrance of the pleasure which they had enjoyed in this Palace, the first witnesse of the full fruition of their loues) hee would worke such a meanes by his Art and great knowledge, that from thence forth, none might bee Lord thereof, except hee were as good a Knight as he, and as true in loue as hee was. Truly, Madame, answered *Apolidon*,

I will doe more for your loue then so: for not onely no man shall enter into this Pallace except he be such a one as you haue sayde, but further, no Lady, nor Gentlewoman shall set her foote therein, vnlesse she be as faire, and excellent in all perfections as your selfe. Then at the entrie of an Orchard (planted with diuerse sorts of trees) he cau- sed a vault to bee made: ouer the which hee placed the image of a man made of copper, holding a horne, as though hee would winde it: and vpon the gate of this Pal- lace he set vp his owne and *Grimaneſe* her picture, so artificially wrought that they seemed verie liuely: right ouer against which, he planted an high ſtone of Iaſper, and about half a bow ſhoot off, to- wards the garden hee ſet a piller of iron ſive cubits high.

These things beeing in this ſort framed, hee asked *Grimaneſe* if ſhe knew what hee had done. No ſurely, answered ſhee. I will tell you then preſently ſayde *Apolidon*: af- ſure your ſelfe Madame, that no man nor woman which hath falſified their firſt loue, ſhall paſſe vnder this vault: for if they aduen- ture to enter the ſame, the image which you ſee, ſhall blowe ſuch a terrible blaſt, & ſhall caſt through this horne, ſuch a flame, & ſtench, that it ſhall be imposſible for them to paſſe on further: moreouer, they ſhall bee caſt forth with ſuch force, that they ſhall bee throwne downe and remayne in a ſwound before the vault. But if it chance that any loyall louer, man, or woman, doe assay this aduenture, the image ſhall ſound a tune ſo melo- dious, as it ſhall greatly delight the hearers: & there may ſuch faith- ful louers paſſe, without any im- peachment. Furthermore, they may

beholde our portraiture, & their own names writte in this Iaſper, yet ſhall they not know by whom they were ingrauen. For tryall whereof if it please you, wee will proue the ſame forthwith. Then hee tooke *Grimaneſe* by the hand, and paſſing vnder the arch, the Image of cop- per beganne to ſound marueilouſe sweetly, but when they came to the Iaſper ſtone, they beheld their names newly ingrauen therein, which greatly pleased *Grimaneſe*. And to beholde what would be the ſuccesse of ſuch as followed them, they called certaine Gentlemen, and Gentlewomen to make tryall of the aduenture: but as they thought to haue paſſed thorough the vault, the Image blew ſuch a hideous blaſt, and caſt forth fire, ſmoake and flame ſo horrible, that they all fell downe in a ſwound, & were throwne foorth moſt rudely. Wherewith *Grimaneſe* began to laugh, knowing that they were in more dread then danger, than- king *Apolidon* moſt heartily for that which hee had done for her ſake. But yet my Lord, ſayde ſhee, what ſhall become of this rich chamber, in which you and I haue enjoyed ſuch great cōtentment? You ſhall knowe by and by, ſaid hee. Thea caused hee two other pillars to bee brought: one was of Marble, which hee had placed within five paces of the chamber: and the other of Brasse, was ſet five paces before that. Afterwards he ſaid to *Grimaneſe*: Madame, henceforth there ſhall neither man nor woman enter into this chamber, vntill that hee who ſhall ſurpaſſe mee in prowesse, and knight-hood, or ſhe which ſhall excell you in bea- ty bee first entered into the ſame: but when fortune ſhall bring hither those which ſhall be worthy of a place

place ſo excellent, all men after- wards, without any let may therin enter. Then he wrote vpon the piller of Brasse, theſe words: Euery knight which ſhall make prooef of this aduenture, ſhall paſſe ſome further then other, according as they excell each other in chualrie & courage. Vpon the Marble piller thus: Let no man aduenture to paſſe this piller to enter the chamber, except hee paſſe *Apolidon* in knighthood. And ouer the entry of the chamber: Hee which ſhall enter herein, ſhall exceed *Apolidon* in armes, and ſhall ſucceed him as Lord of this country.

Before any man could come neare the chamber, hee muſt of force touch the two pillars, & therē trie his manhood. He likewife ordayneſd that they ſhould bee diſar- med which hereafter ſhould ad- venture to paſſe vnder the arch of faithfull louers, if they received the repulſe: and that all ſuch ſhould bee driuen forth of the Iſland, as faſle and diſloyall men: but ſuch as were faſhfull, ſhould bee enter- tayned with all honour and ſer- vice that might be deuized. Such as aduentured to paſſe the pillars to enter the forbidden chamber, if they did not paſſe the Brasen piller, they ſhould bee vſed neither better nor worse then thoſe which were faſle in loue. If by chance they went beyond it, becauſe there ſhould bee a diſference betweene them and the others, their ſwordes onely ſhould bee taken from them. And if there came any better knight which attayned not vnto the Marble piller, hee ſhould loſe

but his ſhield: yet if hee paſſed on further, and entered not the cham- ber, his ſpurres onely ſhould be ta- ken from his heeles.

And touching the Ladies and Gentlewomen, married or vna- mated, which ſhould proue the ad- venture of conſtant louers, if they were repulſed, hee willed that they ſhould be conſtrayned to tell their names, that they might be written vp at the entry of the vault, with the iuft number of paces that each of them had entred forward in the ſame.

When the tyme is come (ſaid *A- polidon*) that this Iſle ſhall recouer ſuſh a Lord as is promised vnto it, theſe enchantments ſhall no more be hurtfull vnto any, and the place ſhall be free for all men: but yet it ſhall not bee ſo for women, vntill the faireſt Lady ſhall firſt be entred into it, who ſhall free the paſſage for all otherſ. Then did hee eſta- blish a Gouernour to receive the revenue of the country, vntill he ſhould come that deſerued it. And ſhortly after, haſting taken order for all his affaires, his ſhips being ready, they imbarqued, and haſt ſo faire a wind, that within fewe dayes they arriuſd in *Conſtantinople*, where they were moſt royally received.

But because my meaning at this preſent is onely to continue the deeds of *Amadis*, I will leaue *Apolidon* to gouerne his Empire, to declare vnto you what happened vnto the ſame *Amadis*, and vnto them which followed him at his departure from the Citiy of *Sobrasa*.

## CHAP. II.

How Amadis, Galaor, Florestan, and Agraises, having taken leue of the faire Briolanlia, to returne vnto King Lisiuart, were carried into the Firme-Island to prove the arch of Loyall louers, and the other aduentures in the same.

**I**N the end of the first Book you haue heard how *Amadis* and *Agraises* remayned a while in the great Cittie of *Sobradis*, vntill their wounds were healed that they receiued in the battell against *Abisus* and his two sonnes: moreouer how *Galaor* & *Don Florestan* came thither afterward, & with what entertainmet they were receiued. Now to continue our History you must know, That not all the hurts which *Amadis* had, nor any dangers which hee doubted, nor all the kinde entertainments of *Briolanlia*, were once able to expell the continuall remembrance of the beautifull Princesse *Oriana* forth of his mind: but as her rare perfections seemed continually to shine before his eyes, so did his desire to beholde her againe, dayly increase. Thus hee endured an exceeding torment which the more he thought to hide, the more it appeared: yet was the cause thereof vñknownen, for every one iudged diuerently thereof, as a passion finely dissembled, proceeding from some excellent thing, the which hee could well sustaine but better conceale. In the end not being able to supporthe this long absence, which depriued him from the sight of her, that wrought this his hapie torment, hee with his friends tooke leue of the Queene of *Sobradis*, with an intene to returne to the Court of King *Lisiuart*.

Notwithstanding they had not rode farre on their way, but fortune offered them an occasion of longer stay, as you shall heare. It happened that by chaunce comming neere vnto an Herningage, they perceiued a Gentlewoman (accompanied with other women, & foure Esquires) comming forth of a Chnrch. Wherfore *Amadis* and his fellowes being desirous to knowe what shee was, rode before and saluted her most curteously: and shee which was the chieffest resolved them, and demanded whither they were going, Gentlewoman sayd *Amadis*, wee are going to the Court of King *Lisiuart*, whither (if it please you, so that it be not out of your way) wee will beare you company. I thanke you heartily sayde the Gentlewoman, my iourney is another way. But because I thinke you be wandring knight, who commoly search for great aduentures, I desire to know if any of you will go to the Firme-Island, to beholde such strange and maruailous things as there are to be seene. For I am the daughter of him that is Gouvernour thereof, vnto whom I am presently going. Faire Lady, answered *Amadis*, I haue oftentimes heard of the wonders of this Island, and I should account my selfe happy if I might prooue them as I desire, but I repent that I aduentured them no sooner. By my faith sayd shee, you neede not bee so sory for your slacknesse: for there hath

hath beene a number such as you, who haue had the like desire to aduenture themselues, yet did they not thinke their comming thither so sweete, as they found their departure thence sowe. I make no doubt thereof replied *Amadis*, because I haue heard so much: but tell mee, shall wee goe out of our way any thing farre, if we folloe you? Two dayes iourney at the most, answered the Gentlewoman. I beleuee sayd *Amadis*, that hee which will see the arch of loyall louers, must turne vpon the left hand and keep along the Sea side: vnder which arch no man that hath falsified his first loue, may passe. You say true sayd shee, and you may also there behold many other sights more strange.

Then *Agraises* enflamed with desire to see such rare things, sayd vnto his fellowes: My maisters I know not what you meane to doe, but sure I intend to accompany this Gentlewoman, if it please her, and I will prooue the wonders which shee hath tolde vs of. If you bee so loyall sayde shee, that you may passe vnder the enchanted arch, you shall finde beyond the same, both many nouelties which will greatly please you, and also you shall beholde the Images of *Apolidon* and *Grimaxesa*, who built that wonderfull place: and that (which more is) you shall see your owne name written vpon a laſper stone, without perceiuing by whom it is done. All the better sayde *Agraises*, I will if I can make the third that there hath entered.

When *Amadis* understood the determination of his Cosen, hee was desirous to follow him, for he knew his loyalty to bee firme both in deed and thought, which by all

likelihood did promise him the maistry of the adueneure, before all others. But yet hee dissembled his intention, and sayde vnto his brethren, My friends although we are not amourous, as is my Lord *Agraises*, yet me thinkes we should for this once doe as hee doth, and keepe him companie. Let vs goe sayd *Galaor*, and I hope that all will fall out as wee desire, to our glory and our honour: heereupon they followed the Gentlewoman. Then *Florestan*, who had neuer before heard what the Firme-Island was, beeing alone with *Amadis*, sayde vnto him. My Lord, I perceiue you know all the wonders of this place, whereunto wee are going, wherof I neuer heard any speech; although I haue trauailed many farre countries. Truely answered *Amadis*, that which I know, I learned of a young Prince, my very good friend, named *Arbas* of *Nemapes*, who hath prooued many strange aduentures, and chiefly these of the Firme-Island, which he could not atchieue, but was constrained to returne with some disgrace. This Gentlewoman dwelleth in the place, of whom you may vnderstand as much as you desire to knowe. Wherfore *Don Florestan* came vnto her, and intreated her very earnestly, that seeing the lenght of their way ministered the occasion of conference together, shee would bee pleased to recite vnto him, all that which shee knew of the Island. I will very willingly declare vnto you (sayde shee) that which I haue learned of such, as by their owne reports were well acquainted with the place, and the wonders thereof. Then shee rehearsed the particularities of all that which hath beene before declared: whereat the

more they admired, the more were they encouraged to aduenture the enterprise of those strange things, wherein so many valiant men had receiued the foyle. Thus together they rode so long, that night comming, they were in doubt to go astray, vntill the moon began to shine: and then they knew that they were in a great meddow, in which they beheld many Pauillions set vp, and people sporting all about them. Then said the Gentlewoman vnto *Amadis*, Sir, because I see my father, you may if it please you, come faire and softly, and I will goe before to aduertise him of your cōming, that he may do you that honour as you deserue. So saying, shee galloped her horse, vntill shee came vnto the tents, where she alighted. Then shee tolde her father, how these fourre knights had followed her, hauing a desire to trie the aduentures of the Firme Island, which he vnderstanding, came to meeete them, and receiued them very courteously: afterwards hee led them vnto one of the Pauillions, where they rested vntill their supper was ready. When they were set downe, the gouernour of the Isle discoursed vnto them the aduentures of such Knights and Ladycs, which had proued the arch of loyall louers, and the other nouelties thereof, vntill it was time to goe to rest. Whereupon they all withdrew themselves, and when day appeared, they mounting all on horse-back, rode so long, that they came to a place which was in breadth no more then a bow shooe of firme ground, and all the rest was water. And they went on in this straight, vntill they came into the entrie of the Island, the which was onely five leagues in breadth;

and seuen in length. There might they see the sumptuous Pallace of *Apolidon*, whose gates were open: and as they drew neerer, they perciued more then an hundred targets or shields, placed in three rankes, the most parte leaning against two postes, and tenne other nailed a little ouer them. But there were three which were very high aboue the rest, fastned vpon another post which stood forwarder then the first, yet did they likewise differ in height, for the highest was a faddom aboue the middlemost, and the middlemost was a cubit ouer the lowest. Then *Amadis* demanded, why they were thus ranked. Truely, answered the gouernour, according to the valour and knight-hood of thos which would haue entred the forbidden chamber, their shields are honoured: and these which you see nearest the ground, belonged to such Knights which could not come neare the brasen piller; but these tenne that are higher came vnto it, & they which ought these two other shields, which you see seperated and placed aboue the rest, haue done more: for they haue passed the piller, yet could they not come neare the other of marble, as the other hath done, whose shield is therfore placed aboue these two, which are so much esteemed. Then *Amadis* approached more neare to see if he might know any of them, for there was none of them, but had written vpon them the names of such as heretofore did owe them: and he cast his eye vpon the lowermost of the three, which hung by themselues ouer the other tenne: which had in a field *Sebles* a Lyon *Or*, fanged and armed *Argent*, with a Cheif *Gules*: this hee knewe to bee the shield

of *Arcalans*. Then hee beheld the two vppermost, the lower bearing in a field *Azure*, a knight *Argent*, cutting off the head of a Gyant, the which hee remembred to bee the shield of king *Abies of Ireland*, who proued this aduenture, two yeares before that *Amadis* did kill him in *Gaule*. The third which was aboue all the rest, had a field *Azure*, three *Flowers*, or which he could not know without reading the superscription, which sayd, This is the shield of *Don Quedragant* brother to king *Abies of Ireland*, the which was set ouer all the others within these twelve dayes. For *Quedragant* behaued himselfe so valiantly, that he came vnto the Marble piller, whereunto none other had before approached. He by chance passed by the Firme-Island, in seeking for *Amadis*, with an intent to fight with him, and to reuenge the death of King *Abies* his brother.

Much amazed was *Amadis* seeing the shields of so many good Knights, which had all sayled in their purposed enterprise, and hee greatly feared least hee might performe as little as they. For this cause, hee and his company withdrew themselues, to goe towarde the arch of loyall louers, the which was shewed vnto them. *Agraises* suddenly alighted, and approaching neare the forbidden place, hee with an indifferent high voice thus spake, Loue if euer I haue beene constant, let mee now be remembred. This sayde, hee passed on, and entred vnder the arch. Then the copper Image began to sound so sweetly, as it greatly reioyced the hearers: and *Agraises* stayed not, but went on vntill hee came vnto the Pallace where the pictures of *Apolidon* and *Grimanesa*, the which seemed vnto him so well formed, as they wanted nothing but speech. When *Agraises* which was entered before, perceived him, he came to him and sayde, My Lord and

which seemed vnto him, as if they had beene aliue. And he came neer vnto the Iaspe piller, wherin he beheld two lines written. The first contayned *Madanil* sonne to the Duke of *Borgaine*, bath passed vnder the arch of loyall louers, and ended that aduenture. The other was the name of *Don Brane de bonemer*, or of the lucky Sea, sonne to *Vaillades*, Marques of *Troyes*. Scant had he read the last line, but he beheld a third, which contained: This is the name of *Agraises* son to *Languijnes* King of *Scotland*. This *Madanil* loued *Aquinda* Countesse of *Flanders*: & *Don Brane*, *Melicia* daughter to King *Pervis* of *Gaule*. When *Amadis* did see that his Cousen was entred without any let at all, hee sayde vnto his brethren: Will not you proue the aduenture as hee hath done? No, answered they, for we are not so much subiect vnto this passion, that wee deserue to make tryall of our loyalty. Seeing then that you bee twaine, keepe you one another company, and I will accompany Lord *Agraises* if I can. Then he boldly entered vnder the arch, and as hee passed, the copper Image sounded vpon his horne another sound, far more melodious then hee yet before had done. Moreover, in stead of fire and flinking flame, that it cast forth against the disloyall louers, flowers and sweete leaues came forth of his horne, in such abundance, that the place were all couered therewith. But for all this *Amadis*, stayed not, but passed on euern hard vnto the Images of *Apolidon* and *Grimanesa*, the which seemed vnto him so well formed,

and Cosen, me thinkes we should not hence-forth hide our loues from one another. But *Amadis* without any answere, tooke him by the hand, and walking together, they beganne to discourse of the excellency of the place. In the meane season *Galaor* and *Florestan* displeased with staying so long for them, did intreate *Isania* (the Gouvernour of the Isle) to shew them vnto the forbidden chamber: the which he did.

Wherupon *Florestan* sayde vnto *Galaor*, my Lord, are you determined to try your selfe? No, answered hee, for I never desired to prooue such enchantments. I pray you then sayde *Florestan*, to sport you whilst I haue tryed this aduenture. Then commanding himselfe to God, with his shield vpon his arme, & his sword in his hand, hee marched right towardes the forbidden place. But he went not farre forward, when hee felt himselfe layd at so sore, and so often ouercharged with the stroakes of Launces and swords, as hee verily beleueed that no man was able long to suffer them: notwithstanding bearing his head lowe (mauerall the resistance) he marched forward, laying about him heere and there, but knewe not vpon whom. Yet he thought that which hee did hit, were so well armed, as his sworde could in no sort hurt them, and hee passed the piller of *Brassie*, cuen hard vnto the other of *Marble*, against the which hee fell downe, not being any longer able to stand vp: for hee felt himselfe so wearie, and bruised with the forcible blowes which hee had suffered, that he thought he should die. And in the same instant he was so rudely lifted forchaf the place, that hee lost all his vnderstanding:

wherewith *Galaor* was so displeased, that he thought himselfe worthy of blame if he did not revenge his wrong. And therefore hee tooke him to his armes, and ranne right vnto the forbidden chamber: yet his haste was not so great, but that hee was as suddenly resifted & smitten, and so violently layde, as very hardly hee came vnto the *Marble* piller, against the which hee leaned, thinking to take breath. Notwithstanding the stroakes which on all partes lighted vpon him, were so many and so waught, that hee was inflamed with rage in such sort as hee went on somewhat further, hoping yet to withstand them. Then did he imagine his enemies to bee so many, that for every one blowe hee had before, hee now thought that hee received twaine, so as his strength quite faile him, and hee fell downe on the ground a great deale more weake then *Florestan* was.

All this while *Amadis* and *Agraises* beholding the pleasantnesse of the place wherein they were entered, perceiued a new writing in the *Iasper* piller, which contained: This is *Amadis* of *Gaule*, the constant louer, sonne to King *Perim*. At the same instant was *Galaor* throwne foorth from the pillars, wherewith the Dwarffe began to cry: Out alas, my Lord *Galaor* is dead. This voyce was heard of *Amadis* and *Agraises*, who presently came forth to see what the maner was, and they asked the Dwarffe what moued him to cry so loud. My Lord answered hee, I beleue your two brethren are dead, in prouing the aduenture of the forbidden chamber: for they haue beene so rudely repulsed, as see where they lie without moouing hand or foot.

Trust

Trust mee saide *Amadis* worse could not haue happened to thee. Then he went vnto them, and hee found them so sorely bruised, that they lay speechlesse. But *Agraises* (thinking because fortune had fauoured him vnder the arch of loyall louers, that shee would bee as fauourable vnto him against the perill of the chamber) without staying to beholde his *Cosens* any longer, hauing his shield vpon his arme, and his sworde naked in his hand, bearing his head lowe, hee ran right to the brasen piller, yet had hee not marched farre beyond it, when hee felt so many blowes, that hardly could hee resist them. But his heart was so great, as mauger all lets, he passed even vnto the marble piller, and there was hee constrained to stay, hauing no power at all to stand any longer vpon his feet, being so astonied that hee lost his remembrance, and hee was as rudely cast out as his *Cosens* had beeene before, the which *Amadis* perceiuing, beeing much displeased, hee began to curse the houre of that their fond enterprise: and approaching vnto *Galaor*, who was now come to himselfe, he said. In troth brother I perceiue I must of force followe, though I should die therein. Ah my Lord, answered *Galaor*, it should suffice you to take warning by our example, I beseech you flic such diuelish forceries, for nothing but mischiefe can come from them. Come what will, saide *Amadis*, accursed may I be, if I faint in the matter. Then drawing his sword, hee well couered him with his shield, and hauing first made his devout prayers vnto God, hee cryed, O my deare *Lady Oriane*, from you onely proceedeth all the strength and courage that euer I had: I beseech

you now, not to forget him, who so constantly craueth your ayde and good assistance. Which sayd, hee ranne so lightly towards the chamber as in spight of all impeachments hee came without taking breath, even vnto the first piller, althoougt hee fel so many strokes light vpon him, that hee did thinke hee fought with more then a thousand knights together: yet his courage so much increased with the onely remembrance of *Oriane*, that there were never any knight before which could come neere him. Then was there heard the voyces of an infinite number, saying: If this knight do not end this aduenture, never may any knight perorme the same. But for all these things hee left not to pursue his fortune, for the further he went, the more increased his desire to approach the chamber: so as notwithstanding the force of the Diuels, or inuisible company which gaue him many sore and heavy stroakes, hee gained the entry of the chamber, from whence he beheld a hand and an arme couered with green wosten to come forth, which drew him in. And presently there was heard another voyce, which sayde: Welcome is the gentle knight that excedeth him in armes, which establisched so many maruailes in this place, who in his time was second to none, but this surpasseth him, and therefore the signiory of this Island of right belongeth to him, hauing aboue all other deserued it. He which had seene this hand, would haue iudged it to haue beeene the hand of a very ancient man, it was so withered: the which vaquished away so soon as *Amadis* was entred into the chamber, where hee felt himselfe so fresh, and in so good estate, as if he had

12

received neither blow nor trauell in comming thither. Wherefore hee tooke his shield from his neck, sheathed his sword, and to *Oriane* he ascribed the glory, for the great honour which he had gotten: for hee imagined that all his strength proceeded onely from her, and no other. The most part of the Inhabitants in the Isle, with many other strangers had seene the prowess he had showne, and how the hand brought him into the chamber: especially having heard by the words of the voyce, the soueraignty of the countrey was attributed to him, for which cause they all rejoyced very greatly. But none were so ioyfull as *Galon* and his fellows, who in stead of emulation, (wherewith they might wrongfully haue beeene suspected) they were all so glad of the good and honour of *Amadis*, as if the like had chanced particularly to every one of them: and they caused themselves to bee carried to him in the chamber, where they were thoroughly and presently healed by the vertue of the place. Thither likewise came *Isanis* Gouvernour of the countrey, accompanied with many of the inhabitants, who all did their duty vnto *Amadis*, as to their new Lord, vnder whom they hoped not onely to live in peace and rest, but also hereafter to stretch their Dominions euen ouer their bordering neighbours and further. Then every one might view the rare deuises of this palace: amongst which there was a wardrobe (whether *Apolidon* & his Lady did most commonly withdrawe themselves) so beautifull and sumptuous, as it was not onely impossible to make the like, but also it was thought very strange and wonderfull, how any man might imagine that hee could

build so rare a peice of worke, as that they which were within, might see what any man did without very easily, but they which were without could not perceiue any thing that was within the same. Thus was the firme Island conuerted by *Amadis*, which had beeene thousand yeres and more without a Lord, since *Apolidon* had there set vp his enchantments: and the next day the people came from all parts of the Island to offer their dutie and homage vnto their new Lord, who received them countuously. I leave you then to imagine whether *Amadis* had occasion to be glad and content or no. They which haue oftentimes bin crost with aduersitie may better iudg therof then any others can: for they know how to beare, and when to bewaile their misfortunes, more orderly then such who are accustomed with all prosperity & happiness. Neuerthelesse I know not whether of these two extremities are more commendable: for the one commonly draweth vnto it an tollerable vaine glory, and the other most damnable: the other a continual care fraught with desperation, very dangerous. Therefore every wise man (considering there is something parmanent) will neither be proud with the prosperity that ouureth him, nor appaled for any aduersitie that befalleth him: but he will swim vprightly as in a calm Seabeeweene them both, without abusing the one, or affrighted with the other. The which *Amadis* could not doe, when inconstant fortune made him easle these persons, which for him shee prepared, euen in the midst (as hee thought) of all his prosperities. And eas as shee beyond all measure fasshed him, (holding him vp by the chinne)

in all chances that hapned to him, without crosting him in any thing whatsoeuer: in like sort did shee turne her face from him, and brought him into such perplexity and sorrow, that neither force of armes, the continual remembrance of his Lady, nor the magnanimite of his heart were once sufficient to procure him remedy: but onely the grace, and mercy of our Lord God (who in pitie regarded him) after hee had sometime remained in the rocke of aduersitie in sorrow and tribulatiou, as you may understand: from the which hee delivered him, and placed him in greater ease, and contentment then before, as by the sequel of this historie you shall perceiue.

The letter of the Princesse *Oriane* to *Amadis*.

*M*Y intolerable passions proceeding from so many causes, compelleth my weake hand to declare by this letter, that, which my sorrowfull heart can no longer hide from thee *Amadis* of Gaule, most disloyall, and perisched loun. For seeing the disloyalitie and inconstancie wherewith thou hast abused mee ( who am inseparabile, and frastre of all good hap, onely in losing thee abone all things in the world ) which is now very apparent, cheefely in that sorrowfull shew forsookest vs to go with her, who (considering her young yeeres and my discretion) cannot haue that kindestesse in her either to favour or ensuraine thee: I haue also determined for ever, to banishe from mee, this exceeding loue whiche I did bare vnto thee, seeing my sorrowfull heart can finde no other renenge. And although I would take in good part the wrong which thou preferest me, yet shold it bee a great folly for mee to desire the welfare of such an unthankfull man, for the faithfull louing of whom, I bare both my selfe & all other things: Alas I now perceiue very well ( but is too late ) that most unluckely I enthrallde my liberty, to a person so ingratefull, seeing that in recompence of my continuall sighs and passions, I finde my selfe decined, and shamefull

ly abused. wherefore I charge thee never to come in my presence, nor unto any place where I doe remayne: & be thou assured that I never loued thee so exceedingly, but now by thy ill deserts I hate thee farre more extremely. Packe thee henceforth elsewhere, and try if thou canst with thy falsified faith and hony speech, abuse others as unhappy as my selfe: and never hope that hereafter any of thy excuses shall preuaile with mee: but without further desire to behold thee, I will bewaile the rest of my sorrowfull life, with abundance of teares, the which shall never cease but by the end of

Her who forceneth not to die,  
but onely because thou art  
her murderer.

## CHAP. III.

How Durin departed to go toward Amadis, unto whom bee delivred the Letters from Oriana, and what hurt happened thereby.

**D**urin had at large vnderstood the will of the Princesse, he mounted on horse backe, and hasted him so well that the tenth day following, hee arriued in the great City of Sobradisa, where hee found the new Queene Briolanis, whom hee thought to be the fairest Lady that euer he had seene, except the Princesse Oriana. Then did he tell her how he was come to seek Amadis, but shee tolde him, that now two whole dayes were passed since hee and his fellowes were departed towards Great Brittaine, since which time, she heard that they had taken their way vnto the Firme-Island. Wherupon Durin without any longer stay, tooke leaue of her, and rode so long, that he arriued in the Island the same houre that Amadis

entered vnder the arch of Loyall louers, where hee beheld how the Image had done more for him, then for any other knight that euer entered the same before, as it was tolde him. Now as Amadis together with Agraises returned to the succour of his brethren, Durin thought to haue spoken with him, but Gandalin entreated him to stay vntill he had tred the perill of the forbidden chamber, beeing assur'd that he brought Letters to him fro Oriana, the which perchance might haue been a meane (as he thought) to cause him either to forflow or to fail in the achieving of so great an enterprise: for Amadis was so subiect to the Princesse, as hee would not only haue left off the conquest of the Firme-Island, but also of the whole world beside, if she had comanded. Wherfore after hee had

finished al the strange aduentures, and the inhabitants of the Isle had receiued him for their Lord, Durin came before him. Then Amadis demanded of him, what newes was in the Court of King Lyswart. My Lord, answered Durin, I left it euen in the same estate that it was in at your departure. And as he would haue proceeded in his speech, Amadis tooke him by the hand, and went with him alone into a very pleasant Orchard, where they walke together: then he demanded how he came to the Firme-Island. My Lord, said he, my Lady Oriana sent me vnto you, for such affaires as in this letter you shal vnderstaed, the which he gaue vnto him. Amadis tooke it, and without changing his cheere, he turned his face from Durin, because hee should not beholde his colour aker, for his heart began to leap with great ioy, so as he knew not wel how to set his countenance. But this sudden mutation was as soone changed into a great depare, because, that reading these rigorous lines, which pronounced his banishment, it stroke so great sorrow to his heart, as hee was no longer able to dissemble his griefe, but burst out into such vehement weeping, that hee was all drowned in teares. Then Durin repented that euer hee was the bringer of such heauie letters, for although the contens thereof were vnown known vnto him, yet because hee knew not how to remedy it, hee durst not come neere Amadis, who was so confounded, as hee fell prostrate on the ground, and in falting, the letters which hee helde, did fall foorth of his hand. Notwithstanding, he presently tooke them vp, and began to reade them againe: for the beginning had so greatly troubled him, that hee had not yet

seen the end. But casting his eyc vpon the superscriptiō, which contained these words. She who forceneth not to die, but onely because thou art her murderer. Hee then scatched so deepe a sligh, as if his soule had parted from his body, and therewithall fell downe back-ward. Wherewith Durin was greatly amazed, & ran speedily to helpe him, but hee found him to moue no more then a dead man. Wherfore fearing some greate inconuenience, hee thought to haue called Galair, or some other, yet fearing that therby he might be blamed, he staid, & comming vnto Amadis, lifted him vp, who cryed. Oh heauens, why do you thus suffer mee to die, and haue not deserued it? Alas Loyaltie, what recompence doost thou offer those that never offend thee, now I see my selfe forsaker of her, for whose sake I would rather suffer a thousand deathes, then one of her commandements by mee should be disobeied. Then pitifully looking vpon the letter, which he had in his hand, he sayde: Ah happy letter, because thou wert written by the excellenteſt perſonage this day living, and yet most vnhappy, in that thou procureſt the cruell death of the trueſt louer that euer serued Lady, which death that it may bee the sooner, I will never forsake thee, but will place thee in the neerest & dearest place that I haue. So hee put it in his bosomme, and asked Durin if hee had ought else to say? No, answered he. Well then, saide Amadis, thou shalt presently returne with my anſWERE. In good sooth my Lord, anſWERE Durin, ſhee hath exprefly forbidden me to receiue any. And what, did not Mabille nor thy ſister wil thee to ſay any thing to me? No my Lord, answered he, for they

knew not of my departure, because my Lady stricktly charged mee to acquaint no body therewith. Ah God, sayd *Amadis*, I see well now, that my misery is voyd of remedy. Then he rose vp and went to a riuier which passed along by the garden, where hee washed his eyes, which done, he willed *Durin* to call *Gandalin*, and that hee should come back againe with him alone, which hee did: but at their retурne they found him in a swound againe, yet recovering incontinent, and seeing *Gandalin*, he said. Friend I am vndone, therefore go seeke out *Isania* the Gouernour of this Isle & bring him hither alone. Then *Gandalin* ran for him and staied not long vntill they returned together: who being come, *Amadis* laid vnto him, *Isania* you know the oath you haue sworne vnto me, & the duty wherein you are vnto mee bound, notwithstanding, I pray you yet to promise me as you are true knight, to keep secret whatsoeuer you shal see me doe, vntill to morrow morning after my brethren haue heard diuine seruice, and then secretly goe thou and cause the gate of this Castle to be opened, which being done, let *Gandalin* bring thither my horse & armour, but take heed that none perceiue it, and I will follow straight after thee: they were no sooner departed from him, but he began to remeber a dream which he had the night before, wherein he thought that being armed, and set vpon his horse hee was on the highest part of a peece of land enuironed with diuerse sorts of trees, and that round about him were many persons making the greatest ioy in the world, then one of them presented him with a box, saying. Sir taste of that which is herein: which he did, and hee thought hee

did eate of a most bitter meat. And as hee cast it from him, the raines of his horse did breake, whereupon the horse ran vp and downe so that he was not in any sort abie for to stay him. When he saw he was so farre from this merry company, he looked backe, and hee thought that hee beheld their great mirth changed into such exceeding mone, as it greatly pittied him, & willingly would he haue returned backe to asswage their sorrow, if hee could haue mastered his horse, who at that instant entred into a tuft of trees, where hee found a rocke enuironed with water, against the which the horse stayed. Then hee alighted for the great desire he had to rest him, and vnaarmed himselfe: herewithall he beheld a very aged man clothed with a religious habit, who tooke him by the hand as if he had pittid his trauaile, & spake to him certain words in a strange language which he did not vnderstand: & being in this trouble he awaked. Vpon this dreame *Amadis* mused a great while, thinking that oftentimes they foreshow some thing that followeth, because he did see part of that which hee had dreamed to fall out. Thus hee came to the gate where *Gandalin* and *Isania* stayed his with furniture, & there armed himselfe: afterwards he mounted vpon his horse, keeping neither way nor path vntill he came neare vnto an Hermitage, then he demanded of *Isania* what place that was: My Lord answered hee, this Chapel is dedicated to the Virgin *Mary*, wherein oftentimes are diuerse strange miracles wrought. For which cause *Amadis* alighted from his horse, entred into the Church, and kneeling downe with great devotion, hee made his prayers to

God.

God. The which being ended, hee rose vp, & called *Gandalin* to him, whom he held a long time embrased in his armes, not being able to speake one word, yet in the end he thus said vnto him. My deere *Gandalin*, thou and I haue beene forstred vp with one milke, and alwaies brought vp together, and I never felt any paine or sorrow, wherein thou haft not had thy part: Thy father tok me vp in the sea, whē I was yet but a small thing, beeing but newly borne the very night before, afterward he caused thy mother to cherish mee as tenderly as if I had their dearest childe. Now haue I oftentimes tried thy loyalty, knowing very wel what seruice thou hast done for me, the which I did hope in time with the fauour of God to haue recompensed, but this great misfortune is fallen vpon me, the which I feele more sharpe and cruel then death it selfe, especially seeing I am constrained to forsake thee, hauing no other thing to bestow vpon thee, but the Isle which I haue newly conquered, which I do giue thee, commanding *Isania*, with my other subiects (vpon that faith and homage which they haue sworne vnto me) to receiue thee as their Lord, so soone as they shall be assured of my death. Yet is it my wil that thy father and mother shal enjoy the same, during their liues, and afterwards it shall remaine vnto thee: which is in recompence of the good I haue received of the, whom I thought to haue better rewarded, according to their deserts and my desire. And as for you, Lord *Isania*, I pray you that of the fruits and reuenues of this Isle, which of long time you haue had in your keeping, you should build here in this place a Monestarie, in the honor of the virgin *Mary*, and to endow it with so much living, as thirtie religious men may henceforth liue vpon the same. Ah my Lord, said *Gandalin*, I never forsooke you for any trauaile or perill which hitherto you haue suffered, neither yet will I leaue you if God be pleased: and if you dye, I will not liue after you, neither for all the world will I lose you. Therefor you may (if it please you) bestowe this gift vpon my Lords your brethren, seeing I will not haue it, neither do I desire it in any sort. Holde thy peace, said *Amadis*, let me heare these words no more, vnsesse thou desirest to displease me: but do as I would haue thee: for my brethren may provide far greater liuings for the and their friends, then this small thing which I doe giue vnto thee. But touching you, my deere friend *Isania*, it very greatly grieueth me that I haue not the means to gratulate you according to your deserts: notwithstanding, I leaue you amongst so many of my good friends, as they shall supply that which I cannot. I pray you my Lord, answered hee, suffer mee onely to accompany you, that I may be partaker of any wealth or woe that shall happen to you: Wherein you shall fully shew mee your loue, and I rest satisfied to my liking. My deere friend, saide *Amadis*, I doubt not but that you would follow with a good will, notwithstanding my miserie is so excessive, as besides my maker, none can ease it: whome onely I humbly beseech to bee my conduetour, for I will haue no other companion. And therefore *Gandalin* if thou desirest Knight-hood, holde take it presently with my armour, which I doe giue thee, for since thou hast haere-  
C 3 before

efore so well kept them, it is reason they should now serue thee, considering how little I shall hereafter need them: if not, thou maiest receiue this honour of my brother *Galo*, vnto whom my Lord *Isania* here, shall in my behalfe make request to the same ende: and I entreat thee to serue him, euen as faithfully as thou hast serued mee. For my loue vnto him is so great, as amongst all my most afflictions I shall bewaile his absence, because I haue euermore foud him an huble obedient & a louing brother. You shall further request him, to take into his seruice *Ardan* my Dwarffe whom I recommend vnto him, & to the Dwarffe say, that I will him to serue my brother diligently. This sayd, both hee and those to whom he spake burst forth into a boundance of teares, & comming vnto them he embraced them, saying: Now my friends, seeing I neuer hope to see you any more, I entreat you to pray to God for mee, and vpon your liues, I charge you that none of you doe follow mee. Then hee got vpon his horse, set

spurres to his sides, and galloped from them, remembraunce not at his departure to take either Launce, shield, or helmet with him. Thus he entred into a desert place at the foot of a mountaine, taking no other way but whither his horse would carry him, and so long hee rode vntill the most parte of the night was now spent, when the horse entred into a little brook enuironed with many trees, where hee would haue drunken. But as hee passed on further, *Amadis* was strucken on the face with certaine branches of trees, so rudely as it wakened him out of his study, and therewithall looking vp, hee perceiued that hee was in a couenant and solitary place, beset with store of thick bushes, which greatly reioyced him, because hee thought hee should very hardly bee found out in this thicker. There he alighted, tyed his horse, and sate him downe vpon the grasse, the better to meditate vpon his melancholy: but hee had wept so long, and his braines were so light, that at the last hee fell asleepe.

## CHAP. IIII.

*How Gandalin and Durin followed the same way that Amadis had taken, brought the rest of his armour which he had left behinde, then found him sleeping, & how he fought against a Knight whom he did overcome.*

**A**madis beeing departed, *Gandalin* who remayned in the Hermitage with *Isania* & *Durin*, as you haue heard, began to make the greatest lamentation in the world, and said. Although he hath forbidden mee to follow him, yet will I not stay for any thing behinde him, at least I will carry him his armour. I will

gladly beare you companie for this night, sayd *Durin*. I would to God we might finde him in better case then hee was at his departure. Then they tooke their leaue of *Isania*, and getting to horse-backe, they followed the same way that *Amadis* had tooke, coasting heere and there about the wood, so long till fortune brought them where hee lay. When his horse seated their

their horses, hee began to neigh, whereby *Gandalin* knew his Master was not farre off, wherefore the more secretly to behold his countenance, hee alighted, comming so neare vnto him as he might easly behold where he slept hard by the riuier side: whereupon he stood close, watching when he should awake, & he had not staid long before his slumber left him. Then he suddenly started vp as if hee had been frightened. At that instant was the Moon withdrawne by the daies approach, yet late hee still on the grasse, beginning his moane in a most strange and pitifull manner, and bitterly weeping, he burst out into these words. Alas fortune too inconstant & fickle, why hast thou first aduanced mee, and afterwards ouerthrowne me. Now I well perceiue, thou canst doe more hurt in one houre, then thou wilt do good in a thousand yeares, for if heretofore thou haſte giuen me any pleasure or ioy, thou haſt now in a moment cruelly robbed me of all, leauing me in bitter torment far worse then death: and seeing thou waſt minded ſo to serue mee, why haſt thou not at the leaſt made the one equal with the other? because thou knowest that if heeretofore thou diſt beſtow vpon me any contentment, yet was it euermore mingled with great ſorrows. In like ſort ſhouldſt thou reſerue for me ſome ſparke of hope, with this cruelty wherewith thou now tormentest me, executing vpon me an incomprehensible thing, in the thought of those whom thou fauourest: who because they ſeele not this miſchiefe, doe thinke those riches, glories, and honours which vnto them thou lendest, to bee eueraſting. But they forget, that beſides the troublous trauels which their bodies doe ſuffer for the keeping thereof, how their ſoules are in danger to perish therefore. For by thy flatteries & wanton intimentes, thou vtterly ouerthrowest them, & in the end compelleſt them to enter into the labyrinth of all desolation, from whence they are neuer able to depart. And quite contrary are thy aduersities, for ſo much as if a man doe reſiſt the patiently, flying greedy couetouſies, & diſordinate ambition, he is lifted out of this vilde place into perpetuall glory. Notwithstanding I beeing moſt vnfotunate, could not chufe this good, ſeeing that it all the world were mine, and ſhould bee taken from me by thee, yet hauing only the good grace of my Miftris, it ſhould be ſufficient to make me as mighty as the greateſt monark, the which I alſo lacking, how is it poſſible for me in any ſort to liue? Therefore in fauour and recompence of my loyaltie, I beſeech thee not to giue mee a languiſhing death: but if thou art appointed to ende my dayes, doe it without delay, taking compassion of him, whose longer life thou art ignorant how irkeſome it is. This ſayd, hee fell downe backward vpon the grasse, and was as ſilent as if he had beeſe in a ſwound. Then within a while after hee cryed, Ah louely *Orsana*, you haue wounded me deadly, in baniſhing me diſcurreouſly, for I will neuer tranſgress your comandements, what danger ſoeuer may happen mee, ſeeing that if therein I failed, my life alſo were thereby finished: notwithstanding for as much as I wrongfully receiue my death, the more extream is my dolor. But ſeeing that with my end you ſhall be ſatisfied, I neuer eſteemed my life at ſo high a price, but I wold, if it were

possible, change it into a thousand deaths, to afford you neuer so little pleasure. In like sort since it liketh you to execute your anger against me, I am very well content, if for my affliction you may henceforth liue at your ease, for whether soever my Soule flyeth, it shall receiue most quiet when it shal know that you remaine contented. And vntill mine innocencie shall bee known vnto you, I will endeauor to finish the rest of my sorrowfull daies in all bitternes and displeasure, and being dead, my spirit shal lament the griefe which wil happen vnto you for the wrong which you haue done to me, specialy wanting power to succour you. O king *Perry* my Lord and father, how little occasion shall you haue to bewaile my death, when you shall neither know the same nor the cause thereof? But because that knowing the same, it would bee to you a griefe intollerable, and yet it could be no mitigation of my torment, I pray, that my misfortune may to you neuer be manifest, least the same should abridge the remainder of your dayes, which yee are not determined. Then after a small pause he cryed, O my second father *Galuaes*, truely I do greatly grieue that my aduerte Fortune doth not permit me to discharge that great bond in which to you I am bound, for if my father gaue me life, you preserued the same, in deliuering me from the danger of the Sea, being launched forth into his merciless waues, euen when I had but newly left my mothers womb, and afterwardes I was by you as carefully cherished, as if I had beeene your dearest childe. I am asfured good King *Arbas* that you will greatly bewaile my sorrowfull end, yet valiant *Angrioste d'Estra-*

*neux*, *Gassian*, and a number of my other friends, shall assist you to be-mone his death, who euer loued and held you deere. Ah good co-sin *Mabita*, what haue I deserued of you, or of the Damosel of Denmark, that by you I am abandoned when I haue most neede of your ayde? Haue you so many times preserued my life, & doe you now (without desert) make me pay tribute for my receiued pleasure, in consenting to my miserable death? Beleeue mee, if need were, deare friends, for your sakes would I bee sacrificed: and yet you make no conscience to forsake mee, which maketh mee verily to beleeue, that you haue denied mee your cōfort, heauen and earth haue desired my confusion, which shall the leſſe grieue me in that I see no remedy. *Gandalin* and *Durin* hearing these lamentations of *Amadis*, they were so much agriued therewith, that they wept as bitterly as hee, yet durst they not shew themselves, because hee had so straitly charged them not to follow him. But *Amadis* ceased not his moane vntill hee heard a knight who passed hard by him singing this song:

*L*oue, sacred Loue, most bounden I remaine  
To thee, for thy exceeding bounteous grace:  
On earth what Gentleman may vaunt like gaine?  
Beloued thou makeſt me in every place.  
Happy ſuch hap, when loue doth ſo respect me,  
Ne're ſeru'd i Lady, but ſoe did affect me.

*To witnessſe this, a Princeſſe word I haue,*  
*Sweete Sardamira, ſhe I know will vow:*  
*Whom I in heart a ſupreme honour gaue,*  
*And for the date, her beauty did allow it.*  
*My hap was good, good hap enclined to gaying,*  
*Till paſt the full, turnd loues deſcreaſe a manning.*

*For now a Goddeſſe guides my backe retyre,*  
*Faire Oriana, Prince of louers warre:*  
*The peerleſſe daughter of a kingly ſire,*  
*Whom Venus yecelab for her briugter barre.*  
*My lucke is greaſ her praifes to recont,*  
*But to enioy her loue, my joys ſurmount.*

Hauing ended his ſong hee alighted vnder a tuſted tree planted by the high way ſide, thinking there to paſſe the reſt of the night: but worse happened to him then he hoped, for *Gandalin* which had heard what hee ſayde of *Oriana*, (doubting that *Amadis* had not marked it, because his minde was otherwise occupied) ſayde vnto *Durin*, It were best for mee to goe to my Maſter to know what hee intendeth to doe. Then came hee forth of the buſh where he was hidde, & beheld *Amadis* that ſought for his horſe to depart frō thence, who as he looked here & there he ſpied *Gandalin*: When not knowing him at the firſt, he cryed. Who art thou that commeft to ſurprise me? ſpeake and hide thy ſelfe no longer. My Lord, answered he, I am *Gandalin*, who will helpe you to finde your horſe, if ſo it please you. When *Amadis* heard this, Ah ſaid hee, how durſt you perſume to follow me, hauing ſo expreſly forbidd you? beleeue mee thou haſt greatly diſpleaſed mee, let mee ſee thee no more but depart, or else be ſure thou ſhalt die. My Lord, answered *Gandalin*, mee thinkes you ſhould forget this manner of behauour, and bethinke you how to reuenge the foolish ſpeeches which euen now were vttered by a knight, who is not yet far from you, for they are greatly to your diſaduantage. This ſayde *Gandalin* to pacifie his diſpleaſure towartes him, that hee might bee the more incenſed againſt the other. I did beare him as well as you (ſayd he) and therefore am I content to ſeekē reſt elsewhere, and to depart from hence where all miſfortune doth follow me. What ſayd *Gandalin*, is this all that you are determined to doe? What wouldſt thou more? ſaid he.

That you fight with him anſwered *Gandalin*, to make him conſefle his presumption. I beleeue ſayde hee thou wouldest ſay otherwile, ſeeing thou knoweſt very well that I neither haue ſpiriſt, heart, nor any force, hauing lost all in loſing her who gaue me life, ſo as now I am no better then a dead man, neither is there in Great Britaine any knight ſo cowardly, that could not eaſily ouercome mee if I ſhould combate with him, ſo hapleſſe am I. Trust me anſwered *Gandalin*, you are in a great errour thus to ſuffer your heart to faint & to let your courage faile, euen whē it ſhould moſt ſerue you to aduance the honour of her, who ſo nearely toucheth you. What report will *Durin* make hereof thynke you, who hath heard and ſene all, and is greatly abſhed, that now you behauie your ſelfe no better. How (ſayd *Amadis*) is *Durin* here? I truely ſayd *Gandalin*, wee came both together: and I beleeue hee followeth you thus, to declare your manner of behauour vnto her that ſent him vnto you. Get thee gone ſayd *Amadis*, thou vrgest mee too much. Yet when hee thought that *Durin* ſhould returne to *Oriana*, his heart was ſo inflamed, that hee called for his armes, and mounting on his horſe he went toward the knight, whom hee found layd vnder the tree, holding his horſe by the bridle. Then *Amadis*, in a great rage ſayde vnto him, Sir knight who ſo greatly extolleſt thy fortune in loue, I beleeue that againſt all right thou haſt receiuened that good that loue hath doue for thee (if good it may be tearemed) and that thou neuer deseruedſt it, the which I wil proue with the loſſe of thy head. What art thou anſwered the other, that ſpea-

speakeſt ſo audaciously? doſt thou think that I am fauoured of the faireſt Lady in the worlde for any oþer cauſe but onely for my valour and high knighthood? wherewith I will make thee preſently confeſſe that loue hath reaſon to fauour me, and that it is not for thee to ſpeakē thereof. It is but thy opinon ſayde *Amadis*: but thou muſt knowe that in diſpight of thee, I am hee who hath leaſt occaſion to praife loue, because hee hath ſo vildely deceiued me, that I wil neuer dayes in my life put any truſt in him, knowing how falſely and treacherouſly he commonly vſeth thoſe that moſt faithfully do ſerue him. And because I haue ſufficiently prooued it, I will maɪntaine that he can neuer be ſo faithfull, as I haue found him falſe. That it is ſo, let vs ſee whether hee hath gaɪned more in thee then he hath loſt in me. Then the knight mounted on his horſe, and beeing ready to fight, he anſwered, Vnhappy knight depriued of all good, and baniſhē iuſtly from loue, beeing vneworthy of his fauor, get thee from my preſence, for I ſhould commit a moſt horrible faſt, to lay my hands vpon ſuſh a vild & miſerable fellow. So ſaying, he turned his horſe to haue fled away, if *Amadis* had not ſtaied him in calling him. Villaine, wilſt thou then defend thy loue which ſo highly thou priſeſt onely with thy countenance, and ſo get thee gone because thou woudest fly the combat. Trust me anſwered the other thou art in a right opinon, for it is true that I haue no deſire to proue my ſelfe againſt a perſon of ſo ſmall deſert, but ſeeing thou woudest that I ſhould breake thy head, I am content, and if thy heart will ſerue, defend it if thou canſt. Herewithall they ran one a-

gaſt the other with ſuch force, as their Lances flew to ſhivers, piercēing their ſhields quite thorough, neuertheleſſe their armour being good & ſtrong ſtaied the ſtroke, yet the knight fell to the ground car-tying the raienes of his horſe with him, wherefore he roſe again light-ly. The which *Amadis* beholding, he ſaid vnto him, Truly knight if the right which you pretend in ſo faire a friend bee not better main-tained with your ſword then it hath beeene with your ſtaffe, Loue hath made but a bad choyce of you for a valiant champion, & your Lady a far worſer match in lighting vpon ſuſh a carpet knight. He made no account at all of theſe reproaches, but boldly drew out his ſword, and comming neere to *Amadis* laid at him ſo luſtily, that hee had beeene wounded if with his ſhield hee had not well warded himſelfe, wherein his ſword was ſo farre entred, that he could not pul it forth again, but was forced to let go his holde, lea-uing it ſticking fast in the ſhield of *Amadis*. Who liftēd himſelfe vp in his ſtirrups hitting him ſo ſound a blow vpon his head-peecce, that it pearced euē vnto the quick: & the blow gliding downe, it lighted vpon his horſe neck, wounded him to the death, falling downe in the place and his master vnder him all aſtonied. But *Amadis* ſeeing him arife ſaid vnto him, Gentle louer, I am of the minde that *Cupid* henceforth ſhould erect a trophie for the high proweſſe which you haue ſhewed in his ſeruice: & that as long as you liue you ſhould not ceaſe to ſing his praife, & declare thoſe benefits which vpon you hee hath beſtowed: As for mee I will goe ſeekē my fortune elſe where. So he ſet ſpurrēs to his horſe, & as he departed, he beheld *Gandelin* & *Durin*,

*Durin*, when comiing neere them, he tooke *Durin* by the hand, and ſayd vnto him: Friend *Durin*, I ſee my miſfortune ſo ſtrange, and my ſorrow ſo intollerable, as of force I muſt die, which God grant it may be without delay: for death onely will giue rest and eaſe to this torture which vexeth mee. Salute from me the Princesſe *Mabila*, and thy good ſiſter, the Damosell of *Denmark*, vnto whom thou muſt declare my cruel death, which I ſuffer with as great wiðg as euer any knight ſuffered. Before the which, I would to God I had the meaſes to doe them any ſeruice, in recompence of the duty I doe owe them for all the good they haue done, and the fauours they haue purcaſed for mee. Then hee beganne his

## CHAP. V.

who was the Knight vanquished by Amadis, and what haſped vnto him, before he fought with him.

**S**eeing that it falleth out ſo ſit, I will de-clare vnto you (before I paſſe any fur-ther) the oſtare of the amorous Knight, of whom wee ſpake euē now. You muſt knowe that hee was caſtled *Paris*, brother to *Don Sideron* the Emperor of *Rome*, and hee was the beſt knight that was to be found in all *Romania*. By meaſes whereof he was feared and famous through all the Empire, chiefly because hee was to ſucceſſ in his brothers dignitie, for there was none more neare the fame then hee, and the Emperor was already ſo olde, that hee neuer hoped to haue any heire. Now this *Paris* was one day talking with the Queene of *Sardanias*, named *Sardane*, moane, weeping ſo bitterly as *Durin* therewith had his heart ſo ſtopped with woe, that hee was not a-ble to anſwer one word: Wherefore *Amadis* embraced him and com-mitted him to God. At that instant began the day to appeare, when *Amadis* perciuing that *Gandelin* followed him, hee ſayd vnto him: if thou determineſt to come with me, take heede vpon thy life that thou turne me not from any thing which I ſhall ſay or doe, otherwife I pray thee forthwith to turne another way that I may ſee thee no more. Beleeue me Sir, ſayd *Gandelin*, I wil do whatſoever ſhal please you. Then *Amadis* deliuered him his armor to bear, com-manding him to pul the ſword forth of his ſhield & to cary it to the amorous knight.

hane heard that King *Liswars* hath a daughter esteemed the fairest Princesse in the worlde, but for the loue of you I will goe into Great Brittain, there to mainteine against all men, that her beauty is uot cōparable to yours: the which I alone will prooue in combate against two of the best knights that dare say the contrary: whom if I cannot overcome, I will that King *Liswars* doe cause my head to bee cut off. In good faith my Lord, answered the Queene, I am of a contrary opinion: for if the Princesse haue any beauty in her, it nothing impaireth that which God hath bestowed vpon mee, if any beauty there bee: and me thinks that you haue other means more fit to make known your prowesse in all places. Hap what may hap answered hee, I will doe it for your loue, to the end that every one may knowe that as you are the fairest Lady in the world, so you are beloued of the valiantest Knight aliue. Hereupon continuing in this minde, within a while after hee tooke leaue of the Queene, and passed into Great Brittain accompanied onely with two Esquires. Then hee enquired where he might find King *Liswars*, vnto whose Court he shortly after came: and because hee was more richly arm'd then wandering knights were accustomed to bee, the King thought him to be some great personage: For this cause hee receiued him most honourably, appointing him into a chamber to shew himselfe. When he was vnaarmed hee returned to the King who stayed for him, marching with such grauity, as those that beheld (seeing his comely stature) iudged him to bee of great courage. But the King tooke him by the hand, and conferring together hee sayde

vnto him, gentle friend, I pray you thinke it not strange, if I desire to know who you are, because I may the more honor you in my Court. It may please your Maiesy, answered *Patin*, I am not come into this countrey, to hide mee, but rather to make my selfe knowne as well vnto your Highnesse as vnto all others: I am that *Patin* brother to the Emperour which humbly beseecheth you to enquire no further of my affaires, vntill I haue seen my Lady *Oriana* your daughter. When the King heard that, he embrased him, and in excusing his ignorance he sayd to him. My good Cosen, I am maruailous glad of the honour that you haue done me, In coming thus to visit me in my owne countrey, assuring you that since you are desirous to see my daughter, she shall not onely be shewed vnto you, but likewise the Queene, and all her trayne. And so long they continued their talke, vntill they had couered for supper. Then the King caused him to sit next vnto him, where hee found himselfe compassed with so great a number of knights, as hee much marualled thereat: and began to despise the Court of the Emperour his brother, as also of all other Princes in respect of this which hee saw. After the tables were taken vp, it being time to goe to rest, the King comanded *Den Grumedan* to bring *Patin* to his lodging and to shew him all the honor and good entertainment hee could. So for that night they departed, vntill the next morning that hee came and found the King hearing diuine seruice, after the which hee was conducted to the Ladies, who receiued him curteously: for at his comming the Queen tooke him by the hand, praying him to sit betweene her, & her daugh-

daughter *Oriana*, whom at that instant he beheld with such an eye, as the loue which before he did beare vnto the Queene *Sardamira*, was wholly changed vnto her, beeing captiuated with her excellent beauty and goodly grace. You may iudge then how he would haue esteemed her if he had seen her in the time of her perfect health, which was now much decaied by reason of this new ialousie which she had conceiued against *Amadis* which made her looke leane, pale, and wan: but these defaults could nothing quench the heate of the fire already kindled in the heart of *Patin*, who was so far beside himselfe, that hee determined to beseech the king to bestow her vpon him in mariage: making account that it would be easilly granted, considering his birth and high estate. Hereupon he tooke leaue of the Ladies, and returned towards the King, who was ready to sit downe to dinner, the which being ended hee went aside towards a window, and calling *Patin* vnto him, they talked long together. Afterwards falling from one matter to another, *Patin* said vnto him. It may please your maiesy, yesterday I promised to tel you so soone as I had seene my Lady *Oriana* your daughter) what moued me to come from *Rome* into Great-Brittain, I beseech you not to bee offended if I haue taken so far a iourney, to come in person to require her of you in mariage. I haue chosen her as wel to haue your alliance as also for the beauty and good grace which remaineth in her. I am sure you are not ignorant (considering the place from whence I am descended, & the great meanes which cannot faile me, as one day to be Emperor of *Rome*) that if I would else where set my liking, there is no Prince this day living, which would not be very glad to receiue mee for his sonne in law. Good cosin, answered the king, I thanke you for the kindnesse and honour you do offer me, but the Queene hath alwaies promised *Oriana* that she shal never be maried against her will, wherefore before wee grant you any thing, we must know of her how she will bee content therewith: this the King sayd because he would not discontent *Patin*, for he was not minded to bestowe his daughter vpon any Prince or Lord that should carry her forth of the land. *Patin* was satisfied with these wordes, and expecting some other answere of the King, hee stayed ffe dayes at the Court, yet the king never spake to *Oriana* thereof, although he assured him that hee had done as much as he could, to cause her consent thereto, but he could in no sort preuaile with her. Therefore win her your selfe if you can, said he, and pray her to doe that which I shall command her. Then *Patin* came vnto her and said. Madame I am to desire a request of you, that shall be both honorable and profitable for you, the which I pray you not to deny me. My Lord (answered the princesse) there is no reason to refuse the grant, being such a reasonable request as you assure me it is, therefore if it please you, defer not to declare it vnto me. I beseech you, said *Patin*, to obey whatsoeuer the king your Father shall command you. *Oriana* (who vnderstood not his meaning) answered him. You may bee assured Sir, that I should be very sorry to do otherwise. This answere wonderfully contented *Patin*, for he now assuredly thought *Oriana* to

to be his, and said vnto her, Madam I haue determined to go thorough this countrie to seeke strange aduentures, and I hope to performe so high deeds of Arms, as you shall shortly heare news of my prowes, so much to mine aduantage, as very easily you will cōdescend vnto that which the king will command you for the loue of me. Herewithall he tooke leaue of her, manifesting at this time his intention vnto her no farther, and returned vnto the king vnto whom he declared the answer of *Oriane*, together with the desire he had to proue himselfe against al wandring Knights. Do as it please you, answered the king, notwithstanding I would advise you to desist from such an enterprise: for you shall finde many strange and very dangerous aduentures, with a great number of knyghtes well exercised in armes, who may happily in some sort displease you. If they be valiant and hardy, said he, I hope they shall not finde any faintnes or cowardlines in me, as my deedes hereafter may witnes. Wel, answere the king. Do what you shall thinke best. Thus *Patin* departed in the hope which he had to enioy *Oriane*, for the loue of whom he had framed this song, which he sung when fortune brought him neare the place where *Amadis* made his mone, who vscd him as you haue heard. But now we will leaue him, and recount vnto you what hapned to *Durin*, who hauing left *Amadis*, returned the next way passing by the place where *Patin* lay wounded, who had taken off his Helmet for the griefe of his wōuld, hauing already lost such stōre of blood, that his face and armour was all stained and couered therewith. He beholding *Durin*, said to him, Gentleman, my friend, tell me where I

may finde a place to cure my wounds. Truly answered hee, I know no place but one, and those whom you shall finde there, are so sorrowfull, that I belzeue they can not looke vnto you. Wherfore said *Patin*. For a Knight ( quoth *Durin*) who newly hath wonne the place that I tell you of, and seen the images of *Apolidon* and his Lady, which till then no other might behold: since when he is departed thence secretly in such melancholly, as his death is greatly feared. Be like said *Patin*, you speake of the Firme Island. True (quoth *Durin*) What said *Patin*, is it conquered already? certes, I am heartily sorry, for I was going thither, with intention to proue my selfe, hoping to haue won the same. *Durin* smiled, and answered him, Truely knyght if there be no more prowesse hidden within you, then that which you haue now manifested, I thinke in stead of honour, you might there haue gotten shame and infamy. *Patin* thinking himselfe iniusted rose vp, and thought to haue taken hold of the raines of *Durins* horse: but *Durin* turned from him: before *Patin* seeing hee was farre enoughe from him, hee called him againe and said. I pray you faire sir, tell what he is that hath gotten this famous conquest. Then tell me first what you are, answered *Durin*. I will not stick for that, said *Patin*, I am sir *Patin*, brother to the Emperour of Rome.

God bee praised, answere *Durin*: Yet so farre as I see you are of higher birth then bouny, and your courage is as slender as your Courtesie is small: Witnesse the speech which of late you had with the Knight that you enquire after, who is the very same that euen now went from

from you, whom I belzeue (considering how hee hath handled you) you will grant that he is worthy of such a victory, and not *Patin* whom he hath vanquished. This

## C H A P. V. I.

How Don Galaor, Florestan and Agraeis, undertooke the search of Amadis: who hauing left his Armour, changed his name, and withdrew himselfe to an hermitage, in the company of a very old hermit, there to liue solitarie.

Hau of late told you that when *Amadis* departed from the firme Island, it was so secretly, that *Galaor*, *Florestan*, *Agraeis* and others, neuer perceiued any thing thereof: you haue also heard the oath which he had taken of *Isania* the gouernour, that he should not declare any thing which he had seene, vntill the next morning when masse was ended: the which *Isania* performed. For the day following, when the Lords were ready to sit downe at the Table, they perceiued that *Amadis* was absent: and enquiring for him, *Isania* told them that they should know after dinner where hee was become. Thereupon they sat down thinking that he was gone somwhat for his pleasure. After the Tables were taken vp, *Isania* said vnto the. My lords the misfortune of my Lord *Amadis* is farre worse then you thinke it is, as I shall presently declare vnto you. Then he recited in what order he deparde from the, the great sorrow wherein hee was, and what he had commanded him to say vnto them, especially how he had disposed of the Island, and he earnestly intreated the not to follow him, seeing that he hoped for no remedy of his misery: For his death was not to bee prevented. When they heard these pittifull news, there was not any of them whose eyes were not filled with teares, and they began to make a

said, he set spurres to his horse, taking the right way vnto London, in full purpose to recite vnto the Princesse *Oriane* all that hee had seene and heard of *Amadis*.

most sorrowfull lamentation. But *Galaor* made the greatest moane of all, saying. If I may releue him from distresse, the best knyght in the world shall not in this sort die: Although he hath commanded vs to stay, yet shall he not be obeyed for me at this time: but I will seeke vntil I haue found him, & wil know who hath wronged him, that I may eyther reuenge it, or die in the quarell. Beleue me answered *Agraeis*, we will not be far behinde you: and if we cannot remedy his misfortune by force of courage, or counsell, yet at the least we will altogether die with him for company. Moreouer said *Isania*, he desirereth you my Lord *Galaor* to make *Gandalin* a knyght, and take *Arden* his dwarf into your seruice, whom he recommendeth vnto you. Then *Galaor* called the Dwarf, and said vnto him: *Arden*, thy master hath forsaken vs, and willed that thou shouldst be mine, assure thes that so long as I liue, I will not leaue thee for his sake. How? answered the Dwarf, is my Lord dead then? So saying, he fel downe where he stood, and began to teare his haire, making so great sorrow as it was wonderfull, & said: I might well be counted a traytor to liue after my Master, wherwithal he had slain himself if they had not take heed vnto him. *Florestan* his heart was so ouercharged with griefe that he could neyther weep, nor speake, but sit leueng as if he had been in a traunce. And

when he recovered his speech, he said vnto his fellowes : my Lords, it is no time for vs to weepe nor lament when we should rather indeuour to succour my Lord *Amadis* : let women waile , but let manly mindes conioyne together, & deuise how we may prouide a remedy for so great a mischiefe. As for me, I thinke that without longer delay we should all to horseback, making as great spedde as we may to finde him, then we may know if there be any meanes to cure his malady: for the time passeth, his sorrow increaseth, and he still goeth farther from vs. The Lord *I'anis* ( as he saith) hath brought him some part of his way, he may shew vs then which path he hath taken , but if we shall longer tarry, wee may lose him, without hope euer to see him againe. Therefore my Lords I pray you let vs make haift to follow him. Vnto the which they all agreed, & caused their horses to be presently brought. Then *I'anis* conducted them to the place where *Amadis* had left him, and from thence they rode till they came whereas *Patin* lay wounded , whom they beheld lying vpon the ground , whilst his two esquires did cut down boughs and poles, to make him a litter: for he was so feeble with the losse of his blood, that he could not sit on horseback, nor answe one onely word vnto the knights who saluted him, and enquired of him, what he was that had done him such outrage : but he made a signe that his Squires should tell them. Whereupon *Galoar* came, and demanded the matter of them, they answered him that he had iousted against a knight which came from the Firme Island, by whom hee was ouerthrowne at the first encounter, and how that afterwards thinking to

reuenge him with his Sword, he sped so illas they might perceiue by his hurt. What is become of the knight, said *Galoar*. By our faith answered the fquires , we know not, for we were not present at the combat. Notwithstanding we do think that we did meeet him in our comming hither, and he did ride ouer the forrest so fast as his horse could run, hauing none following him but one Squire, who wept bitterly carrying after him his Armour and shield, vpon the which were 2. Lyons fables, in a field Ore. In faith said *Florestan* it is he whom we doe seeke. Shew vs therefore what way he tooke, the which they did. Then the knights went after him, and so long they rode, vntill they came to a crosse way, where they staid to aduise what was best to be done: for there was not any body that might tell them any newes of that which they sought : and therefore they determined to separate themselves, promising one vnto another to meeet at the Court of king *Lisuart*, vpon S. Iohns day next ensuing: but if by that time they heard no news of *Amadis*, then they would determine further what to do in the matter, thus taking leaue of each other, they departed with weeping : and afterward they did what they might, but it was all in vaine , although they had ridden through many strange countries in which they found many great accidents & perilous aduentures. But you must know, that so soone as *Amadis* had sent *Durin* away, he set spurres vnto his horse , neyther caring, nor determining what way he should take, & he went euen as fortune guided him: in the end hee came to the bottom of an obscure valley, ful of vnderwood & bushes which place he thought most comodi-

modious to hide himselfe from being found out of any that might follow him. Here did he alight, letting his horse goe where hee would, but vnbridled him not: then he sate down by the side of a brook, which descended from the mountaine, and tooke a little water to refresh him withall. By this time *Gandalin* had overtaken him, who had stayed behinde to deliuer *Patin* his Sword, who finding *Amadis* laid all along vpon the grasse, so still that he heard not one word to proceede from him : hee durst not say any thing to him , but sate downe hard by him, and within a while after *Amadis* rose vp, and beholding *Gandalin* laide vpon the ground by him , hee pushed him with his foote saying, sleepest thou *Gandalin*? By my faith sir no, answered he, for in stead of sleeping, I thought vpon two things which concerne you greatly, the which (if it please you) I will declare, if not, I will hold my peace. Go to rife said *Amadis*, and take our horses, for I will get me gone, because I should be very sory to be found of those (who it may be) do follow me. Truly answered *Gandalin*, me thinks you are farre enough out of the way : 'besides your horse is so wearie, as if you let him not rest a little, it is impossible for him to beare you any longer. I pray thee said he, (in weeping) do what thou shalt thinke best, for whether I stay or goe, my sorrows are remediles. Eat then a little of this bread which I haue brought for your sustenance, answered *Gandalin*, but he refused it. What will you then do said he, shall I tell you whereupon I studied euen now? It is all one to me answered *Amadis*, I thinke on nothing so much as my death. Then hearken vnto me if it please

Princesse never did amisse at any time: and if I die, I haue well deserued it, seeing that she shall be obeied and satisfied euuen vntill my death. And be thou assured, if I did not thinke that thou speakest this, only with intent thereby to asswage my sorrow: I would presently strike thy head from thy shoulders, for the offence which thou hast done vnto me, and take heed that henceforth you commit not the like fault.

When he had so said, he arose vp in a great rage, and walked vp along the riuier, so pensiue that he knew not what way he shold take. Which *Gandalin* perciuing, (feareing his anger, and thinking also that he would not goe farre) he let him alone and laid him downe to sleepe, his eyes béeing very heauie with watching. When *Amadis* was returned vnto him, and perciued him so sound asleepe, hee would not wake him, but took his owne horse and sadled him, then did he hide the bridle and harness of *Gandalins* horse in the bushes, to the end when he awaked he might not follow him. Then he armed himselfe and mounted on horsebacke, coasting ouer the top of the mountaine. Thus without any stay at all, hee rode till it was within foure houres of the sun setting, descending then into a great plaine, where there were two high trees, and vnder them a faire fountaine, commonly called, The fountaine of the plaine field: to which hee went to water his horse. And as hee approached neare the fountaine, he beheld a religious man clothed poorly in a garment made of goates haire, hauing his beard and head all white, who was watering his Asse. *Amadis* saluted him, asking him if he were a Priest. Truely, said

the olde man, it is more then forty yeeres since I first said Mass. The gladder am I thereof, said *Amadis*. Then he alighted & took his saddle and bridle from his horse, who finding himselfe at liberty, began to run towards the Forrest, *Amadis* minding not to follow him, but threw off all his armour, which done, he kneeled at the olde mans feete, who taking him vp by the hand, made him sit downe by him: & beholding him well, he thought him to bee the fairest Gentleman that euer he saw, although hee was pale and wan, hauing his face all bedewed with teares: whereat the Hermit was moued with so great compassion, that hee sayde vnto him. Knight, you seeme to bee full of sorrow, and if your griefe proceede from the repentance of any sinne that you haue committed, In truth my son you are very happy: and if it bee for any temporall losse, then I thinke (seeing your youth, and the estate wherin you haue liued vnto this present, you shold not thus vexe your selfe, but pray for forgiuenesse. Then hee gaue him his blessing, saying. Goe too, now confess your sins. Hereupon *Amadis* began to tell the whole discourse of his life, without letting any thing passe. Truely, saide the holy man, seeing that you are descended of so high a birth, you ought to bee the more vertuous: yet you must not dispaire for any tribulation that may happen vnto you, cheefely, for this that proceedeth from the occasion of a woman, who is as easily won as shee is lightly lost. Wherefore my son, I councell you to forget such vanities, and henceforth to banish the thought of such a miserable manner of life from you, for it will not onely be yrkesome vnto you, but also

also euery vertuous person will condemne you for it. Ah father, answered *Amadis*, I am now in such extreamitie, that it is impossible I shold liue any long time, wherefore I humbly pray you to receiue mee into your company, and to comfort my poore soule, for that little time which it hath to remain in this vnhappy body. When the good olde man heard him speake with such affection, he sayde vnto him, I promise you my friend, it is ill done of you, who are a knight, yet young and of a comely stature, to fall into such desparie, seeing that women cannot continue their loue, but by presence of those whome they loue: for by nature they are quickly forgetfull, and light of beleete, especially where any thing is reported vnto them of such as haue fondly yeelded themselves to them, who when they think to haue nothing but ioy and contentment, do finde themselues plunged in all sorrow and tribulatiōn, as you now feele by experiance. Wherefore I pray you henceforth to be more vertuous and constant: and seeing you are borne a Kings son, and likely to gouerne a Kingdome, returne to the world, for it shold be a great hurt to loose you in this sort: and I cannot presume what shee might bee that brought you into this extreamitie, seeing that although shee were a woman so requisit as shee could not bee equalled, yet for her such a man as you are to be cast away. Father, answered *Amadis*, I aske not your counsell herein, for I now neede it not, but for my soules sake I desire you henceforth to receiue mee into your company, which if you refuse to do, I see no other remedy for me, but to die amongst the beasts of this Forrest. The old man

on, the good old man spread his cloake abroad and laid him downe thereon, and *Amadis* at his feete, who was a great while before hee could take any rest, tumbling and tossing himselfe as a person ill at ease, neuerthelesse in the end, beeing heauie with long watching, he fell asleepe: and hee dreamed that hee was locked in a chamber so darke, that he could see no light at all, neyther could he finde any way to come out thereof, wherewith he greatly lamented: moreouer hee thought that his Cozin *Mabila* and the Damosell of *Denmarke* came vnto him, hauing before them a beame of the Sun, which gaue a great light in so darke a place: they taking him by the hand said vnto him, My Lord, come forth from hence, if it please you, and follow vs into the palace, the which he did. But at his comming forth, he thought that he did see *Oriana* inuironed with a great flame of fire, which made him so afraid, that hee cried out helpe, helpe, my Lady *Oriana* burneth: and therewithall he leaped into the fire to saucher. Then he tooke her in his armes, comming through the flame againe without any hurt at all: afterwards hee carried her into a garden, the greenest and pleasantest that he had seene. At the lowde cry which *Amadis* did make, the good Hermit awaked, and taking him by the hand, hee asked him, what he ailed? Father, answered he, I haue euuen now in my sleepe felt such exceeding paine, that I meruaile I am not dead. Your cry hath witnessed the same, said hee, but let vs rise, for it is time to depart. Then he got vpon his Asse, and tooke the way toward the Hermitage, and *Amadis* followed him a foote, talking together of many

things, at the last he prayed him to giue him one gift, which should not bee hurtfull vnto him, the which the old man granted, I pray you then said *Amadis*, that so long as we are together, you would not tell any man who I am: and henceforth to giue mee another name, such as it shall please you: then after my death you may tell my brethren of me, that they may come fetch my body, and carry it into *Gaule*. Your life and death, answered the hermit, are in the hands of God, therefore speake no more thereof, for therein you offend him very grieuously: and therefore seeing you know him, loue him, and serue him as you are bound to do, he wil succour and helpe you: notwithstanding what other name wil you haue? Such as it shall please you to giue me, said *Amadis*. And as they talked together, the olde man had his eye continually vpon him, and the more he looked on him, the fayrer he thought him to be: but he did see him so full of grieve as he determined to giue him a name conformable to his excellency, and agreeable to his melancholy. Whereupon he said vnto him: my Sonne you are yong and of a faire complexion, notwithstanding your life is obscure, by reason of your sorrow, therefore my will is that you bee called the *Faire Forlorne*. Wherewith *Amadis* was contented, liking very well of the Hermit his devise, who not without great occasion had imposed that name vpon him. And euuen as they were ouertaken with the night, they came vnto the Sea side, where they found a little box which the day before was come to seeke the Hermit at his hermitage, wherin they imbarked, and within a small time after tooke landing at the poore Rock, so called because of the barrennesse of the place, as the old man had declared to him. Who continuing his discourse, said, Sonne I haue heretofore followed the world as you haue done, and my name was *Andebod*, assuring you that during my young yeeres, I studied many vaine sciences: but in the end being wearie thereof, I withdrew my selfe into this poore place, where I haue already remained thirty yeeres and more, and neuer departed thence vntill yeesterday, that I was at the buriall of my sister, who died within these few dayes. When the *Faire Forlorne* came into this Solitary place, he was exceeding glad: hoping that in a very short time his fadnesse and his life would both end at once. Thus he remained in the company of the hermit, consuming his youth with weeping and continuall lamentations, setting at naught all worldly honours, especially the glory which he had gotten in fighting with *Galpan*, *Abies* King of *Ireland*, *Dardan* the proud, and many others whom he had overcome, and he began to despise in himselfe all vanities, considering the variablenesse of Fortune, who not long before had so highly aduanced him, that hee had entred into the forbidden Chamber of *Apolidon*, as in the beginning of the History hath beene mentioned. But if he had beene demanded what moued him so to do, what would hee (thinke you) haue answered? no other thing (as I guesse) but that the displeasure of a weake woman, had brought him to this extremity: he would haue tried to colour his fault by the examples of the strong and valiant *Hercules*, *Sampson*, the wise *Salomon*, *Virgill*, and an infinit num- ber of other great and vertuous personages which haue all fala into the like misery, being no more able to resist the same then he. And *Amadis* would haue thought their misfortunes sufficient to shadrow his miserie, and yet it is quite contrary: for their example might haue warned him to haue shunned the like folly. Was it likely then that Fortune would bring him out of his calamity, he being thus ouercome for so small a cause, and to bestow vpon him afterwards more fauours and victories then euer she had done before? me thinketh that she should not: neither yet had she done it, if those things by her executed against him, had not turned to the profit of the persons whom she would fauour, whose liues depended vpon *Amadis* his safety, whom she tormented in such sort, as it seemed she had more compassion vpon them; then care of him, as your selfe may iudge. Because that *Amadis* being as it were brought vnto the period of his life, (when he least hoped of remedie) euen then was he restored vnto his former estate by such meanes, as shal be hereafter recited vnto you. But to the end that we stray not too farre from the order of our history, you must first vnderstand that which happened to *Gandalin* after he awaked and found neither *Amadis* nor his horse: who rising vp in a fright, misdonbted that which was happened, and looked in all places thereabout, notwithstanding he could see nothing but Trees and Bushes. By meanes whereof he began to cry and call, yet no body answered him but the Echo which resounded thorow the valley: whereby he knew well that *Amadis* was departed. For this cause he began to make a most sorrow-

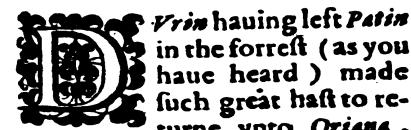
sorrowfull lamentations, determining to follow him, and to doe what he could to find him againe, which that he might the better accomplish, hee returned where hee had left his horse, the which hee found, hauing neither saddle nor bridle vpon him, which made him almost beside himselfe. But as hee fretted and sought from one place to another, in the middest of the bushes hee espied the harnesse of his horse, which he sought, wherefore incontinently he sadled him, and mounted vpon him, galloping through the forrest not knowing which way to take: and in this frensie he rode ffeue daies together without any stay at all, but at the side of the villages, where he onely taried to enquire after *Amadis*. Notwithstanding, he could heare no newes of him till the sixt day, that he entred into a meddow wherein was a fountaine, hard by the which *Amadis* had left his armour. There he beheld a Pauillion set vp, and two Gentlewomen, vnto whom hee came, asking them if they had seene a knight passe by, bearing in his shield two Lions *sables*, in a field *Or*. *W*ee haue not seene the knight which you demand after, answered they, but we did finde his shield and the rest of his armour vpon the brinke of this fountaine. When *Gandalin* heard this, hee cryed out mainely, and tearing his haire, he said weeping: Ay me, is he dead. Alas what misfortune is hapned, the best knight in the world, is he lost? heerewithall did hee encrease his lamentes so strangely, as both the Gentlewomen had great compassion vpon his miserie: Alas my Lord, sayde hee, how badly haue I kept you: truly I am worthy to bee accounted the most wicked esquire that

liueth on the earth, hauing so lewdly forsaken you, and you who were wont to be the defence and refuge of all distressed persons, haue now nor coucel nor cōfōrt of any living wight, no not of me eaitise as I am, that through my great fault and sluggishnesse, haue left you in your greatest neede, euen when I ought best to haue serued you. No soner had he said these words, but that hee fell downe in a wound: which when the Gentlewomen behelde, they cryed: Alas this esquire is dead, and therewithall they ran vnto him, but hee moued not in any sort. Neuerthelesse, they bestirred them so well, as they brought him againe to himselfe, & afterwards they sayd vnto him: my friend, you are to blame thus to despaire for a thing whereof you are yet vncertaine. It were more convenient for you to goe seek your maister, seeing that the verious (as you ought to bee) do encrease their strength, euen when aduersitie most assaileth them. *Gandalin* knew that they sayde true, and for the same cause he determined (following their counsell) to traualle so long from place to place, vntill he had newes of *Amadis*. But I pray you Gentlewomen, answered hee, tell me where you haue found his armour? That will wee willingly, said they: *W*ee were of late in the company of *Don Guillan* the pessiue, who within these few days past, deliuere vs from the prison of *Gandalinas* the malicious, with more then twentic other Ladies and Gentlewomen, behauing himselfe so valiantly, that he hath broken the wicked custome of the Castle, and constrained the Lord thereof to sweare, never more to maintaine the same. And because euerie one had liberty to goe wher-

ther they would, my fellow and I haue followed him vnto this place, and wee haue already stayed here this foure daies, because that when we came hither first, *Guillan* knew the armour of him whom you enquire after, which were left vpon the side of the fountaine. And I promise you that never knight was more sorrowful then he, for as soon as he beheld them, hee alighted from his horse saying. Beleeue me this place is farre vnworthy to hold the shield of the best Knight in the world. Then did hee take it vp from the ground, and hanged it vp on this Tree. Which done hee mounted againe vpon his horse, commanding vs exprestly that we should keepe it vntill hee had found the Knight to whom it appertained: And to that end we did set vp these Pauilions which you see. Notwithstanding after we had kept the same three whole dayes, he returned, and arriued but yesterday very late hauing no

## C H A P. VII.

How Durin returned vnto the Princesse Oriana, vnto whom he declared the sorrowfull news of Amadis: and of the great sorrow which she made, after she understood of his despaire.



*D*urin hauing left *Patin* in the forrest (as you haue heard) made such great hast to returne vnto *Oriana*, to let her know what he had seen of *Amadis*, as the tenth day following he arriued in the City of *London*. But so soone as *Oriana* perceiued him, her heart throbbed in such sort, as she was faine to goe into her chamber, & lay her down vpon her bed before shee would speake vnto *Durin*: and shortly after shee commanded the Damosell

of Denmarke to cause him to come in, and to see that while she talked with him no other should come where she was.

Then *Durin* beeing on his knees before her, shee said vnto him: *Durin* my friend, by the faith thou owest vnto mee, tell mee in what estate thou diddest finde *Amadis*, what was his countenance whilst hee red my Letter, and what thou thinkest of the *Princesse Brisolana*? Madam answered he, by my faith I wil tell you the very truth, although I am faine

that vnto you and others it will seeme in a manner incredible. At my departure from hence ( as it pleased you to command mee) I wene without any stay, vnto the City of Sobradis, where I found the Queene Briolasia, who ( in my opinion) next vnto you, is the fairest princesse of the world, and of the best grace. There I heard news that my Lord *Amadis* and his fel lows were departed to returne vnto this Court, but vpon the way they did meeke with a Gentlewoman, who carried them vnto the firme-Island to proue the strange aduentures thereof: whereupon incontinently I tooke my way thither, and there I arriuied even as my Lord *Amadis* passed the Arch of Loyall-Louers, vnder the which none might passe that had in any sort falsified his first Loue. How? said she, hath he so rashly enter prised such an aduenture, hauing his disloyalty so fresh before his eyes? I know not Madam answered *Durin*, how you beleeue it, but sure I am that it hapned better vnto him then you thinke for, seeing that he hath gotten more honour then euer any loyall Knight receiued, as many can witnesse by the signes which then appeared. And although at that instant *Oriana* would haue seemede for to dissemble the pleasure which she conceiued of these news, yet could she not so cunningly do the same, but that with extreame ioy her sudden blushing did increase her beautie, for the assurance shee had in the loyaltie of *Amadis*. But *Durin* continuing his discourse, said vnto her Madam, he hath yet done greater things, for after hee had finished this so strange aduenture, he heard news that my Lords *Galeor*, *Flores* and *Agreas* thinking to winne

the forbidden Chamber, were so rudely repulsed from the marble Pillar, that their liues were in great perill, by meanes whereof my Lord *Amadis* desirous to reuenge their wrongs, with an invincible courage passed through all the ga ded places, and maugre all the incantments, hee entred into the Chamber, yet was it not without great danger and trauaile. Thus did he win the Signory of the firm Island, and al the inhabitants thereof haue already swoyne vnto him homage, and fealty, according to the custome of the Country, which is one of the fairest and strongest places in the world. And I affre you Madame, that it is more then an hundred yeeres since any living creature hath passed the pillars, but onely my Lord *Amadis*: by whose force and strength we haue seene all the singular things and riches of the pallace of *Apollidon*, and the aduenturous Chamber, which is renowned thorow all the parts of the Earth. During this discourse of his, *Oriana* was almost rauished with the great ease, and pleasure that shee conceiued in the hope that one day shee should bee Lady and owner of such singuler things, to her owne and her louers contentment, and said vnto *Durin*. Truly *Durin* fortune hath bee very fauourable vnto him. At Madam answered he, nay rather too rigorous, so as I would to God some other had carried him that vnhappy Letter which you wrie, & I deliuered: how said *Oriana*, I pray thee tell me, what countenance he shewed in reading it? Madame I wil tel you since it pleasest you, answered he, although I am sure that you will bee very sorre when you shal understand what consequence it turned vnto, and the misfelic

it brought vnto the best and fau-  
fillest knight in the world. In what  
sort, said she. You are the cause of  
his death, answered *Durin*. Out Al-  
as, said *Oriana*, what is it thou tel-  
lest mee? You haue forged the  
sword that hath wounded him to  
death, and I carried it to him, so as  
we are both his murtherers. Then  
declared hee the whole circum-  
stance and manner how he deliuered  
the letter, and the despaire hee  
entred into after he had read it: so  
as, said *Durin*, he did shortly after  
that, secretly departe from the  
Pallace of *Apollidon*, with *Gandalin*,  
*Isasias* the Gouvernour of the Isle,  
and me, and we brought him vnto  
an hermitage, where hee charged  
vs stightly to follow him no fur-  
ther: then hee mounted on horse-  
back, and taking with him neither  
Helmet, Shield, nor Lance, he fled  
ouer a mountaine like vnto a mad  
man. Afterward hee rehersed vnto  
her all the talke which particular-  
ly he had vsed vnto them, in taking  
his leave of them, and *Durin* made  
this discourse with so many teares,  
as it was very hard to iudge whe-  
ther hee or *Oriana* had the more  
sorrowfull heart. And know you  
Madame, saide hee, that after his  
departure ( notwithstanding his  
command to the contrary) *Gandalin* and I followed him, and found  
him asleepe by the side of a foun-  
taine, yet his sleepe was not long:  
for suddainly hee awaked, and rai-  
sing himselfe vp, he began to make  
the greatest lamentation in the  
world, bewailing King *Perion* his  
father, then *Mabila*, and others  
his friends. All this while *Gandalin*  
and I hid our selues for feare of his  
furie, by meanes whereof without  
any impeachment of vs, he passed  
the most part of the night in the  
like lamentations, vntill about the

declared it vnto them. Let me alone the said *Mabila*, for I know wel how to remedy this matter. Hereupon they vnlaced her, and bestirreth them so well, that she brought her to life againe: then *Mabila* demanded of her how she did. Gentlefriend (answered she) farre better then I desire: So as I rather desire death then life, for now I do nought else but languish. Wherefore Madame, said *Mabila*: do you thinke my *Cosin* so inconstant, that hee will not willingly excuse the iniurie that you haue done vnto him, knowing that extreame loue rather then any other thing constrained you thereunto? And if he be gone, as *Durin* hath tolde you, it is but to passe away part of his melancholy, tarrying vntill his innocency bee knowne vnto you: But I am certaine, if it pleased you to call him back againe, that he is as ready to obey you as euer he was. And behold what you shall doe: intreate him by a Letter, that hee take no regard vnto that which you did command him by *Durin*, and that which you did, was suddenly after a false report made vnto you of him: and therefore will him to come vnto you to *Mireflare*, where you stay for him to amend your fault at his discretion. Ah my *Cosin*, answered *Oriana*, do you think that he will euer vouchsafe, either to respect me, or make one steppre for me? But do you thinke, saide *Mabila*, that the loue he beareth to you, is of so little force, that he will not bee farre more glad to recouer your good fauour, then he hath beeene sorry to be by you forsaken? I am verily assured, that to die he will not displease you. And to accomplish this matter well, it behoueth the Damosell of *Denmark* to vndertake the charge to

finde him out, because he knoweth her, and putteth his trust in her. Well, answered *Oriana*, I am content to be aduised by you. So shee tooke paper and inke, and as they had determined she did write vnto *Amadis*, afterwards the Letter was giuen to the Damosel of *Denmark*, with expresse commandement to passe first into *Scotland*, thinking that he might be there with *Gandales*, rather then in any other place. And the better to colour their enterprise, they aduised the Damosell to tell the Queene, that *Mabila* sent her towards the Queene of *Scotland* her Mother, to vnderstand some news from her: With the which the Queen was well pleased, and gaue her a Letter and tokens to present vnto her. Thus was the Gentlewoman dispatched, who departed with *Durin* her brother, and *Enil* the *Cosin* of *Gandales*. And so long they rode till they came vnto a port towne called *Vigill*, which separateth great *Brittaine* from the Realme of *Scotland*. There they tooke shippynge, and they had the winde so faire, that the sixt day following they landed in the City of *Polizez*. Then tooke they their way toward the Knight *Gandales*, whom they met a hunting: but when he beheld the Damosell of *Denmark* (knowing that she was a stranger) he stayed, enquiring of her what she did seekin that Countrey. Your selfe answered she, towards whom, two Princesses your friends haue commanded me to come, to present from them certain presents, which I carry vnto the Queene of *Scotland*. Gentlewoman said he, may it please you to tell me their names: yea willingly sir said she, the one is my Lady *Oriana* daughter to the mighty king *Lisuart*, & the other the Princess

*Mabila* whom you know well enough. Ha said *Gandales*, you are most luckily here arrived: and they haue reason to accompt me their most humble seruant, for so I am, & I pray you most heartily to come and alight at my house, then to morrow we will go together to see the Queene: in the meane while doe mee this pleasure, as to tell me how *Amadis* doth. The Gentlewoman was herewith much astonished, seeing that she had missed of her purpose: notwithstanding dissembling her sorrow, she answered *Gandales*: that he was not returned to the Court since he departed thence to reuenge *Briolanis*: and it is thought that he is come into these parts with his cosin *Agraeis*, to see the Scottish Queene his Aunt, and you also: for this cause the Queene and other

CHAP. VIII.  
How Don Guillan the Pensif did bring unto the Court of King *Lisuart*, the Shield, Armour, and Sword of *Amadis*, which he had found lying by the Fountaine of the plaine field.



After that *Don Guillan* the Pensif was departed from the Fountaine where he found *Amadis* his Armour, he rode six daies before he arrived in the Court of King *Lisuart*. And he ordinarily carried the shield of *Amadis* about his necke, and never tooke it off, except when hee was constrained to fight: then he tooke his owne, fearing to deface the other. And as he rode he met with two knyghts, *Cosins* to *Arcalans*, who incontinently knew the shield of *Amadis*, and they thought *Guillan* to be he. Wherfore they (who hated him to the death) determin-

ned to assaile him, and said one to another: euen now will we carrie the head of this villaine vnto our vncle *Arcalans*. This they spake so lowd that *Guillan* heard it, wherewith being slroughly chased he answered them. Palliards you reckon without your host, for never did traitor affright me, no more shall you, seeing I know you for kinsmen to *Arcalans*, and as wicked as himself: then pulled he downe the visor of his Helmet, couched his launce and ran vpon them. Now they were yong and strong, so that they defended theinselues stouter: notwithstanding at the last they could not long resist him that had

charged them. Who after hee had some small time fought with them, thrust his sword in the throat of the eldest, and the other fled vp towards the top of the mountaine, who was not long pursued by *Guillan*, because hee was a little wounded, whereupon he let him go and followed on his way, along the which he rode so far, vntill he arriued at a Castle, belonging vnto a knight of his acquaintance, where hee lodged for that night, beeing then very late. But the next day (as hee would haue departed from his Lodging) his host seeing him without a Lance gave him one, from thence hee rode so long, that hee came neere a riuier named *Guinon*, ouer the which there was a bridge no broder then for two horses to passe ouer affront. And approaching more neere thereunto, he beheld a knight entering vpon the same, whose shield was vert, a bent *Argent*. This he knew to bee his cosin *Ladasin*; and on the other side hee saw another knight ready to fight, who forbad *Ladasin* from passing ouer, except hee would breake a Lance with him, but *Ladasin* answered him, that he would not stay for so small a thing, and herewithall couering him with his shield, he set spurres vnto his horse. As much did hee that kept the passage, who was mounted vpon a great bay courser, and did beare in his shield *Argent a Lion Sables*, and his helmet all blacke. Their encounter was so strong, that *Ladasin* fell into the water, where without doubt he had beeene drowned (as well for the weight of his armour, as also for the high of the place from whence he fell) if he had not taken holde of certaine willowes, by meanes whereof hee got vnto the banck side. In the meane seafon he

that had ouer-throwne him returned faire and softly from whence he was departed. Then *Guillan* seeing his cosin in such danger, ranne speedily to helpe him, and caused him to be pulled vp by his squires, and afterwards he saide vnto him: trust me cosin without the helpe of these bouges you had beeene in great danger, and therefore all strange knights should feare to iust vpon such bridges: for those which do keepe such passages, haue their horses no small time experimened for the purpose, with whome (more then by their owne prowesse) they gaine the honour and reputation ouer a number of better knights then themselves are. And as for me, I would rather turne out of the way a dayes iourney, then put my selfe in such hazard, were it not to revenge you if I can. Now the horse of *Ladasin* had not followed his maister, but was passed ouer to the other side of the riuier, and the knight of the bridge his squires were there ready to take him, who caried him into a pleasant and strong tower, seated in the middest of the water. Wherefore *Guillan* tooke his shield, and couched his Lance, he called vnto the knight of the bridge, that he should take heede of him, who ran against him, and they met together with a most strong encounter: neuerthelesse it fell out so well for *Guillan*, that he ouerthrew his enemy together with his horse into the riuier, and himselfe had sped little better, for he was vnhorshed as well as the other, if in falling his horse had not slipped by the one side of him, and he taken hold of certaine stakes, by the which he got vpon the bridge again, from whence he might perceiue the knight in the riuier, who hauing caught hold by the tale of

the horse of *Ladasin*, was bringing to shewe on the one side, and his horse came to the other side, where the Squires of *Ladasin* were ready to take hold of him. Thus against their willes the two knights made exchange of their horses and then for *Guillan* sent vnto the knight to tell him, that if he would restore his horse and his fellowes, that they would send ouer his which their Esquires had taken, and then they would depart. What answered the knight vnto him that brought the message, thinke they to escape so lightly from my hands? yea truely said the other, for they haue done as much as the custome of the passage requireth. Not yet answered the knight, because we were both ouerthowres: and therefore they must win the bridge by the sword, if they will passe ouer. What you then said the other, compell them to fight? I think you shold be satisfied with this iniurie which alreadye you haue done vnto them, seeing that all bridges ought to be free for every passenger: I care not answered the knight, go tell them, they must felle (will they nill) they how my sword cutteth: then hee leaped vpon his horse most lightly without any helpe of his stirrop, afterwards comming neere vnto *Guillan*, he said vnto him very fiercely and boldly: knight your embasfavour hath beeene ouer tedious in deliuering his message, But before you escape me, you must of force tell me, whether you bee any of the subiects to a king called *Edwart*, or any of his houseshold. Wherefore answered *Guillan*, I would it were my luck, said the other, to haue him now in your steede, for by my heade he should not raighe one day longer. When *Guillan* heare this say so, none could be more angry then he was, & therfore aduised him in good faith, knight if king *Edwart* my Lord haue any sonnes, then very sure, that he would die by his handes: therfore aske of the knyght, thy knyght p[er]sonalitie to be fended by his handes, and then I knowe shalld be shewed vnto him, that he haue greate desire to fight against him, then sayes he haue agayne many other knyghts And if I daunger his f[ri]end, iest, and his knyghts of his lordshipps, I will chalenge them in marche, yea & for goddes sake. But be assyndle, I haue for a f[ri]end in all shire an knyghte he be not boldene that falleth by him before it be noon, I will resolue to be glad to eare a messege vnto him notwithstanding before this messege euen bytyme I shal, my wif, I shal shalke both wids: And I shal shalke what present I will shal vnto him by thee, *Guillan* who very much shal pleased with the knyghts wordes: hardly would he haue deformed that combat for long, had it not shone that he had promised to tell him his name, wherefore he sayed a while to haue what he wold say. When thon shal said the knyght, this I am dounde to forane to *Edwart* his Lord of *Caerlaverock*, whiche King *Edwart* haue most treacherously diuised to deauch in the Cley of *Edwart*: The present which I will shal vnto him by thee, And he shal the heads off fide knyghtes of his Countre, and I shal shal his nephewe together with thy right hand also, which I will hang about thy necke, after I haue separated it from thy arme. And so I shal answerd *Guillan*, if thou gaue to forme that thou b[ea]ggest of, it were a great deale, but I b[ea]ke shal thou shal protec thy selfe a knyght, and so sayng his sholdes at hand. Then therre began betwix them shartp and crivel Combate: Not

without any breathing, they laid at each other so fiercely, that *Ladefis* and his esquires who were present, did not think that any of them could escape the death. Nevertheless, they behaved themselves so valiantly, that one could not judge who had the best: for they were expert knights, hardy, and exercised in arms, so that knowing how to defend themselves, few blowes could hurt them to the quicke. Now when their bataile was at the harshest, they heard the wounding of a borne from the top of the tower, wherewithall *Gaillan* was abashed, thinking it to be some new supply come to his enemy, and on the other side, *Gaudelot* suspected it to bee some revolte of the captiues which he had in his prisons. And therefore either of them did their best to vanquish his enemy, before the succours shoulde come: so that suddenly *Gaudelot* rushed vpon *Gaillan*, thinking to vnhorse him, but *Gaillan* embrased him so hard, that they both fell to the ground tumbling one ouer another, yet holding their swords fast in their hands, but it happened so well for *Gaillan*, that he had his enemy vnder him. By meanes whereof, before the other could rise, hee gaue him five or six great blowes with his sword, which in such sort amazed him, that from thenceforth he waxed more feeble. Notwithstanding, getting vp vpon his feet, hee both well defended himselfe, and better assailed his aduersary, giving sufficient knowledge of the little good will he wished vnto his enemy: who so sorely oppressed vpon him, that hee was constrained to secole and turne his back. Therefore *Gaillan* marking where he was worst armed, did hit him such a blow with his sword

vpon the arm, that hee quicke-  
lye pulled it from his shoulder. So as with the same griesse thereof he cast fowle a loude crie, going towards the tower: but *Gaillan*, vntooke him, and laid to his holde vpon his helmyt, that hee pulled it from his head. Then setting his sword to his throat, hee saide vnto him. Deceas me Sir, you shall now goe to the king to present him with other heads then you determined, but if you will not obey me, your owne shall sacrifice me. Alas, answered *Gaudelot*, I had rather yeilde my selfe to the mercy of the King, then to die presently. Whereupon after hee had giuen his faith vnto *Gaillan*, they mounted on horseback, and *Ladefis* with them. At that instant, they heard a great tumult within the tower, and beheld one of the warders running away, whom they staid to know what the matter was: who told them that the prisoners had found the meanes to vnbinde themselves, and to come forth of the dungeon wher in they were kept, afterwards how they were armed, and had already slaine the most part of his fellowes. Hee had no sooner ended his speech, when hee behelde some of those, which he spake of, ouer the gate of the tower, and three or foure others which pursued a knight, and seuen halberdiers, that fled towards a wood hard by, and when those which had gained their liberty, perceiued *Gaillan* and *Ladefis*, they cryed vnto them, that they should kill those traitors that had escaped from them. Wherefore *Gaillan* & his cosin ran before, and flew fowre of them; the rest bumed theselues with their lighones, excepting onely the knight who was taken. Then came the pris-

oners to falso *Gaillan*, whom they all knew, & after some talkke which they had together, *Gaillan* said vnto them: my Lords, I cannot tarry long with you, for I am constrained to goe forthwith to King *Lisnart*, but my cosin *Ladefis* shall bear you company vntill you haue me, I flesched you, and afterwards I pray you to come vnto the Court, & to bring with you these two knights, whom I deliuer into your keepeing, vntill king *Lisnart* haue taken such order for them, as to his Maiestie shall seeme best: and let one of you remaine here for the guard of this place, vntill I haue otherwise prouided for it. The which they promised him to performe, thus taking leaue of them hee tooke his shield from his neck, and gaue it vnto his esquires, and taking the shield of *Amadis* (as he was accustomed) the teares stood in his eyes. Wherewithal the oghers being much abashed, demanded of him, what meane hee had thus to take his shield fro his neck, and place another in steed thereof with so great sorrow. Ah, answered he, this shield belongeth to the best knight in the world, the be rehersed vnto them the mannes how hee had found it, with the rest of the armor of *Amadis*, whom hee had since searched for through all the countrey, without hearing any newes of him: wherewithall every one of them were very sorry, fearing least some great misfortune had happened him. Thus *Gaillan* followed on his way, and rode so long that (without any further trouble) hee arived in the Court of king *Lisnart*: where it was already known how *Amadis* had ended the aduentures of the Firme-Island, & gained the signories therof: in like sorte how hee was departed from thence secretly, in great anguish.

place, where every one may see them, as well to heare news of him, by such strangers as ordinarily repaire vnto his Courte, itt also to encourage all such as follow armes, to take example by him that was owner of them: who by his high knight-hood, hath gained the chieffest reputation amongst all those that ever tickled cuirasse on their backs. When the Queene vnderstood such news of *Amadis*, never was any Lady more sorrowful, and answered *Guillan*: It is great pity for the losse of so good a Knight: for I am sure that many at this day do live, which will be sorry for his losse: and I giue you most hearty shankes for that which you haue done for him and me together: assuring you, that those which will put themselves forward to find him shall give me and all other Ladies cause to wish them wel for his sake, which was so much at their commandement. But if the Queene for these newes was any whit sorry, the king and those of his company were no lesse sad: yee was it nothing to the griefe which *Orlans* sustained. For if before she was vexed for the great fault which she had committed, at that instant her paine redoubled with so great a melancholy, that it was impossible for her to stay there any longer, but she withdrew her selfe into her chamber. And casting her downe vpon her bed she began to cry: Ah wicked woman that I am, I may now well say, that all the felicity that euer I had is but a plaine dreame, and my torment is a very certaine truth, seeing that if I receive any contentment, it is onely by the dreames which do nighte sollicite me, for when I awake all froward Fortune afflicteth my poore spirit, so as if the day be vn-

to me a griesour maner of other, and darkenesse only bringeth me plesure and comfort, because my sleepes I thinke that I haue bene a sweete friend, but being awaked quite deprived of that great joy, maketh me too much to feele his absence. Almy eyes haue more teares but flocks of teares, you are much abused, seeing that beeing that you onely behold him that comforteth you: and no sooner opened, do all the torment in the world commeth at once to blinde them: at the least this death which I feele so neare at hand shall deliuer me from this care: and you sweete friend shall be revenged of the mostingre full woman that euer was borne. Then like a furious woman she rose vp, determining to throw her selfe headlong from the window downe to the ground: but *Mablis* who had followed her pretiernly such an inconuenience stayed her, telling before her the infamy which she might get, if it were but knowne that she were so misrided and moreover she did assure her that *Amadis* would shortly returne, saying unto her: How now Madam, where is the constancy of a Kings daughter, and that wisedome for which you are so much renowned? Haue you alreadie forgotten the mischike that was likely to haue happened vnto you, by means of the false newes that *Orlans* brought vnto the Courte this laste year? And now because *Guillan* hath found my *Celins* armes, is it therefore likely that he shoulde be dead? Beleeue me, you shall see him againe shortly, & he wil come vnto you so foorne as hee hath seene your letters.

This Counsell was authorisched with such persuasivre reasons, that *Orlans* spoyled parte of her torment.

But

But yet these newes so greatly troubled her minde, that had it not bene for the wisedome of *Mablis* (who often times perswaded her to be quiet) there had happened a merueilous inconuenience: but in the end shee knew so well how to preuaile with her, that shee resolued vpon this, that the Gentlewoman of Denmark would bring him againe. And as they were in these tearmes, one came to tell them that the knights and Gentlewomen which *Guillan* had deliuered from prison were arrived, wherefore *Mablis* seeking to withdraw *Orlans* from fancies, brought her where the Queene was, vnto whom the two Gentlewomen (that had kept the shield of *Amadis*) recited the lamentation which they had scene an Esquire make, when he knew the Armour and Shielde that *Guillan* had found vpon the side of the Fountaine of the plaine field. The King was likewise present in whose eyes stood a flood of

Teares, thinking assuredly that *Amadis* was dead. Then *Ladasin* and his fellows were seene to come in, who brought with them *Gandalod* prisoner, together with the other knight, whom they presented vnto the king on the behalfe of *Guillan*, declaring vnto him both the manner of the Combat, the talke that passed betweene *Gandalod* and *Guillan*, and also how that during their encounter, the knights that were in the deepe dungeon of his tower had found the meanes to deliuer themselues. Is this true said he to *Gandalod*, I caisled not long since thy father to be burned in this city, for his great treason, and thou shalt likewise be there hanged with thy companion, because thou hadst conspired my death. Then forthwith he commanded them to bee hanged ouer the City wales right ouer against the place where *Barfian* was burned as it hath been recited vnto you.

### CHAP. IX.

How the Faire Forlorne being in the poore Rocke with the Hermit, there arrived a ship, in the which was *Corisanda*, who sought for her friend *Frorestan*, and of that which happened vnto them.



Ne day the Faire Forlorne being set hard by the Hermit, neere vnto the dore of their little house, the olde man said vnto him: I pray you my son, tel me the dream that you had, when you awaked on a suddaine sleeping hard by me neere vnto the Fountaine of the plaine field. Truly answered he, I will willingly tell it you, and I most humbly beseech you likewise to let mee understand, be it for good, or bad, what you thinke thereof. After-

wards hee recited the dreame in such sort as you haue heard, keeping onely the names of the Gentlewomen secret.

Then the Hermit remained a good while pensiue, when he beholding the Faire Forlorne, he began to smile, and said vnto him: My child, I assure you, that you haue now more cause to reioyce then euer you had: but yet I would haue you know how I understand it. The darke chamber in the which you thought your selfe to be, out of which you were not able to com forth.

forth, signifieth this great tribulation wherein you now are. The Gentlewomen which afterwardes opened the doore vnto you, are some of your friends that continually solicit your cause vnto the Lady whom you so feruently loue, with whom they haue so much preuailed, that they shall withdraw you from this place. The Sunne-beame which went before them, are Letters of reconciliation that she sendeth vnto you: by meanes whereof you shall leue me. The fire that inuironed this lady, sheweth the great loue, together with the sad lamentes that she maketh for your absence, as well as you doe for hers. And by the faire garden whereunto you did bear her, drawing her forth of the flame, signifieth the great pleasure which you shall both haue at your meeting. Truly my Son, I know that seeing the habit and estate whereunto I am called, such speeches as these become me not at all: neuerthelesse knowing that it is for your good, I am sure that I do not amisse in this counselling a person so comfortlesse as you are. Herewithall the *Faire Forlorne* fell vpon the ground to kisse his feete, rejoycing that he had happened into the company of a person so holy, that knew how to comfort him so well in his aduersity, desiring very heartily, that whatsoeuer the holy man had told him, might so come to passe, and he said vnto the Hermit, my Father seeing it hath pleased you to do me so much good, as to expound this dreame, I pray you likewise to tell me the meaning of one other, which I dreamed the night before I came from the firm-*land*.

Then did hee recite it word by word vnto him. Whereupon

the aged man answered him. My son, by this you may plainly see that which already is happened vnto you, for I assure you that the place ouer shaddowed with trees, where you thought that you were, & the great nuber of people which at the first made such great ioya-  
about you, signifieth the firm *Island* which you haue conquered, to the great pleasure of al the inhabitants thereof. But the man which came vnto you with a boxe full of bitternes, is the messenger of the Lady that gaue you the letter: and your selfe doth know better then any other, whether he brought you bitterness or no, by the discourse which he had with you. The sorrow which afterwards you did behold in the persons which before were so ioyfull, are they of the *Isle*, who at this present are very heauy for your absence. The apparel which you threw off, are the teares which you haue shed. The stony place wherin you entred inuironed with water, this rock witnesseth to you what it is. The religiouse man that did speake vnto you in an vnownknown language, is my selfe, who do instruct you in holy writ, which you neither understand, nor can comprehend. Father answered the *Fair-Forlorne*. I know verily that you say the truth which giueth me great hope of that which you haue declared of the other: but the continuall grise and melancholie wherein I liue, hath already ouer-mastered mee, that I belieue if the good which you promise vnto me do not the soone ease my care, death will first seize vpon my sorrowfull corps.

Notwithstanding the Hermit knew how to perswade him so wel, that from thenceforth he shewed a little merrier countenance then before he had done, and began to wine

turne his sorrow to some solace, v-  
sing to angle for fish with two Ne-  
phwes of the olde man, that kept  
him company. Neuerthelesse, the  
most part of the time he with-drew  
himselfe into a secret place hard  
by the sea side, which was ouer-  
shadowed with diuerse sorts of  
trees: and there oftentimes he cast  
his sight vnto the *Firme-Island*,  
which put him in remembrance  
of those fauours wherunto for-  
tune had called him, & the wrong  
that *Oriana* did vnto him, hee ha-  
ving never offendred. Alas, saide  
he, haue I deserued this entertain-  
ment to be banished, without ha-  
ving offendred so much as in  
thought? Truly deere friend, if  
my death were agricable vnto you,  
you haue meane enough to give it  
me more speedily, without ma-  
king mee thus to liue in langui-  
shing. The only deniall of your  
good grace, the very first day that  
you accepted me for your knight,  
had beene sufficient at that time to  
haue made me die a thousand  
deathes. Many other lamentations  
did the *Faire Forlorne* every day  
make, in this solitary place, where-  
in he tooke so great pleasure, that  
oftentimes hee there passed away  
both the day and the night: so as  
one time finding himselfe more  
frolick in his minde, then of a  
long time he had beene, hee made  
this song following.

*Sith that the victory of right deseru'd,  
By wrong they do withhold for which I serv'd;  
Now sith my glory thus hath had a fall,  
Glorious it is, to end my life withall.  
By this my death likewise my woes release,  
My hope, my ioy, m' inflamed loue doth cease.  
But euer will I minde my duriug pains:  
For they to end my glory, and my gaine,  
My selfe haue murthered, and my glory slaine.*

Thus the *Faire Forlorne* passed  
away the time, waiting vntill fate  
or better fortune should bring  
him forth of this miferie. But it

happened that one night lying vn-  
der the trees (as hee was accusto-  
med) about the breake of day hee  
heard very nigh him the sound of a  
most sweete instrument, wherein  
he tooke so great pleasure, that he  
gaue attentiuue care thereunto a  
good while, amazed notwithstanding  
from whence it might pro-  
ceede. Knowing the place to bee  
solitary that no other there remained  
but the hermit, his two Ne-  
phwes, and himselfe: wherefore  
he rose vp, without making any  
noyse at all, and approched more  
neare to see what it might be. Then  
he beheld two young Gentlewo-  
men sitting by a fountaine, whostu-  
ning their voyses to the sound of a  
lute) did sing a most pleasant song:  
neuerthelesse fearing to trouble  
their mirth, hee stood still a great  
while without being by them per-  
ceiuied. Afterwards he came forth  
and disclosed himselfe, saying vnto  
them: Truly Gentlewomen your  
musick hath made me this day to  
loose Matins, for the which I am  
very sorry. When these women  
heard him speake (hauing not seen  
him at all vntill that time) they  
were much afraide. Norwithstan-  
ding, one of them more bold then  
her fellow, answered him: My  
friend, we did not thinke to offend  
you with this our mirth, but seeing  
we haue so luckily found you, tell  
vs (if it please you) who you are,  
and how this desert place is called.  
In truth faire Gentlewomen, saide  
the *Faire Forlorne*, this place is cal-  
led the poore Rock: wherein there  
liueth an Hermit, vpon the top  
thereof in his little hermitage. As  
for me, I am a poore man that keep  
him company, doing great and  
hard penance for the sin and wic-  
kednesse which I haue commit-  
ted. Gentle friend, answered they,  
may

may we finde in this place (for two or three dayes onely) any house wherein we may place at ease a Lady both rich & mighty, so tormented with loue, that she is even at deaths dore therewith. Trust me said he, there is no other lodging in this Rock, but the little cabinet wherein the Hermit doth lie, and one other that I do sleepe in sometime: but if the Hermit will lend you mine, I am content (to do you a pleasure) to lie in the meane time abroad in the fields, as I commonly vse to do. The Gentlewoman gaue him hearey thankes, and bidding him good morrow they departed towards a Pauilion: within the which the *Faire Forlorne* beheld a most beautifull Lady vpon a bed. Wherupon he knew that the same was shee of whom they told him. But looking farder off, he did see foure armed men walking by the Sea side, who scouted abroad, whilste fve others did take their rest, and he also perceiued a shipp at Anchor well appointed. The Sun was already vp, when he heard the Hermitage bell to ring, which made him go vp thither. Where he found the Hermit making him ready to goe to seruice: vnto whom he tolde that there were people newly arrived in the Rock, and that if it were his pleasure, hee would willingly goe call them to heare Mattins. Goe then answered the Hermit, and I will stay for them. And as he went downe the Rocke, he met the Lady, whom the knights carried toward the hermitage: wherefore he returned, to helpe to make ready the Hermit, who seeing the Lady was come, began seruice. Then the *Faire Forlorne* being amongst the women, began to remember the time when he was in the Court of king *Lisnart*, and of

the pleasure hee was wont to have with the Princeſſe *Oriana*, & therewithall he began to weepe sobriterly, that the Gentlewomen perceiued it, and did very much wonder therewith. Notwithstanding they thought that it was for the conciſion of his ſinnes, and ſeeing him young, fayre, and comely, they could not thinke what to preſume thereof. When the Hermit had made an end of ſeruice, they came to ſalute him, praying him for Gods ſake, to lend them ſome little chamber for their Lady (who was wearie of the ſea, and extremely ſick) wherein ſhe might take her rest, for a day or twaine. In truth faire Ladies, answered he, there are here no more then two ſmall Cabinets, in one of them I remaine (and if I can ſo long as I liue, never woman ſhall cometherin) and the other is for this poore man, which doth ſuch great penance, wherin ſometimes he ſleepeth, and I would be very ſory that he ſhould bee put out thereof againſt his will. Father ſaid the *Faire Forlorne*, do not let for me to doe them a pleasure, for I am very well content for this time to haue no other lodging then vnder the Trees. Well ſaid the hermit, let it be ſo Gods name. Then the *Faire Forlorne* conduced them vnto his Cabinet, where the Gentlewomen ſet vp a rich bed for their Miftrice, who was forthwith carried thither. And because it was told the *Faire Forlorne* that her ſickneſſe proceeded of extreme loue, he tooke more heede to her behaviour then to any of the rest: and he perceiued that her eyes were ſtill full of Teares, and her ſighs were at commandement: Wherefore hee drew the two Gentlewomen apart, whom in the morning hee had

had found playing on the Lute, & earnestly entreated them to tell the occation of the great ſickneſſe that their Miftrice ſuſtained. Friend anſwered they, if you marke her well you ſhall find that ſhe is very faire, although that now her diſease hath abated a great part of her beauty: for ſhee hath neither comfort nor ioy by reaſon of the abſence of a knight that ſhee goeth to ſeekē in the house of King *Lisnart*, whom ſhe ſo fervently loueth, that if ſhort time doe not graunt ſome eafe to her paſſion, it is impoſſible that her life ſhould continue long. When the *Faire Forlorne* heard king *Lisnart* named, hee could not reſraine from teares, and hee had a greater deſire then before, to know the name of the knight that ſhe loued: therefore he requested them very earnestly to tell him his name, in good ſooth anſwered the Gentlewoman, hardly may you knowe him: for hee is not of this countrey: yet is hee eſteemed the beſt knight in the world, next vnto two other of his kin. Alas my faire gentlewoman ſayd hee, for Gods ſake name him vnto me, and the two other whom you ſo much extoll. Truely anſwered they, we are contented, vpon this condition, that firſt when wee haue done, you doe tell vs whether you bee a knight or not, and afterward your name. I am content therewith, ſayde the *Faire Forlorne*, ſo great is my deſire to knowe that which I demand of you. Then one of them ſayd vnto him: the knight which this Lady loueth, is called *Don Florestan*, brother to the good Knight *Amadis of Gaule*, and to *Don Galeor*, and hee is the ſonne of King *Petion of Gaule*, and of the Counteſſe of *Salandria*. You ſay true anſwered hee, and I verily beleue that you

cannot ſay ſo much good of him as hee deſeruereth: What ſayde the Gentlewoman, do you know whiſt then? It is not long ſayd he, ſince I did ſee him in the house of Queen *Bretarie*, for whom his brother *Amadis*, and his Cofen *Agraine* did fight againſt *Alfonſes* and his two ſonnes, and thither hee with his brother *Galeor* arriuſe ſome fewe dayes after the combate: and I thinke him to be one of the faireſt knights in the worlde. As conueyning his proweſſe, I haue many times heard *Don Galeor* himſelfe ſpeakē thereof, who fought a combate with him as hee ſayde. This combate ſayde ſhee, was the cauſe that hee left my Lady in the ſelfe ſame place, where they firſt knew one another. I thinke then anſwered the *Faire Forlorne*, that ſhee is called *Carifanda*. You ſay true ſayd the Gentlewoman. In truth anſwered he, I am no leſſe ſory for her ſickneſſe then before, for I knew a *Floreflau* to bee ſo wiſe, and of ſo good beahaviour, that I am ſure hee will doe all that which ſhe shall comand him. God grant it ſayd ſhee, but ſeeing we haue ſatiſfied you, acquire you of your promeſe and tell vs who you are. Gentlewoman anſwered the *Faire Forlorne*, I am a knight who haue heretofore had more pleaſure in the vanities of the worlde then now I haue, for the which I haue abide ſharpe penance, my name is the *Faire Forlorne*. By my truthe ſaid one of them, you haue taken a good course, if you are able thereto to continue. And because there is no reaſon now to leauē our Miftrice all alone in this her great melancholy, wee bid you farewel, and doe goe vnto her to paſſe away the time with ſuch muſike as you did haue this morning.

Then the Faire Forlorne departed, but hee was presently called backe againe, for as soone as the gentlewomen had played two or three songs, they rehearsed vnto *Corsanda* all that hee had saide of *Florestan*, and that the poore man which did penance, had seen him not many dayes before. Wherefore she sent to pray him to come vnto her, and in the meane while shee sayde vnto her women: assure you this Hermit that knoweth *Florestan*, must needs be some great personage disguised. At the same instant the Faire Forlorne was come, and she sayd vnto him: my friend, my woenen tell me that you know *Don Florestan*, and that you doe very well loue him, I pray you (by the holy order that you profess) to tell me what acquaintances you haue had with him, and where you did last see him. Then the Faire Forlorne tolde her more of him then hee had tolde vnto the Gentlewmen, and how hee knew very well, that he and his brethren, with their Cosen *Agriates*, had beene in the Firme-Island: for he had there left them, and never since had seene them. Ah sayd she, I beleue that you are something a kinne vnto him, seeing the great good you report of him. Madame, answered the Faire Forlorne, I loue him intirely, as well for his valour, as also for that his father made me knight, which maketh me the more bounden vnto his children: and I am very sory for the newes that I haue hard of *Amadis* before I did come vnto this desert. What are they sayd *Corsanda*. Truely answered hee, comming hither I met with a Gentlewoman at the entry of a Forrest which sung a pleasant song for the tune, but very pittifull by reason of the matter that it con-

tayned. Then I enquired of her who made it, and shee answered me, that it was a knight, vnto whō God (if it bee his pleasure) send more ioy then hee had when hee made it, for his song doth very wel witness, that his grieve proceeded from too extreame loue. And because I liked it wel, I remained with the Gentlewoman so long vntill I had learned it: moreouer she did assure me that *Amadis* did make it, and that he did shew her the song at that time when by his melancholy hee was most maistered. I pray you sayde *Corsanda*, teach it vnto these two Gentlewmen, for by that which you say, loue held him then in as great bondage as he now holdeth me. I will doe it answered hee, both for the honour of him and also of you, althought it be a thing farre vnseemely for me to do. Herewithall he withdrew the Gentlewmen a part, and taught them the song with the tune thereof, wherein they tooke great pleasure, because the Faire Forlorne did sing it with a lamentable and soft voyce, which yeelded more harmony and aptnesse, both to the tune and the matter, then he could if hee had beene at more liberty in body and minde: and the Gentlewmen learned it so cunningly, that many times after they did sing it before their Mistris, who tarried foure dayes in the poore Rocke, & the fist shee embarked. But before shee departed, shee demanded of the Faire forlorne, whether hee would remaine any long time in that place. Madame, answered he, nothing but my death shall drawe me from hence. I doe much maruaile sayde *Corsanda*, what moueth you to doe so: yet seeing that you are in such a minde, I will in no sorte dissuade yon from it:

so saying, she entred into her ship with her compaines, bidding the Hermit farewell. Then setting saile, the winde was so fauourable, that in fewe dayes after they landed in Great Brittaine, and arriued in the Citie of London, where at that time King *Lisware* remayned. Who knowing of her arriuall, hee together with his Queene receiued her royally. The King to honour her the more, caused her to bee lodged in his owne Pallace. And some few dayes after, as they were discoursing together, the Queen sayd vnto her, Good Cosen, the King charged mee to tell you, that hee taketh your comming hither to see him so thankfully, that if you haue any thing to doe with him, he will imploy his best meanes to pleasure you. Madame, answered *Corsanda*, I giue the King most humble thankes, and your grace also: there is nothing that importuneth mee more, then the absence of *Don Florestan*, whom I thought to haue found in this Court. Cosen sayde the Queene, wee haue at this time no other newes, of him, but that hee is gone in search of his brother *Amadis*, who of late is lost, we not knowing the cause thereof. Then shee tolde her how hee had wonne the Firme-Island, and that afterwardes hee departed secretly from his fellowes: especially the manner how *Don Gaillan* did finde his armour, and what diligence hee had vied to vnderstand what was become of him. When *Corsanda* did see that shee was frustrate of her intention, and vnderstood the losse of *Amadis*, the teares stood in her eyes, saying: Alas what wil become of my Lord and friend *Florestan*, I am sure (considering the loue that he beareth vnto his brother) that if hee cannot finde him,

*Oriana* whom it most of all touched, tooke more heede vnto the matter then the musick, knowing the mischiefe whereof she was cause, and the great reason that *Amadis* had to complaine. Whereupon shee was suddenly stricken with so great sorrow, that she wents into a wardroabe, ashamed for the teates that had issued from her eyes in so good a company, from which she could not abstain. Notwithstanding as shee withdrew her selfe, *Mabila* (to couer this fault) sayd vnto *Corisanda*: So farre as I perceiue, *Oriana* is not well, wherefore I am constrained to leaue your company at this time, and to goe helpe her: neuerthelesse, if it pleased you, I would willingly knowe what was the behauor of him that caught your Gentlewoman the song, and wherefore he remayned in the poore Rocke: for no doubt hee did then knowe whao was become of *Amadis*. Then *Corisanda* rehearsed vnto her in what forte they did finde him, and the talke he had with her: but sayd shee, I did neuer see a man more pensiue, nor more faire, considering the miseries he endured. *Mabila* very suddenly began to suspe& that it was *Amadis* himselfe, who being so far from all hope, had chosen such a solitary place, because hee would not be seene of any living wight, and at the same instant shee departed towards *Oriana*, whom shee found weeping bitterly. Vnto whō (with a smiling countenance) shee sayd. Madame, in seeking after newes, sometimes one learneth

more then he thinketh vpon, witness this which I haue vnderfloed of *Corisanda*. The knight so sad, that is named the *Faire Forlorne*, in the poore Rocke, is *Amadis* and no other, who desirous to obey your commandement hath in such sort withdrawn himselfe, because hee would neither be seene of you, nor of any other person: therefore I pray you reioyce, for you shall shortly drawe him hither againe. Alas answered *Oriana*, may it bee possible? I would I might bee so fortunate to imbrace him in my armes before I die, and beleue me *Cosen* (sayd she to *Mabila*) that if I may once againe haue him, I will giue him such an occasion to pardon me, that he shall forget all the wrong which I haue done vnto him. But then very suddenly like a person doubfull and fearfull to lose that which she loued, shee began to make a greater lamentation then before, crying: Ah my *Cosen*, haue pittie vpon mee, I am in worse case then if I were dead, vnfornate woman as I am: I haue iustly lost by my folly, him vpon whom my good, my ioy, and my life doth wholy depend. How now Madame, sayd *Mabila*, eu'en when most hope is presented vnto you, doe you then most torment your selfe? Asslute you vpon my faith, if the Gentlewoman of Denmarke do not bring you newes of him, that I will finde the meanes to supply her want: being sure, that it is he which nameth himselfe the *Faire Forlorne*, and no other, and repote you vpon me herein.

## CHAP. X.

*How the Gentlewoman of Denmarke going in search of Amadis, after long treuell, castig along many strange islands, by chance she arrived in the poore Rocke, where Amadis was, who was called the Faire Forlorne, whom she knew, & how they returned together towards Oriana.*

**P**En whole dayes did the Damosell of Denmarke remaine with the Queene of Scotland, not so much for her pleasure, nor for to rest her selfe from the stormes of the Sea, as for the desire shee had to learme some newes of *Amadis*, in the country wherein shee thought assuredly to finde him: being assured that if she should returne vnto her Mistresse, without bringing her some newes, that she could not afterwards liue one hour, knowing in what anguish she had left her. Neuerthelesse, not being able at that instant to take any better course in her affaires, after she had vfed all the diligence therein that possibly shee could, shee determined to returne into Great Britaine, so sorrowfull as might be. Then shee caused a ship to be ready, wherein shee embaqued: but the destinies pitying these two persons, would in this matter make manifest how much they could performe, in giuing worldlings to vnderstand, that no man (how valiant or discreet souer) can helpe themselves without their diuine ayde. For as soon as the Mariners had weighed their anchors & hoysed their sailes, hoping to set their course for London, the winde and tempest raysed such a storme, that without any sterge at all, the shippes was tossed with so great rage, that the Mariners and all the rest despairing of health, expected no other buriall

nothing to bee discerned but skin and bone. And as the Gentlewoman and her company entred into the Chappell, hee was vpon his knees lifting vp his eyes to the heauens and praying that either by his speedy death his care might be ended, or in prolonging his dayes some present comfort might be afforded vnto him. Whilst he was thus praying, the Hermit beganne his seruice, during which time the *Faire Forlorne* did not once looke vp, to beholde any of them arriued vntill it was ended, who casting his eyes vpon them, hee knew the Damosell of *Denmarke* & the rest. Therewithall hee felt such a motion that (both by reason of his great weakenesse, as also by seeing of her that put him in minde of all his martyrdome) he fell downe all along vpon the ground, wherefore the Hermit thinking that hee had beeene dead, cryed out: Ay me is he gone? then God haue mercy vpon his soule. Saying so, a flood of teares fell from his eyes downe vpon his long hoary beard: Then he sayd vnto the Damosell of *Denmarke*: I pray you Gentlewoman for charity sake, command your Esquires that they may helpe mee to beare my fellow into his chamber, for so farre as I see it shall bee the last good that wee can doe for him. Wherupon *Emil* and *Durin* tooke him vp, neither of them knowing him. But the Damosell of *Denmarke* demanded of the Hermit what he was. Truely answered hee, it is a knight which liueth here in penance. Trust me sayd the Damosell, hee hath chosen a very auerse life, and in a very desert place. Hee hath done it, answered the Hermit, to separate himselfe from the vanities of the world. Verily sayde the Gentlewoman, seeing

you assure me that he is a knight, I will see him before I depart: and if there be any thing within the ship, which may serue his turne, I will cause it to bee left for him. It shall be well done answered hee, but so farre as I see, he is so neare his end, that I beleue hee will easse you of that labour. Herewithall the Damosell entred into the little chamber where the *Faire Forlorne* was layd, who seeing her so neare vno him, knew not what he should do: for hee thought that making himselfe to be known, he should transgresse the commandement of his *Oriana*, and also if shee departed, and he not discouered, hee should remaine voyde of all hope. In the end he concluded that it were leſſe hurtfull for him to die, then his Ladie should be displeased, therefore hee determined for resolution noe to manifest himselfe in any sorte vnto the Damosell of *Denmarke*, who sayd vnto him. My friend I haue been enformed by the Hermit that you are a knight, and because all Gentlewomen are greatly bound vnto good knights, for the benefi and pleasures that they commonly receiue at their hands in defending them, and deliuering them from many and great dangers, I had a great desire before I departed to see you, to give vnto you such prouisions as are in my ship, that shall be necessarie for your heauth. Notwithstanding, he answered her nothing, neither did hee any other thing but lament and sigh: and because that in that little Cell wherein hee remayned, there was little light, the Gentlewoman did not know whether hee were a dying or no. Wherupon she was ware of a window, which she opened, by the light whereof shee might behold him more at easse: but all the while

that she beheld him, hee neuer cast his eyes off from her, neuerthelesſe hee spake not one word, but sighed without ceasing, like vnto a wight, whose heart was ouercharged with woe, which moued the Damosel to exceeding pitrie. And comforting him in the best sorte she could, by chance shee espied a scarre which he had vpon his face, with a blow that *Arcalus* the Enchanter had giuen him, when hee rescued *Oriana*, as hath beeene recited in the first Booke. Wherfore shee thought in her minde that without doubt this was *Amadis* whom shee sought, and at the instant shee did know that he was even the same, & for the same cause shee being greaſy amased, cryed out, Alas what do I see? My Lord you are he that hath made me haue many a weary iourney to find you: this sayd, shee embrased him. Alas my Lord sayd shee, it is now high time to extend both pitty and pardon vnto her, who procured thereunto by some sinister report, hath brought you to this great extremitie (acknowledged afterwards by humilitie) are worthy of pardon, what ought these to bee which are caſed by soo much abundance of loue? Neuertheleſſe my toyall friend I will not deny but that I haue deserued exceeding punishment: for I ought to haue considered that at such times when any are in the greatest prosperity and mirth, then forswere commeth and ouerthroweth them into sorrow and misery: furthermore I ought to haue remembred me, of your exceeding vertus and honestie, which was never yet found faulty, and most of all though I had died, yet should I not haue forgotten the great seruitude of my penitent heart, which proceedeth from no other cause, but onely from the same wherin your owne is tyed: being certaine that so soone as any flame had beeene therein quenched, mine had as ſuddenly beeene therewithall acquainted: in ſuch ſort as the care which it hath had to ſwage the mortall desires therof, hath been

the onely cause to encrease the same. But I have done amisse, like unto them who being in the top of their felicity, and most assured of the love of those, by whom they are beloved (not being able to comprehend in them so much good) become jealous and suspicio[n], more by their owne imagination, then by any reason, overshadowing this bright happiness with the cloud of impatience, believeng the reports of some men (it may be wicked flandlers) of small credit, and vittions, sooner then the wittesse of their owne conscience, and certaine experience. Therefore my constant friend, I beseech you barctly to receive this Damosell (as beeing sent from her, who acknowledgeth in all humilitie, the great faulfe which she hath committed against you) who shall (better then my letter) acquaint you with the extremitie of my life, whereof you ought to have pittie, not for any of mine own desert, but for your owne reputation, who are neither accounted cruell, nor desirous of revenge, where you finde repentence and submission, especially seeing that no penance may proceede from you more rigorously, then that which I my selfe have ordained for me, and the which I doe bare patiently, hoping that you will release it, refforing unto me your good fauour and my life together, which therupon dependeth.

Herewithall a new ioy possessed the minde of the Faire Forlorne, and hee quite banished the continuall melancholy which had so long tormented him: neuerthelesse, the perplexity wherein Oriane remained, in expecting newes from him, with-held part of pleasure: wherefore he praied the Damosell of Denmarke, to aduise her selfe what she had to do, for I feele my selfe, said he, so farre beside my selfe, that I can thinke vpon no o-

ther thing, but vpon the new refi-  
tution of my life, which I haue re-  
ceiued by your meanes. I am of the  
opinion, answered the Damosell,  
seeing that these in my company  
do not know you, to tell them that  
for pittie sake, I will carry you to the  
Firme Island, only to see if by chan-  
ging the aire, you may also change  
your malady: the which was ac-  
cordingly performed. Notwith-  
standing, the Faire Forlorne before  
his departure, declared vnto the  
Hermit, how the Gentlewoman  
had so long sought for him, that  
now they were heere casuallie met  
together, onely by meere chance,  
and the storme which had brought  
her vnto the poore Rock. And for  
this cause my father, saide he, I am  
constrained to leaue you and to  
follow her, assuring you that so  
long as I liue, I shall never forgo  
the good which you haue done  
for mee, for without your good  
help, I had perished both body and  
soule. And seeing that by your de-  
uout praires (as I beleue) I haue  
beene preserued hitherto, I most  
humbly beseech you to haue your  
poore guest still in remembrance.  
And moreouer to do so much for  
me, that hereafter you would doe  
your best to reforme the Monasterie  
which I haue caused to be builded  
in the Firme-Island, as heretofore I haue tolde you: the which  
the holy man promised to accom-  
plish, and with the teares in his  
eyes, blessed the Faire Forlorne,  
who without longer stay, went a-  
boord with the Damosell of Den-  
marke. The sailes were no soone  
hoised, and the ship lanched out  
into the main, but they had so faire  
a gale in their poupe, that within a  
fewe daies after they arrived in a  
port of great Brittaine, he neithe-  
ring as yet knowne by any other but  
the

the Damosell. Then came they on  
shoare and tooke their ready way  
towards Mirefleur, where Oriane  
stayed their comming, being well  
aduised to amend the fault that she  
had made. And the Damosell in  
riding together with the Faire For-  
lorne, sayd. What ioy will my La-  
die receiue when she shall beholde  
you? beleue mee that never wo-  
man was in a more desperate case  
then she, when she vnderstood by  
Doris, the sorrowe that you had in  
receiuing her Letter: I assure you  
that shee was like to haue died, I  
doe greatly wonder how shee hath  
beene able vntill this time to sup-  
port the passion, which shee yet pos-  
sesseth. And you neede not to  
doubte but that Mabile and I were  
greatly troubled, for none of vs did  
know that my brother was sent vnto  
you, and my Lady had expressly  
charged him that in no sort hee  
should tell vs thereof, which had  
likelye haue beeene the cause of  
worse mischiefe then is yet hap-  
pened. Beleue me said the Faire For-  
lorne, I was never in greater danger  
of death, and I doe maruell where-  
upon she framed this imagination  
that shee hath conceiued against  
me, seeing that I never thought to  
doe any thing which might dis-  
please her: and although I should  
haue so faire forgotten my selfe,  
yet did I not deserue such a cruell  
Letter as shee did write vnto mee.  
For although I make not those  
bragges & hipocrisies that a num-  
ber can doe, yet doe not I forget  
to measure the fauours and graces  
which I haue receiued at her  
hand: and were not this thought  
sowne in bad ground, I am sure she  
would not be suspicio[n]ous of the fruit  
thereof, seeing that both the one  
and the other, are wholly dedica-  
ted to serue and obey her. Alas  
when Corisanda arrived in our bla-  
mitage, I did then verilye think that  
my ende was come: the good La-  
dy bewailed her passion which she  
indured in louing my brother: Mab-  
ile, too charmeably, and I died  
with displeasure, to haue so wrong-  
fully banished by Oriane. How  
many paines, wharauiles, what  
intollerable tormentes, haue I suf-  
fered in the poore Rocke, vnithe  
receiving consolacion from any li-  
ving creature, but the good Her-  
mit, who perswaded mee to pati-  
ence? Alas what hard penance haue  
I indured for her whom I ne-  
uer offended? beleue me Damosell, I was so exceedinglye troubled,  
that every houre I desired death,  
and as often did I feare to lose my  
life. But I pray you imagine, the  
despaire wheren I remayned, when  
I shewed vnto the Greate women  
of Corisanda, the song that I made  
in my greatest tribulation. And  
as hee would haue proceeded in  
discouering his doloure, the Da-  
mosell of Denmarke sayd vnto him,  
in good fauour, so faire as I perceue  
you haue both indured much sor-  
row, one for another: and there-  
fore you must forget what is past,  
and amend what is to come.

With these and such like dis-  
courses thy arrived neere vnto a  
Nunnery, which was in the midle  
of the Forrest, fourteene dayes iourney  
from London. Doe you know sayd  
the Damosell, what I haue thought  
vpon: I thinke it for the best you  
doe carry heere to rest your selfe,  
and I will go vnto my Lady, to tell  
her of your arrivall, which done I  
will send Doris backe againe, to let  
you know what youare to do. Not-  
withstanding I thinke it best that  
Eail should nor yet know who you  
are no more then he now doth, &  
that hee should carry heere with  
you

you to serue you: but Durin al-  
ready understandeth somewhat of  
the affaires betwixt Oriana & you,  
wherefore you neede not feare to  
disclose your selfe vnto him. Here-  
upon they called him, and the Da-  
mosell of Denmarke sayd vnto him.  
Brother, you were partly cause of  
the losse of *Amadis*, by the Letter  
which you carried to him, and yet  
so farre as I perceiue you haue not  
hitherto knowne him, but doe you  
thinke it possible that this Hermite  
may be my Lord *Amadis*? and ne-  
uerthelesse it is he without doubt,  
but take heede vpon your life that  
he be not disclosed by you neither  
to *Enil*, nor any other: when *Durin*

## CH AP. XI.

*How Galaor, Florestan, and Agraeis departed from the Firme-Island, to goe seeke Amadis, of whens they could haue no tydings at all, wherupon they all returned vnto the Court of King Lisuart.*

**I**T hath beeene hereto-  
fore tolde you that  
*Galaor, Florestan, and*  
*Agraeis* departed fro-  
the Firme-Island, to  
begin the search of *Amadis*, who  
was secretly departed from them.  
You must now vnderstand that af-  
ter they had traayled thorough  
many strange countries (wherein  
they performed many worthy  
deedes of armes and perilous  
aduentures, without hearing any  
newes of *Amadis*) seeing that their  
time approached wherein they  
promised one another to meeete in  
the Court of King *Lisuart*, they de-  
termined to returne thither: and  
they all did meeete euuen vpon Saint  
*Johns* day carely in the morning at  
an Hermitage hard by *London*, ac-  
cording as they had appointed.  
And the first that came thither, was

*Galaor, Agraeis* next, and shortly  
after *Florestan*, accompanied with  
*Gandalin*. Glad were they to see  
each other in health, but sorrow-  
full for the little good that they  
had done in this enterprise, as the  
teares fell from their eyes. Where-  
upon *Gandalin* shewing the dutie  
of a good and faithfull servant, said  
vnto them. Beleeue me Lords, all  
your teares cannot bring him who  
you desire to finde, except it be by  
another diligent search, which you  
may a fresh videntake. And al-  
though that you haue already done  
your best endeayour, yet ought  
you not to thinke much of your la-  
bour, but seeke him better then  
ever you did, seeing that you are  
assured thoroughly what hee  
would haue done for every one  
of you particularly, if fortune  
had offered any occasion. Now then

then if behooeue you to doe the  
like for him, for if you doe lose  
him in this sort, it shall not onely  
bee the losse of the most gentle  
knight in the world, but of the ne-  
rest kinman that you haue, and ouer  
and besides, it will be vnto you  
a great blemish. Therefore my  
Lords I beseech you, in perform-  
ing the duty of a brother, a  
friend, and a companion, to begin  
his search a fresh, without sparing  
therein at all either time or toile.  
This perswasio did *Gandalin* make,  
in weeping so extreamly, that it  
greatly pittied the three knights to  
behold him, so as they concluded,  
aftre they had beeene in the Court  
(if they heard not news of *Amadis*)  
to begin a new pursuit, & to com-  
passe the whole world about till  
they had found him: and vpon  
this determination (after they had  
heard diuine seruice) they depart-  
ed from the hermitage, and tooke  
the way towards *London*. But as  
they approched neare vnto the Cittie,  
they were ware of the King,  
who was already in the fields ac-  
companied with many noble men,  
and valiant knights: for hee cele-  
brated that day with all magnifi-  
cence, because that vpon the same  
he was crowned peaceable king of  
great *Brittaine*, which was the prin-  
cipall occasion that many knights  
came to serue him. Who beholding  
*Galaor*, and his fellowes com-  
ming towards them, shewed the  
king thereof, and they in the mean  
sealon were hard at hand. But be-  
cause *Florestan* had never before  
seen such an assembly, *Galaor* said  
vnto him. Brother behold the king.  
Now had they all three their head-  
pieces off, wherefore some in the  
company did know them all forth-  
with except *Florestan*, the King im-  
braced them, demanding how they  
fared. Then *Florestan* alighted to  
kisse his hands, the which he refu-  
sed. And because he was the Gen-  
tleman that did most of all resem-  
ble *Amadis*, and that heretofore he  
had heard speaking of him, he be-  
gan to suspect that it was his bro-  
ther, and therefore he saide vnto  
*Galaor*, I beleue that this is your  
brother *Florestan*. It is he indeede;  
if it please your Maestie, who hath  
a great desire to doe you seruice.  
Ah, saide the king, I would *Ama-  
dis* were now heere that I might see  
you all three together, what, saide  
*Galaor*, hath your grace heard no  
newes of him? No, saide the king;  
but what haue you heard? It may  
please your Maestie, answered he,  
wee haue all three sought him a  
whole yeare, yet haue we done no  
good, but lost our labour, and we  
did thinke to haue found him here  
in your Court: wherefore seeing  
your grace hath certified me to the  
contrary, I am in worse hope of  
his recouery then before. So am  
not I, saide the king, for I am per-  
swaded the heauens haue not en-  
dured him with such perfections,  
to forsake him after this manner,  
which maketh me to beleue, that  
we shall very shortly haue some  
tidings of him. Wherupon they had en-  
ded their talke, they entred into  
the Cittie, where the Queene and  
the other Ladies were inconti-  
nently aduertised of their arriuall,  
wherewith they were as glad as  
might bee, especially *Olinda*, the  
friend to *Agraeis*, who very lately  
was aduertised, that he had passed  
vnder the arch of faithfull louers,  
and shew expected his comming  
with as great devotion, as *Corisande*  
did the arriuall of *Florestan*. Then  
*Mabille* imagining to do *Oriana*  
a pleasure, ran to aduertise her:  
but she found her selfe drawn into

into her chamber, where shee sawe her leaning her head vpon one of her hands, and reading in a booke, to whom she saide: Madame, will you please to come downe to see *Galaor, Agraises and Florestan*, who are now newly heere arriuied? Whē shee heare her speake nothing of *Amadis*, a newe feare strook at her heart, so that shee knew not what to doe, and the teares distilled from her eyes in such abundance, that her speech failed. Neuerthelesse, in the end, not beeing able to dissemble her griefe, shee answered *Mabila*: my cosin and sweet friend, how would you haue me to go see them? in good sooth, I haue not my minde so well setled that I may dissemble or hide that, which in their presence I ought to doe. Moreouer mine eyes are ouerswollen with much weeping, and (that which worse is) it is impossible for to behold those, whom I did neuuer see but in the company of your cosin, whom I haue so highly offendēd. Herewithall her heart was likely to haue left her sorrowfull body, and shee cryed. My God how doe you permit mee wretched woman to liue, being so worthy of death? Ah my deere loue, I doe now feele a double griefe for your absence, seeing *Galaor* & the rest to returne without you, whome you loued as deere as your selfe, who knowing the iniury and wicked act that I haue cōmited against you, shall haue iust cause to procure my ruine, whereunto I consent with a good will, seeing that so vnduisedly I haue beene the meanes of your losse. Herewithall shee had fallen downe all along, if *Mabila* who streight espied it, had not staied her vp, saying vnto her: Madame, will you always continue these strange passions? I know well

that in the end, you will publish that to your shame, which we doe most desire should be keperete. Is this the constancy which you ought to haue, especially seeing that day by day we expect to haue good newes by the Damofell of *Denmarke*? Alas, answered shee, you speake at your pleasure, is it possible that shee may finde him, hauing the charge bur to seek him onely in *Scotland*, seeing that his brethren haue in a manner compassed all the *West* without hearing any newes at all of him? You abuse your selfe, saide *Mabila*, it may bee that they had found him, but that hee kept himselfe secret from them, the which he wil never do frō your Gentlewoman, knowing that shee is priuie to both your loues. And therefore be of good cheere vntill her returne, and then doe as you shall thinke good: and for this time, let vs goe if it please you towards the Queene who demandeth for you. Well, answered *Oriana*, I am content to doe what you will. Then shee dried her eyes, and went in the Queens chamber, into the which the three knights were already entred: who seeing her comming did their duty vnto her: at the same time the King held *Galaor* by the hand, vnto whom he said: behold I pray you, how your good friend *Oriana* is impaired, since you did last see her. In good faith, answered *Galaor*, your Maiestie faith true, and I would with all my heart, that might doe her any pleasure, that might purchase her former health. Herewithall *Oriana* smiled, saying vnto *Galaor*, God is the only comforter of all men, so that when his pleasure is, my health shall be restored, and your losses recovered, which no doubt are great, for so

deere a brother *Amadis* was vnto you. And I would that the trauell which you haue taken to seeke him in farre countries, had brought some fruit, as well for the good of you and yours, as also for the seruice of the King my father, vnto the which hee was wholly adicted. Madame answered *Galaor*, I trust that wee shall very shortly haere some newes of him, because he is the knight that I haue euermore seen most valiantly to resist all extremities. God grant it said *Oriana*, but I pray you cause *Don Florestan* to come neere vnto vs, that I may more plainlye beholde him, for I haue beene tolde that hee is the knight that doth most resemble your brother *Amadis*. Wherupon *Galaor* called him, and he came & saluted *Oriana*, who rooke him by the hand, & they three sate downe together. Then the Princesse imagined that she did verily beholde him, who beeing absent from her, shee had day and night before her eyes, and therefore shee began to blissh and change her colour. Now had *Mabila* in like sort withdrawn her selfe, together with *Olinda*, to giue a better occasion vnto her brother *Agraises* more priuately to speake vnto her: and therewithall hee seeing them in a place so convenient, came and saluted them, then at their request he sate downe betweene them, in taking *Olinda* secretly by the hand. And shee who did languish for his loue, was the gladdē that might be, being sure of his constancy, by the prooef which he had made passing vnder the arch of loyall louers in the Firme Island, in recompence whereof shee would willingly haue giuen him better entertainement, if she durst. But the presence of so many witnessses, took from them

not onely the familiarity, which otherwise they would haue giuen the one to the other, but also the facility and liberty of speech, so that their eyes onely serued to supply this default, which they imployed therein according to the affectiōns of their passioned harts. And as they were in these pleasant tearms there was heard from the chamber as if it had been the voyce of some oppressed with grief, wherfore the king would needs know who it was? It may please your Maiestie answered an Esquire it is *Gandalin* & the Dwarffe, who no sooner beheld the shield and armour of *Amadis*, but they made and yet continue the strangest lamentation that possibly may be. What sayde the King, is *Gandalin* here? He is if it like your Maiestie answered *Florestan*. It is very neere two monethes since I did finde him at the foot of the hill of *Sangrin*, as hee was seeking his Maister, and because I did tell him that I had already fought him in euery place, hee was content to come with me. In good faith said the King, I haue alwaies esteemed *Gandalin* for such a one, as now he sheweth himselfe to be, for I did neuuer see any Esquire to loue his Master better then hee doth.

When *Oriana* heard these words, especially how that *Gandalin* was returned without *Amadis*, shee was in such a perplexity, that shee was likely to haue swooned betweene *Florestan* his armes, who not knowing the cause of her sudden passion, and fearing to affright the King and the company, called *Mabila*, who forthwith doubted such a mischance. Wherfore leauing *Agraises* alone with *Olinda*, shee came vnto *Oriana*, and caused her secretly to depart, into her chamber, and to lie downe vpon her bed,

bed, where shée remained not long, but that rising vp as it were almost beside her selfe, shée sayd vnto *Mabila*: Cosen, you knowe that since our comming to this Cittie, there hath passed neuer a day wherein wee haue not receiued sore displeasure. Therefore I am determined to withdrawe my selfe for a certaine time vnto my Castle of *Mirefleur*, for my heart tellich me that in changing the ayre, I shall also change my afflictions, and that my troubled spirit shall there finde rest. Madame, answered *Mabila*, I am of the same opinion, to the end that when the *Damosell of Denmarke* doth returne, you may more priuately speake with her, and pleasure him that shée (I hope) shall bring with her, the which would be very hard, yea almost impossible to doe in this place. As you loue mee then sayd *Oriana*, let vs not tarry any longer: for I am sure the King and *Qucene* will very willingly giue vs leaue.

Now you must vnderstand, that this place of *Mirefleur*, was a little Castle most pleasantly seated two leagues from *London*, builte vpon the side of a hill, and compassed vpon the one side with the Forrest, and vpon the other with many Orchards, full of all sorts of trees and pleasant flowers: moreouer it was inuironed with many great Fountaines, which watered it on all parts. And because that once the King (being there on hunting with the *Qucene*) seeing that his daughter tooke great pleasure in the place, hee bestowed it vpon her, and afterwards shee caused a Nunnery to bee builded within a bow shot thereof, whereunto shee sometimes went to recreate her selfe. But that I may not degresse ouer

farre from my first discourse, *Oriana* according as shee had determined, came and demanded leaue of the King and *Qucene* for her departure, the which was easily granted vnto her: and therefore shée purposed to depart the next day very earely in the morning. And because that *Galer* and his consorts would in like sort returne to make a new search for *Amadis*, finding the King at leasure, they sayd vnto him: If it please your Maiestie, wee were greatly to be blamed if wee should any longer defere the seeking of *Amadis*, because my fellowes and I haue sworne neuer to rest in any place, before wee haue heard of him, therefore it may please your grace to giue vs leaue to depart to morrowe, to doe our endeauours. My friends answered the King, I pray you deferre your departure yet a fewe daies longer, in the meane season I will cause thirty knights to depart from hence, who shall goe & begin this voyage: for I haue great neede of such knights as you are, for an enterprise which is hapned vnto me, the which importeth me greatly both in goods and honour, it is a battaile which I haue appointed against King *Cildadan* of *Ireland*, who is a strong and imighty Prince. And to let you vnderstand the cause of this ware, *Cildadan* hath married one of the daughters of King *Abies*, whom *Amadis* flew in *Gaule*. And although time out of minde, the realme of *Ireland* hath euer beeene tributarie vnto the King of *Great Brittaine*: neuerthelesse to haue an occasion of quarrell this *Cildadan* refuseth the payment thereof, and sendeth me word that he will put one hundred of his knights in battaile against the like number

of mine, vpon this condition, that if hee overcome he will redouble the tribute which I doe demand of him, otherwise he will hence-forth remaine free and acquitted, the which I haue condiscended vnto. So my friends, I doe most earnestly entreat you, euen as you loue mee, not to forsake mee in this my greatest neede, knowing assuredly, that my enemies are strong, and determined to worke my displeasure, but by your good helpe and the right that we haue, we shal easily overcome them, then shall you goe seekke out *Amadis*, as you haue determined, and you shall take as many of my knights with you as you please. When they heard this request which the King did make vnto them, there was not any amongst the, that was not content to obey him, seeing his necessity so great, although that thereby the quest of *Amadis* was delaied: and at the same instant they promised not to forsake him. During this cōference, *Mabila* sent to seekke *Gandalin*, for shée would speake with him before shée went to *Mirefleur*, who came vnto her: and as soone as hee did see her, he could not possibly refraine from weeping, nor shē likewise. Afterwards hauing some-what easid their hearts with their exceeding teares, *Gandalin* spake first, saying vnto *Mabila*: Alas Madame, what wrong hath *Oriana* offered, not onely to you, but vnto all your lignage together, causing you to lose the best Knight in the world: Ah, how ingratefull hath shē shewed her selfe vnto you for the seruice which you haue done vnto her? and that which is yet worst of all, she hath wronged him that neuer offended her either in word or thought: wherefore I may well

answered *Mabila*, ( thinking to speake for the aduantage of *Amadis*) was the occasion of all this mischefe. Then she recited vnto him at large, the whole discourse of the three peeces of the sword, as you haue heard in the first booke. And assure thee *Gandalin*, said she, that neither the Damosell of *Denmarke* nor I, were euer able to drue it from the fantasie of *Oriana*, but that she was forsaken by him, so as shee still perceiuing that shee was contrarie by the Damosell of *Denmarke* and me, did hide her selfe from vs, and vnawares to vs both she wrot vnto him, that vnhappy letter which *Darin* did bring him, by the which is sprung the whole sourse of this mischefe. Whereof shee hath since that time, often e-nough repented her: for from the first houre that she did heare of *Amadis* his losse, shee hath received so great sorrow and griefe, that it is impossible to receiue any more: and neuerthelesse, we haue been in a manner very glad of her punishment, seeing that she hath not yet feared to procure his displeasure, that of her hath so well deserved. All this discourse did *Oriana* heare, who was in her wardrobe: and perceiuing that they had changed their talke, shee came forth as if she had heard nothing at all. And as shee would haue spoken vnto *Gandalin*, the teares distilled from her eyes, and she began to tremble so extreamely, that she fell downe all along vpon the floore, crying. Gentle *Gandalin*, if thou art the same that thou shouldest be vnto thy maister, reuenge vpō me forthwith, the greate miserie which vnjustly he endureth. Madam, answered hee, what would you haue mee to do? I pray thee, said she, kill me: and since I haue most iniuriously

caused his death, thou oughtest not in reason to deser the reuenge thereof, for I am sure he wold haue done more for thee. Saying so her speech failed, and shee swooned as though shee had bin departed. But *Mabila* accustomed to such qualms, did releeue her with a present and fit remedy, that when shee came to her selfe againe, shee cried wringing her hands. Ah *Gandalin*, thou doest mee great wrong, thus long to deser my end: I wold to God that thy father were in thy place, I am sure that hee wold be stir himselfe better the thou doest. Madame, answered *Gandalin*, God defend me from such disloyalty, I should truely play the part of the notablest villaine in the world, if I should but onely thinke such a thought, much more if I should commit two so great treasons, one against you, and the other against my Lord, who cannot liue one onely houre after you. And I wold neuer haue thought that so wicked cousell should haue had any place within your spirit, for the incertainty that you haue of my maister his death, who could haue hardly endured this wrong which you now in these words haue offered him, without endangering his life, for death commeth not but at the will and pleasure of God: who hath not bestowed these fauours vpon him euer since his nativitie, that for any iniurie that you haue done vnto him, he will permit that he shouldest yet die. Many other reasons and perswasions did *Gandalin* vse to *Oriana* which gaue great eafe to her matidom, by means whereof shee said vnto him: *Gandalin* my friend, I am determined to morrow morning to depart vnto *Mirefleur*, to expect either life or death, according to the newes which the Damosell

Damosell of *Denmarke* shall bring vnto me. And because I shall remaine there some long time, I pray thee vnder the colour of seeing *Mabila*, to come and visit vs often-times, for me thinkes my sorrow decreaseth when I doe see thee. Madame, answered *Gandalin*, I am ready to obey you in whatsoeuer it shall please you to command mee. This said, he tooke his leaue of her, and as he departed from thence, he passed by where the Queene was, who caused him to be called, and then shee saide vnto him. *Gandalin* my friend, wherfore didst thou forsake thy maister? Madame, answered he, it was sore against my will, and to my great griefe. Then hee rehered the manner how hee departed from the hermitage, and the complaints and lamentations that he made, especially he deela-  
red what his manner and behauour was, when he found him in the bottom of the valley, which moued the Queene vnto such pittie, that shee shed luke warme teares thereat. Whereunto *Gandalin* taking good heed, said vnto her. Madam, your highnesse hath reason to lament the losse of my Lord, for hee was your graces most humble servant. Nay rather my good friend and protector, answered she, and I wold it were the Lords pleasure, that wee might haire such speedy newes from him, as might glie vs cause to rejoyce. And as they talked together, *Gandalin* cast his eye vpon *Floristan*, who was talking with *Corisande*, whome *Gandalin* knew not: but hee thought her to be one of the fairest Ladies that euer he had seene, therefore hee beseeched the Queen to tell him who shee was, the which shee did, and the occasion wherefore shewas come into great *Brittaine*, as also the loue which she did beare vnto *Floristan*, for whose sake she staid at the Court: if shee doe loue him, said *Gandalin*, shew may well haue that her loue is imployed vpon him, in whome althoouȝt remainteth, shd he be such a one, that hardly may his equal be found in all the world: and moreover Madame, I assure you, that if yowr grace did know him so well as I, you would note finde me any knight more then he, for he is of a most valiant hea- and high resolution. He seemeth to be such a one, answered the Queen, further more: hee is of so good a grace, and allied to so many good knights, that it is impossible but that hee shold bee such a gentle knight as thou hast reported him to be. In the meane season *Floristan* entertained his Lady and Mistres, whom he loued most seruently; & hee not withouȝt a daule for shew was passing faire, a rich Lady and allied to the noblest houses in all great *Brittaine*. Who having remained yet some few dayes in the Court after his returne, shew determined to depart, and taking her leave of the king and Queene, shee took her journey toward her own countrey. Two whole daies together did *Floristan* accompany her, who promised her that so soone as he heard any newes of *Amadis*, and that the bataille was past betwixt the two Kings, *Zisnur* and *Cridador*, (if he remained alio) hee would come vnto her to tarry with her a long time: then taking his leave of her, hee returned vnto the Court. But you must vnderstand, that *Oriana* who had not forgotten her determination of going to *Mirefleur*, departed the next morning with her traine, where shew had not long remained; but that shee perceiued the amendant of her health,

health, and with the same, her hope increased to see him, whom shee so greatly desired. And because that the king had appointed, that during her aboade in that place of *Mesrefleur*, the gage should continually bee kept, and that nobody should enter theron: *Oriana* foreseeing (for the great desire shee had that it should be so) the comming of *Amadis*, shee sent to tell the Abbesse, that shee should send vnto her the keyes of the Nunnerie gardens, to walke thither sometimes for her recreation, the which shee accomplished, which were hard adioyning to the Castle, but yet inclosed with very high walles. And one day as *Oriana* walked there, accompanied onely with *Mabila*, seeing the place favourable and fit for her purpose, as if *Amadis* were returned, shee began to thinke of him in such sort, and vpon the pleasure shee should receiue by his presence, that in speaking to her selfe shee sayd: Ah my onely hope, my solace and my onely refuge, wherefore art thou not here with mee, seeing at this present I haue the meanes both to giue vnto thee, and also to receiue of thee, such ease and contentment as we haue so oftentimes desired to receiue one of another? At the least I wil not depart from hence vntil I haue wholly satisfied the hurt which by my ouer-great folly I haue procured vnto you, but I will here attend your comming. And if Fates or fortune doe permit mee to beholde you here shortly, I promise you, sweete loue, to giue you the sure contentment that your fervent loue hath promised vnto you a long time: but if my misfortune shall bee an hinderance vnto your speedy returne, your only absence

shall bee the meanes to hasten my end: wherefore I beseech you to take pitty on this my weakeesse, and to succour mee, for I liue and yet languish in extreme bate-nessse. And seeing that euer hither to you haue beeene obedient vnto mee, without contradicting me in any sort, now the necessary beeing such, I pray you by that power which you haue giuen mee over you, that you would come to deliver mee from death (which I feele to approach) and eare not otherwise your delay will cause you ouer late to repent my unhappy end. In this sort did shee speake if *Amadis* had beeene present, when *Mabila* brake off her thought, and *Oriana* changing her talke, sayd to her: Cosen, seeing that we haue the keyes of this place, it were best that *Gandalin* should make some oþers like vnto these, to the end that your Cosen beeing returned, may goe and come hither when & as often as hee shall please. It is wel aduised answered *Mabila*. And as they were consulting, there vs one of the Porters sayd to *Mabila* Madam, *Gandalin* is without, who desirthe to speake with you. Let him come in, answered *Oriana*, for he hath beeene brought vp within a long time: and also he is your brother vnto *Amadis*, whom God preserue. God so doe sayde the Porter, it were a great damage that so good & vertuous a knight should sustaine any hurt. Then went he forth to goe seeke *Gandalin*, and in the meane time *Oriana* said vnto *Mabila*, I pray you see how your Cosen is beloved and esteemed of all men, yea euen of the basest sort of people, that are in a manner, voyde of all vertue, it is true answered *Mabila*. Then *Oriana* sayde, what would you haue

haue mee doe but die? having beeene the onely cause of the twinc of him who is more worth, then all the men in the world, and who did better loue me, then his owne selfe? Ah accursed be the houre wherein I was borne, seeing that by my folly and light suspition, I haue done vnto him so great and so much wrong: Madame, answered *Mabila*, I pray you forget these imaginacions, and onely arme you with hope, for all this which you both say and doe, serueth in no sort to eas your dolour. Herewithall *Gandalin* entred in, whom *Oriana* caused to sit downe by her: and after some conference which they had together, she recited how she had sent the Damosell of Denmark to seeke *Amadis*: vnto whom shee had written a Letter containing that which you haue heard, and what words also shee had giuen her in charge to say vnto him, therfore said the Princesse, in thy opinioþ doest thou thinke that he will pardon me? Madame, answered *Gandalin*, Me thinks you are little acquainted with his heart, for I am sure for the least word that is in the letter, hee will tearre himselfe into an hundredth peeces for you, if you do but onely command him: by more likelyhood may you imagin whether he will be glad to come see you, yea or no. And be you assured that seeing the Damosel of Denmark, hath undertaken the charge to finde him, that she will sooner accomplish the same, then all the persons in the world beside: for I do not thinke (seeing hee did hide himselfe from me) that it is euer possible for any other but shee to finde him out. For this cause Madam, you ought henceforth to liue in good hope, and to reioyce more then euer you did, to the end,

dore or not, I pray you let vs, said *Oriana*. And for that present they made an end of their talké, waiting a convenient time to finisht their enterprise: and according to their appointment, about mid-night (when every one were found a-sleep) they secretly rose vp, and came down into the Court, it was then in the time of the moones waining, and for that cause the darknes did bear the more sway: wherefore *Oriana* began to bee afraid, and said vnto *Mabila*: I pray thee hold me by the hand, for I am almost dead with feare. No, no, I will defend you well enough, answered shee, am not I cosin to the most valiant knight in the world? But although *Oriana* did tremble, yet could shee not refraine from laughter, & said vnto her. Let vs go then garded: for I will henceforth think me safe being to be garded by you, who are so valiant in deeds of armes. Seeling that you knowe me so well, answered *Mabila*, let vs march on boldly, and you shall see how I will finish this aduenture: wherein if I faile, I sweare that for one whole yeare, I will neither hang shield about my necke, nor strike one stroke with the Launce. Herewithall they began to laugh so loude, that they might haue bin heard very easily, and at the same instant they came vnto the dore, where they tried the first key, which they found maruailous fit, and the second also, wherefore they opened them without any difficultie, and entered into the Orchard. Then layde *Oriana* vnto *Mabila*: Cosin all that we haue done is to no end, except some-what more be done: how may your cosin retурne when wee once haue brought him into the place, considering the height of the wal? I

haue already thought vpon that, answered she, it shall be very easie for him by the corner of this wall, against the which wee will set by this pece of timber, and with the same and our helpe together, he may easilie mount vp to the top thereof: but it behooueth that the chiefe helpe come from you, for you onely reape the commodite thereof. Wee shall see what will happen, sayde *Oriana*, and therefore for this time let vs depart, and goe to sleepe, the which they did. And as they laid them downe in their bed, *Mabila* embrasing *Oriana*, saide vnto her. Madame, I would that the knight for whome you attempt so many fair enterpises, were now in my place, vpon this condition, that I did goe to sleepe else-where, because I would haue none of your complaints, for the harme that hee might doe vnto you. Gentle cosin, answred she, if he were here, I would ente very much before I would complaine of it. And so long they continued this pleasant discource, that loue stinged them so vehemently, as every amorous Reader may easilie imagine what they wanted, to cause them sleep till the next morning that they went to hear diuine seruice: and at their retурne they found that *Gandalin* was already come from *London*, whom they led with them into the garden, where they told him how they had tryed the keyes, and what words *Mabila* had vised in the prouing of them. By my faith Madame, answered he, you do now put me in minde of some iniurious speech that I vised of you vnto my Lord, thinking thereby to haue comforted him, but therewithall he had thought to haue taken my head fro my sholders, and shortly after I did abide

sore penance for thus leasing, because that I fell asleepe, and when I awaked, I neyther found my bridle nor saddle, for my Master rode away, and had hidden them of purpose to stay me from following of him. Wherefore seeing that he was lost, and that he had left mee, for the words that I had spoken of you, I was driuen into such a Melancholy, that I had slaine my selfe if I had had a sword to do it: friend, *Gandalin*, answered *Oriana*, thou

needest not to excuse him, I know that he loueth me without dissimulation, therefore I pray thee put me no more in remembrance of that mischiefe, whereof I am the chiefe cause, except thou wile force my Soule and body to part asunder, for thou knowest that I stand betwene life and death, according to the newes that the Damosell of Denmarke shall report vnto mee.

## CHAP. XII.

How King *Lisuart* being set at the Table, there came before him a strange knight arm'd at all points, who defied him: the conference that *Florestan* had with him, and how *Oriana* was comforted with the good newes that she received from *Amadis*.

**K**ing *Lisuart* being ready to rise from dinner as *Galaor*, and *Don Florestan* were taking their leaue of him, to conduct *Corisande* onward of her iourney, there entred into the hall a strange knight arm'd at al points, except onely his head-peece, and gauntlets. Who kneeled before the King, and deliuered vnto him a Letter sealed with fve seales, hee said vnto him. It may please your Maiestie to command this Letter to be read that you may vnderstand the cause of my comming vnto you. Then the king tooke the Letter and read it, and because it referred to the knights report, he answered him thus. Friend you may performe your charge when it shall please you. Hereupon the knight rose vp, and said aloude, King *Lisuart* I defie thee, and all thy allies in the behalfe of the mighty Princes, *Famangomed* Giant of the burning Lake, *Carte-*

to except, or the most cruell warre that may happen vnto thee, hauing to doe with such mighty and redoubted Princes. When the King had long giuen eare vnto him (to shew that he made small account of such threats) he smiling thereat, answered him. Trust mee Knight, they that gaue thee this commissiōn, doe thinke farre amisse of me, for I haue all my life time thought a dangerous warre, better then a shamefull peace, because I were worthy of great reprehension, both of God and man, being King ouer such a mighty nation, if I should now through base cowardise, suffer them to bee affilid with cruelty. Wherefore returne and tell them, that I had rather desire all the daies of my life, that warre which they do threaten me withall, and in the end to die in battaile, then to accord vnto a peace so much to my dishonor. And because that I desire to know their mind at large, I will send a Knight of mine owne with you, who shall in like sort declare vnto them my whole intentiōn, and yet I know not if by their lawes all Embassadours or messengers are as free from danger with them, as they are with Christian Princes. If it please your Maesticie, said the knight, that he shal go with me, I will bee his warrant, and will conduē him vnto the burning lake, which is in the Isle of Mongaze, where they are assembled with the rest of the hundred, to come and meet with you: assuring you that wheresoever *Don Queragant* abideth, he will never suffer wrong to be done vnto any. Truely answered the King, hee sheweth himselfe therein to bee a noble Prince: but tell mee, if it please you, what your name is. Sir, answered hee, I am called *Landin*, Nephew

to *Don Queragant*, who am come with him to reuenge the death of King *Abies of Ireland* mine uncle, neuerthelesse wee could never yet mee with him that did slay him, and further we doe not well know whether hee bee dead or not. I belieue you well, answered the king, and I would you did certainly know him to be liuing, and that he were here, for all the rest would go forward well enough. I know well, said *Landin*, wherefore your grace saith so, you esteeme him to be the best knight in the world, neuerthelesse, I hope to bee in the battaile which is prepared for you, and there to performe such worthy deedes of armes, to your disaduantage, that it may be you will change your opinion. By our Lady, answered the King, I am sorry for that, I had a great deale rather, that you had a desire to remaine in my seruice, notwithstanding this much I tell you, that there you shall finde those that can tell how to answere you well enough. And you (sayde the Knight) many other that will pursue you even vnto shamefull death. When *Florefan* heard him speake so boldly, and to the preuidence of *Amadis*, his coler was moosed therewithall, and hee saide vnto *Landin* Knight, I am a stranger in this Countrey, and none of the Kings subiects, so that for any thing which you haue saide vnto him, I haue no occasion to answer you, chiefly because that here at present, so many Knights my betters, ouer whome I will not in any sort insult. Neuerthelesse, seeing that you cannot finde *Amadis*, which is (as I think) for your great profit, I am ready to fight with you, and will in his stead defend the quartel that you haue against him. And

And to the end that you may the better know me, I am his brother *Florefan*, who doe offer vnto you the combat vpon this condition, that if I can ouercome, you shall be bound to gine ouer the quartel that you haue against him, and if you ouercome mee, reuenge part of your anger on mee. Yet thus much by the way, you must not thinke it strange that I haue beeene so forward in the matter, for I haue no lesse cause to sustaine his quartel against you (be being abilent) then you haue to maintaine that of King *Abies*, whose nephew you are, beeing very well assured that my Lord *Amadis* is of power sufficient to reuenge me, if Fortune permit you to haue the aduantage ouer me. My Lord *Florefan* answered *Landin*, so farre as I perceiue, you haue a desire to fight, but I cannot satisfie you at this time, being in no sorte at mine owne disposition, as well for the affaires which by another I am appointed to discharge, as also for that I did promise before my departure from those Lordes that haue called me into their company, not to enterprize any matter before the Battaille, that might hinder me to affit and do my best endeouour therein: and therefore at this present hold me excused, vntill the battaille be ended, then I promise you to accept the combat which you demand, and soone I cannot intend it. Beleue me said *Florefan*, you speake like a worthy Knight: for those that haue the like charge that you now haue, ought to forget and denie the fulfilling of their owne will, to satisfie those from whom they are sent, otherwise they might bee blamed, seeing that although you should get the victory of this combat, to your honour, yet it might be, that their affaires might be foerrowed thorow your may and hinderance, because they doe all repose themselves xpon your charge, therefore I haue concens to defer it vntill the time that you keepe quite, and because you shall haue afterwards faile, behold here is my gage. At the same instant hee threw downe his gloue, and *Landin* his Gauntlet. Wherefore by their owne co[n]sentfull was remyted vntill the thirtieth day after the battaille. Then *Landin* tooke his leue of the king, who deliuered vnto him a Knight that was called *Filipinel* to goe with him to defie the Giants as *Landin* had done him, and because that the Court was troubled for these unhappy newes, the king desirous to make the company merrie, said vnto *Galor*, it is come into my remembrance faire knight to doe one thing princely for you, that will greatly delight you. Then he caused his youngest daughter *Leonor*, with all her Gentlewomen to be called, who were all apparelled in one liuerie, each of them hauing chaplets of flowers vpon their heads: Whom hee commanded to dance and sing, as they were accustomed to doe oftentimes. And you my darling (said he to *Leonor*) begin with the same song that *Amadis*, made for the loue of you being your Knight. Herewithall the young princiſſe did sing.

## The Song.

Leonor (sweete Rose, all other flowers excelling,  
For thee I feele strange thoughts in me rebelling,

I lost my liberty when I did gage,  
Upon those lights whiche set me in a maze,  
And of me fere, am now become a thrall,

to except, or the most cruell warre that may happen vnto thee, hauing to doe with such mighty and redoubted Princes. When the King had long giuen eare vnto him (to shew that he made small account of such threats) he smiling thereat, answered him. Trust mee Knight, they that gaue thee this commision, doe thinke farre amisse of me, for I haue all my life time thought a dangerous warre, better then a shamefull peace, because I were worthy of great reprehension, both of God and man, being King ouer such a mighty nation, if I should now through base cowardise, suffer them to bee afflieted with cruelty. Wherefore returne and tell them, that I had rather desire all the daies of my life, that warre which they do threaten me withall, and in the end to die in battaile, then to accord vnto a peace so much to my dishonor. And because that I desire to know their mind at large, I will send a Knight of mine owne with you, who shall in like sort declare vnto them my whole intention, and yet I know not if by their lawes all Embassadors or messengers are as free from danger with them, as they are with Christian Princes. If it please your Maesticie, said the knight, that he shal go with me, I will bee his warrant, and will conduet him vnto the burning lake, which is in the Isle of Mongaze, where they are assembled with the rest of the hundred, to come and meet with you: assuring you that wheresoeuer *Don Queragant* abideth, he will never suffer wrong to be done vnto any. Truely answered the King, hee sheweth himselfe therin to bee a noble Prince: but tell mee, if it please you, what your name is. Sir, answered hee, I am called *Landin*, Nephew

to *Don Queragant*, who am come with him to reuenge the death of King *Abies* of Ireland mineuncle, neuerthelesse wee could never yet meete with him that did slay him, and further we doe not well know whether hee bee dead or not. I beeleeue you well, answered the king, and I would you did certainly know him to be liuing, and that he were here, for all the rest would go forward well enough. I know well, said *Landin*, wherefore your grace saith so, you esteem him to be the best knight in the world, neuerthelesse, I hope to bee in the battaile which is prepared for you, and there to performe such worthy deedes of armes, to your disadvantage, that it may be you will change your opinion. By our Lady, answered the King, I am sorry for that, I had a great deale rather, that you had a desire to remaine in my seruice, notwithstanding this much I tell you, that there you shall finde those that can tell how to answere you well enough. And you (sayde the Knight) many other that will pursue you vnto shamefull death. When *Florestan* heard him speake so boldly, and to the preuidence of *Amadis*, his coler was mooved therewithall, and hee saide vnto *Landin*, Knight, I am a stranger in this Countrey, and none of the Kings subiects, so that for any thing which you haue saide vnto him, I haue no occasion to answere you, chiefly because that here are present, so many Knights my betters, ouer whome I will not in any sort insult. Neuerthelesse, seeing that you cannot finde *Amadis*, which is (as I think) for your great profit, I am ready to fight with you, and will in his stead defend the quarrel that you haue against him. And

And to the end that you may the better know me, I am his brother *Florestan*, who doe offer vnto you the combat vpon this condition, that if I can ouercome, you shall be bound to gine other the quarrel that you haue against him, and if you ouercome mee, reuenge part of your anger on mee. Yet thus much by the way, you must nece thinke it strange that I haue beeene so forward in the matter, for I haue no lese cause to sustaine his quarrel against you (he being absent) then you haue to maintaine that of King *Abies*, whose nephew you are, being very well assured that my Lord *Amadis* is of power sufficient to reuenge me, if Fortune permit you to haue the advantage ouer me. My Lord *Florestan* answered *Landin*, so farre as I perceiue, you haue a desire to fight, but I cannot satisfie you at this time, being in no sorte at mine owne disposition, as well for the affaires which by another I am appointed to discharge, as also for that I did promise before my departure from those Lordes that haue called me into their company, not to enterprize any matter before the Battaille, that might hinder me to assist and do my best endeouour therein: and therefore at this present hold mee excused, vntill the battaille be ended, then I promise you to accept the combat which you demand, and soone I cannot intend it. Beleeue me said *Florestan*, you speake like a worthy Knight: for those that haue the like charge that you now haue, ought to forget and denie the fulfilling of their owne will, to satisfie those from whom they are sent, otherwise they might bee blamed, seeing that although you should get the victory of this combat, to your honour, yet it might be, that their affaires might be foreshadowe your may and hinderance, because they doe all repose themselves xpon your charge, therefore I haue contente to defer it vntill the time that you be quite, and because you shall haue afterwards faile, behold here is my gage. At the same instant hee threwe downe his gloue, and *Landin* his Gauntlet. Wherefore by their owne consentall was remayned vntill the thirtieth day after the battaille. Then *Landin* tooke his leaue of the king, who deliuered vnto him a Knight that was called *Pilipinel* to goe with him to defie the Giants as *Landin* had done him, and because that the Court was troubled for these very happy newes, the king desirous to make the company more, said vnto *Galcer*, it is come into my remembrance faire knyghts to doe one thing princely for you, that will greatly delighte you. Then he caused his yongest daughter *Leonor*, with all her Gentlewomen to be called, who were all apparelled in one liuerie, each of them hauing chaplets of floures vpon their heads: Whom hee commanded to dance and sing, as they were accustomed to doe oftentimes. And you my darling (said he to *Leonor*) begin with the same song that *Amadis*, made for the loue of you being your Knighe. Herewithall the yong pryncesse did sing.

## The Song.

*Leonor (sweete Rose, all other floures excelling,  
For thee I feele strange thoughts in me rebelling,*

*I left my liberty when I did gafe,  
I gan those lights whiche set me in a mase,  
And of me free, am now become a thrall,*

Put to such paine, that serue thy friends withall,  
And yet doe I esteem this paine a pleasure,  
Underfond for those whom I love out of measure.  
Leonor sweete rose, &c.  
For those I feale, &c.

A little joy in any others fife,  
My heart is thine, thy selfe my chieft delight.  
But yet I see the more that I doe loue,  
More smart I feale, more paine, more griefe I groane.  
Well let loue rage, though he be angry ever,  
We take my loue for gaine, though I gaine never.  
Leonor sweete rose, &c.

And though to you I manifest my woes,  
My maridome, my smart another knoutes :  
One unto whom, I secretly inuoke,  
Who is the cause, of this my fire, my smoke.  
She hath a flue to cure my euillife griefe,  
And only she may yelde me some relife.

Leonor sweet rose, all other flowers excelling,  
For those I feale strange thoughts in me rebelling.

And seeing that it happeneth  
out so conueniently, I will tell you  
upon what occasion *Amadis* made  
this song. One day the Queene  
being talking with *Oriana*, *Mabile*  
and *Olinda* (*Amadis* coming in  
to her chamber), shee called her  
daughter *Leonor*, and saide vnto her: that she should Princely goe,  
and request *Amadis* to bee her  
knight, and that from thenceforth  
he should serue her, without bea-  
ring affection to any other bnt to  
her. The little Princesse thinking  
that her mother did speake in good  
earnest, did rise vp, & with a good  
grace came and made this request  
vnto *Amadis*, whereupon all the  
Ladies and Gentlewomen began  
to laugh. But *Amadis* taking her vp  
in his armes, said vnto her. My lit-  
tle Lady, if you will haue me to be  
your Knight, bestow some pretty  
fauour vpon me in token that you  
are my Mistresse, and that I am  
your seruant. I haue nothing, an-  
swered shee, but this carquent of  
gold that I were vpon my head.  
The which she suddenly vnticed &  
gaue it vnto him, wherewithal eue-  
ry one againe began to laugh, see-

ing how verely shee beleaved the  
words of *Amadis*, who for her sake  
did make this song. And the same  
did *Leonor* and her playfellowes  
sing, as you haue heard, the which  
did greatly delight all the compa-  
ny: which being ended, they made  
a lowly obeisance, & returned vnto  
the place where the Queen sat. Then  
the king tooke *Galar*, *Flore-  
stan* and *Agrates* apart, who were  
desiring leaue of his Maiestie to  
accompany *Corisande* some part of  
her way, and he said vnto them: My  
friends you are the three persons  
of the worlde, vpon whome I doe  
chiefly rely. You know the bataile  
that I haue agreed vnto with King  
*Cildadan*, which is to be performed  
in the first weeke of the moneth of  
August: wherein wee shall finde  
against vs many strong Gyants, who  
are bloudy people, & full of crue-  
tie. Wherefore I pray you not  
so vndertake henceforth any mat-  
ter or aduenture, that may let you  
from keeping of mee company:  
otherwise you shall doe me a most  
great displeasure, because that  
by your ayde I trust in God, that  
the pride and presumption of  
mine enemies shall bee abased,  
and wee shall remaine conque-  
rours, and they quite ouerthrown  
and discomfited.

Most royll King, answered  
*Galar*, there is no neede to vs  
either prayer or commandement  
vnto vs, to perswade vs to bee in  
a place so famous: for although  
wee had not at all any such inten-  
tion as we haue to serue your  
Maiestie, yet the desire to figh against  
such personages, should neuer  
leesse not bee diminished in vs, know-  
ing that it is the onely duty of all  
good Knights, to hazard them-  
selves in such enterprises, where  
they may gaine honour and re-  
putation.

hope that my Lord *Amadis* would  
haue returned hither againe very  
shortly, and now hearing you in  
these scarmes, I am quite deprivid  
of this benefit. I pray thee good  
friend *Gandalin*, sayd shee, be not  
angry. I swear to thee by my faith,  
that if I could looke with a more  
countenance, I would willingly  
dot it, but I cannot otherwise do:  
for my heart yet remaining in con-  
tinual heauiness, will in no sorte  
permit me, and were it not for the  
consolacion which thou hast given  
me, I assure thee that I should not  
haue the power to stand vpon my  
feet, so much doe I feele my selfe  
grieved with this warre that my  
father hath vndersaken, the suc-  
cess whereof I doe exceedingly  
feare, by reason of thy Majestie, his  
absence. Madame aduised *Gan-  
dalin*, how shall now be any  
where so secret, but that hee shal  
haue newes thereof; and I am ver-  
y sure, that notwithstanding all  
the disgraces and disfauours that  
you haue done vnto him, by dis-  
charging him from your presence,  
yet will hee not fail to be there,  
knowing that it is a thing of great  
importance both vnto the King &  
you: nor that hee will presumpto  
come before you, but hee will  
make himselfe knowne in place  
where hee may doe you seruice,  
in hope that you will pardon him  
for the fault that he never did, nor  
ever thought to doe. God grant  
sayd *Oriana*, that thy words prove  
true. And as they were in these  
discourses, there came a Gentle-  
woman who told *Oriana* that the  
Damosel of Denmarke was attiued,  
and shee hath broughte vnto you  
many faire presents. Then feare &  
hope sealed vpon the Princesse  
heart, in such sort, that without  
power to answer one word, shee  
began

began to tremble, the which *Mabila* perceiving, she answered the Gentlewoman: friend will her to come in hither all alone. The gentlewoman returned to performe her charge, but in the meane time beleeue mee, neither *Mabila* nor *Gandalin* knew how to behaue themselves, beeing either hopelesse of the good, or fearefull of the bad newes that the Damosell of *Denmarke* might bring. Who shortly after entered in with the countenance of a person more pleasant then penisue: and after her duty done vnto *Oriana*, shee presented her with a Letter from *Amadis*, saying vnto her: Madame, my Lord *Amadis* recommendeth him must hably vnto your good grace, whom I haue found, as this Letter (written with his owne hand) will assure you. *Oriana* received the Letter, and as she thought to haue opened it, her spirit was so rauished with exceeding ioy, as all the parts of her body remained without any power, or ability once to moue or stirre, because they would supply no other office, but to participate in this most happy newes: so that *Oriana* therewithall fell down in the place where she stood. But very suddenly shee was raised vp againe, & she opened the Letter, wherin shee found the ring that she sent vnto *Amadis* by *Gandalin*, at the same time that hee fought with *Dardan* at *Winsore*, which she presently knew. Wherefore in kissing it shee sayd so loud that she might easily be heard: O ring diuinely kept, blessed be hee, that euer did make thee so fortunate, giuing from hand to hand all the pleasure that may bee desired, then put she it vpon her finger, and beganne to reade the Letter. And when she beheld the sweet words

that *Amadis* vsed, & the the thanks that he did yeeld vnto her, for the careful remembrance that she had of him, by the which he was raised from death to life, there was never any woman more ioyfull, and casting her eyes vp to heaueti, shee said: O God of heauen and earth, creator of all things, praised be thy holy name, because thou hast vouchsafed in mercy to looke vpon mee, by the diligence of this Gentlewoman. Herewithall shee withdrew her selfe apart and tooke the Damosell of *Denmarke* by the hand, saying vnto her: I pray you faire Lady tel me how you did find him, how long you haue bin together, and the place where you haue left him. By my faith Madam answere the Damosell, after my departure from you, I arived in *Scotland*, where I remained certaine dayes without hearing any news of him, by meanes whereof (beeing as it were voide of hope to satisfie your desire) I tooke shippint intending to returne vnto you: but wee had so sore a tempest vpon the Sea, that mauger all our Mariners, the ship was driuen vnto the poore Rocke, where my Lord *Amadis* the remained. Whom at the first sight we did not know, for he was changed in name, habite, and countenance, and hee was likely to haue died in our presence, when in a manner hee was not succoured by any of vs. Notwithstanding in the end I was ware of a wound that he had vpon the face, the which was heretofore giuen vnto him by *Arcaulus*, wherby I still suspected that it should be he, and in the end hee manifested himselfe vnto me. And continuing her discourse, shee recited wholly all that which you haue heard in the beginning of this History. Then loue & pity affar led

led the heart of the Princesse, in so strange a manner, that she entreated the Gentlewoman to speake no more of the troubles of *Amadis*: but onely to tell her how hee did at that present. Madame, answered shee, I haue left him in the Forrest, staying to haire some newes from you. And how may wee secretly send vnto him, saide *Oriana*: for if you returne vnto him so suddainly, there might some matter bee suspected. For the same occasion, answered the damosel, I haue brought with me *Darin*, whome I will send back when it shall please you, faining that I haue forgot parte of the presents that I brought vnto *Mabila*. It is very well aduised, said the Princesse. Afterwards shee declared vnto her, how *Corisande* gaue vnto them the first hope that *Amadis* was not dead, and that hee it was that named himselfe the *Faire Forlorne*. It is true, answered the Damosell, and hee is yet so calld, neither is hee determined to change his name, vntill hee haue first scene you, except you command him the contrary. That shall then be very shortly, saide *Oriana*, for his cosin and I haue taken such order, that hee may come hither when it shal please him, and not be perceived by any body. We haue the key of this gardē (by the which the way shal be easie and secret for him) the which wee will send vnto him by *Darin*, therefore call him vnto vs, to tell him what *Amadis* must doe at his hither arriall. Hereupon *Darin* came vnto them, & *Oriana* shewing him the garden, said vnto him. *Darin* doest thou see this orchard, *Amadis* must enter into it ouer the corner of this wall, & when hee is once in, heere are the keyes of the dore thorow which he must come vnto vs, the which thou

shalt carry vnto him, and shall further aduertise him, whatsoeuer thy sister shall tell thee in my behalfe. Which said, shee departed leaving them together, and as soone as shee was entred into a great Hall, shee forthwith sent vnto the Damosell, willing her to bring those presents which the *Scottish* Queene had sent vnto her & *Mabila*, the which she did. But as shee vnfolded the clothe wherein they were wrapped, (as if shee had suddainly bethought her selfe) she cried. Alas Madam, I haue left the tokens that were sent vnto *Mabila*, there as we did lie the last night, and if *Darin* do not speedily returne, they may be in dangar to be lost: now *Darin* knew the matter well enough, and therefore hee made as though hee were vnwilling, and on the other side, *Mabila* faining to be very angry, said vnto him: *Darin* my good friend, will you do me this pleasure, to returne and fetch that which your sister hath forgotten? Madam, answered he, I will do whatsoeuer you shall please, but by my faith, I could bee very well content, that it would please you to appoint some other to doe it, because of the toyle that we haue indured in our wearisome iourney. My friend, said she, I pray thee do so much for me, & be thou sure that I wil reward thee: in good sooth, saide *Oriana*, it were greate reason so to doe, I understand you well enough, answered *Darin*, although you mocke mee. At this word they all began to laugh, seeing the counterfeit discontentment that he made to returne back. Well goe to, said hee, seeing that I must beare this flour with mee, I will to morrow morning depart. The they all retired, and *Darin* went to *London* to see *Gandalin*, vnto whom he declared all that you haue heard: after-

afterwards he departed to returne vnto the Abbie where *Amadis* remayned expecting newes from *Oriana*. Neverthelesse before hee departed, *Gandalin* willed him to tell *Enil* his Cosen, that he should endeauour himselfe to serue the faire *Forlorne* diligently, and that

whilst he remayned with him, hee should likewise enquire after some newes of *Amadis*: and this mesage did *Gandalin* send vnto him, to cause him the lesse to suspect him in whose seruice hee remayned, that *Amadis* might the more secretly bring his matter to passe.

## CH AP. XIII.

*How the Faire Forlorne sent Enil his Esquire vnto London to cary a new armour to be made for him, and what aduenture chanced vnto him in going to Mirefleur.*

**B**ut because wee will not too much di- gresse from that which happened vnto the *Faire Forlorne*, you shall vnderstand, that after he had made some small stay in the Monestarie where he was left to waite for newes from *Oriana*, hee found himselfe very able to put on armour: and therefore hee sent *Enil* to buy him horse and armour with a shield of *Sinope*, set full of golden Lions. Who returned vnto him the selfe same day that *Durin* arriued at the Abbie, where he was well entayned by the *Faire Forlorne*, who in the presence of *Enil* demanded of him, where he had left the *Damosel of Denmark* his sister: my Lord answered hee, at her departure from you shée forgot behinde her certaine presents, that the *Queene of Scotland* did send vnto my Lady *Mabila*, the which I doe come to seeke. Then turning vnto *Enil* hee sayd, *Enil* your Cosen *Gandalin* recom mendeth him very heartily vnto you. Whiche *Gandalin* answered the *Faire Forlorne*. My Lord said

*Enil*, hee is a Cosen of mine, that long time hath serued a Knight called *Amadis of Gaule*.

Then the *Faire Forlorne* without further enquiring tooke *Durin* apart, who did wholly recitem to him all that which he was com manded to tell him on the behalfe of *Oriana*, and how shée stayed for him at *Mirefleur*, being very well determined to give him kin d entertainment: likewise what order was taken for his secre comming and going, when and as often as hee pleased, and also how his brethren *Galoor*, *Florestan*, and *Agrates* his Cosen, remayned at the Court, expecting the battaile that is to bee performed very shortly, betweene King *Lis nart*, and *Cildadan* of *Ireland*, especially the challenge of a com bat that *Famongomad* and the other Gyants and knights had sent vnto the King, if hee would not giue *Oriana* to be a waiting maid vnto *Madafima*, and to be marri ed shortly after to *Basigant* the el dest sonne to the sayde *Famongomad*. Whene the *Faire Forlorne* heard this discourse, his heart

was ready to breake with extream rage: purposing with himselfe, that the first enterprise that hee would undertake (after hee had seene his Lady) should be to finde out *Famongomad*, and to fight with him, for the iniury that hee would doe vnto *Oriana*. After that *Durin* had thoroughly aduertised him of all that hee had in charge, hee tooke leaue of him to returne vnto *Mirefleur*, leauing him in the Abbie, fully determined from thenceforth to abate the pride of these Gyants: beeing glad notwithstanding in that hee had recovered the good fauour & grace of *Oriana*, on whom his life and honour did wholly depend. Then the next morning before the breake of day, he armed him with the same Armour that *Enil* had brought, and mounting on horsebacke, hee tooke the way towardes *Mirefleur*: but hee had not ridden farre, (thinking vpon the pleasure that was promised vnto him, and knowing how neere hee was vnto it) when making a carreer he beganne to curuet and mannage his horse so gallantly, that *Enil* was greatly amazed thereat, thin king that hee had never beeene other then an Hermite, and he said vnto him: my Lord, vntill I may judge of the effect and force of your courage, I may very well say that I did never see a more expert knight, nor one that can doe more with a horse then you. *Enil*, an swered the *Faire Forlorne*, it is the valiant hearts of men, not their outward shew, that doth accom plish haughty deedes and hardy enterprises, therefore thou haning said thy mind by my countenance, mayest judge hereafter of my courage according as I shall deserue, thou and discerne.

Thus rode the *Faire Forlorne* all the day long discoursing with *Enil* of diuerse pleasant matters, for those gloomy cloudes which in times past had ouer-shadowed his thoughts, were now ouerblowne, and the desire to beholde her by whom hee liued, shined on ly in his minde. But when it grew to bee somewhat late, hee lodged in the house of an ancient knight, that both gaue him kinde enter tainment and great cheere: ne verthelesse the next morning hee departed. And because he would not be knowne at any time, at his departure from his lodging hee put his helmet vpon his head, no uer putting it off but when hee tooke his rest, and hee did ride from that time forth seauen dayes together without finding any ad uenture; vntill vpon the eight day following, hee arriued at the foot of a mountaine, and hee did see comming towardes him along a path, a knight mounted vpon a mighty courser, who seemed so great and so strongly made that hee was almost like a Gyant. Who comming somewhat neere, hee cal led vnto the *Faire Forlorne*: knight I forbid you to passe this way, except you doe first tell mee that which I desire to knowe. There withall the *Faire Forlorne* did pre sently knowe him (although hee had never seene him before) for the shield which he did beare had in afield Azure three flowers Or, the like whereof he remembred that he had seen in the *Firme-Island*, & that he was *Don Quedragant*. For the which hee was very much dis pleased, as well because he had not determined to fight, vntill he had first found out *Famongomad*, as also because hee would not in any sort disobey the commandement that

Oriana had sent vnto him by Durin: and hee greatly feared such a let, knowing that *Quedragant* was one of the best knights in the world: neuerthelesse hee made himselfe ready for the loust. The which *Exil* perceiuing, hee sayde vnto him: my Lord I beleue that you will combate this Diuell. Hee is no Diuell, answered the *Faire Forlorne*, but one of the strongest knights I knowe, of whom I haue heretofore heard great commendation. Then *Quedragant* drew neare and sayde vnto him: Knight, you must tell me whether you belong vnto King *Lisnart* or not. Why so sayd the *Faire Forlorne*. Because sayde he, that I am mortall enemy to him and all his, and when I shall either knowe or meete with any of the, I will cause them to die an euill death if I may.

The *Faire Forlorne* was so greatly enflamed with rage to heare him thus to menace, especially the King and all his Knights, that hee answered *Quedragant*: You then are one of them that haue defied that good King? I am euen the same sayde hee, that will doe all the iniurie that possibly may bee done both to him and his. And how are you called? answered the *Faire Forlorne*. *Don Quedragant* sayde hee. Trust me *Don Quedragant* answered the *Faire Forlorne*, although you are a valiant Knight and descended of a Reyall linnage, yet haue you enterprised an exceeding great folly, in defying thus the most mighty and best King in the worlde: for euerie discrete knight ought to attempt no more then hee may well effect, seeing that they who doe once passe the bonds of their ability, and power, are to bee ac-

counted more haire-braind then hardy, and more vaine-glorious then valiant, the which is no better then folly. As for mee I am no subiect but rather a straunger vnto the King against whom your quarrell is: yet haue I alwaies had a desire to doe him what seruice I could, and therefore you may account mee of the number of those whom you doe desie, and combate with mee if you list, otherwise followe on your way. Beleue mee sayde *Quedragant*, I thinke the little experiance you haue of mee, maketh you to vete these braues: notwithstanding I would very willingly know your name. I am called answered hee, the *Faire Forlorne*: but I thinke for the small renowne that yet is blaſed abroade of mee, you doe now knowe mee as well as you did before. And although I am a straunger, yet haue I heard that you doe seeke *Amadis* of Gaul: neuerthelesse I beleue it were most for your profit, not to mee with him, considering but what I haue heard reported of him. What sayd *Quedragant*, dost thou thinke better of him/vnto whom I doe wish so much hurt) then of mee? Trust mee thou shalt repente it, therefore defend thee if thy heart will suffer thee. Although (answered the *Faire Forlorne*) that against another I would haue bin content for this time to haue excused mee from the combate, yet will I very gladly vndertake it against you, for the threatnings & presumptions that you doe offer vnto me.

This sayd, they ran one against the other with so great force that the horse of the *Faire Forlorne* was likely to haue kist the ground with his nose, & himselfe was wounded in

in the right breast with the shiver of a Launce, and *Don Quedragant* vnhorſed and wounded betwene the ribbes. Yet hee rose vp againe lightly, and drew his sword running against the *Faire Forlorne*, whom hee tooke vpon a sudden whilſt that hee was busie in mending and setting his helmet right: and before that hee was aware, *Quedragant* flew his horse vnder him, but the *Faire Forlorne* feeling him to founder, alighted downe. Then hee being exceedingly vexed for so vilde a part, hee layd vnto *Quedragant*: knight, it seemeth that you haue never done any valiant deeds of armes, in that you haue so villainously slaine my horse, it might haue sufficed you to haue wreaked your anger on mee, and not vpon a poore beast. Neuerthelesse I am in good hope that the wrong which you haue done both to him and mee shall redound vpon your owne head. *Don Quedragant* answered him not one word, but couering him with his shield, he came and layd at the *Faire Forlorne*, who in a short time made him feele how well hee could repay whatsoeuer was lent vnto him: and to heare them fight, one would haue iudged that more then tenne knights had been fighting together. Then ioyned they so close that they leſt their weapons, and fell to wraftling, endeauouring to throw one another downe, but that was impossible for them: wherefore they let goe their holde, and without any breathing, they betooke them againe to their blades, and layd loade one vpon the other so couragiously, that their Esquires beholding that cruell combate, did thinke it impossible but that they should both twaine die by the

hands of each other.

And thus they continued from three of the clocke in the afternoone vntill it grewe towards night, without either resting them or speaking together: but euen at the same instant *Don Quedragant* was so wearie and faint, that his heart failed him, and he fell downe in this place. By meanes whereof the *Faire Forlorne* stepped vnto him, & as hee pulled off his helme to strike off his head, *Quedragant* taking ayre beganne to breath: the which the *Faire Forlorne* perceiuing (although hee was ready to performe with his arme, the reuenge that he meant to take of his enemy) hee stayed his blow, the sworde being ready to lop off any limme vpon the which falling downe it might chaunce to light: and hee sayde vnto *Quedragant*, it is bight time for thee to think vpon the health of thy soule, for thou art but a dead man. Whē *Quedragant* perceiued that he was in such daunger, hee was so astonished that hee answered vnto the *Faire Forlorne*, Alas if I must die, yet at the least let mee first be coaſſed.

If thou wilt liue any longer said the *Faire Forlorne*, yelde thy ſelfe vanquished; and promise to performe all that I shall command thee. I will willingly fulfill whatſoever ſhall please you, answered *Don Quedragant*, although I am not vanquished: for hee is noe overcome that without ſhewing one iot of cowardise, hath defended his quarrell euen with the losſe of his breath, and vntill that he did fall at his enemies feet: but he onely is overcome, that for want of heart, feareth to doe what he may. Truely ſaid the *Faire Forlorne* you ſpeak the very truthe, and

I am very glad that I haue learned so much of you. Goe to, sweare to me the to obey my comandement. The which *Quedragant* did. But the *Faire Forlorne* called his Esquires to witnessse, and then sayd: I will that at your departure from hence, you goe vnto the Court of king *Lisuart*, from whence you shal not depart, vntill the same *Amadis* (that you seeke bee there arriued. Then you shall yelde your selfe vnto his mercy, pardoning him for the death of your brother King *Abies of Ireland*, for that as I haue heard, they both of their owne free will challenged each other, and had Combate together, so as this revenge ought not to bee pursued. Moreouer I will that you giue ouer the challenge that you haue made against the King, and those that serue him, without bearing armes heereafter against any one of them. All which conditions *Quedragant* promised to performe, although it was to his great griefe. Then he commanded his Esquires to prepare a litter for him, to carry him vnto *London*, according to his promise. In like sort the *Faire Forlorne* hauing seazed vpon the horse of *Quedragant*, in stead of his owne that was dead, deliuered his shield vnto *Enil*, and followed on his way: vpon the which hee behelde four young Gentlewomen that were flying with a Marlin, who had both seene the Combate, and heard all the talke of the two Knights: and for the same cause, they spake vnto the *Faire Forlorne*, earnestly entreating to come and lodge in their Castle, where hee should bee entertained with all the honor that might bee deuised, for King *Lisuart* his sake, vnto whose seruice hee had shewed himselfe so

affectionate. The which offer of theirs hee refused not, for hee was weary with the great trauail he had sustained al the day. And as soon as he was come into his lodging, they themselues vunarmed him, to see if hee were in any sort dangerously wounded: but hee had no other hurt then that vpon his brest, which was a matter of nothing. Three whole daies together did the *Faire Forlorne* tarry there, and then departed, riding all day long without finding any aduenture: and the night following he lodged in a litte Inne that stood on the way, from whence he departed the next morning very early, and about mid-day hee came vnto the top of a small hill, from whence he might behold the city of *London*, and the castle of *Mireflear*, where his Lady *Oriana* remained.

Heerewithall he was surprised with exceeding ioy: neuerthelesse, hee fained as though he knew not the Countrey where hee remained, and demanded of *Enil* if he did know it. Yea very well, my Lord, answered *Enil*, beholde yonder is the citie of *London* where King *Lisuart* at this present remaineth. In faith, saide the *Faire Forlorne*, I would be very sorry that either he or any other should know mee, vntill my deedes deserue it, and that by my deedes of Armes I might be thought worthy to bein such an assembly. Therefore goe thou to see the Esquire *Gandalin*, from whom *Durin* did of late bring the commendations: and see that thou doest wisely enquire what every one saith of me, as also when the battaile of King *Cildoden* shall be performed. What? answered *Enil*, shall I leaue you all alone? Care not thou for that, sayd he, I haue beeene many times accus-  
med

med to go in that sort: yet before that thou doest depart, let vs espy together a fit place where thou maist find mee at thy retурne. Then they rode on a little further, when vpon a sudden they beheld close by the syde of a riuere two pauillions armed, & in the midst of them a most faire tent. Before the which were many knights & Ladies sporting, and ten other knights arm'd for their guard: and there was neuer a paillion that had not fve shields hanged vp, and as many Lances standing before it. Herewithall the *Faire Forlorne* fearing to bee disturbed of his enterprise, would auoid the combate & took his way vpon the left hand. The which the knights perceiving, called vnto him, saying, that he must needs giue one stroke with the Launce for the loue of the Ladies. But he answered them that at that instant hee had no desire thereunto. For sayd he, you are fresh and many, and I alone, and very weareie. Beleeue me sayd one of them, I thinke rather that you feare to lose your horse. And why should I lose him sayd the *Faire Forlorne*. Because sayd the knight, hee must haue him that doth throwe you downe, & I am sure that your losse were more certaine then the gaine that you should get vpon vs. Seeing it is so, answered hee, I had rather depart, then come into any such danger, which said, he passed on. Truly sayd the knights, in our iudgements your armes are defended more with faire wordes then valiant deeds, so that they may euer bee found enough to place ouer your Tombe when you are dead, yea although you should liue one hundred yeares and more. You may think of mee what you please answered the *Faire Forlorne*, yet cannot that in any sort demis-  
nish my reputation. I would it were your pleasure, sayd one that stepped somewhat before his fel-  
lowes, that you would breake one-  
ly one stiffe with mee, I would be accounted a traytor, or not in one  
whole yeare to mount vpon a  
horse, if you departed not by and  
by to seeke your lodging without  
yours. Sir answered hee, it is that  
which I doe feare, and which cau-  
sed mee to turue out of the hight  
way. At this they all began to  
laugh, and so scoufe him saying,  
behold the valiant champion, that  
spareth himselfe against a battaile:  
yet for all this the *Faire Forlorne*  
made no account, but followed on  
his way vntill he came vnto a riuere  
side, but as hee would haue passed  
ouer, he heard a voyce that cryed:  
stay knight, stay. Then he turned  
his head and looked backe to see  
who it was, and perceiued a Gen-  
tlewoman, in very good order  
mouted vpon a Palfrey comming  
towradess him, who at her arriuall  
said vnto him, *Leonor* daughter to  
King *Lisuart*, together with her  
Gentlewoman, doe all desire you  
to maintain the lousts against these  
knights, and to shew that you will  
doe something for the loue of La-  
dies. How? answered hee, the  
daughter of the King, is she there?  
I truely answered the Gentlewoman.  
Beleeue me sayde the *Faire Forlorne*, I shoulde be very sorry to  
haue a quarrell with any of her  
knights, for sooner would I doe  
them seruice for the honour of so  
faire a Lady. Notwithstanding  
seeing that it is her pleasure that I  
should otherwise do, I am cōtent:  
vpon this condition, that they re-  
quire no more then the loust only.  
Hereupon he tooke his shield, and  
Lance, and rode straight vnto the  
pauil-

pauillions, and the Gentlewoman rode before to aduertise the knyghts thereof. Wherefore it was not long before that hee who first of all had threatened the Faire Forlorne that hee would make him to lose his horse, offered himselfe to run the first course, whom he presently did know, for hee did very wel marked him, when he gybed at him, and he was very glad that he had so good an occasion to bee reuenged. Therefore they couched one against the other, setting spurs vnto their horses, meeting with so great an incouter that the knyght broke his stiffe to shiuers, and the Faire Forlorne hit him so rudely, that hee ouerthrew him to the ground, and hee brake one of his thighes with three of his ribs, with the griesse whereof hee remayned quite astonished. In the meane season Enid ran to take his horse, & the Faire Forlorne turned vnto him that he had ouerthrown to whom he said, Knight if you keepe your worde you must not in one whole yeaire come vpon any horsebacke, the which you did promise if you could not win mine. So saying, he heard that another knyght cried vnto him: knight keepe thee from me. Wherefore he left the other, and putting his Lance in the rest, he clapt his spurres to his horse, & ran on so rightly against him that had challenged him, that hee vnhorshed him euen as hee had done the first, and as much did he vnto the third and fourth, before his Launce did breake: whose horses he caused to be taken, and tyed vnto a tree. Then he would haue bin gone, when Enid (who had seene that another knyght did make him ready) said vnto him, Sir you haue not yet done, behold the fist which is comming towardes you.

Then the Faire Forlorne turned his head, and did see a knyght comming vnto him who brought four Launces, who being come said vnto him. Sir knyght my Lady Leonor hauing very well perceiued the valour that you haue shewed against her knyghts, and knowing that your Launce is broken, shewest thou these four, and shewest thou that so long as they will last, not to spare them against the rest that may come to revenge their companions. I most humbly thank that good Kings daughter answered he, and I pray you to tell her grace, that for the honor of her, I wil so long as I liue do what she shalbe pleased to comand me: but I would neither stay, nor come one step forwards for any of these knyghts that remaine, so ouer proud haue I found them in constrayning mee to fight against my will, when I would haue passed along on my way.

Herewithall hee tooke one of the Launces when very suddenly he beheld the fist knyght ready to make his course against him: wherefore hee presently pulled downe his visor and couching his stiffe he ranne against him, and he did hit him with so great force that hee vnhorshed him, as also all the rest, not breaking his Launce, but onely vpon the last who beheld himselfe better then any of the others, for before the Faire Forlorne could ouerthrew him, he made two Launces flie to shiuers, but at the third time hee made him to lose his stirrops, and hee fell to the earth. And because hee kept his scate better then any of his fellowes, I will tell you who it was: his name was Nicoran de Pust Crainsif, who in those days was one of the best runnes with

with a Lance in all the Realme of great Britaine. After that the Faire Forlorne had thus ouerthrown them all, he lent their horses vnto the Princesse Leonor, praying her to aduertise her knyghts that hereafter they shoulde bee more certeines vnto those that passe by the way, or else that they shoulde learn to sit faster on horbacke then they had done: for they might chace to meeke with such a knyght that would make them go on foote as they deserued. This message did make the knyghts so much ashamed, that they answered not one word: but they were greatly abashed that they were all vnhorshed by him, whom they so little esteemed, neither could they once imagine what hee shoulde bee: for his armes were yet vnkowne. And Nicoran said, beleue me if Amadis were living, I would iudge that it was he, and I know not any other that would so haue parted from vs. It is not he answered Galsas, for he would never haue runne against vs that are his friends. Did you not see sayd the other, how he also refused the ioust? Assure you it is he and no other. I would it were sayd Giontes, King Lisiart his Nephew, our shame shoulde then bee the lesse: but whosoeuer hee be, God shild him from harme. The diuell goe with him answered Lasamor, he hath broken my thigh, and my ribbes: yet was I the caule thereof, being the onely procurer of mine owne hurt, and the first that began the combate. In this sort did the Faire forlorne escape from them, & went forward on his way, very ioyfull for his good fortune, having yet one of the four Launces whole in his hand. Now was it exceeding hot, and he was very dry: and therefore beholding an

Hermitage a farre off, he tooke his way thither, as well to give God thanks for his vitorie, as also to drinke, if there were any to be had: and when hee came vnto the gate thereof he found three Gentlewomens Palfrayes sadled and bridled, the which two Squires did holde. Then hee alighted and entred in, where hee did see no body. Wherefore after that hee had ended his prayers he came forth againe, and hee did see the three Gentlewomen, who were refreshing themselves by the syde of a very shadie fountaine, towards whom he went, and comming vnto them he saluted them. They demanded if hee were any of the knyghts of King Lisiart. Gentlewoman answered he, I would I were worthy to deserue so good company: but I pray you tell me which way are you going at your departure from hence. The right way to Mirefleur sayd the Gentlewoman, where we shall finde our Aunt (who is Abbesse of the Monestary there) and my Lady Oriane King Lisiart his daughter. And because the wea-ther is hot as you see, wee are constrained to stay here in the coole, and it were not amisse if you did as wee doe. Seeing you are so pleased answered hee, I am content to beare you company: for me thinks this fountaine is a very fit place for one to rest in, but doe you knowe how it is called? No sayde they: neuerthelesse there is another yet more faire in the bottome of this valley, which is called the fountaine of three channels. Herewithall they shewed him the place, although that he did knowe it better then they, for many times hee had there beeene a hunting, and he had already determined that the same shoulde bee the place where Enid should

should finde him at his retурне from *London*. And as they were in this sorte discoursing together, they perceiued vpon the same way a cart which was drawne with twelue horses and guided by two Dwarffes, within the which were many armed knights inchain'd, their shields were hanged all along the sides thereof, and amogst them were Ladies & Gentlewomen that cryd out, & wept most pitifully: before whom march'd a Gyant armed with plates of fine steele, hauing vpon his head a marueilous bright shining helme. But hee seemed to bee so great, that it would haue feareid any man to behold him, & he rode vpō a mighty black horse, holding in his right hand a Bore-speare, the head whereof was more then a cubit in length, and there follow'd (behinde the cart) another Gyant farre more monstrous then the first, of whom the Damosels of the fountaine were so much afraid, as they fled to hide them amongst the bushes. At the same instant the Gyant which march'd before (seeing how the Ladies that were in the cart did teare the hairs from their heads, for it seemed by their furious behaviours, that they verily willingly would haue procured their owne death) sayde vnto the Dwarffes, If you cause not these girles to hold their peace, by loue you villaines, I will make a thousand peeces of your entrails, for I would haue them charily kept, to sacrifice them vnto the God that I adore. When the *Faire Forlorne* heard him, hee presently knewe that it was *Famongosad*, who was wont to cut off the heads of all those that hee might take, and to shed their blood before an Idoll that hee had in the burning lake,

by whose counsell hee was governed in all his affaires, & although hee then had no desire to fight, as well because he would not faile to be at *Mirefleur* (according as *Oriana* had willed him) as also because he was wearie, and tyred with the encounter that he had had against the ten knights, yet knowing the persons that were in the cart, amogst whom was *Leonor* the Kings daughter, her Gentlemen, and the ten knights that hee had ouerthowne, hee determined either to die or deliuere her, knowing what grief the losse of her siste would be vnto *Oriana*, whom *Famongosad* and his sonne did take at vnawares, and all the rest of her traine, in a manner as soone as the *Faire Forlorne* had left them, and in this sort they had bound and fayred them in the cart, that they might afterwards most cruelly put them to death. For this cause hee willed *Enil* to giue him his armes. My Lord sayd he, doe you not see these diuels that are comming towards vs? For Gods sake let vs be gone and hide vs from them, then may you arme your selfe at ease, for I would not tarry their comming for all the wealth in *London*. I will doe better if I may, sayd the *Faire Forlorne*, I will first try my fortune, and although thou doest thinke them diuels (thou shalt see them slaine by one onely knight) for their life is so odious before God, that hee will giue mee the strength to reuenge (as I hope) all those miserable cruelties which they from day to day doe comitt.

Alas my Lord sayde *Enil*, you will wilfully lose your selfe: seeing that it twenty of King *Mars* his best Knights had undertaken that which you alone thinke

to doe, yet might they hardly escape with honor. Care not thou for that, answered hee, if I should let such an aduenture passe before mine eyes, and not bee an actor therein, I were vnworthy euer to come into the company of good and vertuous men, and therefore whatsoeuer may chance thereof, I care not. This said, he left *Enil* weeping, and went vnto that side where he might easilie beholde *Mirefleur*: because the remembrance of *Oriana*, was still present before him, and he began to say. O my Lady and onely hope, never did I enterprise any aduenture, the which I haue not by your means atchiued: and now that I knowe you are so neare vnto mee, and that it is for a thing that so much importeth you, forsake mee not I pray you, in this extremity. Herewithall he imagined that his strength was redoubled, and setting apart all feare, hee went toward the cart, and said vnto the Dwarffes: stay you base staues, for you shall all die, and your masters also. When the Gyant heard these threats, hee entred into such fury, that the smoke proceeded from his eyes, in such sort, as it seemed they had beeene on a fire, and hee did shake his bore-speare with such force, that he almost doubled both ends together. Then hee answered the *Faire Forlorne*. Unhappy and vnfortunate wretch, how durst thou bee so bold to come before me? Yet hee made as though he heard him not, but couched his Launce, and setting sparrs to his horse, he smote the Gyant a little beneath the waist, with such strength, as pearcing the ioynts of his harnesse, the Launce entred into his tripes with such exceeding force, that passing quite through, it hit against the hinder part of the fad-

the more strength. By the meanes where of, the sinues of his legge, which were cut a sunder fayled him, wherewithal he fel such great greefe, that (not being able to keep his saddle) he kisst the ground with his nose: and in falling, the *Faire Forlorne* stroke him another blow vpon his right arme, so that he was forced to forsake his bill, and leaue it in the power of his enemy. Notwithstanding his hart was so great, that hee rose vp againe and drew forth his sword, that was maruailous long, with the which he layed at the *Faire Forlorne* with all his strength, and hee strained himselfe so much, that the blood issued frō his wounds, in such great abundance, that all his strength fayled him, and he fel down together with his blow, which lighted vpon the stones, wherewith the sword brake in two pieces. The which the *Faire Forlorne* perciuинг, hee stepped aside, and set his hands vnto the bill in such sort, that by force hee pulled it out of his shield, wherewith he stroke so great a blow vpon the Giants helmet, that he made it flicke from his head: but the Giant with that little remainder of his sword, that hee yet helde, pared away the top of his helmet, together with a little of the skin and haire of his head, the which blow if he had stroken somewhat lower, hee had cut his head off. Therewithal they that were in the cart, thought that the *Faire Forlorne* had beene wounded to death, and himselfe was so asto-nished, that hee thought his dayes to bee ended, wherefore desiring to bee reuenged, hee gaue him such another great blowe with the bill, that hee cut off his ear, with halfe of his face, with the which he yelded vp the ghost. During all this combate, the Princesse Leonor

and all her company, were desouly praying for the good successe of the *Faire Forlorne*: who seeing that he was dispatched of *Bafigant*, turned vnto *Famongomed*, who had behelde the death of his sonne, for whome hee made so great mone, that he was likely to haue gone mad. And although the hee was likewise at the point of death, yet notwithstanding hee had throwne his helmet from his head, holding both his hands before his wound, to keepe in his blood, that thereby he might prolong his life, the more to blasphemē God and his saints: not being sorry for his death (as he said) but because that he had not in his life time, destroyed al the churches wherein he had neuer entred. And he cryed as loud as he could: Ah thou God of the christians, it is thou alone that haft wrought the meanes, that both I and my sonne (who were mighty enough to overthrowe one hundred of the best knights in the world) are slaine by the hand of a most wretched and feeble villaine. And as hee would haue proceeded in his his blasphemē, the *Faire Forlorne* stroke off his head from his shoulders, saying: Receiue thy reward for all thy crēties which thou hast committed against a number of people. And spurning him vpon the belly with his foote, hee said: Now get thee vnto all the Deuils, who haue long expected thy comming. Then he tooke vp *Bafigant* his Helmer, and threw downe his owne which was broken. Enil in like sort brought vnto him *Famongomed* his horse, vpon the which he mounted, and came both to vnbinde the prisoners, and to doe his duty vnto the Princesse Leonor, who gaue him great thankes for his good helpe. In like sort so did all the

rest of the company. Now had the Giants tyed all their horses at the rayle of the Cart: wherefore the *Faire Forlorne* went to seeke out the Princesse her Palfrey; the which he brought, and mounted her vpon the same, commanding all the rest to take every one their owne horse, and to get them to London, and to carrie vnto king *Lishart* the bodies of the two Giants, and *Bafigant* his horse, which will serue him well in the battaile against king *Cildader*. But the Knights answered him, sir who shall wee say hath done this good for vs? you shall tell the king said he, that it is a strange knight, who is called the *Faire Forlorne*: and you may both declare vnto him at large the cause of the combat that I had with the Giants, as also the great desyre that I haue to doe his Maiesy all the seruice I may, whether it be against king *Cildader* or any other, herewithall they layed both the bodies in the Cart: but they were so great, that their legs trayled a long vpon the ground more then sixtoore, and taking leaue of the *Faire Forlorne*, they went towards London, praising God, and the good knight that preferred them from death. But by the way *Leonor* and the yong Gentlewoman that were with her (forgetting their passed perill) made them garlands of flours which they set vpon their heads in entring into the City:

## CHAP. XIII.

How that after the Faire Forlorne had ended his adventure bee wene vnto the Fountaine of the three Chancels : from thence he tooke his way to Mireflur, where he found *Oriana*, with whom bee remained eight daies together : and at the same time there arrived in the Court of King Lisuari, an ancient Gentleman bringing with him two Jewels of singular vertue, whereby the faithfull lover, from the fayned might be tried, the which *Amadis* and *Oriana* determined to make proesse of, in such secret manner, that they wold neyther be knowne of the king nor any other.

After that the Princesse *Leonor* and her traine, had taken their leaue of the Faire Forlorne, he returned towards the Gentlewomen whom hee had found hard by the fountaine, who hauing seene the victory which hee had atrieued, had already forsaken the bushes, & came to mee him. Then he commanded *Evil* to get him to *Landon* vnto *Gandalin*, and that during his abode there, he should cause such another armor as that of his owne was, to be made for him, because they were all to broken and battered with the blowes that hee had received in the former combats : moreover that he should not faile to retorne vnto the fountaine of the three chancels vpon the eight day following. Thus *Evil* departed from him, and on the other side the Faire Forlorne (hauing taken his leaue of the Gentlewoman) rode through the Forrest, and they tooke their right way to *Mireflur*, where being arrived, they declared to *Oriana* and *Mabila*, the dangerous combat, and glorious victory that was performed in their presence by a knight called the Faire Forlorne. When *Oriana* knew for truth that he was so neare vnto her castle, ioy and extreame pleasure, accompanied with a most

seruent desire, entred into her imagination, in such sort that vntill she had him in her armes, shewer lost sight of the high way that led from the Forrest, by the which he was to come. By this time was the Faire Forlorne alighted from his horse, hard by a little River, staying vntill it were night : for he would not be seene by any, at his entring into *Mireflur*. Then hee put off his Helmet, and laid him downe vnto the grasse: and therewithall hee began to thinke vpon the instabilitie of Fortune, and vpon the miserable despaine wherin (not long before) he remained when with his owne hands, he was ready to haue effected his death: and also how he was not only restored to his former felicite, but also aduanced to greater honestie, glory and contentement then before, knowing that he was so neare that ioy which hee shold receive with his Lady *Oriana*. In this cogitation remained the Faire Forlorne vntill after sun set, when hee mounted on horseback, and came vnto the place that *Darin* had assigned him, where hee sooud him together with *Gandalin*, who stayed there for him to take his horse. Then he alighted downe, & demanded of them, what the ladies were doing, my Lord, answered *Gandalin*, they are on the other side, in the garde,

where they haue already staied for you more then foure houres. Help me then to get vp. The which they did: and hee being vpon the wall, beholding *Oriana* and *Mabila*, on the other side (hauing not so much patience as to stay for their helpe) he leaped from the top of the wall downe to the ground, and as hee would haue kneeled to haue done his dutie, the Princesse ran to embrase him, and in kissing him she was like to haue fallen in a swound betweene his armes. But who could imagine the pleasure that they yeckled the one vnto the other? *Amadis* hee trembled like a lease not being able to speake one Word, holding his mouth close vnto *Oriana*: who as it were in an extatic did behold him with such an eye, that it made them both twaine to liue and die together. In this sort they remained more then a good quarter of an houre, and euen vntill that *Mabila* smiling, said vnto *Oriana*: Madam, I pray you at the least before my cosin do die, let vs haue a sight of him if it please you. Soft and faire, answered *Oriana*, let mee a while alone with him, and then you shall afterwards haue him at your pleasure. Herewithall *Amadis* saluting *Mabila*, said vnto her. My good Cosin, this is not the first day that you haue knowne how much I am yours. I beleue you well sir, but my Lady would haue you wholly to her selfe. Alas, said she haue I not reaon, seeing that I alone was likely by my fault, to haue beene the causer of his losse? Beleue me deere friend, the grieve which you felt and the teeres that you haue shed (by the fault that I committed) shal be now both acknowledg'd, and thorowly recompence. Madam, said *Amadis*, you haue neuer been at any time, but the procurer of all my happinesse and fauor, and if I haue fel any tribulatiōn, I, and not you, haue been the causer thereof: therefore haue I iustly sustained whatsoeuer sorrow I haue suffered. Alas sweete loue, answered *Oriana*, when I thinke vpon the estate wherein *Corisanda* and the Damosell of Denmarke did finde you, and the abundance of teares and lamentations that continually distilled from your eyes (as they haue told me) I assure you that yet my mind is troubled therewith. Madam, said hee, the teares wherof you speake, were no teares for long before the comming of *Corisanda* to the poore Rock, the spring whereof was dried vp: but it was an humor proceeding from my heart, the which did so continually burne in your loue, that being conftayned by the force of the flame, it did draw vp to the eyes that moysture, which nature had placed about the heare to preserue it, and to give it life: and I beeleeue that if the Damosell of Denmarke had stayed from bringing me that relife which I received of her, in steede of teares which distilled from mine eyes, the soule is selfe had departed. Sweete loue, said the Princesse, I know well that I committed a great errour in writing that leetee which *Darin* did bring to you, but you shold then haue remembred how that all women are weake, and very light of beleefe, especially in things wherein they are affectioned, and wherein by too extreame loue they are often times carried away, & made suspitious, even as I haue beeene against you, wherfore the greater that mine offence is, the greater praise shall you win in pardoning me: the which I beseech you to do,

being ready to receiue such punishment therefore, as it shall please you to giue vnto me, and to satisfie you at your owne discretion. Alas Madam, said *Amadis*, it is I that should demand pardon of you: for if I should die for your loue, most pleasant would that death be vnto me. But this much I assure you, that I had never beeene able to haue resisted this great sorrow that I haue suffered, had it not beeene that my martredome was eased(knowing the pleasure which you would receiue in the same) that it tooke such force vnto it, as death was not of sufficient power in any sort to bring it to an end. Let vs leaue off this talke for this time said *Mabila*, you haue both suffered wrong, determine therefore henceforth how it may be recompensed: and now to eschue the vapours of the night ( which may be vnto you somewhat hurfull) let vs retire vnto some couert. I like your counsell well answered *Oriana*. Therewithall *Amadis* was brought into her chamber, and presently *Mabila* and the *Damosell of Denmarke* (knowing that they should do them a pleasure to leaue them alone) went forth, faining to goe about some other affaires. Then the pryncesse requested *Amadis* to sit downe in a chayre couered with velvet, which stood in a corner of the chamber, and shee stood leaning vpon him, that shee might at more ease kisse him, and hang about his necke: wherenpon he being overcome with an extrem amorous passion, left off his wonted modesty, thrusting one of his hands into *Oriana* her prettie breasts, and the other towards the place by him most affected: wherewith *Oriana* halfe ashamed in stretching her selfe along, because she

would not looke in his face, said vnto him, My deere loue, I beseeche that the hermit of the poore Rock, taught you not this lesson, Madame answered hee, I beseech you to pardon my rashnesse, taking pittey of me, and seeing the both time and place is so fauourable vnto vs, be not you more contrary vnto me then they, but suffer mee to continue that fauour, wherof by your good grace I haue taken possession, when I deliuered you from the handes of *Arcalane*. My ioy, answered *Oriana*, you know that I am so wholly yours, that you cannot dispose of your selfe more then of me, neuerthelesse how may I possibly at this time satisfie your desire, seeing that your Cousin, and the *Damold of Denmarke* are so neere vnto vs? Alas said he, they haue hitherto been the cause of my life, and now since they haue farther affested me do you thinke that they will defice my death? Assure you Madam that they are already so well acquainted with our affections (especially the *Damosell of Denmarke*) that although they haue not seen them effected, yet it may be they haue presumed as much and more: therefore I beseech you ( in acquyting you of your promise) to succour me. Which said, hee gaue such large scope vnto his passions, notwithstanding all the faineresse that *Oriana* could make against him, hee had that of her which he most desired, rassling together of the sweete fruite, which they did first sow in the Forrest, at such time as *Gandalin* was gone to seeke for some victuals for them: as you haue heard in the fist booke. And although that *Oriana* made refusall thereof at the fist, yet *Amadis* yeld her so courteous

ly that before they departed from the place, they determined to continue their sport, whilst they had so good oportunity, and from thenceforth not to bee in any doubt eyther of *Mabila* or the *Damosell of Denmarke*. Eight whole dayes did *Amadis* remayne at *Mireflur* with *Oriana*, leading her as pleasantly as they could with, during all the which time he was not scene of any, except of those that were the meanes of his bringing thither, as it hath beeene tolde you, for all the day long hee was close with the Ladies in the chamber, and when the euening approached they came forth into the garden, where often times after many amorous discourses, *Amadis* alayed the heate of his fire ( by the sweete embracings of *Oriana* ) at the musick of the birds, who chanting out their pleasant notes, were witnessess of the pleasure that these two louers receiued, vnder the shade of the little young Trees, wherewith this place was sufficiantly stored. Now did *Gandalin* every day go and come from *London* to *Mireflur*, to bring newes, from the Court: so that one time amongst others, hee told *Amadis* that the *Arinou* which by *Enil* he had caused to bee made for him, would bee very shortly finished. Moreouer hee told him, that the King was in great doubt for the battaile which he had enterprised against king *Cildader*: for the most part of those that hee had to deale withall, were cruell GIANES, and without reason, and therefore hee had stayed *Galaor*, *Florestan*, *Agraius*, and *Don Galuaces*, to assist him in that encounter. Who (said *Gandalin*) are so angry for the famous report that is spread abroad, of the *Faire Forlorne* to the dispraye of *Amadis*, as if they had not already passed their promise to the king, seeking not to enterprise any combat or voyage before the battaile, they had beeone already vpon their way to haue sought him out to fight with him, and they secretly give it out, that if they doe escape aliue, they will not rest vntil they haue both found him, and fought with him. In good faith, answered *Amadis*, they shall see me the sooner if God please, but it shal be after another manner then they hope for: wherefore do thou returne to the Court, and learne if any thing hath since happened. Herewithall *Gandalin* departed, who went directly to *London*, where hee found the king ready to sit downe to dinner, and even as they were taking vp the Table, there entered in a very antient Gentleman, attended vpon with two Esquires, apparetled both in one liuery. This old mans beard was shauen, and the hayre of his head was white with age, who came and kneeled before the king, and saluting him in the Grecke tongue (in which countrie he was borne) hee said vnto him. It may please your Maiestie, the high renowne that is spread in all parts of the world, of the knights, Ladies and Gentlewomen that are in your Court, hath beeone the only cause that enforced me to addresse my iourney hither, to see if in the same I may finde that which this threescore yeeres I haue sought in diverse counteys farre and neare, to small purpose. Therefore most renowned Prince. I beseeche your Maiestie to be pleased, that to finish my iourney, I may make a proesse of the knights, Ladies and Gentlewomen in this assencion, the which (as I thinke) will neyther be hantfull

full nor displeasing eyther to your Maiesty, or to any other. Then all the Lords that were present, desired to see a thing so rare, intreating the king to grant his request, the which he easilie condiscended vnto, therewithall the ancient Gentleman tooke from one of his Esquires, a little cofer of Iasper, which he did carrie, which was in length about three cubits, and in breadth a shaftmont, and it was garnished with Gold, and the most curious damaske worke in the World: this little cofer he opened, afterward he tooke out of it a Sword, so strange, as the like was never scene, the scabberd therof was made of two bright shining bones, and as greene as any fine Emeraud, so as the blade was to be scene through it, not after the manner of other blades, for the one halfe of it shewed meruailous bright, and the other seemed, as if it burned, being as red as fire, and it hanged in a Belt of the same stiffe as the scabberd was of, so cunningly made, that any man might easilie gird it about him. This Sword the Gentleman did hang about his necke, that hee might likewise take out of the cofer a kercheife, the one halfe whereof, was be set with floures as fresh and greene, as if they had beene euuen then newly gathered: and the other halfe was couered with other violets, as withered and dry, as if they had beene ten yeceres in the Sun, neuerthelesse both the one & the other seemed to spring from one and the selfe same roote: wherewithal the king being abashed, demanded of him how these things might bee. If it like your Maiesty answered the old man, this sword cannot bee drawne forth of the scabberd, but onely by that

knight that amongst all losers, is the most constant, and that doth best loue his Lady: and as soone as hee shall haue it in his hands, that part which burneth shall become as cleere and bright as the rest, so as the blade shall be all of one colour. In like sort if this kercheife bestrewed with so many floures, be set vpon the head of such a Ladie or Gentlewoman that doth loue her husband or friend with the like constanthe, the withered and drie floures shall appeare againe, of a most fresh and liuely colour: and your Maiesty may be pleased to know, that I cannot be made a Knight, but by the hands of this perfect lover that shall draw forth this Sword, neyther may I take armes but of her that shall deserue this pretious kercheife. For this cause haue I these threescore yeceres continually sought in many strange Countries for those by whom I ought to receiue knight-hood, but yitherto I haue traualied in vaine, & now prosecuting my voyage (in a manner for my last refuge) I am come into your Court: imagining that euuen as it farre exceedeth the Courts of all other Emperors and kings, so I might in like sort in the same find that which in all others I haue failed of. I pray you saide the king, let mee know the reason why the fire that remaines in the one halfe of this blade, doth not burne the scabberd. It may please your Maiesty, answered the old man, betwixt *Tartaria* and *India*, there is an arme of the Sea which is so hot, that the water therof (beeing meruailous greene) boiles as if it were vpon the fire, and in the same there is brought forth a kinde of Serpents more great then *Crocodiles*, the which doe lie very lightly,

in his time, was one of the best Princes of the Earth, he it was that did beautifie the firme Island, with many rare and singular things, as every one knoweth, my Father was his Brother, and king of *Canaria* who being in loue with the daughter of the king of *Canaria*, did beget me of her. And when I was of sufficient age to bee made knighthood, my father commanded me, seeing I had beene conceiued with farre more perfect and loyall loue, then euer was any other prince, that I would not in like sort receive knighthood, but by the hand of the most faithful louer that might be found in all the World, neyther to take armes, but from that Ladie or Damosell who shold loue her husband or friend, with the like constancy as the knight doth. The which I both promised and swore vnto him to performe, thinking to accomplish his will very easilie, onely in going to mine Uncle *Apolidon* and *Grimanesa* his wife, to wards whom I went: neuerthelesse, my misfortune was such, that I found *Grimanesa* dead, wherfore *Apolidon* (knowing the cause of my comming) was very sorrowfull. For *Grimanesa* being deceased, else where very hardly might I finde (as he told me) that which I had promised vnto my Father, the succession of whose Crowne was denied vnto mee except I were a knight, as by the statute and ordinance of his Realme was appoynted, and therefore mine Uncle willed me to returne vnto *Garon*, and that within sixte yeceres following, I shold come againe vnto him: during which time hee would endeavor to finde some rededy for the foolish enterprise which I had undertaken, and according to his appointment presented. Then he gaue

gaue me this Sword, and kerchief, by the which I might know those whom I was to finde, telling mee that seeing had bee so rash in my promise, therefore I should from thenceforth trauaile so long vntil that I finding such a constant knight and Lady, had accomplished whatsoeuer my Father was commanded. And thus your Maiesy may see the reason of my long trauaile and search, therefore if it like your Highnesse, you may trie the Sword first, and your knights afterward. And in like sort the Queene and her Ladies, may proue what shall bee the euent of the kerchiefe, and he or she that shall finish these aduentures, shall possesse the Jewels as their owne, I gaine rest thereby, whereof I shal reape the profit, and your Maiesy honour and renoune amongst all other Kings and Princes, hauing found that in your Court, of the which I haue fayled in all other Countries. Thus the old man hauing ended his discourse, there was not any that were present, who did not generally desire to see the matter in proofe; and although the king was as desirous to see the triall thereof as any other, yet did he defer it off vntil the fift day following, vpon the which day, was the feast of Saint James to be celebrated, and the more to make it manifest, he sent for a great number of his knights. For the more full my Court is (said the king) the more is the likely-hood to haue this aduenture throughly tryed. Vnto the which determination euery one agreed: all this discourse did *Gandalin* heare, who by good fortune was not 1. houre before arrived at *Loos*. But so soone as the Conclusion was agreed vpon, he got againe to

horse-back and rode forthwith to *Mirefure*, where he found the faire *Forlorne* playing at Chefts with *Oriana*, who seeing him returned suddenly, shee demanded of him what newe euent was chanced in the Court. Madam, answered he, I am sure that you will bee wonderfull glad to vnderstand what it is. And what is it said *Oriana*? then *Gandalin* recited all the whole discourse of the olde Gentleman, with the strangenesse of the sword and kerchiefe: as also how the king had put off the proofe thereof vntil the feast day of Saint James next ensuing. During all this long discourse, the faire *Forlorne* became more pensiue then hee was accustomed to bee, which *Oriana* straight perceiued, neuerthelesse she made no shew therof, vntill *Gandalin* and the company were departed, and that shee came and sat downe vpon the knees of the faire *Forlorne*. Then shee kissing him and hanging about his neck, said vnto him: My loue I pray you tell me whereupon you minded, whilst *Gandalin* declared vnto us the newes at *London*. In faith Madam, answered the faire *Forlorne*, if my will were to my wish, you and I should all our life time haue liue in more rest and contentment then hitherto we haue done, for the kerchiefe shal be yours, and the sword mine; and so all suspition and ialousie shal bee more raigne betwixt vs. Wher sweete loue said shee, do youdoubte that I would not gaine the Kerchiefe if it were by firme loue to be gained? No Madam, answered he, but I did feare, because the my all is to bee made in theking your Father his Court, that you would make it difficult to enterprize the same, and yet I know that I am

ble both to carrie you thither, and bring you back againe (if it please you) so that none that doe see vs, shall know who we are. My Lord said shee, you know that I will obey you all my life long, and that you may dispose of me at your pleasure so as I doe more feare the danger wherinto these Gentlewomen may fall, if wee should be discouered, then any of our owne, and me thinks it were good to heare what their opinion is, before we undertake any thing. Whatsoeuer shall please you Madam, answered the faire *Forlorne*, that do. Then shee called *Mabile* and the Damosel of *Denmarke*, who were talking with *Gandalin*, vnto whom they declared all that you haue heard. And although that vndoubtedly the danger was very great, neuerthelesse the gentlewomen seeing that they whom it did nearest touch, were (as they thought) most forward therein, they would not speake that which they thought thereof, and answered *Oriana* that in moth she should never in all her life, haue the like occasion to win the most pretious Jewell in the world. Well said the Princesse, vnto the faire *Forlorne*, doe then what you thinke best. I will tel you answered hee, how wee may got I will answered *Enkil* (who as yet doth not know what I am) to tell the King, that a strange Knight with his Lady will make triall of those Jewels, if it so please his Maiesy to give them safe conduct, that nothing shal be said nor done vnto them against their wil, which granted I will conduct my Lady disguised in strange apparell, hauing a very fine launc or cipresse before her face, thorow the which she may see euery one, and yet shall not she bee knowne of any,

riued at the fountaine, where within a while after *Enil* came bringing with him the Armor which he had caused to bee made, with the which he armed himselfe, and then demanded of him what newes there was in the Court. My Lord, answered hee, euery man there speaketh of your prowesse: and there is not any one but is very desirous to be acquainted with you. Then falling from one speech to another, hee began to tell him the newes of the old Gentleman, who had brought the Sword, and the Kerchiefe, Trust me, said the faire *Forlorne*, it is now foure dayes ago, since a Gentlewoman aduertised mee thereof vpon this condition, that I should cary her to the court, to make triall of this aduenture, therefore I am constrainyd to go thither, neuerthelesse thou knowest how much I desire, not to bee yet knowne of the King, nor of any other, vntill my deedes do give them further testimony of my valour then yet they haue. For this cause thou must returne vnto *Lensdor* to tell the King, that if it please him, to giue security vnto a Gentlewoman and me, that nothing shall be eyther said or done vnto vs against our wils, we will come to make triall of the stranger his request: but faine not in like sort to aduertise the Queene and her Ladies how the Gentlewoman constraineth mee to conduct her thither, according to the promise that I haue made vnto her, and that otherwise I would not haue

come there, and after thou hast fulfilled my commandement, fait not in any case to retumne him the night before these Jewels may be shewed: In the meane season, I will goe seeke the Gentlewoman who is somewhat far from hence: and according to the answere thou shalt bring vnto vs, wee will eyther go forward, or returne back againe. Then *Enil* departed, and the faire *Forlorne* tooke the way to *Mirefleur*, where hee arrived as soone as day was shut in, and there he found *Durin* ready to receive his horse. By whose helpe hee got ouer the wall, and entred into the garden where *Oriana*, and the other gentlewomen were, of whom he was most courteously entreated: but when *Mabila* espied him comming, she said vnto him selfe, is the caule my good *Cosm*, that you are more brave now, then you were this last morning? Haue you met with any good bootysman? You know not the meaning thereof, answered *Oriana*, hee were of purpose for this faire *Amor* thinking to escape by force from this prison wherein we keperian. Is it true? said *Mabila*, if you determine to fight with vs, see that you be well aduised first, for you haue somewhat to do. And in this for jesting together, they came into the Princesse her chamber, when his supper was brought ynto him: for all that day he neyther had eaten nor drunken, fearing lesches should haue beeene discouered.

CHAR.

## CHAP. XV.

How the Damosell of Denmarke was sent vnto London to know what fwe Enil had receivd from the King, touching the yafe conduct which was demanded by the faire *Forlorne*, whi did afterwids bring Oriana thither to prove the strange Jewels.

**A**S soone as the faire *Forlorne* was returned to *Mirefleur*, he told *Oriana* how *Enil* was gone to the Court according to their determination concluded the day before. Wherupon the Princesse desirous to know an answere, and also to provide all things necessary for their safety before hand, shee sent the Damosell of *Denmarke* vnto the Queene to certify her Maiestie, that because she found her selfe somewhat at ease, it would please her grace to hold her excused, if shee could not as yet come and do her dutie vnto her Highnesse. So the Damosell departed, and returned not vntill it was very late, for shee stayed the arriuall of the Queene *Brizelania*, to meet with whom the king himselfe did go, and shee came into the court with one hundred knights, ready to begin the search of *Amadis*, according to the appointment of *Sador* and *Floristan*, and therefore she was determined not to depart from Queene *Brizelania*, until they were returned again, neyther would she nor her women bee apparellid with other Garments then of blacke cloth, vntill he were found, for such weedes did she weare at such time as hee did make her Queene, and now would shee never chalenge her maner of life, if he were lost. In your iudgement said *Oriana*, is the sorte as there report goeth of her? So helpe me God, answered the Damosell, except your grace, she is the fairest woman, and of the best behaviour that euer I did see; shee was very sorry when she heard of your sicknesse, and shee tendereth you word by me, that she will come and doe her dutie vnto you so soone as you shall thinke convenient. Truly, said *Oriana*, I am more desirous to see her then any other that I doe know. Madam, answered the faire *Forlorne*, beleue me, shee well desirueth that you shalld shew her all the honour you may, although heretofore you haue vreagly forswayed some greate fortesse to gentle loue, said the Princesse for Gods sake, let vs speake no more of passed melancholies, for I am assured, that I did thinke misse. You shall verely be better assured, swerthe me, by the confirmation that you shall receiuynge of those Jewels which we shal bring, whi which will henceforth quickely eradiue all theod unhappynesse that you haue conuincid against me, if they shalld chance to reme, and againe into your sight, me, increasing in you the opinion of that loue and dutie whi I do above all bothe vnto yee. My bloud laid downell and well affreid that the heynose shall make you befeare, that what wrong souer you received of me, proceeded of no other cause, but by the extreme loue whi I did beare vnto you: we shall see shorly said the Damosell of *Denmarke*, what will happen. For the King hath granted your request by *Enil*.

In

In this sort did *Oriana*, and the rest of her company passe away the time, vntill the day came wherein they must depart, to make triall of that which you haue heard, which caused her to rise about midnight, arrieng her as the faire *Forlorne* had deuised, and hee likewise was armed at all points, that done they passed through the garden, and came to the place where *Gandalin* held their horses in readines. Then mounted they vpon them, taking their way toward the Forrest, right vnto the Fountaine of the three channels. But there *Oriana* thinking vpon the enterprise which she went about, foreseeing the inconuenience and danger thereof, not onely if she were disclosed, but also how if she failed in gaining the kerchiefe, *Amadis* might haue iust cause to suspect her, and by that meanes she might loose that good repitation which shee had gotten with him. Herewithall she began to repent her forwardnesse, and to tremble so extreamly, that the faire *Forlorne* perceiued it, who said vnto her. Madam, had I thought you would haue been so ill at ease with this voyage, I sweare vnto you that I would rather haue died then haue brought you out of doores, therefore it is please you, let vs returne againe to *Myrfleur*. So saying, heurned his boordes head, nevertheless *Oriana* considering that by her an aduenture so recommedable should bee deterred, chaaged her minde and answered him. I beseech you sweete loue not to take any heede vnto the feare that a timorous woman may haue in the middest of this great wood, but vnto the vertue and valor that remaineth in you. Very sorry was the faire *Forlorne* because hee had spoken in such sort vnto her,

doubting leſt he had offended her, and he said vnto her. Madam, seeing that your discretion hath surmounted my folly, I beseech you to pardon me: for I assure you, my meaning was not to speake any thing that shold be offendynge to you. As they had ended their conference, they came vnto the fountaine being yet an houre from day, where they had not long stayed before *Enil* came vnto them, whereat they were very ioyfull. Then the faire *Forlorne* saide vnto *Oriana*: Madame, behold the Esquire which I promised you to send vnto king *Lisnart*, by whose answere we may determin wherto do. In fayth my Lord, answered *Enil*, he sendeth you by meall the assurance that you demand, and further he aduertiseth you that the triall of the aduenture beginneth this day after his Maiesties coming from the Chappell. All the better said the faire *Forlorne*, we shall then haue no great cause of stay. Hereupon hee gaue him his shield and launes, and without putting off his helmet at all, they tooke the right way to London: the people had already heard that the knight which did overcome the Giants should come vnto the kings lodging, they said one to another. Heauens shield, the faire *Forlorne* from all mischiefe, for he is worthy of great praise, and most happy may that Lady think her selfe, to whom he remaineth a servant. These words might *Oriana* understand very well, wherewith she was not a little ioyfull, knowing that she was Ladie & Milles of him, whom so many people did both loue & honor: afterward they came and alighted at the Palace where they found the king, Queen Ladies, and a great number of knights

knights already assembled all together in a great hal, to make triall who should gaine the old mans Jewels. And as soon as they knew of the arriall of the faire *Forlorne*, the King rose vp with his traine to receiue them: wherefore the faire *Forlorne* kneeling down would haue kisſed his hands: but the K. lifted him vp, saying vnto him: My good friend, you are most hartily welcome hither, where you shall be as free as you would wish, for you haue done as much seruice for me, in so small a time, as euer any knight performed either for King or Prince. The faire *Forlorne* answere not one word, but onely bowed himselfe to his maestie in signe of thanks: and without stepping one foote from *Oriana*, (whom he held by the hand) they came towards the Ladies, who did all salute them very courteously. You may imagine if the young Princeesse were not now in some feare to be discouered, being in such an assembly, for the Queene her mother stepped vnto her, looking her stedfastly in the face, although it was couered with a laune, and she said vnto her. Gentlewoman, I do not know who you are, for to my knowledge I did never see you, neverthelesse, for the loue of this knight (in whose custodie you are) that hath done the king so great seruice, assure you that in this place shal be shewed vnto you, all the honour and seruice that possibly may bee. For the which the faire *Forlorne* humbly thanked her Maestie, but *Oriana* without speaking one word held her head down continually. Therewithall the king and all his knights withdrew them to one side, and the Queene and her Ladies to the other. And in the meane time the faire *Forlorne* leading *Oriana* by the hand, came and beseeched the King, that he and his Lady might remaine in the midſt of the hall, for they were not determined to touch the Jewels, except that all the afiſtance did first misſe the gaining of them. The which the king did grant vnto him, who did first of all take vp the ſword, which was layd vpon the table by the olde Gentleman named *Macandon*: and the King did draw it out one ſhaftmont and no more. Wherfore *Macandon* ſaid. It may please your Maiesty, if there bee not found in your Court any, more amorous then you are, I ſhal not depart from hence ſo contented as I hoped to doe. Therewithall he took the ſword and laid it again vpon the table, for ſo muſt he doe after every triall. Then *Galeor* tooke it vp, but yet he performed leſſe then the King did. The which *Florestan*, *Galnaes*, *Granaſan*, *Brandoins* and *Landin* ſeeing, they all one after another tryed what they could doe, and yet none of them could unsheath it ſo much as *Florestan* did, who drew it forth a foote and more: but then *Gallan* the penſive tooke it, and he paſſed *Florestan* about halfe a foote, ſo that hee came vnto the middeſt thereof. Trust me then, ſayde *Macandon*, if you did loue but as much againe as you do, the ſword ſhould bee yours. After him there came more then a hundred Knights, who did little or nothing therin, whereupon *Macandon* iesting with them, called them heretiques in lawe. Then *Agraies* who had ſtaied to bee the laſt, beeing ſure (as hee thought), conſidering the firme loue which hee did bare vnto his Ladie *Olinda*) that the aduenture was ordained for him and on other, ſtepped forth, and holding his Miftrefſee hee tooke the

the sworde and drew it forth of the scabbard within 3. fingers breadth and as he strained himselfe to pull it quite forth, the fire issued from the blade so hot, that it burned part of his apparel, so that he was constrained to leaue it there, being very ioyfull neverthelesse, that he had performed more then any of the rest. Truly said *Macandon* you are a loyall knight, and you haue almost had occasion to bee content, and I satisfield. Lastly *Palomir* & *Dragonis* approached, who were but the day before arrived at the courte, and they gained no more then did *Galaor*: which caused *Macandon* to laugh, saying vnto them. My aduise is, that you should put both of your parts in the sworde together, & it may be that you shall haue sufficient to defend you hereafter. You say true answered *Dragonis*: but if you be this day made knight, you shall not be of so yong yecres but that you may very well remember it hereafter. At that word every one began to laugh, in the meane season there was never a knight remaining in the Courte who did not put himselfe forward to gaine the sworde, and yet it was all in vaine. Wherfore the faire *Forlorne* holding *Oriana* by the hand, came to take it vp: when *Macandon* said vnto him: knight this sworde wil fit you better (if you may gain it) then that which you haue, & yet it cannot be gotten by force of Armes without constancy in loue. It must then be mine answered the faire *Forlorne*, who therewithall did draw it forth of the scabbard as easily as if it had beeene his owne, and that part of it, which seemed to be burning, became like vnto the other, and was as bright as euer was seene.

Therewithall *Macandon* (excep-

ding ioyfull) cast himselfe at the feete of the faire *Forlorne*, saying, vnto him, O noble knight, God increase thy honour: for in ending my long trauaile you haue greatly honoured this Courte. And truly that Lady who is serued of you, hath cause to loue you well, except she be the most mischievous & disloyalist woman in the world. Now therefore do me this fauour (if it please you) as to give me the order of knighthood, for by no other then you, may I obtaine it, nor yet enjoy the signory which of right belongeth vnto me ouer many great personages. Caule firsta triall of the Kerchiefe to be made, answered the faire *Forlorne*, and afterward I will perorme whatsoeuer I ought to do vnto you. Then girded he the sworde vnto his side, leauing his owne for him that would take it vp, and returned to the place from whence hee departed. Great was the praise that all me gaue vnto him: but more great was the emulation of *Galaor* and *Florestan* towards him, concluding in their minds that so soone as the battell against king *Cildadan* was finished (if they thence escaped with life) they would presently seeke him out, and chalenge him to the combat, wherin they would die, or else make it knowne vnto every one that their brother *Amadis* was a far better knight then he, who (as they thought) did eclipse his honor, by the reputation whch he had gotten in gaining the strangers sworde. At that instant the Ladies approached to prove which of them might obtaine the Kerchiefe, and first of all the Queene began, putting it vpon her head: notwithstanding the floures did not any whit change their colour for her: Wherupon *Macandon* said,

said, Madam if the king your husband haue shewed the little loyaltie that remaineth in him, in his triall of the sworde, me thinks you do now well enough require him for it. The Queene blushed and being halfe ashamed she returned to her place: then came the faire Queen *Briolavia*, who therein performed as much as the first. Vnto whom *Macandon* likewise said: beleue me Madam, considering the great beauty wherewith you are indued, you are more beloued the louing, as wee may plainly see by this kerchiefe. After her came soure kings daughters, meruailous faire *Eladia*, *Estrelette*, *Aldena*, and the sage *Olinda*, vpon whose heads the kerchiefe being placed, the withered floures began a little to flourish, so that there was not any one of them which did not imagine that she should be the owner thereof, wherwith *Oriana* was in a great perplexity. Yet in the end the floures returned to their withered colour. And for the same cause the Gentlewomen set them downe againe in their places: neverthelesse it was not without receiuing some little frumpe from the olde Gentleman, who for one of his age could very fitly apply them. In the end *Oriana* perceiuing that every one had failed, shee was very glad thereof, and therefore shee made a signe vnto the faire *Forlorne* that he should leade her to the Table, where the triall was to bee made, but so loone as the kerchiefe was set vpon her head the blasted floures were as greene and as faire as those that were most fresh, so that there was no difference at all to be perceiued. Wherfore *Macandon* cried out: Ah Madam, you are shee whom I haue sought for fortie yecres before you were

no sort liked of the gentlewomens speeches. Whilst these things were in doing, the faire Forlorne was ready to depart, when the Queene who knew not her owne daughter, said vnto her, Gentlewoman although you are not desirous to be knowne in this company, yet bethinke you what it will please you to command either of the king or me. By my faith, Madam, answered the faire Forlorne, I am as little acquainted with her as you, although shes hath beene seauen daies together in my company, but for that little that I haue perceiued by her, I can assure you that shes is most excellent faire. Trust me faire Lady, said Briosania (speaking vnto Oriana) I know not your name, but considering the loyaltie wherewith you are endued, if your friend doe affe & you with the like constancy as you doe loue him, you may well bee tearmed the fairest couple that euer loue vnted together. Oriana smiled at the words of Briosania, when the faire Forlorne tooke his leaue, who seeing that the King would leade her towards her horse he said vnto him. Your Maiestie hath reason to honour her, by whom your Court hath this day beene more highly exalted, then euer heretofore by any other Lady it hath beene. In good sooth answered the king, you say true, and therefore I will my selfe conduct her forth of the City, in the which I could willingly desire that it would please her, (and you also) to make some longer abode. Saying so, they all mounted on horseback, and the king held the raines of his daughters horse, speaking all the way vnto her, who answered him not one word againe, fearing to bee knowne. Galor in like sort

entertained the faire Forlorne. But he so much hated him for the reasons before rehearsed, that hee could not speake one courteous word vnto him, whereat the faire Forlorne laughed seeing his brothers countenance, and thus they rode together a good way from the city, vntill the faire Forlorne said vnto the King: I beseech your Maiestie (if it please you) to passe no further, otherwise you may chance to displease this Gentlewoman, beleeue me said the King, I will rather returne. Therewithall he embrased him, and said, I would sir knight that it liked you, to be one of my knights. If it please your Maiestie, answered he, I will willingly bee one of the hundred that shall accompany you against king Celdadan. If you do me that fauour said the king, I hope that thereby our enemies would be no lesse discouraged then those on our part would be encouraged, & therefore I intreate you so to bee. Thus they departed, the king taking his way back to the city, and the faire Forlorne with Oriana towards the Forrest, being very joyfull that they had so well finished that dangerous aduenture. But they were no sooner arived at the Fountaine of the three channels, when they beheld an esquire comming towards them mounted on a strong horse, who at his armall said vnto the faire Forlorne: knight, Arcalus commandeth thee that thou bring this Gentlewoman vnto him, which if thou deniest to accomplish, hee saith that he will himselfe come take thy head from thy shoulders. And where is Arcalus? Answered the faire Forlorne. The Esquire shewed him where hee sat vnder a tuft of Trees, together with another knight,

knight, both twaine armed & ready to mount on horseback. When Oriana heard this message, the poore soule was in such extreame feare, that shes was likely to haue fallen from her horse, wherefore the faire Forlorne said vnto her. How now sweete Lady, are you afraid of Arcalus being in my keeping? no, no, hee threatneth to haue my head, and yet he shall quit himselfe well if hee can saue his owne. Then he betook him to his armes, & said vnto the esquire, go, return vnto thy master and tell him, that I am a strange knight that knoweth him not, and therfore I will not do that. The esquire returned to Arcalus who was so mad angry therewith, that hee said vnto the other knight which was with him, good nephew Lindorag, go take the kerchief from that Damosell, for I do give it to Madesme your loue, & if he that conducteth her will contradict it, cut off his head forthwith, & afterwards hang it vp by the hair vpon the next tree. Therewithall Lindorag went towards the faire Forlorne, who had heard all the words of Arcalus, whereupon hee came to meeete him. And although he seemed to be very great, as hee which was the son of Cartadeque, the giant of the invincible mountaine, begotte vpon one of the sisters of Arcalus, yet did the faire Forlorne make so little account of him, that he said vnto him, knight passe no further: wherfore answered Lindorag. Because said the faire Forlorne, it pleaseth me not. Thou wilt bee far more displeased when thou must lose thy head. Indeede said the faire Forlorne, so I would, but thou art more like to lose thine own, if thou keep it not the better. And without any longer debating, hee clapped the spurs to his horse, couching his staffe against Lindorag, & Lindorag in like sort against him, so that they met one another with such force, that their launces (hitting in the middest of their shields) flew in shivers. Neuerthelesse the faire Forlorne finding Lindorag at aduantage, vnhorsted him, and the truncheon of the staffe remained in his body, yet did he rise vp againe speedily, for hee was a knight of a stout heart, and beholding that his enemy turned to charge him againe, thinking to recoil back to auoide his blow, hee fell downe ouer & ouer, so that the truncheon in his body passed further into him, with the extreame paine whereof, hee gaue vp the Ghost, Arcalus who had seen his Nephew thowne downe, did suddenly put his staffe in his rest to reuenge him, and running against the faire Forlorne he had surely hit him, if hee had not turned somewhat out of the way, but hee stepped on the one fide, letting Arcalus passe by, and in his passing, he strooke him such a blow ouer the left hand, that hee cut off four of his fingers, leauing him no mote then his thumbe to hold his shield which he was forced to let fall, the great paine whereof enforced him to fly as fast as his horse could run, without so much as once looking behind him, and the faire Forlorne after him, who made all the hast he could to ouertake him. Notwithstanding Arcalus was so wel morted, that in lesse then an houre hee had so far gotten the start, that the faire Forlorne wishing all the diuells in hell to follow him, returned againe to Oriana, and therewithall hee forthwith commanded Enil to carry the head of Lindorag, and the peice of Arcalus his hand vnto the king,

king, and that he should recite vnto him at large vpon what occasion he was in such sort assailed. So Esil departed leauing Amadis and Oriana together, who shortly after arrived at Mirefleur, where they found Gandalin and Darin staying without the garden walls, to take their horses when they should come: they came to helpe the Princesse down, and they told her that Mabila and the Damosell of Denmarke were on the other side of the wall in the Orchard. Hereupon they rayfed vp a Lather, and Oriana mounted vpon it, whom the faire Forlorne led by the hand, when they were at the top of the wall they beheld Mabila and the Damosell of Denmarke lying fast asleepe vpon the grasse, very heauy with the feare that they had endured all the day, least matters should not sort to so good effect as they wished. Then Oriana called them shewing vnto them the Kerchief which she had gotten, which so soone as they beheld they presently ran to helpe her downe: and when shee was come into the Orchard, Mabila said vnto her, Madame, I never had greater desire to see you returne, then I haue had euer since your departure from hence. For if you had beeene discouered, the Damosell & I had been but in a bad taking: neuerthelesse we determined to arme vs with patience. My good Cosin answered she, thankes be to God, all goeth well, I haue the kerchief, and your Cosin hath the sword. I, but thankes our Teares (said Mabila) by the which they were chiefly gotten. My Cosin said the faire Forlorne, I will not stick to shedde for you as much blood, as you haue for mee done teares, whensoeuer you haue neede of me, but I pray if you haue

any thing to eate, bring it into my Ladies chamber, for we haue gotten vs good stomacks. Herewithal he led Oriana by the hand into the castle. Now because wee will not digresse ouer far from that which happened to king Lisiart, we will leauie Oriana and her company at Mirefleur, to tell you what happened vnto his Maiesy and Galor, as they returned from the faire Forlorne, before they came back vnto the city. For a yong Damosell did meeete them, who deliuere vnto each one of them a letter, sent from Vrganda the Vnknowne, and without saying any other thing vnto them, she turned her horse toward that way from whence shee came. Wherefore the king opened his Letter which contayned this that enluereth. Vnto you Lisiart king of great Brittaine, such health & happiness as besemeth your Royall Maiesy. I Vrganda the Vnknowne, your humble seruant, doe certifie you, that the battell which is appointed betwixt you and king Cidadan shal be one of the most dangerous and cruellest that euer was scene, in the which the faire Forlorne, who hath newly given such great hope vnto your Maiesy shal lose his name, & by one blow that he shal giue, all his valiant deedes shal be quite forgotten, and then shal you bee in the greatest extremity that euer you were: for many good knyghts shal lose their lives, and you your selfe shal fall into the like danger, at that same instant when the faire Forlorne shal draw blood from you, neuerthelesse by three blowes which hee shal giue, those on his side shal remaine conquerors, and by this aduertisement it seemeth that hee shal be against you. Truely said the king I am to throughly assured of your good will that I know you doe faithfully and louingly advise me, so as if my trust were not in God (who hitherto hath bestowed

with

innumerable fauours vpon me, as in chusing mee king ouer his people) or if I did not stedfastly believe that no living man is able to withstand his diuine determination, I should haue great reason to bee in doubt, but you know that the hearts & discretion of kings ought to bee answerable vnto the greatnessse of their estate and calling, endeauouring as well to preserue their subiects in safety, as to provide for their owne security. And therefore I determine to remit all into the hands of my God, and patiently to endure whatsoeuer danger he shal lay vpon me, for in him only remaineth the disposition of things to come, for which cause my good friend, I assure you, that I will bee present in this bataile, for because I would be partaker of all the good, honor, or hurt that may happen vnto those which shall accompany me. Greatly did Galor like of the kings magnanimous determinations and answered him, Belleeue me it is not for nothing that your Maiesy is esteemed the most vertuous and valiantest Prince of the world, and if all kings could as well reppresse the counsell of those who dissuade them from their haughtie enterprises, none durst be once so bold as to say any thing vnto them, but that which should bee for their honour and glory, but now your Maiesy may bee pleased to see what Vrganda hath written vnto me. Herewithall he began to reade his Letter, wherein was contained this which ensueth.

Vnto you Don Galor of Gaule, most valiant and hardie Knight, I Vrganda the Vnknowne, doe send all hearty salutations, as she who both loueth and esteemeth you, & I will that you should vnderstand that

that which must happen vnto you, in this cruell battell betweene the two kings, *Lisuart* and *Cildadan*. If you be there be you sure that in the end thereof, your large and strong members, shall want power to assist your iuincible heart, & at the departure from the Combat your head shall bee in his power, who with the three blowes that he shall strike shall remaine conqueror. In faith said the king, if the contents of the Letter be true, and that you bee in this conflict, you see your death prepared, which should bee a great losse considering your valiant beginning in deeds of armes, therefore I shall so order the matter, as at this time you shall be excused from thence. It may please your Maiesy, answered *Galaor*, I now do very wel perceiue, that the counsell which euernow I deliuered vnto you, hath displeased your Maiesy, when seeing mee sound and able of body, you would perswade me to a matter so greatly to my dishonour, God forbid that I should herein obey you. Gentle friend said the king, you speake both vertuously, and valiantly, for the which I thanke you: and for this time, let vs leaue off this talke, and my aduice is, that none do see our Letters, for (it may bee) they may cause some feare & astonishment euern in the hearts of those that doe thinke themselves to bee most hardy and valiant. By this time they were come so neere vnto the City, that they entred vnder the gate thereof, & as the king looked behinde, he beheld two knights arm'd at all points, whose horses were ouer-trauell'd & weary, and their armour all to broken, in such sort that it was very easy to be perceiued that they had been at some bickering. One was *Bruno de*

*Bon' Mer*, and the other *Brenfil* his brother, who came of purpose vnto king *Lisuart*, to be of the number of those hundred knights which should bee in the battaile, if it pleased him to accept of them. But by the way *Bruno* had beeene aduertised, how the aduenture of the Sword was atchiewed, wherewith he was meruailous displeased that he came no sooner, because hee would haue tried his fortune therein, as he had done vnder the Arch of loyall louers, the which he had passed, and for the firm and constant loue that he did beare vnto *Melicia* sister vnto *Amadis*, hee did verily beleue that no suchlike aduenture might escape him: these two knights being come neer, did their dutie vnto the king, who received the very courteously. Then said *Bruno*, it may please your Maiesy we haue beeene aduertised of a battell which you haue agreed to be executed by a few knights, & so much the rather ought they to be selected and chosen men. For this cause if it would please your highnesse to doe vs this honor that we might be of the same number your Maiesy may bee assituted that we would bee very desirous to serue you. The King who had many times beeene aduertised of the prowesse of these twaine, especially of the valour of *Don Bruno* (who for a yong knight, was as muche esteemed as any other that might be found) accepted of them very willingly, and thanked them for their good will.

Now did not *Bruno* as yet know *Galaor*, but at the same instant they entred into such acquaintance and familiarity together, that vntill the Battell was finished, they parted not asunder.

And as the king entred into his lodg-

lodging, *Enil* came before him, with the head of *Lindorag* which did hang by the hayre at the paillott of his horse, and he had in his hand the shield and fingers of *Arcaens* the Enchanter, by meanes whereof before he was come neer the Palace, a great number of people did follow him, to know what newes he did bring. Afterwards being come into the kinges presence, hee declared vnto him the message that the faire *Forlorne* had sent by him, wherewith he was no lesse glad, then amased at so many good and blessed chanses that euery day happened and proceeded from this strange knight, and hee remained a great while praising & extolling him without ceasing. In like sort *Filipinel* who had been to give defiance vnto the Giants, at the same instant approached, & he recited the names and surnames of those which were appointed to be in the battell of king *Cildadan*, amongst whom there were found many strong Giants, and other knights of great worth, who were all embarked already, and how before that fourte dayes were past, they would all take landing in the bay of *Vega*, where the battell was to be foughten, then hee told the king how he had found at the burning Lake (which stands in the Isle of *Monga*) king *Arban* of *North Wales*, and *Angriotta d'Estraneux* prisoners vnto *Grumadace* wife vnto *Famongosaid*: who caused them to suffer infinit miseries and calamities, whipping them every day most cruelly so that their bodies were wounded all ouer, and they wrote a letter vnto the king, which *Filipinel* deliuered vnto him, the tenure whereof ensued. Vnto the most high and mighty Prince *Lisuart* king of great *Brataine*, and to

all our Friends and Allies within his Dominions. We *Arban* once king of *North Wales*, and *Angriotta d'Estraneux*, now detained in dolorous prison, doe let you know that our misfortune, more cruell then death it selfe, hath brought vs into the power of the most pittesse *Grumadace* wife to *Famongosaid*, who in reuenge of the death of her Husband and Sonne, doth daily cause vs to bee tortured with so many and strange tormentes, that it is impossible to bee imagined, so as every houre wee desire the abridging of our daies, that thereby we might bee released of our dolors. But this mischievous woma, the more to lengthen our paine, deferreth our death as much as she may, the which with our owne hands we had effected, but that the feare of the losse of our soules withheld vs.

And for as much as we are at this present so extremely wounded, that wee are no longer able to resist our deaths, we send you this Letter, written with our blood, by the which wee beseech God both to grant you the victory against these traitors, that haue in such inhumane sort tormented vs, and also that he will bee pleased to haue mercy vpon our soules. Great sorrow and compassion had the King for the losse of these 2. knights, notwithstanding seeing that for the present hee could in no sort remedie their misfortun, he dissembled his griefe, shewing as good a countenance as hee could, & because he would in no sort discourage the other Gentlemen there present, he set before their eyes the accidents wherinto many others had fallen, for the maintenance of their Honour of Knighthood, from the which many times they haue with great

great glory and honour escaped. But assure you my friends, said the King, that if wee doe gaine the Battaile, I will take such reuenge herof, that the rumor thereof shall fill the eares of all the people in the World. Therefore they

who are appointed to goe with mee, let them bee ready to morrow, for I will depart to goe mesme mine enemies. And according as it was appointed so was all performed.

## CHAP. XVI.

How that after the Faire Forlorne had brought Oriana back again, Mirefleur he departed, that he might be in the battel with King Lissart, and what happened vnto him.

**F**rice dayes did the faire Forlorne remain with Oriana after the gayning of the sword and Kerchiefe, and the fourth day following about midnight hee tooke his leave of her, and being armed at all points, he rode all the night long. Now had hee commanded Enil to goe and stay for him at a Castle scituated at the foote of a Hill, neere vnto the which the Battaile was to be foughthen, and it belonged vnto an ancient knight named Abredan: for in his house were all adventrous knights often-times honoured and serued, when they came thither to lodge. And the same night did the faire Forlorne passe hard by king Lissart his Campe not being perceiued at all, afterwards hee rode so long that vpon the 5. day following he came vnto Abredan his house, where he found Enil which was there arived but a little before: greatly was the faire Forlorne feasted by his Host, and as they were talking together, there entred in two of his nephews that were returned from the place where the combat should be: who assured them that already King Cildader and his troupe were there

arriued, and had set vp their Tents and Pavillions hard by the sea side. In like sort Don Grameda and Gentes Nephew to king Lissart were there come, with whom a Truce was concluded vpon cyther part, to bee holden vntill the day of the battaile, and that neyther of the two Princes should enter into the Combat with any more then one hundred knights in his company, according as it was promisid and sworne by them. Nephewes, said the host, what do you think of the Irish-men, whom God confound? Uncle answered one of them, they haue with them so many Giants, that if God doe not miraculously affist our good king, beleue me it is impossible for him to withstand them. Herewithall the teares fel from their Uncles eies, and he said, I hope that God will prove the best and iustest king in the world, from falling into the hands of such wicked people. Mine host, answered the faire Forlorne, be not afraid as yet, for it happeneth ouer very often that courage and equity overthroweth the pride and presumption of the strongest. But I pray you goe vnto the king, and tell him that there is lodges in your house a knight called the

Faire Forlorne, and that hee desirereth his Maiestie to send word by you, when the day of the battaile shall be. What sayd the olde man, are you hee that of late did send Des Quedragon vnto his Count, and slew Famborgaud and his son, when they had taken my Lady Leonor and her knyghtes? beleue mee Sir, if euer I did any pleasure vnto aduenturous knyghtes, I doe deth at this present acknowledge me thoroughly to be recompenced, my huse being now honoured with your presence, and I will not fail to accomplish that which it hath pleased you to command me. Then he mounted vpon his horse, and tooke with him his two Nephewes, and rode vntill hee camme where king Lissart was encamped, within halfe a league of his enemies, vnto whom he declared the message of the Faire Forlorne, at the which all the company did greatly reioyce. And the King answered: seeing that we haue the Faire Forlorne on our side, I doe also hope that wee shall haue the honor of the our enterprize. And now see the number of one hundred knyghts very well furnished, had wee but one knyght more. It may please your Maiestie said Grameda, you now haue the aduantage, for the Faire Forlorne is well worth five. This speech did nothing at all please Galor, Florestan, nor Agraeis, for they hated the Faire Forlorne vnto death, for the wrong which they thought he did vnto Amadis, neuerthelesse they held their peace, and Abredan hauing receiued his answere of the King, returned to his guest, vnto whom he recited the pleasure that every one receiued at the newes that he brought from him, and of the hundred knyghts there was no

L sed

ted him to giue him an armour for his Esquire, who desired to bee made a knight, the which he granted, wherefore *Enil* according to the custome, watched all night in the Chappell, and the next morning about the breake of day, after service was ended, hee received the order of knighthood by the *Faire Forlorne*, which done they all mounted on horse-back, in the compaニー of *Abredan* and his two Nephewes, who serued them for their Esquires. In the end they arrived where king *Lisuart* had already ordered his battaile, being ready to goe meete his enemies, who stayed his comming in a plaine field, but when the King beheld the *Faire Forlorne*, hee was exceeding ioyfull, and there was not any in the company, whose courage was not increased at his comming. Then hee approached neare vnto the king, vnto whom he sayd, it may please your Maiesty, I am come to accomplish my promise, and also I do bring another knight with me, for I was aduertised that your number was not full, wherevnto the king gave him most hearty thanks, and although there was not any one of the hundred knyghts, who were not all approumen, and esteemed amongst the best, yet king *Lisuart* (after he had ordered his battallion, seeing his enemies aproached) beganne to make this Oration vnto his armie. My fellowes, louing friends and countreymen, I am sure there is not any one amongst you, who knoweth not very well, how wee haue yndertaken this battaile with great right, especially for the defence of the honour and reputacion of the Realme of Great Britaine, which king *Cildeden* and those of *Ireland* would abase, in

denying vnto vs the tribute which they haue time out of winate paid vnto our predecessors, for the acknowledgement of the same, that in times past they haue acciued at their hands. Moreoþer I am throughtly assured that there is not any of you all, by whose heare is not both valiant, and invincible, for which cause there is no need that you should bee further animised, or encouraged, agaist those with whom you are to encounter, haing your honor before your eyen, which I knowe you doe more esteem then an hundred lynes, (if it were possible that so many you might haue) one after another. Therefore then my deere friends let vs boldly march on, notwithstanding a small number of coul and bloody minded Gyants, that are in their troupe, for armes is not to be esteemed the valiour by the outward appearance of his great, strong, and huge members, but by the magnanimous & couragious heart that remaineth with in him: you doe oftentimes behold the dogge to master the bell, and the sparrow hawke or hobbie to beate the kite. Our enemies trust in the force of these monstres, without haing any respect vnto the wrong that they maintaine, and wee onely put our trust in God, who being the righter of all injuries, will giue vnto vs sufficient strength to vanquish them, by the dexterity of our persons & our owne endeauours. Let vs boldly then march on my friends, euery one bearing this minde, that hee is able both to combatte and conquer the proudest of their troupe, assuring you it this day we gaine the honour of the battaile, that besides the honour and glory that shalbe spread of vs thorow the whole

whole world, neuer enemy to great Britaine dare once hereafter be so bold as to lift vp his head to doe vs the least iniury that may bee. Thus did king *Lisuart* incourage his knyghts: and king *Cildeden* on the other side did the like vnto his, for he went from ranke to ranke to animate them, saying vnto them: Gentle knyghts of *Ireland*, if you understand vpon what occasion you goe to fight, there is not one of you that will not blame his predecessor, for being so slacke in the vndertaking of so glorious an enterprise. The kings of Great Britaine, Vsurpers and Tyrants (not onely towardes their subiects, but also vpon their neighbours) haue heretofore without any right, exacted vpon their ancestors such a tribute, as is very well knowne hath often beeene payd, and for this cause wee haue made this assembly, and are come vnto this place to defend our liberty, which cannot bee paid by any treasure. It is your cause, it is your right, and not yours onely but your chyldren, who vntill this present time haue beeene held, and reputed by those whom you see determined likewise to make you seruants and slaues. Will you then alwayes liue in this sort? Will you continue this yoke vnto your successors? are you of lesse courage, or of lesse substance then your neighbours? Ah if wee are conquerours they shall restore that which they haue had of vs. I am very sure that Fortune doth fauour vs, for you see what men of worth are come vnto our ayde, knowing our great right. Let vs resist them, let vs resist them valiant knyghts. I see King *Lisuart* and his troupe now in feare & ready to turne their backs vnto vs. They are as they say, accustomed to vanquish; but we will reach them to accustome them selues to be vanquished. One thing I would advise you, that every man helpe his fellow, keeping you as close together as possibly you may. And longer would hee haue continued his Oration, if hee had not seene King *Lisuart* prepared to ioyne with him. Wherefore he retayned into the midst of his squadron, and sayd very loud, Now haue at them, since they will eate, giue them cold iron enough.

At this cry euery man prepared to receive his enemy, shewing by their countenance that they were men most hardy, and couragious. And foremost of all did march the *Faire Forlorne*, accompanied with *Enil*, as also *Grafar*, *Floresfan*, *Grases*, *Gondales*, the Gyant (who stole *Galon* away when he was but two yeres old) and his two lons *Bramandill*, and *Gaius*, whom *Galon* had newly made knyghts. After them *Nicoran de Pant Craistif*, *Dragonis*, *Palomir*, *Vinorant*, *Gionates* (Nephew to the King) the most renowned *Branno de Bonne Mer*, his brother *Brantill*, and *Guillam the Pensif*, who all marched after old *Grumedan*, (a knyght of honour belonging to the Queene) who carried King *Lisuart* his standard.

On King *Cildeden* his side the Gyants made the front of the battaile, with twenty knyghts all neare a kinde vnto the King, who (like a prouident Generall) appointed that *Mandafabull* the Gyant of the Isle of the Vermillio Tower, should remayne vpon the top of a litle hill, with ten of the best knyghts in their troupe, commanding them not to stir from thence, vntill they should perceiue assuredly toward the end of the battell that the most

valiant knights of Knig. *Liswars* side should be scattered and weary, and that then they should rush in vpon them, without spearing any man, sauing the Kings person. Whom they should take prisoner, and if they should perceiue any great resistance to be made, they should kill him if they could not carry him vnto their shippes. Thus the two batailes approached so neare one to another, that they came to the ioining together: there inight you haue seene Lances broken, armour clattering, armes stroken off, some cryng, others breaking the ranks of their enemies, so that this day might be well called a sorrowfull and dismal day, for those that were in this conflict, the which continued so long, vntill the most part of the day was past, yet none of them had so much time as once to breath, and yet it was so hot, that there was neither horse nor knyght that was not weary, & extreemly trauailed: for some lay vpon the ground, and the most part of the rest (in little better case) were so weake, that they could scant sit vpon their horses. At the same time the *Faire Porlorne* fearing least the losse should fall vpon their side, begā to shew al his force and strength, and he lighted vpon neuer an *Irishman* nor gyant, but that hee drew the blood from his body. Close by his side did King *Liswart* ride, who did well shew the great prowesse that remained in him, and hee was not ignorant of what consequence the end of this bataile was, for losing the victory thereof, he lost his dignitie, his life and honor, by meanes wherof without sparing his person, hee was entred in amongst his enemies, having his right arme all dyed with the blood of those,

whose liues had passed by the edge of his sword. On the other side, *Agreates*, *Galer*, *Floresian*, having from the beginning fecht the grex force and high Knight-hood that the *Faire Porlorne* had executed vpon his enemies, they who of long time did maligne him, determined either to dye, or to make knowne vnto every one, that they could also fight as well or better then hee, so that this emulatiōn was partly the cause of the animating of them so far, that they all had likely to haue lost their lives, for *Galer* chased like a Lion that is purlied, came rushing in among the Giants, and encountered *Cerdagae* of the invincible mountaine, who already with his bataile axe, had overthrown at his fete sixt of king *Liswars* knyghts, although that hee was wounded vpon the sholdēr, with a blowe that *Reffren* had giuen him, whereby hee lost much of his blood, then *Galer* came vnto him, and with all his strength, hee gaue him so great a blowe vpon the head, that hee cleft his helmet, and the sword passing down along cut off his ear, and the helue of his axe close into his fist.

Wherfore the Giant finding himselfe disfurnished of his weapon, ran vpon *Galer*, and lifted him vp with such force, that hee tooke him vp from his horse, crasing him betweene his armes so streightly, that one might easly haue heard his bones cracke. Neuerthelesse, the Gyant could not sit so sure in his saddle, but that hee was forced to fal to the ground with his burthe, wherfore *Galer* (which yet held his sword in his hand) soold the meanes to throst him in the bouer of his helmet, and it entred so farre into his head, that hee therewithall

withall yecelde vp the Ghost. But *Galer* was so tyred, that after hee was gotten vp from vnder *Cerdagae* he had not power to pull his sword from the place wherein hee had thrusted it, and (that which was worst) he was so crowded with the preſſe of people, that hee was likely to haue died vnder the horses feet, for many good knyghts both of the one and of the other side, (hauing ſene the encounter betweene him and the Gyant, and the perill of them both) were approched, of purpose to ſuccour them, by meanes whereof the bataile was then very great and maruaillous hot, for King *Cildadan* ſuddenly came to that place, who ouerthrew all thofe hee found in his way, and had not the *Faire Porlorne* beene (who with one blowe of his worde ſtoke him off his horſe) *Galer* had there ſurely died or beene taken, but when hee beheld King *Cildadan* on foot beside him, he princely ſealed his ſword which hee held, and began to defend himſelfe, and that ſo valiantly as maugre all his enemies, hee made them giue him roome. Notwithſtanding hee had ouerchafed himſelfe ſo much in this laſt bickering, that hee was quite out of breath, and hee fell downe flat vpon the earth. There was the Gyant *Gandalec*, who had foſtered him vp in his infancy, hee ſeeing him fall, was ſo angry that with great rage hee buckled with *Albadanor* another Gyant, and ſo many ſtoke they gaue vnto each other with their clubs, that they & their horses were ouerthrowne, wherewith *Albadanor* had his arme broken and *Gandalec* his legge. But they were not alone that were thus illtreated, for one might haue ſene more then ſix ſcore knyghts lying vpon the ground, and yet was not halfe the day ſpent. Then *Mandafabill* the Gyant of the Isle of the red Tower, who had beebe appointed to depart from the little hill wherof hee remayning downe till the extreamey of the earth, ſcolding ſo many knyghts dead, ſlaſtered and wounded through that he might well end their entrie pide, and that it were very easie for them to defaile the rest, by meanes whereof hee began to runne right vnto that place where was the greatest preſſe, cryng vnto his knyghts: Take heed that none escape away aliue, let all paſſe by the edge of the ſword; as for me, I haue vowed to take King *Liswart* in hand, for hee is mine dead or aliue. This cry was heard of euery one, especially of the *Paire Borlorne*, who returned from taking of a fresh horſe, which one of the nephewes vnto his horſe had reſerved for him, and fearing that the Gyant would doe as hee ſaid, hee came and ſtepped before the King, with *Agreates*, *Floresian*, *Branſſe de Boane Mer*, *Branſſe*, *Guillaſ the Penſſ* and *Enil*, who had all day long behaued himſelfe ſo valiantly, that hee was had in very great reputation. Now was *Mandafabill* beſter ſeconded then he thought, for as hee approched neare vnto the eſquadron of King *Liswart*, *Saragadan the Leonhois*, Uncle to King *Cildadan*, one of the beſt knyghts of his ſtocke, came foorth of the troupe, and running againſt the *Faire Porlorne*, he hit him ſo right a blow through his ſhield, that hee wounded him, yet not very much, and in paſſing by, the *Faire Porlorne* did hit him ſuch a thwart blow with his ſword vpon the beuer of his helme, that he cut both his eyes and the halfe of his vſage off.

throwing him downe starkē dead  
upon the ground.

Herewithall *Mandafabull* and  
those that were with him beeing  
mad angry, entered pell-mell a-  
mong King *Lisuart* his knyghts  
with lutch furie, that manger their  
resistance, *Mandafabull* took hold  
of the King by the coller, and lif-  
ted him from his horse, carrying  
him vnder his armes right vnto his  
shippes. But the faire *Furlorne*  
was ware of it, who ran after him  
and overtooke the Gyant, hitting  
him so forcibly with his sworde  
vpon the arme, that hee cut it off  
hard by the elbow, and the blowe  
sliding downe, wounded the King  
in such sort, that the blood fell  
downe vpon the ground. Then  
*Mandafabull* with the great griece  
that hee felt, gaue a loud cry, and  
without going any further, he fell  
downe dead in the place, where-  
upon the faire *Furlorne* seeing that  
his blow had so well profited, as  
that therewithall hee had slaine  
such a Gyant, and deliuered the  
King in like sort, hee began to cry  
aloud *Gaule, Gaule*, here is *Amadis*  
who is yet aliue. So saying hee en-  
tered amongst the thickest of his  
enemys, who had in a manner lost  
their hearts, by seeing two of the  
principallest of their army in that  
sort to be slaine, especially know-  
ing that *Amadis* (whom they long  
before thought to bee dead) was  
present to their confusion. And  
had not *Gandaturiell* one of the  
strongest Gyants in their troupe  
encouraged them againe, they had  
then surely turned their backs, but  
hee valiantly made head against  
his enemies, which being percei-  
ued by *Amadis*, who was desirous  
to reuenge his brother *Galon*, whom  
hee imagined to bee dead, he thrust  
himselfe amongst his e-

nemys, and entred into the thic-  
kest of the pessle, so farre that there  
he had remained, without the syd  
which King *Lisuart* brought vnto  
him, who had recovered his horse,  
and there were in his compane  
*Brunco, Florestan, Guillan, Leda, Gal-  
wanes, Olinas, and Dow Granda-  
dew*, who carried his standart,  
which was cut asunder beeween  
his armes. All those seeing *Amadis*  
in to great danger (although  
the most part of them were very  
sorely wounded) had such ex-  
ceeding ioy when they knewe that it  
was hee, that they bestirred them  
in such sort, as notwithstanding all  
the resistance that these *Irisshmen*  
could make, they gaue ayde vnto  
*Amadis*, and passing on further  
they found *Agraises, Palomin, Bas-  
fil and Dragonis*, manfully fighting  
on foote against those that had  
throwne them downe. Yet they  
were so neerely driven, that they  
could not any longer withstand  
the force of their enemies, al-  
though they had already slaine  
more then sixe, as well Gyants as  
*Irisshmen* which would haue over-  
runne them, and without doubt  
they had beeene so handled had not  
these succours come vnto them.  
So that they which would haue  
forced them, had enough to doe  
to defend themselfes, because that  
*Amadis* (in spight of them) made  
them to recoule backe, and that in  
such sort as with the ayde of his  
troupe hee was the meane that his  
Cosen *Agraises* and his fellows  
did remount their horses. Then  
the forces of King *Lisuart* encou-  
red, and the *Irissh* troupes de-  
cressed, wha dispairing of all helpe,  
had recourse vnto their vessele  
which were aboate hard by the  
shoare to saue their boote, for he  
tunc had not contradicte them  
but

but *Amadis* pursuing the victory,  
chased them with such fury, that  
the most part of the vanquished,  
desired rather to be buried amidst  
the waues of the Sea, then on the  
shoare, which was so dead and wa-  
tered with their blood. The which  
*Gandaturiell* perceiving (being e-  
steemed amongst all the Gyants  
one of the stoutest) without any  
feare at all of his death, which hee  
saw ready prepared for him, desi-  
ring before the end of his dayes to  
bee reuenged, bearing his head  
somewhat lowe, and holding his  
sharp sworde in his hand, he would  
haue stroken at king *Lisuart*, but  
*Florestan* stepped before him, who  
hit him so sound a knock with his  
sworde vpon the Helmet, that hee  
made it flicke from his head, and the  
King whos hard at hand, seeing  
him bare, diuided his pate into  
two parts. Then was there a great  
slaughter of the *Irisshmen*, for they  
were all now overthowne by *Amadis*,  
*Florestan*, and *Agraises*: who  
persuad them euuen into the Sea,  
where they were swallowed vp  
with waues, therewithal king *Lis-  
uart* and his people retyred. And  
because that *Amadis* had marked  
the place where hee had seene *Ga-  
lor* stroken downe, hee prayed his  
Cosen *Agraises* & others that they  
would helpe him to finde him a-  
mongst the dead. Neuerthelesse  
they had not found him without  
the helpe of *Florestan*: who knew  
him by a greene fleue which hee  
did weare, wrought full of white  
flowers, but hee was so couered  
with blood & dust, that they could  
scant knowe him. And I doe not  
knowe so hard a heart which had  
then seene the mone that *Amadis*  
did make for him, that would not  
haue burst forth into teares, for he  
beholding him in this estate, fell  
downe all along vpon him. Where-  
by his yngunes did open, against  
which the congealed blood was  
already setled, and I thinke that *Am-  
adis* had died vpon him if twelve  
Damosels had not by chaunes  
come thither suddenly, who were  
very richly attyred, and had can-  
sed a rich bed to bee brought by  
their Esquires, these finding *Am-  
adis* so desperate, sayde vnto him:  
My Lord wee are come hither to  
seeke your brother *Galon*, and if  
you will euer see him aliue, suffer  
vs to carry him presently away, o-  
therwise there is no Chyrurgeon  
in all Grete Brittaigne that is able  
to heale him.

Herewithall *Amadis* was great-  
ly ashamed, because the Damosels  
had found him in that order, and  
although that hee knew them not,  
yet hearing them speake of his bro-  
thers health, hee determined (see-  
ing the extreme perill wherein he  
was) not to refuse their request,  
though it was to his extreme  
griece. And therefore he answered  
them, my faire gentlewomen, may  
in please you to tell vs whither you  
will carry him. Not now said they,  
but if you will desire to haue him  
aliue, give him vnto vs without  
any longer delay, otherwise wee  
will be gone. Alas answered he, I  
pray let mee followe you. You  
may not, and yet for your sake wee  
are content that *Ardes* the Dwarfe  
and his Esquire shall accompanie  
him. Then they layd him vpon the  
bed (all arm'd as hee was) & they  
caused him forthwith to be carri-  
ed into the shipp from whence they  
were come, which was yet close to  
the shoare. Afterwards they re-  
turned againe vnto king *Lisuart*, to  
entrete him that hee would give  
them king *Cildadan*, who lay  
among the dead, and to induce him there-

thereunto, they shewed vnto him that although Fortune had fauoured him in this exploye, yet hee shoulde not exced his cruelty vpon his enemy. The which the King considering, permitted them to carry him away dead or aliue, wherefore the Damosels took him vp and carried him away with *Galois*, and so soone as they came into the ship they set sayle, hauing the winde so faire, that suddenly they were out of all mens sight.

Thus king *Lishart* remayned conquerour ouer his enemies, going quite through the field to finde out as well such of his owne people as those of his enemis, that were not yet thoroughly dead, to cause them carefully to bee looked vnto by skilfull Surgeons. And as hee went from one place to another, hee met with *Amadis*, whose face was all to be blubbered with tears, vnto whom he had not as yet spoken since his retурne, and seeing him so heauy, after he had knowne the cause of his mone, hee shewed an evident signe of the sorrow that he lusted for *Galois* sake, whō hee loued as dearely as himselfe, & not without cause, for from the first day that hee receiued him for one of his knyghts, he alwaies serued him faithfully, neuer forsaking him for any warre or debate that happened betweene his maestly & *Amadis*, as hereafter shall bee rehearsed vnto you. But the King desirous to manifist the force of his vertue, the better to comfort his knyghts, all wounded as hee was, lighted from his horse to imbrace *Amadis*, whō kneeled down to shew his duty vnto his Maestly. My deere friend sayd king *Lishart*, you are most happily met, I know now very well, that without your ayde the realme of Great Britaine

had beeene in no small danger, and I pray you be not so heauy for the losse of your brother, seeing that the Damosels haue assured you of his health.

In this sorte want king *Lishart* comforting of *Amadis*, whom hee caused to mount on horse-backe, and afterwards hee brought him into his tent where there was brought somewhat for them to eat, & because he would depart the next day, he appointed ouer night that the dead shoulde bee buried in a Monasterie hard by the place where the battaile was giuen, vpon the which place hee had bestowed great riches, to cause them to pray for him. In like sorte hee dispatched a knyght to goe in hys to aduertise the Queene of the victory that hee had gotten ouer his enemies, and the next morning tooke his way toward the City of *Genes* (which was about four leagues off) where hee remayned vntill he and his people were healed. While these things were in doing, the Queene *Briolanis* got leaue of Queene *Brisena*, that she might goe to *Mirefleur* to visit *Oriana*, hauing a great desire to see her, because she was renowned through all the world for her most excellent beauty. Of whose coming *Oriana* being aduertised, she caused the place to bee decked vp as well as possibly it might bee, and she receiued her most honorably, but when she beheld her to beso faire, the suspition that shee had conceiued against *Amadis*, was not so thoroughly mortified but that it somewhat reviued againe in her, notwithstanding all the proof that she had had of him, cytherby his passing thorough the Arch of loyall louers, or by his winning of the olde mans sworde, beleeving

assuredly that it was a thing impossible that any man could be so constant as hee might forbear from louing a creature so beautifull as *Briolanis* was. On the other side *Briolanis* verily thought that the often sighes of *Amadis* in her presence, proceeded of no other cause, but the affection which hee did beare vnto *Oriana*: for shee was the most rare Princesse and of the sweetest grace that euer shee had seene. Thus were these two Ladies suspitious one of another, and they remayned together discoursing of diuerte matters agreeable to their affections, especially of the vertues and perfections of *Amadis*. But *Oriana* (the better to diue into the thought of *Briolanis*) sayde vnto her, I doe much maruaile gentle *Cosen*, considering the bond wherein you are tyed vnto *Amadis*, (as also seeing that hee is descended from Emperours, and the sonne vnto the king of *Genes*) that you haue not chosen him for your husband. Madame answered *Briolanis*, beleeue me I shoulde haue thought my self most happy if the same might haue beeene brought to passe, but yet of one thing I can assure you, the which I pray you to keepe as secret as it deserueth. Many times did I motion such a matter vnto him, but his continuall sighes did presently yelde me an answere in his behalfe, yet could I never understand in what place his loue was so settled, so couert and secret is hee in all his affections: neuerthelesse let him be whatsoeuer hee will be, he shall dispose of me, and all that mine is for euer, as he shall thinke good. Exceeding glad was *Oriana* to understand these newes, by the which shee appeased her new conceiued ialousie against

*Amadis*, and sayd vnto *Briolanis*, I doe greatly maruaile what shee is whom thee louest as you say, and there is no doubt but that hee is one of the number of these louers, by the testimony which the image of the enchanted Arch hath declared of him, for according vnto that which hath beene recited vnto me, it shewed more for him then euer it did for any that there before had passed. He loueth without doubt *Amadis*, but it is so secret that non may knowe what, or where she is.

In this sorte did the two Princesse passe away their time, still talking of *Amadis* during their aboad in the Castle of *Mirefleur*, from whence within a fewe dayes after they departed to go towards *Fenus* to see the Queene *Britene*, where she stayed for King *Lishart*, who was very glad to see her daughter retурne in so good health. There they had newes of the victory that the King had against the Prince of *Ireland*, wherewith their ioy redoubled, and God was highly praised: but when Queene *Briolanis* knew that he which was called the *Paire Forlorne* was *Amadis de Gaul* never was there woman more joyful then she. And although that *Oriana* and *Mabille* knew the cause thereof very well (as you haue heard) yet did they dissemble the matter, and seemed to wonder thereat no lesse then the rest, by meanes whereof *Briolanis* did often times say thus vnto them: would you euer haue suspested that *Amadis* would haue thus disguised himselfe, & taken a strange name amongst his dearest friends, desiring thereby to extinguish his owne renoume by the great prouesse that hee performed vnder the title of a straunger? By my faith,

answered *Oriana*, if hee returne with the King, wee must know of him wherefore hee did it, and also what shew was that gained the ker-

chiefe with him. I assure you shew *Briolenia* that we will not flete to demand it of him, and I believe he will willingly tell vs.

## CHAP. XVII.

*How King Cildadan and Galaor were unawares to themselves, carried away by twelve Damosels, and one of them was put into a strong Tower inuironed with the Sea, and the other in a garden inclosed with high walles, where they thought they had beeene in prison, and of that which happened there unto them.*

**N**ow wee will rehearse vnto you, the entaynement that was made vnto King *Cildadan* and *Galaor*, whom the Gentlewoman had put into the ship, and they were carried and so well looked vnto, that the third day following they began to amend, for vntill then they had lost all manner of feeling and remembrance. And *Galaor* found himselfe to bee layd in a chamber (within a garden) furnished in the most sumptuous order that ever he had seene, the which was supported vp with foure Marble pilkers, inuironed notwithstanding with great gates of iron, through the which he might easily see from his bed where hee lay, all the circuit of the garden, the which was closed about with high walles, not hauing any entrance into it but one little dore couered ouer with plates of iron, whereby he thought that hee was in prison. Then did he begin to feele such great griefe in his wounds, that hee hoped for nothing but death. Then did hee remember that hee had beeene in the bataile, but he knew not who had either brought him away, or layd him in a place so strange as this was. And no lesse abashed was

king *Cildadan* to see that hee was locked vp in a strong Tower compassed about with the maine Sea, although that the chamber wherein hee remayned was most richly hanged, and he laid in a goodbed. Neuerthelesse hee was alone, and he thought that he did heare some people talking right vnder the vault, but hee could neither perceiue doore, nor place where thorough any body might enter into his chamber. Wherefore hee rose vp, and put his head foorth at the window, and he could see nothing but the Sea, whose waues did beat against the place wherein hee remayned shut vp, the which was built vpon the top of a most steep and hard Rocke, neither did hee know how hee was brought from the place where hee was smitten downe among the preesse of people. Notwithstanding hee knew very well seeing hee was in such a place that he had lost the bataile, and that his knighes were either alread dead, or taken, but yet he comforted himselfe as well as he could, & layd him downe againe vpon his bed, bewayling greatly the griefe which hee did feele in his wounds. Thus was *Galaor* lying sickle on the other side, as hath beeene recited, who heard the little dore of the garden

CHAP. XVII.

Of *Amadis de Gaule*.

garden open: which caused him to rise from his bed, as well as hee could, and hee perceiued a faire Gentlewoman comming vnto him, being very richly attired, the which did bring with her a knight so olde and crooked, that it was wonder how hee could bee able to stand. These approaching neare vnto *Galaor*, sayd to him through the grates of yron, without opening the chamber dore. Knight, prouide for your soules health, for we will not henceforth warrant you. Then the Damosell tooke forth two littleboxes, one of iron, and the other of siluer: and shewing them vnto *Galaor*, she sayd vnto him. Knight, the party which hath caused you to come hither, will not that you should die, before shee knowe whether you will accomplish her will or no, and in the meane season she will cause your wounds to bee cured. Gentlewoman, answered *Galaor*, if shew desire that I should do any thing contrary to mine honour, I had rather die. You may doe, sayd shee, as you list, although it is your choyce either to live or die. Herewithall the olde man opened the gate, and so soone as they were entred into the chamber, the Gentlewoman presently gaue vnto him the yron boxe, willing him to step back, the which he did. Afterwards she sayd vnto *Galaor*. My Lord, I am so sorry for your sicknesse, that for to saue your life, I will hazard mine owne death, and I will declare that which I was put in charge to doe. Which is, that I should fill these two boxcs, the one with poysone, and the other with oyntment to make you sleepe, to the end that when you did awake, you might feele such extreame paine, that with the rage thereof, you might cruelly end your life, but

I haue done cleane contrary, for I haue filled them with such a salve, that if you use it but seven dayes together, you shall finde your selfe whole, sound, and able to mount on horse-backe. Then she rubbed his wounds with the oyntment, the which was of such vertue, that at the same instant his paine was appeased, and hee fel so easie, that he sayd vnto the Damosell. Faire Gentlewoman, you doe binde me so greatly vnes you, that if euer I come forth from hence, you may bee sure that never any Gentlewoman was better recompenced by any knight, then you shall be by me, neuerthelesse, if you haue nor the meanes to deliuer mee, I beseeche you at the least, doe so much that *Vrganda the unknowne* may be aduertised thereof, for I haue euermore had a grete confidence in her. The Gentlewoman began to laugh, and answered him. What doe you take such account of *Vrganda*, seeing that hitherto she hath been so carelesse of your wealth or woe? I know well, sayd he, that as she knoweth the secrethouthes of men, so is shew not ignorant how much my desire is to serue her. Neuer care you for any other *Vrganda* (answered she) then me, and haue only a good hope, endeououring to hasten your health, taking vnto you the courage of a valiant man, such as you haue alwaies bin esteemed, seeing that you know that manhood and valour, is not onely requisit at combats and dangerous encounters, but in other accidents that may suddainly happen, like as at this present the case standeth. And for the recompence of the perill that I doe vndertake, to heale you and deliuer you from hence, I pray you graue vnto me one gift, which shall neither be hurtfull nor disho-

dishonourable vnto you. Trust me Damosell sayd hee, you shall haue of mee euен whatsoeuer you shall please, if it may well and lawfully be performed. Go to, then answered shee, let this suffice you now, vntill it bee time for mee to returne againe to dresse you, in the meane season couer you, and feigne as if you slept soundly, the which hee did. Then the Gentlewoman called the olde man, and sayd vnto him, see how the knight sleepeth, the poysone doth now worke vpon him. All the better, answered the olde man, hee which hath brought him hither, so farre as I see shall be sufficiently reuenged vpon him, and seeing that you haue so well obeyed that which you were commanded, I am content hencelorth that you doe come without any guard at all to visit him. But vse him after this manner fiftene dayes together, for at that time they shall come hither, who (for the iniurie that hee hath done vnto them) shall take such satisfacion of him, as they please. *Galeor* heard all their talke, and hee knewe very well that the old man was his mortall enemie, neuerthelesse hee had some hope in the Damosels promise, who had assured him that hee should be healed in seauen dayes, hoping (if so shee did) that hee might easly saue himselfe from their hands. Herupon the olde man and the Damosell departed: but shee tarried not long before hee did see her returne with two other young virgins, exceeding faire, who brought viuals vnto *Galeor*, and caused him to eate. This done the Damosell commanded the other two to keepe him company, and to reade before him some pleasant Histories, to keepe him from slee-

ping in the day time, so that *Galeor* being greatly comforted by the Damosels kinde entretaynement, was thoroughly assured that shee would helpe him as shee had promised, and so shutting the gate, shee departed & left the two yong Gentlewoman discoursing with him. Farre otherwise did it happen vnto king *Cildadan*, who beeing shut vp within a Tower, and layd vpon his bed, did see a doore of stone to open (the which was clost fastened in the wall, that it seemed as if it had beeene the wall it selfe) by the which there entred in a gentlewoman of middle age, accompanied with two armed knyghts, the which came close to his bed side. The King saluted them, but they answered not, the gentlewoman listed vp the couering that he had vpon, and looking vpon his wounds, she dressed the, afterwards she gaue him somewhat to eate, & returned both she and the knyghts the same way they came, not once speaking vnto him. When the King beheld their maner of behaviour, he beleueued that he was in the prison of such a one where his life was in no great safety, neuerthelesse he took as good comfort vnto him as he could, not being able otherwise to remedy his mishap. But the gentlewoman that looked vnto *Galeor* seeing that it was time to dresse him went vnto him, and asked him how he fared. Passing we answered *Galeor*, & I hope (seeing the good beginning of my amanement) that I may be healed within the time that you haue promised. There is no doubt thereof laid shee, therefore I will that you promise me as you are a loyall knyght, not to depart from hence without my leaue, otherwise your life may be in perill of death. *Galeor* did swere

vnto her so to doe, beseeching her most instantly to tell him how shee was called. But she answered him. How now *Galeor*, doe you not yet know my name? Truely now I am greatly deceived. considering the semices that heeretofore I haue done for you, when you are so forgetfull of me? I am called, The wife among the wifest: saying so, shee went forth of the chamber sayning wchc very angry, and pulled the doore rudely after her. Wherewith *Galeor* remained more peisue then before, and bee remembred him of the faire sword that *Vrgonda* had giuen vnto him, when his brother *Amadis* made him knyght, whereby hee suspected that it was she her selfe, neuerthelesse, hee was in some doubt, because that when he saw her first, she seemed to bee olde and crooked, and this was young, faire, and in good liking. And as he was in this study not being able to sleepe, he turned his head toward the place, where the young Gentlewoman were accustomed to sit in keeping him company, but in stead of them he perceived *Galeor* his claire, and *Arden* the Dwarfe of *Amadis*: at which he was no lesse abashed then joyfull, and he called them because that they slept. Who at their awaking, seeing their Maister, they became no lesse amased then he, and they rose vp doing their duty vnto him, and hee demanded how they were come thither, who answered, that *Amadis*, *Floresor* and *Agraeis*, had commanded them to follow him. They further declared vnto him, in what estate the Damosels tooke him vp, for which cause *Amadis* seeing in what extremity you remained, permitted them to carry you away, together with King *Cildadan*. What do you say?

In the meane time King *Lisfaunt*, *Amadis*, and the other Knights fained at *Gouete*, and after they were healed of their wounds, they determined to goe vist the Ladies which fained for them in the Castle

of *Erasfa*, of whom they were received with great joy. But during their aboad there, as *Amadis* talked with Queen *Briolanis* (in the company of *Orione*) she sayd vnto him. My Lord, I assure you I was so sorrowfull when it was told mee that you were lost, that I can in no sorte expresse vnto you the displeasure that I received therewith, and at the last seeing that you staid so long before you returned, I determined to come vnto this Court, with a hundred of my Knights, to cause the search of you to begin, according to the appointment of my Lord your brother. Nevertheless by meanes of the bataile which the King had appointed with King *Cildader*, my enterprise was staid, and that in a good houre, seeing that it pleased God so soon to bring you home againe. Therefore aduise you now (if it please you), what you will that I shall doe for you, for I will obey you all my life long. Madame, answered *Amadis*, if you were in any perplexity for mee, you had great reason, for I am well assured, that there is no sight in the world more ready to do you service then is *Amadis of Gaul*. But seeing that it pleaseth you to refer all your affaires vpon me, I pray you to tarry yet in this Court eight or tenne daies longer, vntill we may hearre some newes from my brother *Orione*, in the meane time you shall have the pastime of a Combate, which my brother *Floresfa* must performe against *Laudis*, and afterwards I will conduct you home into your Countrey, and from thence I will take my way vnto the Fynne-Island, where I must needs be. I will do, saide *Briolanis* what soever it shall please you, prouided that you doe tell vnto vs the

wonders and maruishes that have chacefisnes. And when he haue隧道 him by the hand, and led him. My Lord *Amadis*, you have some what to doe, forsooth leauing you in peace, chose vs to tolde vs something. In this, Ladies, answered hee, shal I take in hand to recite the familiarites of the whole, yea, it impossible: neuerthelesse, trulye tell you that shee for her chamber is the most faire woman in all the world, and if shee were gained by one of you twaine, never may any other person be therein. *Briolanis* remained while without answering him, the end she said vnto *Amadis*, I doe not think that I may come to finish such an aduenture, notwithstanding (such as I am) were not to bee reputed worthy me, I would willinglye make thereof. Madame, answered hee, that is not to bee counted a pessible on, to trie that wherein *Amadis* haue failed vntill this present, for cause they were not faire enough, and you which are one of the most excellent creatures in the world should doe so much amiss to ferre this singularity, as you mighte turne your goodnesse to blame, in not performinge your deuote. *Amadis* did fadde in her countenance, and was not greatly pleased with this discource, and alid he thought that he had fadde, but whate might redounde to honor, yet did he greatlye wonder that he had spoken so ill of her, for he had seen the old image of *Erasfa*, and he knew very well that *Briolanis* was in no sorte inferior to her in beauty, therelose

not attaine vnto that glory, the which hee made no doubt at all in *Orione*. But *Orione* judged faire otherwise, for shee imagined that there was not any shing in the world that *Briolanis* might not accomplish, if by beauty it might bee conquered, and dissembling before her the malice that shee now had eeuied against her, shee praied her that if shee entred into the forbidden châber, that shee would vouchsafe to send her news thereof. Then shee rose vp, and went to seekke our *Mabille*, whom whē shee had found, shee recited all the conference that had passed betwixt *Amadis* and *Briolanis*, (in her presence) saying vnto her. By my faith your Cosin doth very often give mee the like alarms, although hee bee assured that I take no pleasure at all in any thing, but onely in that wherein I may best please and obey him, without respect of mine honour, fear of God, or obedience to my parents. But he knoweth that hee hath ful power ouer me, which causeth him now to despise me, for the which I may onely blame that private familiarity which I haue shewed vnto him, thinking that I had done all for the best. In uttering these her supposed wrongs, abundance of teares fell from her eyes, which *Mabille* perciuing (as being very discrete) shee bethought her of a present Antidote to expell this poison. And therefore faining to bee exceeding angry, with the injury that *Orione* offered vnto *Amadis*, shee answered her very sharply and shrewdly: Madame, I doe greatly wonder at you, and your manner of behaviour, for so soone as one mischiefe hath forsaken you, another doth presently follow you, and you ought (methinkes) to take better regarde vnto that

you hee hath not onely forgotten himselfe, (but also regarded none but you) hee hath quite disdayned all his kindred, and hath accounted them as meere strangers, not knowing them at all, not any other but you whom hee adoreth as his God, and yet you would by your folly procure his overthrow. Ay mee, the dangers and evident perill wherein hee and his haue, ofteentimes beeene brought vnto for your sake, as well against *Arcaless* as in this last bataile, are very ill acknowledged by you, seeing that now in satisfaction thereof, you desire the destruction of the chiese and principallest of my kindred. Is this the fauour and recompence for the seruices that I haue done vnto you? Truely my hope is now greatly deceipted, seeing before mine eyes, a complot is layd for the ruine and fall of a wight whom I doe most loue in the world, and hee, that is yours more then his owne, notwithstanding (if it please God) it shall not be so, nor shall such a misfortune happen to neere vnto mee. For I will intreate my brother *Agraises* and my Uncle *Galunes* to carry mee into *Scaland*, whereby they shall doe mee a great pleasure to take me away from your company who are so vngratefull. Herewithall shee wept so extreamely, as though shee would haue drowned her selfe with teares. Alas sayd shee God grant that the cruelty which you commit against your *Amadis*, light not vpon your owne head, to satisfie all his kindred, who shall not lose so much (in his lacke) as you alone shall doe, although it should be the greatest misfortune that could happen vnto vs. When *Oriana* did heare *Mabila* speake in such choller, her hearte was so

ouercharged, that bespecked her vntill shee had a little whilene-  
tered her, when bursting out into  
teares, shee mainly cryed out, oh  
mee poore soule, aboue all else  
lacke and sorrowfull women, most  
wretched: who would onelie  
imagined this which you haue  
now made manifest vnto me,  
could euer haue proceeded forth  
of your heart? Alas I haue dis-  
losed my secretes vnto you, (having  
about me no other worthy to under-  
stand my sorrowes) to haue  
counsel & comfort at your handes,  
but you discomfyt mee, and me  
worse then I haue deserved,  
reputing me to be farre vngentle  
then I am, or euer shall be fuling  
as breath remayneth within my  
sorrowfull heart, which maketh  
mee to presume that neuertho-  
ugh my misfortune hath brought  
on mee this unhappy wafing  
that you haue taken in such ill  
that which I did tell you for the  
best. And let God newthel-  
p mee if I did thinke dayes of my  
life vpon that wherevnto you  
blame and accuse mee, for I haue  
so great confidence in your fa-  
ten, that I study vpon nothing so  
much, as how to content him: so  
thus much I must tell you, that I  
had rather die then any other ha-  
my selfe, should gaine the heauen  
of the forbidden Chamber. Inde-  
you then what griefe it woulde  
to me if *Briolanis* (who goeth  
before to make prooffe theren)  
should accomplish it, notwithstanding  
my good *Colen* & deare  
friend, I pray you to pardonne me,  
and (if it please you) defens me  
to aduise me what you thinke best  
for mee to doe. For your *Colen*  
might bee very angry if hee did  
know that which I haue helped  
of him. Madame, answered *Mabi-*

to this honour, the which my La-  
die shall obtaine without any dif-  
ficultie. Neuerthelesse if it were  
first before *Briolanis* had made her  
try all therein, one might say after-  
ward, If she had begun before *O-  
riana*, that then shee had first at-  
chieued the aduenture: by means  
whereof I was so bold (in the pre-  
sence of my Lady) to give her that  
counsell which you haue heard,  
*Mabila* liked well this excuse of  
*Amadis*, and tolde *Oriana* thereof,  
who did greatly repent her that  
shee had spoken so much, fearing  
leastr *Amadis* would haue been of-  
fended with her, and to make a-  
mends for this fault which shee had  
committed, shee sent him word by  
*Mabila*, that he shold come to see  
her in her lodging, where she and  
*Briolanis* stayd for him, the which  
he did. At his coming the Ladies  
ooke him by the hand, and made  
him sit betweene them, then they  
prayed him to tell them the truth  
of that which they would demand  
of him, wherunto hee consented.  
Well vs then sayd *Oriana*, what is  
the Ladie that gaisted the kerchief  
with the flowers, when you con-  
quered the burning fword? *Amadis*  
perceiued well that he was not  
onely overtaken, but also constrain-  
ed to tell the truth, for which  
cause he answered *Oriana*: In faith  
Madame I know no more what she  
was then you doe, although I re-  
mained in her company sixe daies  
together. But thus much did I see  
in her, that she had the fairest haire  
that any Lady or Damosell could  
possibly haue, and thee is besides  
most beautifull, and of a most ex-  
cellent grace, for the rest you  
know as much as I doe. By my  
faith said *Oriana*, if shee got the  
kerchief with great honour, it had  
bin like afterward to haue cost her  
very

very deere as it was tolde mee, for without your assistance Arcalans the enchanter and his Nephew Lindorq had taken it from her, & also done her some villany. It was not hee answered Briolanis (if hee be Amadis) but another who was called the Faire Forlorne, from whom wee must not derogate the honour to attribute it vnto another. And although I am greatly bound vnto Amadis, yet will I not let to speake the truth of the Faire Forlorne, because if the one haue surmounted Apolodon in proesse by winning of the Firme-Island, the same being vnto him an exceeding great reputacion, so in like sorte was the other worthy of no lesse praise, who in one onely day ouerthrew tenne of the best knights in Great Bristain, and slew the most redoubted Gyant Famongomed, and Basiganis his sonne: if Amadis did passe vnder the Arch of loyall louers, in whose fauour the Images of copper did sound a more melodious tune, then it did for any other that euer proued the same aduenture, thereby manifesting his loyalty, it seemeth in like sorte that the Faire Forlorne had as great an aduantage in gaining the the burning sword, the which for the space of threescore years no other could draw forth of his scabbard. Therfore Madame, it is not reason to take away the honour from the Faire Forlorne, and without desert to giue it vnto Amadis, seeing that both in proesse and loyalty they may (as I thinke) equall one another. And as they were in these pleasant discourses, a Damosell came and told Amadis that the King asked for him, because that Don Quedragant and Landin his Nephew were before him to acquite them of the

promise that they had made by the meanes whereof Amadis was constrained to leaue the Lady, and to goe vnto the Court. By the way hee met with Bruneo and Brusil, who followed him, & they found that Quedragant had begunne his speech vnto the King, saying: It may please your Maiesty, I haue stayed heere for Amadis of Gaul, according to the couenant that I made with the Faire Forlorne, and now that hee is in the Court I will discharge mee of my promise. True it is that by force of armes, I was constrained to graunt vnto the Faire Forlorne that I should not depart from your company, vntill Amadis were returned, and then hee being come before your highnesse, I should cease all quartels that I had enterprised against him, for the death of king Abies of Ireland my brother, and never after to demand any thing at his hands, therefore and in like sorte that I should never hereafter beare arms against your Maiesty, or any of yours. Which matter hath since grieved me more then one would thinke, because I could not be present at the battaile, the which you had vndertaken against king Cildadan and his followers, of the number of whome I thought to haue beene, but fortune was so contrary that my intent was turned farre otherwise then I had purposed, for the hate which I did beare vnto Amadis, is conuerted into a most great amity, the which I am determined to holde inviolable with him, if he think it good being assured that I was overcome by him, vnder the name of the Faire Forlorne, the which he had taken because hee would nocht knowne. So that I doe manifestly perceue that fortune is wholly de-

determined to aduance him, as the force which hee did shew in this last battaile can sufficiently witnesse, the honour whereof ought wholly to bee yeelded vnto him and to no other. For this cause it may please your Maiesty, seeing my Lord Amadis is heere present, that first you will discharge mee of that which I haue promised vnto him vnder a contrary name, and as for him I remit all the euill will that I did beare vnto him, for the death of my late deceased brother king Abies, and I doe further intreate him to accept mee for his companion and perpetuall friend. Sir Quedragant answered the King, you speake like a prudent and wise knight, for what proesse or courage soeuer a Gentleman hath, if hee bee not gouerned by counsell & reason, he is not worthy that any man should make account of him. You are sufficiently knowne for one of the best knights in the world, yet you may be assured that the fellowship which you demand of Amadis shal in no sorte diminish your praise & renowne, you two continuing in mutuall amity together: and you may beleue that hee will bee very glad to accept of the offer which you doe make vnto him. Is it not true gentle friend? sayd the King vnto Amadis. If it like your Maiesty answered he, Quedragant is so worthy a knight that his fame is spread abroad in many places, and seeing that it pleaseith him to chuse mee for his consort, I doe thankfully accept his kind offer. Herewithall they embraced, and so long did their friendshippe thenceforth continue, that it was never seperated but by death. At the same time was Florestan & Landin before the King, purchasing their leaue to enter into the field, according to their appointed agreement (a good while before) in maintenance of Amadis his quarrell against Quedragant: but when they saw them friends their combate was finished, and their hatred conuerted into amity, wherewith Landin was exceeding glad, for hee had already proued Florestan in the iourney against Cildadan, and seene his valour and proesse.

Thus were these quarrels ended, & how much the Court had heretofore been troubled, by so much was the ioy and pastime thereof increased, neuerthelesse the King hauing not forgotten the miserie wherein king Arban of Northwales and Angriote de Estranau remayned, (after he had some few dayes stayed with the Ladies) he vnder tooke their deliuerance, and the better to effect the same, hee determined to passe into the Isle of Mongaza, to set them at libertie, wherewith hee made his knights acquainted. Then Amadis answered him, your Maiesty doth know that my brother Galor hath boone lost in your service, therefore I beseech you to excuse mee from accompaning your grace in this voyage, for if God please my co-sins and I will goe seeke him as it is reason, and so soone as we haue found him, I assure your Maiesty that incontinently wee will follow vnto that place where wee shall heare your grace abideth. Friend Amadis, answered the King, I promise you of my faith, that I my selfe would willingly accompany you, so sorry am I for Galor: but you know the present affaires that I haue, whereby I am in truth to bee excused, yet neuerthelesse I am well pleased with your departure,

ture, both when you list, and with such compaie as you like. Herewithall there rose vp more then a hundred of the most approued knights, who did all sweare the search of *Galoer*. For saide they,

hardly may we vndertake a wortier or more strange aduenture: & they preuailed with the King so much that they got leaue to depart the next morning.

## CHAP. XVIII.

*How the evening ensuing, the King being risen from the table, walking about the galleries of his Pallace, he beheld two great fires vpon the Sea, that came directly towards the Cittie.*

**N**ow it happened the same day after the King had supped, as hee walked along a gallerie, being almost bed-time, hee beheld two strange fires vpon the Sea, which came with great swiftnesse directly towards the Cittie. Wherewith he was greatly amased, because hee thought it very difficult that water and fire should continue together, especially when hee beheld in the midst of these fires, a galley, at the mast whereof were many great burning torches, so that one would haue iudged the vessell had beeene all on fire. This wonder did astonish the people so much that in a manner they came all forth of the Cittie, presuming that seeing the Sea was not able to quench this fire, it was impossible to defend the Cittie from being burnt to ashes, if the same once tooke hold thereof, wherefore the King as fearfull as the rest mounted vp on his horse, and came forth with them vpon the sands. And as hee came neare the water side, he did see that the most part of all the knights were already arrived, and amongst the rest was *Amadis*, *Enil*, and *Guillan*, who were at that time so neare the galley, which

was hard at shore, that he thought it impossible for them to escape from the fire thereof. Herewpon he set spurres to his horse, because hee tooke on exceedingly with the noyse that was made, and whether hee would or no hee brought him close to the galley side: vpon the which shortly after hee saw a cloth lifted vp which couerid it, and a Damosell appeared clothed in white silke, that held a small Coffer of gold in her hand, which shee opened, then shee tooke out of it a burning taper which she cast into the Sea, and presently the two great fires vanished away so suddenly, that it was not perceaved what was become of them. Wherewith all the people were maraualous glad, seeing that they were out of danger, for there remained no more light then that of the torches, which burned vpon the mast of the galley, with the brightness whereof all the shoare receaved light. Then the galley was plainly perceiued which was decked with many garlands of flowers, & instruments begart to sound very sweetly. Herewhile there aperead vpō the poupe twelue Damosels richly apparell, euery one of the having a chaplet of roses vpon their head, and a rod of gold in their hands.

And

And shee marched forth first of all that had throwne the taper into the Sea, who, comming a shoare did her duty vnto the King, and he received her very kindly, saying vnto her: Madame in satisfacion of the feare wherewith your fire affrighted vs, tell vs if y<sup>e</sup> please who you are, although wee alreadie surmisse that we know you well enough. Your Majestie answered shee, is of such a valiant courage, that it is impossible to terrifie you with so small a thing, yet the fires which you haue seen were ordyned to no other ende but for the safety of my wounded and me when weare determined to goe by Sea. For the rest if you think me to bee *Vrganda* the *unknowne*, your thought is true, and I am exprefly come into these pates to visit you, as the best Prince in the earth, and the Queene also, who is one of the wisest Ladies that lieth. Then shee called *Amadis* saying vnto him. My Lord *Amadis* come neer and I will tell you, (to easle you of the traualle that you shold haue in seeking of *Galoer*) that your brother is well, and so throughly healed, that you shall see him heere very shortly, therefore leaue off your determined search of him, for hee is in such a place as all the men in the world can never finde him. Madame answered *Amadis*, when hee was demanded of me by the Damosels that carried him away, I imagined that he shold be sau'd by you, and that no other but *Vrganda* shold haue vndertaken such an enterprise, which hath ever since put mee in good hope, without the which I thinke I had beeene dead. For this one thing I am sure of, that there is no knight in the world more bound to Lady or gentlewoman then I am to you, for the which I am not able to yeeld you such condigne thanks as I doe owe, and you deserue, but you know very well, that *Amadis* his life shal never be spared to do you service. Madame said the King, will it please y<sup>e</sup> to come and visit you at my Pallace this night. *Vrganda* shal pardon me, for I will certaynly this night in my galley, and to morrow I wil doe whatsoeuer is shal please you, but *Amadis*, *Agates*, *Branc<sup>o</sup>*, and *Guillan* shal keepe mee company, because I knowe they are as amorous at my selfe, and their compaie will be a meane to drise away all melancholie. Doe whate you will said the King, for you shall be obeyed. Then he caused the people to retурne vnto the Cittie, and he himself (bidding *Vrganda* good night) departed, leauing for her guard a number of archers vpon the sands: the next morning the Queene sent vnto *Vrganda* twelve of her owne handmies richly trappped, vpon the which throe and hee women entred into the Cittie, and *Vrganda* rode in the midst of the foure knights which shee had over night detained to keep her compaie. They incestained her with diverse discourses by the way, where in shee tooke so great pleasure that shee said vnto them, Beleue mee it wold bee a long time before I shold be wearie of so good compaie as this yours is: for I assure you that I finde you all foure so agreeable to my nature, that you are particularly euene all one with my selfe, for if I bee in loue, you are no lesse, holding Ladies in most great estimation. And this saide *Vrganda*, because that shee languished with extreme loue which shee did beare vnto the faire Knight, of whom in our first

first booke we haue mentioned vnto you. Their conference was so sooner ended, when they approached neare vnto the Pallace, but the King who there had staid, came forth to meeet them, and as hee embrased *Vrganda* (bidding her heartily welcome) shee looked round about her vpon the compaニー, and beheld a great number of knyghts, in each place. Wherupon she sayd, me thinks your Maiesy is now royally accompanied, not onely for the multitude of great personages that are with you, but especially for the loue which I am sure they do beare vnto you, for which you ought greatly to praise God. For the Prince that is beloued of his subiects, may be sure to maintaine his estate in great safetie, therefore your Maiesy must endeauour to enteraine and vse them kingly, that your fortune (which hitherto hath fatoured you) do not forsake you if you doe otherwise: and aboue all things take heede of false reports, seeing that it is the very poysone and ruine of such Princes as giue credit vnto them. And as the King would haue brought her to her chamber, she said vnto him: may it please your Maiesy that I may first goe and doe my duty to the Queene? I with all my heart gentle Lady answered hee, I am sure that shee will be most glad to see you, as shee that hath greatly desired to honour and please you. Herewithall hee conducted her where the Ladies were, and so soone as the Queene did see her, shee rose vp and kissed her, saying, that shee was exceeding welcome: then shee made her sit downe betweene *Oriana* & *Briolania*, whom *Vrganda* had never yett seene: and shee found that *Briolana* was the

fairest Lady in they world, if *Oriana* by her excellency had not dimisched her beauty, and to certayn truth there was great difference betweene them two. Then *Vrganda* sayde vnto the Queene: Madame, I doe now finde shadwe which I haue euer heard report. Which is, that the King was more accompanied with worthy knyghts then any other Christian Prince, and you also attended vpon by the fairest Ladies on the earth, for her which conquered the Firmalland (being a better knyght then *Amadis*) & the famous victory which so lately hath beeene obtained against King *Celdadas*, by the effusion of the blood of so many Gyants as there dyed, are suffisant witnesses of the one, and I am sure (to proue the other) it will silily be granted vnto me, that vnde the firmament it is not possible finde fairer Ladies then the two heere, pointing to *Oriana* and *Briolania*: but if your Court hathe this preheminence, it is yett honoured for one thing and farre more commendable, which is the loyalty wherein loue is there maintayned, as well to be seene by the proofe of the burning sword, and the kerchiefe beset with flower, which aduenture was performed in your presence. When *Orion* heard her goe so farre in her talke, her heart beganne to tremble, and shee became sorry and pnesoufing least *Vrganda* would speake more, in disclosing the secretes betweene *Amadis* and her. *Amadis* who was present, knowing the wisedome of her that knew all things, and the doubt of *Oriana*, hee approached vnto her, whispering thus in her eare, I affirme you Madame, that *Vrganda* is ouerconcreete to speake any thing

ly

ly or vnauidisely. And therewithall hee turned vnto the Queene, saying vnto her, Madame, your grace may demand (if it please you) of *Vrganda* what shee was that gained the kerchiefe. I pray you layd the Queene, tell vs that. By my faith answered *Vrganda*, there is great cause why *Amadis* should know better what shee was then I, for shee followed him, and afterward hee delivered her from the hands of *Arcelans* the anchanter, and from *Lindoray* his Nephew, nor without great daunger of his person. Madame sayd *Amadis*, it was impossible that I should either know her or my selfe, better then you did, seeing that you knowe that shee desirous to remayne vnuknowne would never vnucover her face before me, yet from you nothing may bee so well concealed, that is not at your pleasure reuelled. Truly answered *Vrganda*, for your sake I will presently declare vnto you as much as I know. The Damosell (whose loyalty is so knowne) is no maid, for shee is a faire wife, aboue all others most excellent: and for the same cause did shee conquer the kerchiefe so renowned, especially through the constant loue which shee did beare vnto her Lord. Shee is by birth, of the Kings countrey, by her Mother an Alien, and her continual abiding is in this Realme, where shee liueth so abundantly, that if shee waueth any thing, it is onely because shee cannot (as all times when shee pleaueth) enjoy him whom shee loueth better then her selfe, further shall you not knowe what shee is by me. *Oriana* who seeing her selfe touched by *Vrganda*, was not wel conuoced, (doubting least shee should haue proceeded further) vntill shee had her peace,

and that the Queen arsured her selfe gentle Ladie, you haue so curiously deciphered her vnto me, that there is not any better, in my opinion, the better for her knowledge, seeing onely shee moe did thinks her a maid, and you thinke vs that shee is a wife. A knyght will come said shee, that yon shall know her better. Herewhile the King who was minded to stell *Vrganda*, came to seeke her, shee haue led her to dinner, hee made her sit close besyde him, & afterwards they spent the rest of the day in sporting & making good cheer, vntill it was time to goe to bed. Then *Vrganda* came unto the Queene, to entreate her that shee would be pleased to suffer her to lie in *Orlans* her chamber, the which shee willingly did grant vnto her. Neuerthelesse sayd the Queene, I feare that her youthfull behauiour will somewhat disquiet you. In faith Madame answered shee, her beauty shall before her selfe vnto many good knyghts, whose prouesse cannot be so great as that he may defend them from sundry perills, which they are likely to haue isto for her loue, for that their deaues will hardly be elchewyd, if they do not wisely prevente it. The Queene could not refraine from laughter, and sayde vnto *Vrganda* Hicheslo she may be pardoned for any such danger that shee hath by her brought shole vnto whom you speake: and therfore for this time I bid you good night. Hereupon the Queene departed, and *Vrganda* was broughte vnto the Princeesse her lodging, where shee found the Queene *Briolana* and *Mabila*, that kept her company, with whom shee discouled so longe of divers pleasant discourses, vntill ouercomme of sleep, they were all strained

strained to lay them downe. Now they were all soure lodged in one chamber together, notwithstanding *Vrganda* perceiving *Briolanis* and *Mabila* to be fast asleepe, and *Oriana* awake, shew sayd vnto her, Madame, if you now doe not take your rest for thinking vpon him, that day and night doth wake for your loue, your quiet and his are both alike. I knowe not what you meane answered *Oriana*, but sure I am, that loue never hindered me from sleepe. *Vrganda* knew very well that she made her this answer, because shew would not that *Briolanis* should vnderstand the loue betwixt her and *Amadis*, wherefore she sayd vnto her: assure you that I am so carefull that your secrets be not disclosed, as I will not offend you with any thing that I speak, for I know what is needfull for you better then your selfe. Madame answered *Oriana*, you may waken the Gentlewomen that are in this chamber. Let me alone for that sayd *Vrganda*, I will rid you straight of this feare. Therewithall shew tooke forth a booke which was so little one might haue couered it with his hand, and after she had read therein a little while, she sayd vnto *Oriana*, let this suffice you, that now wee may speake in safety, for whas noyse soever we make, they shall not stirre, vntill I awake them, and if any doe enter into this chamber, they shall fall downe vpon the floure in as sound a sleepe as they, and barke how they shrowt already. Heereat *Oriana* began to laugh, and rising forth of her bed shew came vnto *Mabila* and *Briolanis*, whose armes she pulled very rudely, but for all that euer she could doe, they stirred no more then a stone, will you yet see sayd *Vrganda* the pastime

you shall without doubt come to passe. By my faith answered *Oriane*, I could haue beeene well content to haue forborne this curiositie, for the sorrowfull end that is prepared for mee doth trouble all my spirits. Faire Lady, saide *Vrgande*, another time bee lesse curios to vnderstand that which is beyond your capacitie: neuertheless, often times such things as are misticall and fearefull, doe for the most part turne into ioy, pleasure, and profit, therefore be not you discomfited in any sort, seeing that you are daughter vnto the best king, & most vertuous Queen that liueth vpon the earth, beeing endued with such excellent beauty, that your renowne is spreade over all countreies, and moreouer you are beloved of him, who is honoured and esteemed more then any other Knight. You know as well as I that hee loueth you, by the experiance not onely of that which hath beeene tolde you, and you haue made knowne vnto him, but also by the aduentures which hee hath brought to passe in your presence: therefore you ought to thinke your selfe happy aboue all those that are best beloved, being mistresse of him, that deserueth (by his chivalrie) to be Lord of all the world. Now it is time to wake the Ladies, & end our discourse. Herewithall shee began to read againe in her booke, and at that instant the Ladies that were asleepe, began to breath as if they had beeene ouerwearied, and shortly after they rose vp, but when the *Damosell* of *Denmarke* perceived, that shee was layed in such sort naked in the middest of the chamber, there was neuer woman more amased then shee, the which when *Oriane* perceiued, shee demanded (smiling to her selfe) if shee were come thither to seeke freshaire. By my faith Madame, answered shee, I know neither who brought me hither, nor can I remember how I came hither. Whereat they all began to laugh, and after they were ready they wents vnto the Kings lodging, whome they foud together with the Queen in the church: and so soone as seruice was ended, the King came vs to *Vrgande*, and bid her good morrow, and shee after her duty done vnto his Maiestie, saide, that if it were his pleasure to cause the Knights and Ladies in his Court to assemble togather, that before her departure (which shold bee very shortly) shee would declare something before them that shold happen vnto him, heereupon the King appointed a large hall to bee made ready, in the which the next morning a great number of Lords and Ladies were come. Then *Vrgande* beeinge in the midst of them all, addressing her speach to the King, shee saide vnto him, Seeing that your Maiestie hath kept the letters which I did write vnto you and *Galar*, presently after the *Earl* *Earl* had obtained the burning sword, and the *Damosell* the hechiche with flowres, it may please you now to cause the same to bee read, that every one may plainly know that I am not ignorant of things before they happen. Heereupon hee sent for them, and they were read before al the assistance, whereby it plainly appeared that shee had wholly foretold the manner of the battaile, even as it happened out, and they all greadly wondred thereat, especially se the stout heart of the King, that would be in a battaile so dangerous, when hee was before hand threatened so rigourously by his letter. In like sorte was it

certainly known that the Faire Forlorne had been the cause of the victory, by the three blowes that hee gaue. The first when he cast King Cildadan at Galaors feet, the second in killing Sarmaden the Leonnois, and the third when hee succoured the king, whom the stout Mandafabul of the virmillion tower did carry vnto his ships, whose arme hee cut off close by the elbow, which was the cause of his present death. And in like sort that which she had said of Galaor was come to passe, for his head was certainly at the mercy of the Faire Forlorne, at that time when the Damocels demanded to carry him away. But now, said Vrganda, I will tell you in order that which must happen, great contention shall arise between the mighty serpent & the strong Lyon, which shall be aided by many cruel beasts, they shall come with such fury, that a great number of them shall suffer most cruel death. The subtil Roman foxe shall bee wounded with the clawes of the strong Lyon, and his skin shall be cruelly torn, wherewith the mighty serpent shall bee brought into wonderfull perplexitie. In this time the mecke sheepe couered with blacke wooll, shall come into the midst of them, who by his great humilitie and pitifull bleatings, shal pacifie the pride and fiercenesse of their courages, causing them to depart one from the other, but presently the starued wolves shall descend from the steepe mountaines against the mighty serpent, who being by them put to flight with a great part of his traine, shall bee closed vp in one of his dens. The tender licorne putting his mouth to the eare of the fierce Lion, shall awake him out of his sound sleepe with his loud crye, making him

afterwards to take part of his beasts, with the which hee shall speedily goe to the succour of the mighty serpent, whom they shall finde so bitten and wounded by these starued wolves, that his blood shall bee abundantly shed vpon the earth, at the same time shall hee be deliuered from the teeth of the wolves, and they be cut in pieces. Then the life of the mighty serpent being restored (leauing within his den all the poyson of his entrails) he shall bee contented to put himselfe betweene the clawes of the strong Lyon, and the white hind, who in the dreadfull Forrest did lift vp her greeues to Heauen, shall bee taken from thence and called home againe. Wherefore noble King, may it please your Maiesy to cause this to bee written, which before all this company I have entered, for there is no doubt but all this shall come to passe. I will so doe, answered hee, seeing it pleaseth you, but I believe there is not any of vs that at the present understandeth this prophesie. Assure you, saide shee, that a time will come when it shall be manifested vnto all of you. So saying she cast her eyes vpon Amadis, whom she perceived to be maruailous pensive, and said vnto him. My Lord Amadis, you muse vpon that which cannot availe you, wherefore expell this fancy from your minde, and hant a match that you shall make, whereto you shall get little gaine. At such time as you shall be wounded to death in the defence of another's life, the smart being yours, and the profit his, the recompence that you shall receiue thereby, shall be a wonderfull discontent, and banishment from that whereto you shall most desire to approach. Then shall your good

rich and sharpe Sword so bruise your bones, and in so many places wound your flesh, that with the losse of your blood you shall become very feble, and moreouer you shall bee so Sharpely pursued, that if halfe the world were yours, you would giue it, that your sword were cast into the bottom of some deepe lake, from whence it could never be taken forth againe, therefore bethinke you of your destiny, which shall be such as I have foretold you. Amadis seeing that every one had their eyes fixed vpon him, looked vp with a smiling countenance and answered Vrganda, Madame, by the things that are already come to passe wherof you foretold vs, we may wel credit and believe that which now you tell vs, and knowing that I am mortal, I am very sure that my life shall not be prolonged one minute longer then it pleaseth God, and therfore whilst I may, I will endeavour to gaine some reputation, rather then seeke to conserue my life. Notwithstanding if any perill were to be doubted, I shold haue more occasion to feare those that doe hourly happen vnto mee, then

## CHAP. XIX.

How after the departure of Vrganda, the king being ready to myrre on herse back, to execute the enterprise which he had determined to make vpon the burning lake, there came before him a Dasuofell Giantesse, to understand whether his Maiesy would be pleased to referre the quarrel that he pretended in this voyage, vpon the combat betwixt Ardan Canila, and Amadis of Gaule, with such conditions as shal bee declared vnto you.

**S**ome few dayes after the departure of Vrganda, king Lisiwert walking upon the land consulting with his knyghts about the voyage which

hee determined to make vnto the Isle of Mongaza, to set at liberty king Arban, and Angriosta, they beheld a shipp making towards the shoare which cast anchor hard by them. Whereupon they all approached

proched to know who or what newes it had brought, when sudainely they perceiued two Esquires waiting vpon a Damosell, comming forth thereof, who was no sooner landed but shee demanded for the king. Those vnto whom shee spake, answered that he was there: but they did all wonder at her greatnessse, for there was not a man in all the Court whom shee exceeded not in height a hand breadth: for the rest, shee was indifferent faire, and well apparelled. Then shee approched neer vnto the king, to whom shee said, if it please your Maiesty, I am hither come to let you vnderstand that which I am commanded to declare vnto you in the behalfe of some great personages, but if it pleased your highnesse, I would haue the Queene present. Herewithall the king tooke her by the hand, and brought her to the Palace, and afterward he sent for the Queene and her Ladies, that they might heare what the Damosell would say, they being all come, the Damosell enquired if *Amadis of Gaule* (lately called the *Faire Personne*) were in this company or no. And *Amadis* (vnto whom by chace shee spake) answered her, that hee was the man, ready to doe her any pleasure if shee would employ him: notwithstanding, for all his courteous speech, the Damosell looking vpon him with a sterne countenance began to rail at him, saying, the lessc do I esteeme thee: for thou waft never ought worth, nor never shall be, and by the effect of this my message all this company may know whether there bee any heart or courage at all in thee: then shee tooke forth two Letters of credit, sealed each of them with a seale of Gold, the one of them shee pre-

sented to the king, the other to the Queene. But so soone as the king had red his letter, he commanded her to declare whatsoeuer shee pleased. Wherefore shee spake aloud and said, It may please your Maiesty, *Grumadara* the giant of the burning lake, and the faire *Medasime*, with the most redoubted *Arden Canila* (who is at this present with them, to protect and defend them against you) haue knowne for certaine, that you determine to passe into their country to assaile them, and because the same cannot bee done without the losse of many worthy men on cyther side, they haue devised a meanes (if your maiesty think good to auoid the effusion of blood, & the losse of divers valiant knights, which is this, that the combat of two persons onely shall determine the quarell betweene you and them, vpon the victory of him that shall win the field, the one is the valiant and famous *Arden Canila*, the other *Amadis of Gaule* here present: vpon this condition, that if *Amadis* bee ouercome, *Arden* may freely cut off his head and carry it with him, to the burning lake vnto *Medasime*, and also if fortune proue contrary to the said *Arden*, & that *Amadis* remaine conqueror, the land & the countrie that you intend to conquer, shal without contradiction be yelded vp into your hands. And moreouer my Lady shall in like sort presently set at liberty king *Arban* of North wales, and *Angriotta d'Estrauaux*, who hath beeene a long time her prisoners, as you know. Therefore if *Amadis* do loue them as they thinke and doe imagine he doth, let him presently condiscend vnto this Combat for the liberty of two such great friends of his otherwise he may be assured

assured that *Arden* to despight him the more, will send their heads vnto him for a present, very shortly. Damosell answered *Amadis*, if I agree to this combat, what security shall the king haue for the performance of this your promises? I will tell you said shee, The faire *Medasime* accompanied with twelve Gentlewomen of great birth, shall bee sent as hostages and become the Queenes prisoners, vnder this condition, that if this which I haue said be not wholly accomplished, the king may cause them all to die in what sort hee pleaseth, and as touching you, I demand no other assurance, then this, that if you be vanquished *Medasime* may afterward haue your head without contradiction. And to let you know that they from whom I bring this message, will not gainsay that which I haue promised, I will yet further cause *Andangel* the old giant, with his two sons, and nine of the chiefeft knights of the countrie, to enter into the king his prison, as pledges for the performance of the former couenants. Truly answered *Amadis*, if the king and Queene haue these persons which you speake of in their power, the security is sufficient, but yet you shall haue no answere of me, vntesse you first grant to dine with me in my lodging, with these two Esquires that attend vpon you. I do greatly wonder said shee, what moueth thee so instantly to intreate and invite me to dine in thy company, seeing that I hate thee more then any man that I know. I am sorry for that said he, for I loue you, and will willingly doe you all the honour and seruice that I am able, but if you will haue answere, grant mee that which I demand of you. I do grant it, said the

another mans head when hee hath lost his owne, and the like may happen vnto Ardan, whom you so much exalt. Gentle friend said at Amadis, I pray you let this Gentlewoman speake at her pleasure, for one like vnto her selfe, for she and such as resemble her, haue liberty to say what they list, and oftentimes when they know What are you answered the Gentlewoman, that so well can please for Amadis? I am, said he, a knight that would willingly beare a part in this enterprise, if Ardan Canile had a companion with him. By my faith, answered she, I beleue that if you did think to bee receiued you would not speake so proudly, but you haue already heard that Ardan and Amadis must bee alone without any more, which maketh you to speake so haughtily, neuerthelesse if you be such a one as you say, I am assured that the combat of them two, shall be no sooner ended, but that I will bring before you a brother of mine that shall teach you to hold your peace, and I assure you that hee is as great an enemy vnto Amadis as you professe to bee his friend. He shall be very welcome, and better entertained said he, and tell him hardly that he forget none of his Armour behinde him at his lodging, for be he never so valiant it will be all litle enough for him. Herewithall hee threw downe his gloue. See here said he my gage, take it vp for your brother, if hee will allow you to do it, and will accept the combat that you haue vndertaken for him. The Damosell tooke vp the gloue, and afterward vntying from about her head a carquier of Gold, she said vnto the king, If it like your Maiestie, I accept the combat for my brother a-

gainst this knyghte his absence, witnesse wherof, your gracie may keepe (if it please you) the said pledges, she whiche haue gauen him, and the knyghte receiued them although hee would willingly haue remitted this quarrell, for hee ready doubted the other, for hee haue had heard of the valiancedome of Ardan Canile, who woulde meete (as it was tolde) with any knyght in fourte yeres before the durst combat him. When the Damosell perceiued that she had excuted her commission, according vnto her desire, she tooke leave of the Court, and went with Amadis, who brought her vnto his lodging but it had been better for him that hee had beeene at that time a sleep, for the courtesie which hee did shew vnto her, turned him to a great displeasure, that shouldest hee haue in great danger to haue lost his life. Because that hee would the more honour this Damosell he brought her into that Chamber wherein Ganelia did below his Armour. But shee had no sooner set her foote in the same, but shee cast her eyes vpon Amadis his good Sword, which shee thought was of so strange a fashion, that from that time forth, shee determined to steale it, if shee might finde the meanes, and to doe the same more cleanly, shee walked so long about the chamber, that as Amadis and his people had their backs towards her, shee slyly drew the sword forth of the scabbard, and held it close vnder her cloake. Afterwards shee presently went forth of the chamber, and taking aside one of the Esquires (in whom shee most trusted) shee gave it vnto him, saying: doest thou know what thou shalt do? run quickly into my ship, and hide me this Sword vnder the ballast

ballast in such sort that none doe see it vpon thy life. The Esquire was diligent and departed. Then Amadis entred into talke with the Damosell, demanding of her at what houre Madafina would arraie in the Court. I booke answered she, that you may see her, and speake with her before the king haue dined: but what moches you faire sir to enquire so much after her? Because said Amadis I woulde go meete her vpon the way to doe her honour and seruice, to the end that if shee haue received any displeasure by mee, I may make her such mends as shee shall demand of me. I know answered she, that if thou run not away, Ardan Canile shall be he that shall make thee answere the wrong that thou hast done vnto her, with the losse of thy head, the which bee shall present vnto her, for other satisfaction shee desireth not to accept. I will keepe them both fasting without that (if God please) said Amadis, neuerthelesse if thee will haue any other thing of mee, I swear vnto thee, by my faith Damself, that shee shall haue it, as shee whose good will and fauour I doe most desire. Then were the Tables couered, & dinner was brought in, wherefore Amadis causing her to sit downe, desirous to leave her alone, said vnto her, that the king had sent for him, and that shee in the meane time should make good cheere, for hee would returne prently againe. The Damosell shewed by her countenance that this departure of his did not a little please her and fearing least her theft should be perceived, shee made as short a dinner as shee could. Which ended, shee rose from the Table, and said vnto those that serued her, you may tell Amadis that I give him no thankes anal for the enter- tainment that he hath shewed me, thinking thereby to do me harm, and assure him that I am free that wil purchase (as long as the broach remayneth in my Body) his deaile and vtre destracion. So Gisbrite helpe, answered Amadis, I helpe me well, and according as that which you haue already manifested, in my opinion you shal be a most mirrour woman that I haue seene in all my life. Wharsotour Larn, said she, I care not for the, and lesse for him, and if thou chylked me in iuriours, yet is it vane for me to say I would be bath twynged him and thee, and for the paines shychde haft taken in scouing mee this day at dinner, I wolden recompence thereof, that I had seen you both swaine hanged. Saying so, shee departed and got into her ship; being soyful of the Sword whiche shee had stolne, which so soone as shew was returned back vnto her, and presentg vnto him, letting him know and Madafina also, how Amadis had conserued vnto the combat which shee had demanded of him. Is it true answered Ardan, let me never bee accounted a knyght of any worth, if I doe not then bring back againe my Lady to her honour and reputation, deliuering hencefore her countrey from the aemper of king Zelard, and if I take not the head of Amadis from off his shoulders in lesse time then the best foorman in the world may haue run halfe a league, I am content (said he vnto Madafina) not to deserve your loues so long as I live. But shee hearing him speake so rashly, held her peace: and although shee greatly desired to be reuenged of him for the death of her Father, and brother whom Amadis had slaine, yet did

did she so extremely abhorre *Arda* that shee a great deale rather wished his death then his life, because hee pretended to marry her. For she was exceeding faire, and he a deformed villaine and voide of all humanity, and this combat was not practised by her meanes; but by the perswasion of her Mother, who had sent for him; for the defence of her Countrie vpon this condition, that if he revenged the death of her husband and sonne, she would give it vnto him, and her daughter *Madasima* in mariage, for hee was so teared and had in such reputation, that shee thought she could not bestow her daughter better. And to let you know his manners and perfections, hee was descended from the race of giants, born in a Prouince called *Canile*, the which was in a manner wholly inhabited by such kinde of people, notwithstanding hee was somewhat lesse of body then they, but not in strength: his shoulders were narrow, his necke and breit vreasonable thicke, his hands and thighes large, his legs long and crooked, his eyes holow, flasynosed like an Ape, his nostrils wide and lothsome, his lips great, his haire red and thicke bristelled in that sort, as very hardly might it be curled. To conclude, he was so beset with freckles and blacke spots, that his face seemed as though it had been of sundry sorts of flesh, hee was of the age of thirtie yeres or thereabout, bold and expert in armes, furious, spitefull, and as vncourteous as might bee. And yet since hee was twenty and fve yeres of age, he never fought with any Giant or other knight, eyther a foote, a horseback, or at wrestling, that was able to resist him, & whom he did easily not o-

uercom: such was the beauty, fauour, and gentle behauour of *Amadis Canile*. When the iniurious Damosell heard *Arda* make such large promises vnto *Madasima*, & perceiued that shee made no account thereof, she tooke vpon her to speake in her behalfe, me thinke my Lord that you should thinke the victory very sure on your side, seeing that Fortune is so fauourable vnto you, and so contrary vnto your enemy, as you may well perceiue, in that shee hath caused him to lose the best part of his armes. And this shee said in respect of the sword which she had stolne. By my Gods, said *Arda*, I am more glad of his displeasure for the want thereof, then for any good that I hope to receiue thereby, for although *Amadis* had the force of three such as hee is, ye were hee not able to withstand the strength of my arme, accustomed to tame his betters. The next morning very early hee departed, accompanied with *Madasima*, and the rest which should be deluered vp as hostages, according to the promise that the Damosell had made vnto king *Lisuart* before the Combat was agreed vpon, and *Canile* did assuredly hope, that he should easily obtaine the victory. By meanes whereof hee departed with great ioy, saying vnto thos that were with him, *Amadis* is famous for one of the best knights in the world, neuerthelesse I will haue his head, if he dare enter into the lists against me, and by that meanes my glory shal be the more increased in the ouercoming of him, my Lady shall rest well reuered, and I remaine her husband and louer. And because he would know before hee entred into the court, whether *Amadis* had repented

ted him or not, hee sent the iniurious Damosell before, to aduertise the King of their comming, and in the meane season hee caused his tents to be set vp, somewhat neere the Cittie where King *Lisuart* did remaine. But you must know, that incontinently after the Damosell was departed from *Amadis* his lodging, *Eni* told him thereof: therefore because he would prouide all things necessary for his enterprise, hee withdrew him vnto his chamber, accompanied with some of his most priuat friends, and in like sort there came at that instant vnto him, *Florestan*, *Agrates*, *Galunes* without land, and *Guillan* the penisue, who were altogether ignorant of the enterprise of this new combatte. But when they were aduertised thereof, thinking that it should haue beene performed with a greater number of knights, ther was not any of thos who were not displeased with *Amadis*, in that he had not chosen to assist him therein, especially *Guillan* who greatly desired to proue his man-hood against *Arda Canile*, for he had heard that he was esteemed for one of the strongest Knights in all the West. And as he was about to reproach *Amadis* in forgetting him, *Floresta* preuerted him, saying vnto his brother. So God helpe me, my Lord, I now doe very wel perceiue, the little loue and the small account that you doe make of me, in that you would not send for me to be with you in this combatte. In faith, answered *Agrates*, if hee had thought mee any thing worth, he would not haue left mee behinde, and what of me? said *Galunes*. My Lords, answered *Amadis*, I beseech you all to holde mee excused, and not to bee displeased with mee, assuring you that if it had beene in my choyse to haue elected a companion to assist mee in this encounter (seeing the great prowesse wherewith you are all endued) I could not tell which of you to chuse. But *Arda* desired to fight with mee alone, for the hate hee beareth vnto mee, and seeing that hee hath so required it, I neither could, nor ought to refuse it, without shewing my selfe to be a recreant and a coward, nor I could not make any other answere, then that which was agreeable to his demand. And when he shoulde haue comprised any more Knights with him, where doe you thinke I would haue sought for aid and succour but with you, beeing my friends? seeing you know how my strength is redoubled when we are together. In this sort did *Amadis* excuse himselfe, praying the all to beare him company the next day, to go meete *Madasima*, both to receiue her, & shew her as much honor as they might devise. Wherunto they all agreed: so that the day following (knowing that she was neere at hand) *Amadis* accompanied with eight of the best knights in King *LisUART* Court, mounted on Horse-backe in very good order. But they had not long ridden when they did behold her a farre off, comming with *Arda Canile*, who did lead her, & she was apparelled all in blacke, mourning as yet for the death of her father, whos *Amadis* had slain. This sad apparel did so much grace her, that although of her selfe (without any other helpe) she was esteemed one of the fairest that might be seen, yet was her beauty much more encreased by this mourning weede, with the which the lively whitenesse of her face was the more manifested, by the grace which this blacke coulour

colour added thereunto, and her two cheeks seemed like two white roses, beautified with a naturall rednesse, so as euen then those which had conceiued a mortall hate against her for the mischiefe which she procured vnto *Amadis*, were now forced to loue her. Behinde her marched the twelue gentlewomen, apparelled with the like attire. After them came the old giant, and his son followed with nine knights, which all came as pledges. Great was the entertainment that *Amadis* shewed vnto her and the rest of her traine, and shee in like sort saluted them most courteously. Then *Amadis* approaching more neere, said vnto her, I promise you Madame that if you bee accounted faire and of good behaviour it is not without great cause, seeing that I am now my self an eye witnessse of the truth thereof, and truly that man ought to think himselfe happy, whose seruice it shal please you to like of, assuring you that I am willing to do you any pleasure, and ready to obey your commandements: when *Arden Canila* heard him speake so courteously (although hee was smally fauoured by *Madafima*) hee was ouercome with icalousie, and answered *Amadis*, knight stand back and speake not so priuately vnto her, whom you know not. Sir said *Amadis*, the cause of my comming hither is not onely to be acquainted with her, but also to offer vnto her my person and my goods. You are no doubt answered he some good fellow, and worthy to be by her greatly employed, neuerthelesse faire sir, get you gone from her, otherwise I will make you know that it is not for so base a companion as you, to vse so great familiarity with a woman of

so high worth as she is. Whosoeuer I am answered *Amadis*, yet do I desire to serue her, notwithstanding your threats, for although I am not of that worth as I would be, yet shall not the affection that I beare vnto her, be abated by thy malapert boldnesse. But sir, you that are so lusty, who would make me know my duty & depart from her, for whom willingly I would employ my best meane, tell mee what you are? *Arden Canila* exceeding angry, beholding *Amadis* with a sterne and scornewfull countenance answered him, I am *Arden*, who am better able to increase her welfare and honour in one day, then thou canst with the best meane thou hast, doe her seruice in all thy life. It may very well be said *Amadis*, notwithstanding I know that this whereof thou sayest shall neuer by thee bee executed, so indiscreete and spightfull art thou.

And because that thou greatly desirdest to know whether I am a sufficient man or not, know thou that my name is *Amadis of Gaul*, against whom thou desirdest to fight: and if this Lady be displeased with ought that I have said vnto her, I wil make her such amends therefore as shee shall please to command at my hands. By my Gods, answered *Arden Canila*, if thou tarriest the combat, the satisfactiō which she shall take shall be thy head. That would displease me meruailously, said *Amadis*, but will giue her a head that shall bee more welcom to her (if she please) breaking the marriage of you two, being so far vnsit one for another: for she is faire, wife, and of courteous behaviour, & thou deformed foolish & churlish. Hereat *Madafima* & the Gentlewomen began all

to laugh, & *Arden* to be extremely angry, that to behold his countenance and the rage wherein hee was, one might easilly have iudged the little good that hee wished to *Amadis*, vnto whom hee answered not one word more, yet he ceased not grumbling and gnashing his teeth vntill hee came before the king. Then very indiscreetely he began to say, King *Lisuart* behold here the knights that must now enter into your prison, according to the promise which yesterday a gentlewoman made vnto you, in my behalfe. Wherefore if *Amadis* dare be so bold to do as he hath boasted, I am here ready to break his head. What will you doe answered *Amadis*? Thinkest thou my heart so weake or my right so small that I cannot abate the pride of a man so audacious as *Arden* is? I assure thee that although I had not vndertaken it, yet would I combat thee onely to hinder the marriage betweene thee and *Madafima*. And therefore deferre not to deliuer vp these hostages which thou doest brag off, for I verily hope to revenge the good and valiant King *Arben*, & *Angriotta*, for the great wrong they haue received, during their imprisonment, I haue brought them along with me, said *Arden*, knowing that you would demand them, but I am in good hope to restore them againe into the power of the faire *Madafima*, and to giue her therewithall the mold of thy cap, to testifie that it becometh not such a gallant as thou art to vse mee with such proude and spightfull tearmes, and that (in the executing therof) she may receive the greater pleasure, it may please your king to appoint that she may be set in a place hard at hand, to weend that she may both plainly

see the reuenge that I shall take of thee, and also the cruell death wherewith thou shalt die. At the same instant the pledges were brought, and the faire *Madafima* together, with her twelue Gentlewomen came to doe their humble duties vnto the Queene, and by her side was the old Giant, his two sons, and the nine knights, who all fell vpon their knees before the King. At the same time every one did attentiuely behold the faire *Madafima*, who shewed such an humble countenance, that she was greatly esteemed, yet could not *Oriana* cast one good looke vpon her, thinking that shee (of her owne will) did procure the ruine of *Amadis*, for the which none was more sorrowfull then shee. But *Mabila* who was in like sorte nearely touched with the matter, put her in hope that God would ayde him, and that her Cousin might as easily ouerthrow and vanquish *Arden Canila*, as hee did the proude *Dardan*, and many other knights, both valiant and stout. The pledges then being received as the custome was, both the knights retired each of them to the place appointed for them, staying vntill the time that they should enter into the field, the which the king had commanded to bee closed in with pales. Then *Gandalin* went to seek his masters Armour. And as hee would haue taken it downe he perceiued that some one had stoln his good sword forth of the scabbard, which had almost made him die for anger, seeing the fault that hee had done vnto *Amadis*, towardses whom he ranne, and as one beside himselfe, he cryed. My Lord, I haue so much & so grievously offended you, that you haue great reason to kill me forthwith. Whyn answered *Amadis*,

*Amadis*, art thou foolish or mad. My Lord said *Gandalin*, it had beeene better for you that I had died ten yeere ago, so much I haue deceiued you in your neede, for I haue let your good sword to bee lost, the which some body hath stolne since yesterday, leauing only the scabbard where it did hang. Is this all thou makest this great stir for? answered *Amadis*, beleeue me I hought ( in hearing thee rage in this sort) that some body had beeene carrying thy Father to his graue. Go, go, never care thou, for I care not so much for the goodness thereof, but onely because I did win it so honourably as every one knoweth, and by the meanes of my constancy in loue. Yet see thou tell no body thereof, but go vnto the Queene and tell her that I intreate her grace, if shee haue yet that sword which *Guillan* found at the fountaine with my armour, that she will bee pleased to send it vnto me. And if thou meetest *Oriane* by chance, tell her also that I desire her to set her selfe in such a place, where I may behold her at my ease, when I shall bee in fighting, for I shall receiue by her sight more force by far, the she being absent I should. So *Gandalin* departed, who did wisely accomplish all that his master had commanded him. And as he returned vnto him, he met with the Queene *Briolanis* together with *Olinda*, who called him and said vnto him, friend *Gandalin*, what doest thou thinke thy master will doe against this deuil, that will fight with him? what answered he, my Ladies doe you doubt that he shall not do wel enough with him? I am sure that I haue seene him escape far greater dangers then this which now hee vndertaketh. God grant hee may

said the Ladies. Herewithall hee came vnto *Amadis* that stayed for him, who hauing the Swerd that the Queene did send vnto him and being throughly well armed, he mounted on horseback. And as hee would haue entred into the field, the king met him, and said vnto him, how now my most deare friend, this day doe I hope to see some part of your courage, to the cost of *Arden Canila*. In faith if it like your Maiesy answered hee, there is a great mischance happe ned vnto me, some one hath robed me of the best sword that ever knight did weare. Is it possible said the king? Who hath done you this shrewd turne? I know not answered *Amadis*, but who so ever hath done it, sure I am he is not my friend. Truly said the king, that is likely, but take you no thought therefore, for although that I haue made an oath never to lead mine in any combat that is made by two knights in my court, yet am I content for this time to stretch my conscience so far as to give it you. Nay if it like your Maiesy, God forbid that the oath of the best king in the world, should be broken for my sake. What will you then do said the king? The Queen answered *Amadis*, hath done so much for me as to keep that sword which I left at the fountaine of the plaine field, the which *Guillan* did bring with the rest of my Armour, when I became a Hermit. And this is the very selfe same which I had, when I was cast into the Sea, which is so fit for the scabbard of the other which is stolne, that it seemeth to bee the very same. By the faith that I owe vnto God, answred the king, I am very glad, for by the vertue of this scabbard that is left, you shall bee both defended from

from ouermuch heat, or too great cold, neuerthelesse the difference is great betweene the two blades, but God shal supply this default if it be his pleasure. And because it is already very late, and that the night approacheth, it were better to deferre the combate vntill to morrow morning. I will sayde *Amadis* doe whatsoeuer shall please your Maiesy, so that *Arden* bee content. I will goe send vnto him answered the King, whereunto *Arden* did easilly agree, and returned vnto his tents to vnarne himselfe, afterwards he caused diuerse sorts of instrumens of musick to bee brought, & all the night long both he and his never ceased from dancing, feasting, & royalting. But all that while was *Amadis* in the Church deuoutly praying. After hee had like a Christian confessed his sinnes, he beseeched God to affist and succour him, in such sort continued hee vntill about day breake, when he withdrew him to his lodging, where shortly after the King came vnto him with a great troop of knights. Who after they had bidden him good morrow, they armed him, and brought him with great triumph vnto the Cathedrall Church to heare service, & at his retурne from thence *Floresan* presented him with an excellent faire courser, which *Corisanda* had sent vnto him not long before. Then every one got to horsebacke to accompanie him to the field. And *Floresan* carried *Amadis* his Launce, *Brunco* his helmet, and *Agrales* his shield, before the did the King ride with a white truncheon in his hand, he rode on a Spanish Lennet, beeing as fine a made horse & as proudly paced as any could be seene. The Inhabitants of the City, and many stran- gers were already standing all along the barriers, & the gentlewmen and Damosels placed in the windowes. In this sort did *Amadis* enter into the field, into the which he was no sooner come but that he did his dutie vnto the Ladies, and amongst them all he spied out *Oriane*, who the more to encrease his courage did put her head forth of the window. And smilng kindly vpon him, she made a signe vnto him that he should somethings do for her loue, wherwith *Amadis* did imagine that all the force in the world was at that instant placed round about his heart, and hee thought that *Arden Canila* stayed too long before hee came. In the meane time he buckled on his helmet & retyred to that part of the field where they appointed. Judges were seated, which were *Don Grumadan*, *Quedragant*, & *Brandoinas*. And shortly after came *Arden* in richly armed, mounted vpon a great strong horse, and hee had about his neck a shield of fine steele shining as bright as burning glasse. At his side did hang the good sworde of *Amadis*, holding in his hand a great huge Launce, the which he weelde so strongly, that notwithstanding the thicknesse thereof, hee shaked it with such force, that he made it double in his fist. Wherat *Oriane*, *Mabile*, and the other Ladies beholding the sterne countenance of *Arden* (as it often happeneth in those things which one feareth to to lose) they beganne to bee in doubt of him whom they all fauoured, so as *Oriane* sayd: Alas if God take not pittie vpon *Amadis*, this day will be his last. But *Mabile* presently reproved her saying: Madam, if you shew not a pleauant countenance vnto my Cosen, hee shall be easily van-

vanquished, although Ardan strike never a stroke. Hereupon the trumpets sounded. Then Amadis beholding Oriana, set spurres vnto his horse, and they both met so rudely, that their Launces were broken into shiuers, encouning together with their shieldes & bodies so forcibly, that Ardan his horse fell down dead in the place, and the other of Amadis had his shoulder broken, neuerthelesse Amadis with great lightnesse rose vp, although the truncheon of his enemies Lance remained sticking in his vambraces, the which hee presently pulled forth, and drawing out his sword, hee valiantly marched against Ardan Canile, who in like sort with great paine was risen vp. And as hee stayed to mend his helmet which was somewhat shaken with his fall, seeing his enemy approach, hee made head against him, and there began betweene them so cruell an encounter, as there was not any man present that did not greatly wonder thererat, for with the sparkles of fire which preceeded by their stroakes from their helmets, they seemed to bee all on fire, and by their waigthy blowes which with great prouesse were bestowed, they manifested the hate which they did beare vnto each other, for there was not one blowe smitten but the blood followed, neuerthelesse it seemed that Ardan had the aduantage ouer his enemy, as well because of the shield of steele which hee had, as also for the hurt which hee did with the sword of Amadis, which the iniurious Damosell had given him. But yet Amadis followed him so neare, as oftentimes hee brought him out of breath, wherewith Ardan was much abashed, and hee verily

thought that in all his life hee had not found a knight that handled him so rudely, especially hee imagined his enemies force to be re-doubled when most of all his im-paired. Whereat as it were disdai-ning that hee should so long con-tinue, couering him with his shield, hee ran vpon Amadis, who had all his armour and shield in such sort hacked and broken, that he could not wel tel wherewith to defend him any more, because that Ardan never fastened blowe vpon him but that his flesh felte it, whereby every one iudged that he would carry away the victory. Then was Madafima very sorry hereat, for she was a woman of so stout a heart that she would rather haue lost her land and her selfe then to marry him, and so long these two knights maintained the combate, that every onelid mar-uaile how they were able to con-tinue. But Oriana seeing the piti-ous estate of Amadis and the dan-ger whereunto hee was brought, by the reason that his armour was so broken, she was likely to haue founed, & she became very pale and out of heart, vntill Madala perceiving it, sayd vnto her. Ma-dame it is no time now to lese Amadis in this perill, seeing that you turne your backe, you haue his end, and deprive him of his victory, at the least if you canst beholde him, thrue your lute quite from him. At that time was Amadis so sorely pressed by Ardan, that Brandoines one of the iudges sayd vnto Grumenes, and Quedragant, Truely my Lord Amadis is in great necessitie for want of good armour, see how his shield is hacked, & his haubert so broken, that in a maner he hath not where-withall to defend one blowe.

Trut

Trust mee you say true answered Grumenes, and I am very sorry for it. Of my faith sayd Quedragant, I haue prooued Amadis when I fought with him, but the longer he fighteth, the stronger and more inuincible hee waxeth, so that it seemeth each hour his force increaseth, the which is not so with Ardan, as by prooife you may now see by his vnweeldiness, & more shall you see before the batteile be ended. This speech was heard by Oriana and Madala, wherewith they were greatly comforted, and because he had seene Oriana almost ready to depart from the window, not daining any longer to behold him, hee thought shee was displeased, for that hee deserred so long to get the victorie of his enemy. Whereat hee was so grieved, that griping his sworde fast in his fist, hee stroke so sound a blow vpon the helmet of Ardan, that hee made him bowe one knee to the grouud, but by mischance his sworde broke in three pecces, the least whereof remained in his hand. Then did hee thinke his life in very great danger, & there was not any of the beholders that did not suppose him vanquished, and Ardan victor: who began to lift vp his arme, saying so loud that euery one did heare: behold Amadis the good sworde which with wrong thou gottest, by the which thou shalt receiue a shamefull death. See gentle Ladies see, look forth of your windowes, to behold my Lady Madafima reuenged, and say whether I am not worthy of her loue. When Madafima heard Ardan make this bragge, and seeing that without doubt fortune fauoured him, so as according to the promise which her mother had made vnto him, she should be con-

O 2 though

though it was of fine steele, yet did it enter therein more then a great hand breadth. And as hee striued to pull it forth, *Amadis* thrust the head of the truncheon through his arme, wherewith hee felt such extreme grief, that he forsooke the sword which hee held, on the which *Amadis* presently fastened his hand, & pulled it forth, thanking God for ayding him in his greatest need. When *Mabila* beheld the case thus altered, shee called *Oriana*, who hauing seen her friend in such extremitie, was newly layd downe vpon a bed, studying with her selfe what death shee might chuse for the speediest, if *Amadis* were vanquished. And *Mabila* sayd vnto her, Madame, come see how God hath holpe vs, *Ardan* (without doubt) is ouercome. The great ioy which *Oriana* receiued at these newes made her suddenly to start vp, and looking out of the window, shee perceiued how *Amadis* had stroken his enemy so mighty a blow vpon the shouldeer, that hee separated it from his necke, wherewith hee felt such anguish, that hee turned his backe, but hee ran not farre before *Amadis* stroke him againe, and he pursued him so sharply, as that hee made him recoule backe euuen to the top of a Rocke, against the which the Sea did beat, so that he could goe no farther. Then was *Arda Canile* brought between two extremities, for on the one side the deepe and vnmercifull waues

set before his eyes his vnhappy end, on the other side hee perceiued the sharpe sword of his enemy which did no lesse terrifie him. Who pursued him so close, that hee pulled his helmet from his head, and lifting vp his arme hee wounded him most cruelly, so that hee fell from the top of the Rocke downe into the Sea, and was never after seene. For the which many praised God, especiall king *Arban* of Northwales, and *Angriote de Estraux*, because they had seen *Amadis* in such daunger that they greatly stood in feare of his safety. Heerewithall *Amadis* wiping his sword did put it vp into his scabard, and came whereas the King and the other knights were, who in great triumph brought him into his lodging, and the more to honour him, hee was led between those whom hee had deliuered into cruell prison, that is to say, by *Arban* King of Northwales, and *Angriote de Estraux*. And because they were leane, pale, and almost spent, as well with the euill vysage which they had receiued during their imprisonment, as also with the grieve and melancholly that they had taken, *Amadis* was desirous that they should lodge in his chamber, where they were so well tended and dyeted, by the aid of expert Physitions and cunning Surgeons, that they did shortly after recover their health, as by the sequell of our History you may understand.

## CHAP. XX.

How *Bruneo de Bonne Mer* did fight with *Madamaine* the ambitious brother to the *Damoseill* iniurions, and of the accusations that were made by some of the enemies of *Amadis* vnto the King, for which cause hee and many others (that were desirous to follow him) departed from the Court.

**T**He next day after the combate was ended between *Amadis* and *Ardan* (as hath beene related heretofore) the iniurious *Damoseill* came and presented her selfe before the king, beseeching his Maiestie to send him that should fight with her brother, whom according vnto promise shee had caused to come thither. For (sayd the *Damoseill*) although my brother be conquerour and cannot take that revenge of his enemies as the friends of *Ardan* may rest satisfied for his death, yet will it bee some small comfort vnto them notwithstanding. Now *Brunco*, was there present, who (without making stay, answered to the rash speeches of the foolish woman) said vnto the King. If it like your Maiestie, I am the man she speakest of, and seeing that her brother is come hither as shee saith, if it be your pleasure, and his will, wee shall quickly know if hee be such a gallant as hee vaunteth. Vnto the which the King condiscended. Wherefore they both went immediatly to arme them, and anon after they entred into the field, whither they were accompanied with certaine knights their friends. They beeing then in the place assynd for that purpose, the Trumpets sounded to warne them to begin the combate. Forthwith they charged their Launces, and set

neither shield nor armour of how good temper souer, was able to withstand their blowes, for they hacked them to peeces, so that the field in many places was couered with peeces of their shields. Now if the knights did assaile one another with great hardinesse, their horses did no lesse, for they set vpon one another, and with their feete and teeth fighting together, they did ioyne in such sort, that the most part of the lookers on, were more intentive to the combate of the beasts, then the fight of the knights. Notwithstanding *Madamein* his horse in the ende had the worse, being constrained to leape ouer the barriers, and to run away. This gaue a great presumption to euery man to imagine that *Brunco* should obtaine the victory, and so it fell out, for hee pursued *Madamein* so neere, and brought him to that extremity, that being almost out of breath, he sayd vnto *Brunco*. I doe beleue considering the rage thou art in, that thou imaginest the day will not bee long e-nough to end our quarrell. Howbeit, if thou doest consider, that thy armour is almost vnriuited, thou shalke finde that it were better for thee to rest thy selfe, then to assaile mee so vndiscreetly as thou doest, and therefore I being vnwilling to vse thee so rigourously as thou deseruest, I am content to give thee leaue to take breath, that we may afterwards begin the fight more hotly then before. *Brunco* answered, thou declarest in plaine tearmes that which is needfull for thy selfe. Wherefore I pray thee as lustie as thou art, not to spare mee a whit. Art thou ignorant of the occasion of our combate? Knowest thou not that either thy head or mine must cease

this strife? I doe assure thee that am no more determined to listen vnto thy preaching: wherefore if thou determine not to dy presently, looke to thine owne defence, better then thou hast done heretofore. Immediately without any further disputations hee assaile *Madamein* afresh, but hee was already so weake (as not being able so much as to defend *Brunco* his blowes) hee drew himselfe by herte and little to the top of a Rock, euen to the place where *Amadis* had cast the body of *Arden* into the Sea. And there *Brunco* thrust him so rudely downe, that he sent him to be buried in the Sea, but before hee came to the bottome, his body was torne in twenty sevralle peeces. Which the iurious *Damoscill* perceiuing, she entred into such fury and dispaire, that as a mad woman shée ranne vnto the place where *Arden* and *Madamein* were throwne downe headlong, where finding *Madamein* his sword, she set it to her breast, cryng so loud that all the compaines heard her. Seeing that *Arden* the flower of chivalrie, & my brother haue chosen their graue in this raging Sea, I will beare them compaines. And so casting her selfe downe headlong, shewas immediately couered with the water. Then *Brunco* (mounting on horsebacke againe) was conducted by the King and many other knights to the lodging of *Amadis*, where hee desired to keep him company, in whose honour hee had undertaken the combate. And because that the Queene *Briolanis* perceiued that *Amadis* was not like to be cured in a short space, nor to accompany her as hee had promised, she tooke her leaue of him to goe see the singularities of the Firme-

Firme-Island, wherefore *Amadis* commanded *Enil* to conduct her, and to desire *Isavia* the Gouvernor thereof, to doe her all the honour, and giue her the best entertainment hee could devise. So *Briolanis* departed, bidding *Oriana* fare-well, assuring her that she should be aduertised what happened vnto her in trying the aduentures of the Island, but shée was no sooner gone from the Courr, when it seemed that Fortune endeauoured the ruine of the kingdom of great Britaine, which had to long time liued in happiness. Yea euen king *Lisurk* himselfe, who (forgetting not onely the seruites hee had received of *Amadis*, of his kindred and friends, but especially the aduise and counsell of *Vrganda*) listened to flatterers, two ancient knights of his house, to whom vnder the colour of the long education they had received, as well of the King *Falangris* his eldest brother, as of himselfe) hee gaue credite, believng their vntrothes which he ought not to haue done, as you shall presently vnderstand. These two of whom I speake as welby reason of their ancient age, as of a kinde of hypocrisie, cloaked with wisedome, tooke more paines to seeme good and vertuous, then to bee so in deede, by meanes whereof they entred into great authority, and were often-times called and made priuie to the most secret affaires of their Lord, one of them was named *Bredan*, and the other *Gandandell*. This *Gandandell* had two sonnes, who before the comming of *Amadis* and of his followers into great Britaine, were esteemed two of the most hardiest knights in all the country, notwithstanding the prowesse and dexteritie of the o-

ther, did abate the renounes of those whom I speake of. Wher- at their father was so displeased, that forgetting the feare of God, the faith which hee ought to his Prince, and the honour which all men of honesty ought to be chard withall, determined not onely to aectre *Amadis*, but likewise all those whom hee esteemed as his friends, and did conuerte withall, hoping to build his treason in such sort, that by the raigne of so many good knights, he would worke his owne & his friends profit. Wherefore finding the King on a time at leasure, hee vised speeches of like substance vnto him. It may please your Maiestie, I haue all my life long desired to bee farrfall ympt you, as to my King and naturall Lord, men as my duty bindeth me, and will yet continue, if it please God, for besyde the oade of fidelity which I haue sworne vnto you, you haue of your graciefauour shapen so many benefites vpon me; that shal shold noe counsell you, in that which did concerneth your roiall Maiestie, I shold commit a greate fault bosh towards God and men. In consideracion whereof if it like your Maiestie, after I had long weighed with my selfe that which I will declare vnto you, I haue often reported that I deferred the matter so long, not for any malice I beare vnto any man (as God is my witnesse) but onely for the damage which I see ready to ensue, if your Maiestie do not speedily and wisely seeke remedy to prevent it. Your Maiestie knoweth that of long time there hath beene great controuer-sie betwene the kingdome of Gaule and great Britaine, because that the Kings your predecessors, haue alwaies pretended title of soue-

soueraigntie thereunto. And albeit that for some time this quarrell hath line dead, notwithstanding it is likely that those of that Countrey (calling to minde the warres and damages they haue endured by your subiects) haue secretly determined to take reuenge thereof. And in my opinion, *Amadis* who is chiefe and principall amonst them all, is not come into this Countrey, but to practise and gaine your people: who (ioyned with the forces which he may easilly land heere) will so trouble you, that it will be hard for you to resist them. And I beseech you to consider whither the likelyhood thereof bee not already very apparent. Moreouer your Maiestie may bee pleased to consider that he of whō I speake, and those of his alliance likewise, haue done mee so much honour and pleasure, that both I and my children are greatly boun- den vnto them, and were it not that you are my soueraigne Lord, I would in no wise pleake against *Amadis*, but in those things which concerne your person, let mee rather receiue death, then that I spare any man living were he mine own sonne. You haue receiued *Amadis* with so great number of his parents and other strangers into your Court (like a good and liberall Prince as you are) that in the end, their traine will become greater then your owne, wherefore if it like your Maiestie, it were good to foresee this matter before the fire bee kindled any further. When the King heard *Gandandel* speake in this sort, he became very pensiue, and afterwards answered him: In faith louing friend, I beleue that you aduertise mee as a good and faithfull subiect, neuerthelesse seeing the seruices that they of whom

you speake haue done vnto me, I cannot be perswaded in my minde, that they would procure or imagine any treason agaist me. May it please your Maiestie, answered he, that is it which deceiueth you, for if they had heretofore offendred you, you would haue beeene ware of them as of your enemies, but they can wisely cloake their pretended treason, colouring it with an humble speech, accompanied with some small seruices, wherein they haue employed themselves, watching a time of more fit opportunity. The King turned his head on the one side without answering any farther, because there came some Gentlemen vnto him, neuerthelesse *Gandandel* being as ye-ignorant how the King had taken his aduertisement, he practised with *Broadas*, and drew him vnto his league, declaring vnto him the whole discourse which he had with the King, assuring him that if they might banish *Amadis* and his allies, that from thenceforth they two alone should gouerne the king and his Realme peaceably. *Broadas* receiuing this counsell for good, did afterwards imprint in the King his minde so great ialousie, and suspicion agaist *Amadis* and his fellowes, as from that day hee had them in so strange a sort, that hee could not in a manner abide to see them, forgetting the great seruices performed by them, as well when he and *Oriane* were delivered from the hands of *Arcalens*, as afterwards in the battaile against King *Cildaden*, and in many other places heretofore recited. Truly if this King had well remembred the counsell and aduise which hee had receiued of *Vrgande*, hee had not so farre digressed from the bounds of reason, although that

the like malady doth often haunt al Princes, when they take not heed of falling into the like accidents and danger as King *Lisart* did. Who giuing credit to the deceitfull words of these traitors, did neuer afterwards visit (as hee was accustomed) *Amadis* and the others that were wounded, whereat they were not a little abashed, but to doe them the more despite he sent for *Madafina* and other pledges, vnto whom he sayde, that if within eight dayes the Isle of *Mongaza* were not yeelded vnto him according to their promise, that then hee would sudainly cause their heads to be smitten off. When *Madafina* heard this rigorous constraint, never was woman more afraid, considering, that in performing the will of the King, shee should remaine poore and vtterly dishereted, and on the other side, denying to satisfie his behest, shee did see her death prepared, so that she was in such perplexitie, as not being able to answere him, she had recourse vnto her teares. Wherefore *Andangell* the old Gyant answered the King, saying: If it please your Maiestie, I will go with those whom you shall appoint to send, vnto the mother of *Madafina*, and I will deale with her in that sort, as shee shall accomplish your will, yeelding the Countrey and places which you demand, otherwise your Maiestie may doe your pleasure with vs. This the King liked well of, and euен that day he sent him with the Earle *Latin*, and caused *Madafina* and her women to bee carried back to their accustomed prison, whether they were brought by diuers Gentlemen. Whom she moued greatly to pitie her estate, by the complaints and sorrowfull lamentation that

she made vnto them, praying euerie one of them particularly to la-our in her behalfe vnto the King, so that there was not one amonst them all, who promised not to doe for her as much as possibly they could, especially *Don Galu-nes*, who at that time held her by the arme, beholding her with such an eye, as hee became of her en- amoreud, and said vnto her: Ma-dame, I am sure that if it would please you to accept mee for your husband, the King would freely be-stow vpon vs all the right that he pretendeth in your Countrey. I beleue also that you are not ig-norant of my nobility, being bro-ther to the King of *Scotland*, and that by me your authoritie shall not be deminished. For the rest, assure your selfe that I will vse you as you are worthy. Now *Madafina* had known him of long time, & she was assured that he was one of the best Knights in the world. Wherefore accepting the offers of *Galu-nes*, shee fell downe at his feete, most humbly thanking him for the good and honour which he did offer vnto her, and euен then was the marriage betweene them agreed vpon, the which afterward *Galu-nes* laboured to effect to his vttermost power. And the better to accomplish it, some few dayes after he came vnto *Amadis* and *A-graies*, making them acquainted with that which you haue heard, and *Agraies* said vnto him: Unkle, I know very well that loue hath no respect of persons, sparing neither young nor olde, and seeing that you are become one of his sub-iects, we will beseech the King so much in your behalfe, that you shall enioy your desired loue, therefore determininge to behauze your selfe like a lusty champion for *Madaf-*

*Madasime* is a woman, not likely to bee pleased with a kisse onely By my faith (answered *Amadis*) my Lord *Galuanes*, the King in my opinion, will not refuse vs, and I promise you that so soone as I am able to walke, your Nephew and I will goe vnto his Maestie to entreat that which you demand. But you must vnderstand that whilst these things were in doing, *Gandandel* the better to couer & dissemble the treason which he had conspired, did goe oftentimes to see and visit *Amadis*, so that one time amongst the rest hee sayd to him: my Lord, it is long since you saw the King. What is the cause thereof answered *Amadis*? Because saide *Gandandel*, by his countenance it seemeth hee beareth you no great good will. I know not answered *Amadis*, yet to my knowledge I never offended him. For this time they passed no farther, vntill at another instant this traytour came againe to see him, shewing vnto him a better countenance then he was accustomed, saying: my Lord, I told you the other day, that I thought by the speeches which I heard the King speake of you, that his friendship was not so firme vnto you as it was wont to be, and because that I and mine are so greatly bound vnto you, for the pleasures which you haue done vnto vs, I will truly let you vnderstand how the King hath a very bad opinion of you, and therefore looke vnto it. So many times did hee repeat this and the like matter vnto *Amadis*, that hee began to suspect least hee had layd some snare to entrap him in, whereby the King might conceiue some euill opinion of him. And therefore one day when *Gandandel* persevered in his aduertis-

ments, *Amadis* being very angry, answered him: My Lord *Gandandel*, I doe greatly wonder what moouerth you to vse this speech so often vnto me, seeing that I did never thinke vpon any thing but only wherein I might doe the King seruice? And I cannot believe that a Prince so vertuous as hee is, would euer suspect mee for a thing which I never committed. VVherefore never breake my head more with such follies, for I take no pleasure therein. For this cause *Gandandel* durst never after that speake any more thereof vnto him, vntill that *Amadis* beeing healed, went vnto the Court, but so soone as the King beheld him hee turned his head from him & his fellowes, not vouchsafing so much as once to looke vpon them. Then *Gandandel* who was hard by them seeing the Kings countenance, came to embrace *Amadis*, saying vnto him, that hee was glad of his recovery. But by my faith sayd he, I am very sory that the king vseth you so better, notwithstanding now you may know whether the aduertisements that I gaue you were false or not. *Amadis* answered him not one word, but came vnto *Angria* & *Brunco*, who thinking that hee had not marked the countenance which the King shewed vnto them, aduertised him thereof. There is so caule answered *Amadis*, that you should take it in ill part, seeing that very often a man is intentive vnto some thing whereon his minde is set, that hee taketho heed vnto that which others doe, it may be that the king mused vpon some other matter when we saluted him, therefore let vs retorne and speake vnto his Maestie for that which *Galuanes* entreated vs. Herewithall they approached

vnto him, and *Amadis* sayde vnto the King. Although, if it please your Maestie, that I haue not heretofore done you that seruice that I desire, yet haue I presumed (trusting in your good bountie) to request one gift of your highnesse, which can not but turne greatly to your honour, moreouer you shall binde those vnto your Maestie, whom you may pleasne with your gacious grant. At this time was *Gandandel* present, who playing the hypocrite (as he was accustomed) very malapertly took vpon him to speake, and answered *Amadis*. Truly if it bee so as you say, the King ought not to denie your fute. If it like your highnesse, saide *Amadis*, the gift which I and my fellowes here present, do beseech your highnesse to grant vnto vs, is, that it would please you to bestow vpon the Lord *Galuanes* the Isle of *Mongaza*, for the which he shall yeeld you fealty and homage, in marrying with *Madasime*, by the which fauour your grace shall both aduance a poore Prince, and extend your pitty vnto one of the fairest Gentlewomen in the world. VVhen *Brocedor* and *Gandandel* heard this demand, they looked vpon the King, making a signe vnto him that hee should not grant it to them. Yet neuerthelesse it was a great while before hee spake, considering the deserts of *Don Galuanes*, and the seruices which hee had receiued of him in many places, especially how that *Amadis* had conquered with the price of his blood, the land which he required for another, neuerthelesse hee gaue no care vnto him, although by vertue hee was bounden to condiscend vnto a request so resonable, yet hee thus answered *Amadis*.

That man is ill aduised who re-

questeth a thing that cannot bee granted. I speake this because of you my Lord *Amadis*, who doe entreat mee for that which within these ffe dayes I haue bestowed, as a gift vpon my youngest daughter *Leonor*. This excuse had the King fayned of set purpose to refuse *Galuanes*, whereupon *Amadis* who was greatly discontented with the slender entertainment that he shewed vnto them, knowing that this was but an excuse, hee could not so much command him selfe as to hold his peace, but that he said vnto the King. Your Maestie doth very well manifest that the seruices which for you we haue done, haue beeene little pleasing vnto you, and lesse profitable for vs. And therefore (if these my companions will bee ruled by me) wee will hence-forth bethinke vs what to doe. Belike me my Nephew, answered *Galuanes*, you say true, and those seruices are very ill employed, which are done vnto those that haue no desire to acknowledge them, and therefore every man of courage ought to beware for whom he aduenture him selfe. My Lords, answered *Amadis*, blame not the King for not granting that which hee hath promised vnto another, and let vs onely entreat him that he will be pleased to permit that *Galuanes* may marry with *Madasime*. And if hee grant this fauour, I will giue vnto him the Firme-Island. *Madasime* (answered the King) is my prisoner, and if she deliuer not vnto mee the land which she had promised me, shee shall lose her head before the moneth be past.

By my faith, saide *Amadis*, had your Maestie answered vs more kindly, you had done vs no wrong at all, if at she least you had a desire

desire in any sort to thinke well of vs. If my entertainment like you not answered the King, the world is large enough to finde out some other, that may vse you better. Truely this word hardly digested, turned afterward into a greater consequence, then the King thought it would, who perceiued shortly after by *Brocadas* and his companion, how hurtfull a thing, hatefull and vncourteous speech is, as the forgetting of good and his honour, is oftentimes the ouerthrow both of a king and realm. *Amadis* was so displeased with this farewell, that he said vnto the king. If it like your Maiesty, I haue hitherto thought that there was neither King nor Prince in the world more indued with vertuous and honourable qualities then you, neuerthelesse we now by proose perceiue the contrary. Therefore seeing you haue changed your ancient good custome, by the aduise of some latter bad counsell, wee will goe seeke out another manner of life. Do answered the king, what you will, for you know my minde. Saying so, hee rose vp in a great rage, and went vnto the Queene, vnto whom he imparted the whole discourse that he had with *Amadis* and his companions, and how hee was dispatched of them, wherewith hee was very glad. I am in great doubt said the Queene, least this your pleasure doe not hereafter turne you to displeasure, for you are not ignorant, from the first day that *Amadis* and his confederats entred into your seruice, how your affaires haue alwaies prospered better and better, so as if you consider that which they haue done for you, you shall finde that they haue deserued no such answere as you haue made vnto

them. Besides when it shall bee manifest vnto others what they both haue done and can doe, and the little account you doe make of them for their deserts, they may hereafter hope for no better at your handes, and therefore will they desist to employ themselves for you, reputing them fooles that shall do but the least seruice for so vngratefull a man! Tell mee no more of it said the king, for it is done, but if they make their complaint vnto you, tel them that long since I haue giuen that land which they required of me to our daughter *Leonor*, as I did tell them. I will doe it answered the Queene, seeing it is your pleasure, and God grant that all may turne to the best.

But you must understand, that after *Amadis* and those in his company had seene in what sort the King had left them, they went forth of the Palace, and as they went to their lodging they concluded to say nothing thereof vnto their friends vntill the next morning, against which time they would pray them all to meeet together, and that then they would take counsell what was best to be done. And at the same instant *Amadis* sent *Durin* to tell the Princesse *Mabila* that he would (if it were possible) the night following speake with *Oriana* about some matter of importance newly fallen out. In this sort the day passed, and the night approched, being alreadie apparrelled in his sable weedes: wherefore at such time as every one was in their soundest sleepe, *Amadis* called *Gandalin*, and came vnto that place by the which hee commonly entred into the chamber of *Oriana*, who stayed for him according to the message which

shee had receiued by *Darin*, where being arrived, without acquainting her at the first with any thing that might displease her, after they had a little while discoursed pleasantly together, *Mabila* & the Damosell of Denmark (who were desirous to sleep, or it may be not being able to endure that heat wherewith loue did pricke them, seeing the kissings & embracings wherewith these two louers entertained one another) sayd vnto them, the bed is bigge enough for you two, and the darknesse fit for your desires, it is now late, lie you downe if it please you, and afterwards talke together as much as you wil. Madame said *Amadis* vnto *Oriana*, by my faith their counsell is very good. It is best for vs then to belieue them answered shee, and therewithall hauing nothing vpon her but a cloake cast about her, she had quickly gotten her in between a paire of sheets, and as shee layd her downe close in her bed, hee lent so neere vnto her ouer the beds side, that after the curtains were drawne (not to encrease his passion, but to redouble his pleasure) a wax taper being onely lighted vp in the chamber, they began to kisse and embrace each other so incessantly, that remaining in this great ease, their spirits entertained a double delight, by the sweet sollace which their metamorphosed soules did mutually receiue from the outward parts of their lippes, being brought at the same instant into such an exasie, that they were thereby vnable to speake one worde, vntill the Damosell of Denmark (thinking that *Amadis* had beeene asleepe) pulled him by the garment, saying. My Lord you may lightly take colde, get you into the bed if it please you.

With this wakynge as it were forth of a sound sleepe, hee fetcched a deepe sigh. Alas deare loue sayd the Princesse, should you not be as well at your ease if you were laid downe in the bed by mee, as to take so much paine and hurte your selfe. Madame (answered he) seeing it pleaseth you so to command me, I will not make it daintie to straine a little curtesie with you.

No sooner had hee sayde these wordes, but that hee threwe himselfe starke naked betweene the Princesse her armes, then begunne they againe their amorous sports, performing with cōtentment that thing which every one in the like delight doth most desire: afterwards they began to conferte of diuers matters, vntill that *Oriana* demaide of him wherfore he had sent her word by *Darin* that he had somewhat of great importance to tell her. Madam answered he, I wil declare it vnto you, seing that your desire to know it, although I am sure it will be both strange & grievous vnto you, neuertheles I must of necessity aduertise you therEOF, because it is of so great cōsequēcc. You must vnderstand therefore Madame, that the King your father yesterday did speake vnto *Agrias*, *Galwanes*, & me in such discreteous sort, that thereby we wel perceiued little good hee wisheth vs, afterwards he recited vnto her word by word, of all that had hapened, & how in the end the king rising vp in a great rage, told them that the worlde was large enough for them to goe seeke some other place where they might bee better requited then of him. And for this cause Madame sayde *Amadis*, wee must of force doe what hee hath commaunded, otherwise

wee should greatly preuidice our honours, remaining against his wil in his seruice, seeing that he might presume that wee had no other place to goe vnto, where we might be entertained, therefore I beseech you not to be offend, if in obeying him I am constrained to leaue you for a season. You know what power you haue ouer mee, and that I am as much yours as you can wish, more ouer I know very well that if I should gaine any bad reputation, you are she that would bee most offend therewith, so much am I sure that you doe loue and esteeme mee, which maketh mee againe to entreat you to allow of my departure, and to give mee leaue, vsing your accustomed constancy and vertue. Alas, answered shee, my deere loue, what doe you tell me? Madame, if it please God the King heereafter will acknowledge the wrong that he hath done vnto vs, and I shall bee as well welcome vnto him as euer I haue bin. Gentle friend, answered the Princesse, you do much amisse to complaine of my father, for if he hath receiued any good from you, it was for my loue, & by the commandement that I gaue vnto you, and not for his sake, for I alone did bring you hither, and was the cause that you remained with him. And therefore it is not hee that must recompence you, but I, vnto whom you belong. It is very true that hee hath alwaies thought otherwise, for which hee is the more to bee blamed for answering you so vn-discreetly. And although that your departure is the most grieuous thing that could happen to me (being a matter of constraint) I am content to fortifie my selfe, and to prefer reason before the delights and pleasures which I receiue by

your presence. Therefore will I frame my will to your liking, because I am sure that in what place soeuer you shall bee, your heart (which is mine) shall remaine with mee, as pledge of the power which you haue giuen me ouer your selfe, and yet moreouer, my father in losing you shall know by those few that he shall haue left, what he hath lost by you. Madame, said Amadis, the fauour which you shew vnto me is so great, that I esteeme it no lesse then the redemption of mine owne life. For you know that every vertuous man ought to have his honour in such estimation, that hee ought to preferre it before his owne life. In like sort Madam, seeing that to conserue it I must of force depart from you, doe thus much if it please you for mee, as (during my absence) to let me haue very often from you: And to hold mee alwaies in your good fauour, as he who was never borne but on ly to obey and serue you. And truly whosoever had seene the Princesse then, when Amadis took this sorrowfull farewell, he might easly haue bin witnes of the passiō which shee indured. Neuerthelesse Amadis seeing the day constrained him to depart (in kissing her sweetly) hee rose vp, leauing her so ful of sorrow & heauiness, that although shee dissembled as well as shee could, this her extreme greefe, yet had shee not so much power ouer her selfe, but that shee awaked Mabille and the Damosell of Denmark with her loud sighes, who thinking her to bee taken with some new disease came hastily vnto her, and found that Amadis was already apparelled. Then they demanded of him, what moued Oriana in such extreme sort to complaine. Amadis tolde them the whole discourse in what

what sort hee was constrained to forsake the court, and the seruice of the king, wherefore my louing friends said he, I pray you to go & comfort my Lady. Whiche said, he tooke his leaue of them, and departed, leauing al the three Ladies accompanied onely with sorrow, and extreame passion. Now you must know that so soon as Agraeis and Galuane were come vnto Amadis his lodging, they sent vnto all their friends particularly, to intreat them to meet there the next morning, the which they accordingly performed, then they went altogether to the Church to heare seruice, at their retурne from whence, they all walking in a great field, Amadis began to speake vnto them in this manner: My Lords because that some one may wrongfully blame my Lord Galuane, Agraeis, me, & some others here present, for leauing the king his seruice (as wee are determined to do) they and I haue thought good to let you understand what is the occasion thereof. I beleue that there is not any in this company that knoweth not whether since our arriuall in great Bretaine the authority of a Prince bee increased or diminished. Wherfore without spending the time in re-hearsing the seruices which wee haue done vnto him, for the which we had great hope to haue receiued (besides his good will) a great reward, I will declare vnto you particularly, with what ingratitudo he vsed vs yester day, & eue as, fortune which is mutable & inconstant, doth often times overthrow all things, so hath hee changed his conditions, eyther by some bad counsaile which he hath receiued, or for some sleight occasion wherof we are ignorant. But this much

I am sure, that my Lord Galuane did desire vs to bee a meanes for him vnto his Maiestie not past eight or ten daies since, that hee would bee pleased to permit him to marry with Madasima, and in so doing, to suffer him likewise to ioy her lands, vpon this condition that he should hold them of him, and of his Crowne, by fealty and homage, the which wee promised to performe. By meanes wherof, so soone as I was able to goe, I and oþers in this company did make this request vnto him, but he without any regard eyther vnto vs that were futors, or vnto him for whom we sued, who is (as euery on knoweth) brother vnto the King of Scotland, as valiant and hardy a knight as possible may be, & such a one as in the late battell against king Cledas hath not spared his life, but hath done as much as any other that was there, he hath not only refused our requests, but also giuen vs such iniurious words, as were far vnfit and vnworthy such a king. And notwithstanding at the beginning wee made small accoune thereof, vntill hee said vnto vs all (as we shewed vnto him some reasons for our request) that we shold goe seekke else where for such a one as would acknowledge, and better esteeme of vs then he did, and that the world was wide enough, without importuning him any further. Therefore my fellows and friends since that being in his seruice, wee haue beeene euer dutifull vnto him, so for my parte I am yet very well content in this case not to displease him and to get mee forth of his countrie.

But because it seemeth vnto mee that this his licence to depart doth not onely touch mee, and those vnto whom hee spake, but

but all others who are none of his subiects, I thought it good to acquaint you therewith, to the end, that you might bethinke what to doe. Much were these Knights amased at the words of *Amadis*, considering that if the great seruises of him and his brethren were so badly requited, that very hardly would that little which they had done be recompensed. Wherefore they determined to forsake the King, and to goe secke their fortune else-where, especially *Angriotta de Estranux*, who to draw the rest vnto his opinion and to follow *Amadis*, hee began to say with a loude voyce. My Lords, it is yet no long time since I knew the King, and for that little acquaintance that I have had with him, I did never see a Prince more wise, vertuous and temperate, then he hath bin in his affaires, wherefore I doubt mee greatly, that this which hee hath done vnto *Amadis*, and to these Lords present, proceedeth not of his own fancy: but he hath bin incited thereunto by some wicked malicious persō, who had perswaded him to vse the in that sort. And because that for these eighteene daies, I have seen *Gandandell* & *Bredan* very often consulting with him, and that so he hath beene more priuat with them then any other, I feare me that they are the men that haue bin the chiefe workers of this mischiefe, for I haue known the of long time for the most malicious persons in all the world. Therefore I am determined even this day to demand the combat against them, and to maintain that fassly and wickedly they haue set discord betwene the king and *Amadis*, and if they will make excuse because of their age, they haue each of them a sonne which of long time haue

borne Armes, against whom I alone will fight, if they dare bee so bolde to maintaine the reason of their wicked parents. Ah my Lord *Angriotta*, answered *Amadis*, I should bee very sorry that you should hazard your body in a matter so vncertaine. By my faith, answered *Angriotta*, I am very sure thereof, and I haue perceiued it of long time, so that if the king would bee pleased to tell but what hee knoweth, hee would affirme them to be such as I say. I pray you Gentle friend, said *Amadis*, deferre yet for this time, to the end, that the king may haue no cause to bee discontented, for if those whom you speake of (who haue alwaies shewed to mee a friendly countenance) haue beene so malicious as to play false play behinde my back, before you that at length their wickednes shall bee discovered, and their desert recompensed, then shal you haue reason to accuse them: Well, answered *Angriotta*, although this is against my will, yet I am contente to deferre it, but beleue me, that heereafter I shall both complaine, and bee revenged of them well enough.

For the rest, my good friends, saide *Amadis*, if it pleased the King and Queene so vouchsafe to see mee, I am determined to goe forthwith and take my leaue of them, and so to retire vnto the Firme-Island, in hope that those which will follow mee, shall wholly bee pertakers with mee, in all the good and pleasure which there I shall haue. And as you doe know the Countrey is pleasant and wealthy, full of faire women, store of forrests, and many riuers fit for hauking, furthermore, diuers as well of our acquaintance as of strangers, wil come and

visit vs: besides, in our neede if we shall want any aide, and that king *Lisuart* will attempt any enterprise against vs we shall bee supported by my father, from the Countrey of little *Brittaine* and from *Scotland*, especially from the Realm of *Sobradisa*, the which the Queene *Briolanis* will wholly yelde into our hands, at all times when wee shall please. Seeing that you are in these tearmes answered *Quedragent*, now may you know those which do loue your company, from those which doe not. By my faith said *Amadis*, I am of the opinion if any loue his owne particular profit, that hee should not forsake so

## CHAP. XXI.

How *Amadis* with many others his confederats forsooke the seruise of King *Lisuart*, and went as well to proue the adventures of the Arch of loyall Lovers, as also of the forbidden chamber.

**A**hen *Amadis* did see that the king persecuted still in the euill opinion which he had conceiued against him and his, according to his former determination at his coming forth of the meddow, he went vnto the court and he found the king ready to sit downe to dinner. Then approaching vnto him he said, may it please your Maiestie if in any thing I haue offended your grace, God and your selfe can witnesse, assuring you, that although the seruices which I haue done vnto you haue beene very small, yet the will which I haue had to acknowledge the benefits and honour which hath pleased you to bestow vpon mee hath beene exceeding great. You tell me that I should seeke abroad for one that woulde better re-quite me then you, giving me ther-

by to understand the small desire you haue, that I should obey you, not that I will depart from you as my liege Lord and Soueraign, for I was never subiect to you, nor any other Prince (God only excepted) but I take leaue of you as of him who hath done me great good and honour, and vnto whom I doe beare affectionate loue and desire of seruice. Scant had hee spoke this word when suddenly these in like sort did take their leaues *vix.* *Galvanes*, *Agrales*, *Dragonis*, *Palomir*, *Brunco de Bon'Mer*, *Branfill* his brother, *Angriotta d'Estranux*, *Grindonan* his brother, *Pinores* his Cosin, and *Don Quedragent* who stepped before all the rest, saying vnto the King.

Your Maiestie knoweth that I never had come nor remayned in your Court but at the instance and request of *Amadis*, wil-

willing and desirous to bee his friend for euer, and seeing that by his occasion I became yours, by the like reason will I now leaue your seruice, and hereafter forsake you, for what hope may I haue that my small seruices shall bee regarded, when his being so many and great, are so badly requited, without remembrance how greatly you are indebted vnto him, in deliuering you from the handes of *Mandasabull*, and for the victory also which you haue obtained of king *Cildadan*, with the price of his blood and other of his kindred. I could well remember you of the good turne which he did vnto you when hee deliuered you and your daughter *Oriana* (as I haue many times heard it said) from the hands of *Arcalaus*, and now of late my Lady *Leonor*, whom *Famangonsad* and *Basgant* his sonne the crullest giants in the world had taken prisoner, with intent to put her to death, for which cause the ingratitude which now you shew vnto him is so great, that it quite depriveth you from all knowledge of the truth. And therefore he ought to make no lesse account of this his short farewell then of the slow reward hee hath receiued for the seruices past. As for me, I am determined to follow him and to forsake your court togither with him. Whereto the king replied, *Don Quedragant* your tongue doth well declare the little loue you beare vnto me, yet notwithstanding mee thinks you are not so tied nor ali-ed vnto *Amadis*, as in accusing me you should excuse him as you do: but your thought is otherwise, you say more then you thinke. Your Maiesy may speake what you please, said *Quedragant*, like a mighty Lord as you are, neuerthe-

lesse you much mistake mee in thinking me to be a dissembler or a counterfeiter of leasings, as a number of others about you are, by whom I am sure that in the end you shall finde your selfe but badly serued. Moreouer before many dayes be past, you shall perceiue who are the friends of *Amadis*. Which said, hee retired, and *Landin* stepped forth, saying to the king, may it please your Maiesy, I haue not found one in all your court, that was able to giue any ayde or comfort to my wrongs, but onely my Lord *Amadis*, whom I now do see ready to depart from your seruice, for the wrong that you haue done vnto him, for which cause not desiring to forsake him, nor my Uncle *Don Quedragant* also, I do take my leaue of you. Truly *Landin* answered the king, so far as I perceiue wee are assured that henceforth you haue no desire to remaine with vs. Beleeue mee if it like your Maiesy said he, looke what they are so will I bee, for during my life will I obey them. At that instant there stood in a corner of the hall (whispering togerther) *Don Brian of Moniasse*, a most renowned knight, sonne to King *Ladasan*, and to one of the sisters to king *Perion of Gaule*, *Uraldin*, son to the Earle of *Orlando*, *Grandores*, and *Madansill of Pont d'argent*, *Listoran* of the white Tower, *Ledes* of *Fryarque*, *Tantilie* the haughty, and *Don Grauet de Val Craintif*. All these came vnto the king and said. Your Maiesy may be pleased to vnderstand that the occasion of our comming hither was to see *Amadis* and his brethren, and to be their friends, if it were possible. And euen as they were caute of the seruice that you haue receiued of vs, they also shall bee the meanes

and principall Leader. *Oriana* was so greatly comforted with this sight, that euer after she was more merry and at better hearts ease. In this sort did *Amadis* and his followers passe through the City, and there accompanied them king *Arban of North Wales*, *Grumedan*, a knight of honour belonging to the Queen, *Brandorras*, *Quenorans* *Giontes* Nephew to the King, and *Listoran* the good iouster. All these were very sorry for the departure of so many good knights, especially for *Amadis*, who prayed them that in any matter wherin his honour might bee blemished, they would shew themselves to be such friends for him, as hee esteemed them. And although the king (without any occasion) had conciued a hate against him, yet they should not ceale for all that to be his friends, without forsaking the seruice of so good a prince, and they answered him that excepting their seruice and loyalty in the which they were by duty bounde vnto the king, they would bee ready to pleasure him at all times and places, when and where he would employ them, for the which hee heartilie thanked them. Afterwards hee saide vnto them, If you finde the king fit to be spoken vnto, you may aduertise him that which *Vrgande* declared to mee in his presence is now accomplished, for shee told mee that the recompence which I should haue in gayning Dominions for another, should be hate, anger, and banishment from that place where most I desired to remaine. I haue conquered as every one knoweth with the edg of my sword, and the losse of my blood, the lde of *Mongara*, thereby enlarging the limits of the realme of great *Bretaine*, and pos-  
P 4

withstanding al this, the king without cause at all, hath requited mee with hate, but God is iust, and will recompence every one according to his deserts.

By my faith, answered *Grameden*, I will not faile to let the King know as much as you haue sayde. And cursed be *Vrganda* for prophesying so right, which saide, they embrased one another and tooke their leaue, but *Guillan* the pensif whose eyes were full of teares, said vnto *Amadis*. My Lord, you know my occasion, and how I cannot of my selfe doe any thing, being subiect so the will of another, for whose sake I suffer and endure strange greeves and anguishes, which is the cause that I cannot follow you, for which I am very sorry and ashamed, so great a desire haue I to acknowledge the fauour and honour that I haue receiued of you, being in your company, beseeching you most humbly at this time to holde me excused. Now did *Amadis* vnderstand in what subiectiō loue did hold him, and hee knew very well by himselfe what paine hee might suffer, by meanes whereof he answered him: My Lord *Guillan*, God forbid that by my occasion you should commit any offence vnto the Lady whom you loue so constantly, but I rather counsell you to be obedient vnto her, and to serue her as hitherto you haue done, and the King likewise being sure that your honour saued, you wil be vnto me in all places a faithfull friend and louing companion. Heerewithall he embrased him, & taking his leaue, *Guillan* and his fellowes returned vnto the Cittie, and *Amadis* and his followed on their way to the Firme-Island, vntill at the last they arriued along by a riuer, vpon the side whereof *Amadis*

had sent before to cause his Tents and Pavillions to be arm'd and set vp. There they lodged for that night, praising God in that they had so happily beene warned of the Kings ingratitnde, with whom if they had remained any longer, space, they had but lost their time, But *Amadis* was so heauie for his banishment from *Oriana* (ignorant when he shold see her again) that he knew not in what sort to dissemble his malancholie, and thus they passed away the night vntill the next morning, that they had rode forward on their way. In the meane time King *Lisuart* was in his Pallace, who after the departure of so great a number of Knights, perceiued that he now was but meanly accompanied. Then he began to acknowledge the fault which he had committed, and to repente him greatly for the words which he said vnto *Amadis*. At the very selfe same time, *Gaudenel* and *Bredas* were aduertised what *Angriate* had said of them, whereat they were maruailously abashed, fearing least the King and the rest should dislike of the bad counsell, which they had giued vnto him, neuerthelesse, since there was no remedy: they determined to passe it over, and to worke such meanes that neuer any of those Knights who were departed should enter into the King his fauour againe. And the better to bring it to passe, they both came vnto him, saying. Your Maiestie ought greatly to praise God, that you are so honestly rid of those men who might haue wrought you much mischiefe, for your highnesse knoweth there is nothing more dangerous then a secret enemy.

Wherfore you haue now no other thing to trouble you, neither

neede you take any care for your affaires, because that wee two will take order, and warily prouide for any perill that may happen to this Realme. When the king heard them speake so audaciously, hee looked vpon them with a sowre countenance, and answered them: I do much meruaile how you dare bee so presumptuous to perswade me that I should leaue vnto you the government, not onely of my house, but also of my whole realm, knowing that you are nothing fit, nor sufficient for such a charge. Doe you imagine that the Princes and Lords of this monarchie will obey you, knowing the place from whence you are descended? And if you thinke to play the good husbands, desiring to enrich mee by sparing of my treasure, vpon whom doe you thinke that I may better employ it, then vpon such Gentle-men and knights as are in my seruice? Seeing that the Prince cannot be named a king, but only because hee hath many at his commandement. And if in times past I haue shewed my selfe liberall vnto those whom at your instance I haue driven away, even by them was I maintained, feared, and redoubted, and therefore content you with that you haue done, without any farther dissembling & forgiing of matters, otherwise you shal know that you nothing please me therewith.

Saying so he left them, much abashed at these wordes, and hee mounted on horsebacke to goe chase a hart which his hunters told him was inclosed within his toiles. As these things were in doing, there arriued at the Court a Damosell that was sent from *Queene Briolanis* vnto *Oriana*, who after shee had done her duty, said vnto

her, Madame the Queene my Mistresse hath her commynded, to your good Grace. And she hath exprefly sent me vnto you, to declare vnto you at large how she hath beene in the firme-Island, and what happened vnto her in preuying the aduentures which there she found.

God keepe so good a Queene from mischiefe, answered *Oriana*, and you also that haue taken so much paine. Then all the Ladies and Gentiewomen desirous to heare newes, came round about her, and the Damosell began to rehearse that which she had seen, saying. Madam, at the departing from this Court, the Queene my Mistresse and her compaines, arriued the fist day following in the Firme-Island, where so soone as she was come, she was demanded if it pleased her to prooue the forbidden Chamber of the Arch of loyal Louers, but shee answered that shee would first see the other matuaines of the place. And for that cause *Iania* caused her to bee conducted to a most faire house, situated halfe a leaguo or thereabout, from the principall Palace of *Apoldon*, in the which after shee had a little while walked, beholding the excellent building thereof, shee came vnto one of the corners of a Parke which was very darke and deepe, that none durst approach vnto the same, so fearefull a thing was it. Afterward my Lady was brought into a most faire Tower, well furnished with windows, from whence shee might see all the waies round about her, and there we were so well serued and cōtreced as naignt bee. And as the second seruice was brought in, we did see come forth of that deep ditch, a great serpent, which did

did cast fire and smoake as well from her eyes and eares, as from her throte, who came and entred into this Tower, shewing a countenance so furious, that the stoutest in the company trembled with great feare, after him there suddenly followed two Lions, who in like sort came forth of this ditch, they came leaping in and assailed the Serpent, herewithall there began a battaile betweene them, the cruelest that may possibly be seene betweene brute beasts, and it lasted halfe an houre and more, and so long continued it, that the two Lions became so wearie as they fell downe in the place as if they had been dead, & the Serpent likewise so out of breath, that hee remayned a great while lying vpon the ground. In the end hauing rested a little, hee rose vp and swallowed one of the Lions down his throte, and carried him into the ditch, and presently after he returned, & did the like vnto the second, and were no more seene all the day after. Those of the Isle (accustomed to such wonders) beholding our feare laughed at vs, assuring vs that all the day long wee should see no other noueltie. Whereupon we began to laugh at our folly, reproching one another, for the affright that had happened vnto vs, & thus we passed all the afternoone vntill it was bed time, that my Lady and wee her women were brought into a chamber richly hanged, in the which wee were all layed. But about midnight, wee did heare our chamber doore open with so great noyse, that wee awaked with great feare thereof, and therewithall we saw entring in a Hart, one side of whom was as white as snow, and the other side more blacke then a rauen: hauing vpon his head thir-

tie hornes, vpon every one of which there was a burning candle, which gaue so great a light, that one nighte haue seene as plaine within the chamber, as if it had beene broad day. The Hart entred in running with great force, for hee was pursued by a cry of swift hounds, that laboured to ouertake him, and incourage them therunto, there was heard an Iuony home sounding after the beast, who in the ende was so hardly pursued, that after hee had long turned about the chamber, hee leaped vp on our beds euen thorough the midst of vs. The feare whereof made vs to cry, and suddenly to rise vp, all naked as wee were, some of vs ran vnder the beds, others vnder the benches, but the more we thought to saue our selues, the more were we pursued by the Hart and hounds that followed him, till at the last hee ran towarde the windowes, afterwardes being a little better assured, we took vp our aparell which was fallen downe vpon the ground, and wee began to chat of the feare whiche we had. And as wee were in these tarmes, there came a Damosell, accompanied with two other women, who asked vs what moued vs to rise so earely. By my faith sayde my Lady, we haue had such an alarme, that my heart yet trembleth with feare. This Damosell smyled and sayde vnto her, that shee and wee might sleep in safety, for we should haue no more stirre all the night after. Whereupon wee layd vs downe in our bed, and there wee remained vntill it was indifferent late the next morning, when my Lady caused vs to rise vp, and after wee had heard seruice, as shee walked in a great meddow watered with many pleasant brookes going through

through a pleasant and delectable wood where we found at the end thereof many pleasant orchards, and a house very round, set vpon twelue pillars of Marble, so artificially wrought, that in stead of stone and morter, the walls thereof were of fine Christall, through the which they that were within, might easily see those without, and there was never a doore thereof which was not of Gold or Siluer. And (that which was most admirable) there was about it many Images of copper, made in the like-nesse of Giants, each of them holding in their hands a bended bow, and an arrow therein, the head whereof was of such a burning brightnes, that it seemed fire came out therof. And it was told vs that no sooner was any so hardy to enter therein, but presently he shold bee slaine by the arrows which by them are shot, whereupon my Lady was desirous to make prooife thereof, by a Horse and two Apes, who being put into the Chamber were presently consumed by the fire, proceeding from these Arrows that compassed them about. And there was grauen vpon the portall these words. Let no man nor woman be so hardy as to set foote within this Palace, except it be he or shee that loueth as constantly as *Grimanesa* and *Apolidon*, that made this enchantment. And they must of necessity enter in both together for the first time, otherwise let them be assured to die most cruelly, and this enchantment shall last, and all the rest of this Island, vntill that the knight & Lady (who do surpasre in loyalty those that made the defences of the forbidden Chamber) bee entered in, and there haue taken their pleasure. Hereupon my Lady caused *Isania* to be called, and tolde him she was glad that she had seuen these wonders, but shee would yet see the Arch of loyall Louers, and the chamber so renowned, and in the meane season, she desired him to tell her what was meant by the Hart, Serpent, Dogs and Lions, Madame answered *Isania*, I know no other thing thereof, but that every day at those houres and places that you did see them, the combats of the beasts are made, and the Hart doth alwaies leape downe from the window, and the Dogs after, who pursue him into a Lake not far from hence, where they are hidden and seene no more vntill the next day and houre that the chase beginneth againe, as you haue seene it this night past. But thus much you shall know, that if you were one whole yeere in this Island, yet should you not haue time enough to see all the wonderfull things which there are. For this cause my Lady and her company mounted on horseback, and we came vnto the Palace of *Apolidon* to see the arch of loyall Louers and the forbidden Chamber. Whereunto my Lady was no sooner come but she alighted, and approached vnto the Image of copper (as she that had never falsified her loue) and passing vnder, there was heard the most sweete, and melodious tune in all the world, and the Queene passed through euen vnto the place where the portraiture of *Apolidon* and *Grimanesa* were, which seemed vnto her as though they had been alive. And from thence shee came vnto the piller of Iasper, where she saw written these wordes. *Briolanis* the daughter to *Tagadan* king of *Sobradise*, is the third Damosell that did enter into this place. But

as my Lady looked round about her in all places she was afraid, seeing that she was alone: therefore without long tarrying there, she returned vnto vs that stayed for her, and for this time shee would make no farther proose vntill the 5. day following, that shee did put on the richest, and costliest apparrell that in al her life she had euer worne, & letting her hayre hang downe, which were the sayrest that euer nature framed, shee had vpon her head, no more then a border of Gold garnished with many pretious stones, the which did become her so well, and made her seeme so faire, that as well her owne followers as strangers did plainly say, that without doubt shee would finish the aduentures of the Isle: hereupon recommending her selfe vnto God, she entred vpon the forbidden path, and passing the brasse pillar, she came close vnto the other of Marble, where she red the Letters that were grauen thereupon, afterwards she marched on farther, so that euery one did then iudge that shee would enter into the chamber without any difficultie. When *Oriana* heard that *Briolanía* had passed so far, she began to blush and change her naturall colour, in such sort that one might easily haue knowne the great alteration of her minde, fearing that *Briolanía* had passed no farther, thereby ending the aduenture of the forbidden chamber. But the Damosell proceeding forward in her discourse, said, you must know that so soone as the Queene came within three paces of the chamber, she was taken so rudely by her fair and golden haires, that without all respect of pity, shee was throwne out with such force beyond the pillar that she remained in a wond

a long time, as many others had done before her: whereupon wee suddenly tooke her vp, and carried her vnto her chamber, where shortly after shee recovered, and she determined the next morning to depart from thence. The which she did, taking the way to *Sobrasa*. Neuerthelesse shee had before commanded me to come vnto this Court, to aduertise you of that which I haue declared. Truly Damosell said *Oriana*, the Queene your Mistresse hath done much for me. Madam, said the Damosell, she hath expressly charged me to returne vnto her incontinently, wherefore it may please you to giue me leave to depart. Faire Damosel said *Oriana*, you shall see the Queene, & then to morrow morning you shall depart. Well Madame said she, I am content to obey you. Now about this time *Amadis* and his fellowes arrived at the Firme-Island, where they were most royally entayned and received by all those of the country, who were exceeding glad for the recoverie of their new lord, whom they had thought to haue been lost. And after that these knights (who had followed *Amadis*) had well viewed the Isle, and seene the fertilitie, and the inuincible seiruation thereof, they iudged that king *Lisuart* nor any other prince could be of power sufficient as once to dare come and assaile them. For besides the force of the country, it was furnished with many citties & towns, and beautified with foure Castles, the most sumptuous and magnificant that were in all the world beside. In one of them might a man beholde the sport of the Hart chased by the Dogs, in the other, the Combat betweene the Lions and the Serpent, then in the third, the

tower which made the turning pavillion, for foure times a day it turned so fast, that those which were therein did thinke that it would sink: Lastly in the fourth was the pastime of the baited Bul: who comming foorth of an olde ditch, passed over the people that stood in his way, and did come running with his hornes against a gate of iron with such force, that hee ouerthrew it, and opened a Tower, from whence there came forth an old Ape, so wrinkled that his skinne hanged downe on all parts of him, the which held a whip, wherwith he nimblly chased the Bull euern vnto the ditch, from whence he came forth. In all these foure Castles did *Amadis* and his fellowes oftentimes take their pastime, for the strange sights that there they sawe. And in this sort did these knights passe the time away, staying vntill fortune did offer them some new occasion to arme themselues, the which shortly after she did: for *Balaïs Caysanta* (whom *Amadis* had heretofore delievered from the prisons of *Arcaeus*) came vnto him, from the Court of Kings *Lisuart*, who after hee had declared vnto them many nouels, hee tolde them how king *Lisuart* was preparing an armie to passe into the Isle of *Mongaze*, for *Gramedaca* had made answere vnto the Earle *Latin* (who was sent with the olde Gyant and his sonnes, to take possession of the country) that shee would sooner consent vnto the death of her selfe and all the world, before shee would yeeld vp the Burning lake, and the three strong Castles which shee held, and that they should doe with her Daughter *Madafima* and the other Damosels what they would. I pray you saide *Agraeis*

tell vs what countenance the King shewed, hearing such an answere. By my faith answered *Balaïs*, he is determined to put all to fire and sword if hee be resisted, and within a moneth after, to cause the heads of the pledges which hee holdeth to be smitten off. Truely said *Amadis*, hee may doe what he please; but if hee vsed more curtesie, it were perchance better for him. When *Galuanes* whom (I haue said) *Cupid* had deprived of all liberty, to make him a louer, and seruant vnto this *Madafima*, vnderstood the outrage that was likely to be offered vnto her, his courage increased in such sort, that in great choller hee sayd. My Lords, here is not any of you knoweth not that my Lord *Amadis* and wee are all departed from the Court of king *Lisuart*, especially for the bad vsage that hee hath offered vnto *Madafima*, vnto whom I bear such loue, as a husband should vnto his wife, and therefore I beseech you very earnestly to aid and assist me, for I haue promised to stick to her and to helpe her, though I should die in the quarrell. Then *Floresban* (vnderstanding the aid which *Galuanes* demanded) had not the patience to let any other answer before him, but rose vp saying. My Lord *Galuanes* if it were possible to make a peace for her with the king that were the best course: but I assure you, if wee must make it with our swords, I am alwaies ready to assist you. My Lord answered *Briā of Moniaste*, we do al very wel know, that you are both valiant & hardy knights, neuerthelesse this enterprise which you determine, toucheth you no more in particular, then it doth all vs in generall, for we are departed frō the Kings ser-

seruice all vpon one occasion: and therefore it is reason that all of vs should succor him that hath most need of helpe. And although wee had no desire to aide *Don Galuernes* heere present, yet are wee bound to fauour Ladies in all that we can, and amongst other *Madafima* and hers, assuring you that through my fault they shall neither haue hurt nor displeasure. By my faith said *Quedragant*, you speak vertuously, and according to good reason, for doing otherwise we should be vnworthy of the name of knights, and although I were my selfe alone yet would I seeke aide to execute that which you haue determined: knowing that the poore *Madafima* (forsaken of euery one) hath freely yelded her selfe into the King his prisons, not by her owne will, but by the dutifull obedience which shée desired to shew vnto her mother: For which cause if the king pretend any right vnto the lands of the Isle of *Mongaza*, I say hee doth wrong. My Lords answered *Amadis*, those things which are debated by sound deliberation, doe assuredly come vnto good end, & you need not doubt that enterprizing this which you determine, you shall performe it vnto your honour, yea although it were more dangerous and difficult then it is, neuerthelesse (if it please you) I will declare what I

thinke thereof. You doe all conclude (so farre as I see) to set at liberty the twelue Damosels now prisoners with king *Lisuart*. Therefore I am of the opinion that twelue of you without any more should vndertake this enterprise, so every one of you shall have one of them, and the twelue gentlewomen shall bee particularly bound vnto twelue knights, and the rest of this company shall spare themselves, and tarry heere to preuent such inconueniences as may happen.

Mee thinkes that *Galuernes* vnto whom this matter doth chiefly apperraine, deserueth well to be the first man that shall be named, next *Agraeis* his nephewe, *Floresus* my brother, *Palomir*, *Dragonis*, *Brian*, *Nicoran*, *Orlandis*, *Garsa*, *Imosil* brother to the Duke of *Bergoine*, *Madansil*, and *Eaderin*. You twelue are such valiant knights as you may answeare twelue others whatsoeuer they bee, and King *Lisuart* cannot deny the combate although it should bee against the chieffest of his Realme, considering the houses from which you are descended. This counsaile was so well allowed of all, tharabout mid-night following, the twelue knights mounted on horsebacke, taking their way vnto the Citie of *Thassillana*, in the which the King soioured.

CHAP.

p.22.

## CHAP. XXII.

How *Oriana* remayned in great perplexity, not onely for the departure of *Amadis*, but also because shee felte great with childe: and of that which happened to the twelue Knights that were departed from the Firme-Island, to deliner *Madafima* and her Damosels.



Little before it hath beeene tolde vnto you, how *Amadis* remained eight daies in *Mirefleur* with *Oriana*, contenting their affections and desires to the full: in such sort as two moneths after, or there about, the Princesse doubted that she was with childe, neuerthelesse for the little experiece that shée had in such matters, shee made no account thereof, vntill after the departure of *Amadis*, whē the lively colour in her face beganne to fade and decay, and her stomach waxed very bad, and weake, so that this doubt was turned into a certaintie, wherefore shée determined to acquaint *Mabila* and the Damosell of *Denmarke* therewith, as vnto those whom she esteemed the true treasurers of her secrets. For which cause beeing one day withdrawne into her closet, hauing her eyes full of teares, and her heart oppressed with griefe, shée sayd vnto them: Alas my deare friends and louing counsellors, I do now well perceiue that Fortune wil wholy work my ruine and ouerthrowe: You haue scene what inconuenience hath happened of late vnto the person whom I doe most loue in the world, and now (that which is worst of all) the thing which I haue most feared and doubted, is lighted vpon mee: For certainly I am with child, and I know not what I shall doe, that I be not discouered and

vndone. Much abashed were these two Damosels at this: neuerthelesse (as those which were wise & well aduised) they dissembled that which they thought thereof. And *Mabila* answered *Oriana*: Take no care Madame, God shall prouide well enough for you, (if it please him) but by my faith, (said shée in smiling) I alwaies doubted that vnto such a Saint such an offering would be brought. *Oriana* smiled to see with what a prettie grace *Mabila* deliuered this pleasant speech, & answered her: For the honour of God doe you both aduise to give mee some remedy, and then you shall see if I cannot requite your frumps. As for mee I thinke it best, that wee find the meanes to retyre vnto *Mirefleur*, or elsewhere frō the Courr, staying the time, vntill it shall please God to regard me in pity: for I feele my belly to rise, and I see my face already waxen leane. Madame sayde the Damosell of *Denmarke*, it is an easie matter to preuent an inconuenience, when it is foreseen before it happen: I will tell you (answered the Princesse) whereupon I haue bethought mee: It is necessarie that you (Damosell) doe hazard your life for the sauing of my honour. You see that I doe put more trust in you, then in any other person that liueth. Madame sayde shée, you knowe (or at the least you should know mee so well) that I haue neither life nor honour Q. 2 which

which I holde so deare, that I would not aduenture to doe you service. I beleue it answered *Oriane*, and also you may bee assured that if God doe lend mee life and health, I will acknowledge and re-quite it to the full: wherefore depart to morrow morning, and get you to *Mirefleur*, finde the meanes to speake with the *Abbesse*, & tell her that you are with childe, praying her earnestly to keepe your counsaile as secret as shee would doe her owne, and that shee would doe you that good as to finde out some woman, to nurse the fruite that God shall send you; the which you shall cause to bee layd within the entry of her Church porch, as a thing found by chance. I am sure xhat shee loueth you as much as any woman liuing, and shee will willingly doe this good turne for you: By this meanes shall my honour be sauad, and yours little or nothing the worse. Repose your selfe vpon me sayde the *Damosell*, I will play this part well enough, and therefore bee you merry: In the meane season do you purchase leaue for your departure, and follow me. These and such like were the consultations of these three *Damosels*, whom wee will for the present leaue, to returne vnto king *Lisart*, who after that the Earle *Latin* was returned backe againe, and that he had declared vnto him how *Grumadas* the old *Gyantesse*, was not determined to yeelde the Castle of the burning Lake, nor the three strong places whereof we haue spoken: he (by the counsaile of *Broquadan* and *Gandandel*) sent for *Madasima* to come vnto him, vnto whom he said: *Damosel*, you knowe how you and your women are entred into my prisons vpon this condition, that if your mother

did not yeeld into my hands the Isle of *Mongaza*, with the burning Lake, & the other places therunto belonging, your heads shoulde answer me for it. And because I haue beeene of late certified by those which I sent thither, of the refusall which shee hath made, I will make you an example of it, that every one thereby may see what a matter of importance it is, not to keepe promise with a King: for you shall all die. When the poore Lady heard this conclusion so rigorous, the faire vermillion colour of her face was sodainely changed into a pale and deadly hew, and falling at the king his feete shee answered him, If it like your Maiestie, the death which you threaten vnto me, doth so much trouble my sp̄its, that I haue no meanes nor power to make you an answere. But if there be any in this compnie that taketh pittie vpon twelve poore distressed *Damosels*, I doe most humbly beseech him to take our quarrell in hand: for if I haue entred into your prison, I did it by the commandement of my mother, and they by my persuasions did the like. And although that by reason every Gentleman bearing armes, is bound to maintaine the right of afflicted women, if (by misfortune) wee cannot finde any that taketh compassion of our miserie, yet it may please your Maiestie (mitigating the rigour of your lawes) to extend your mercy, and to heare vs in our iustifications, as reason and equity willet. When *Gandandel* heard *Madasima* speake so boldly, hee suddenly answered, saying vnto the King, if it please your Maiestie, there is no reason that these women should bee suffered thus to pleade, for if you cause them not to die, every one

one will doe as they doe, never performing any thing that they do promise vnto you. They are come hither as pledges, nothing ignorant of the conditions: wherefore then shall there bee any wrong done vnto them, to cut off their heads, for not yeelding that which they haue promised? My Lord *Gandandel*, answered the good knight *Grumadas*, if it please the King, his Maiestie shall not doe as you counsaile him: for metey is more commendable in a King then cruelty, which he may vse when it pleaseth him. You know that these women, more by the commandement of a mother, and the obedience of a childe, then by any their owne wils, haue beeene constrained to yeelde themselves prisoners, as they are, and euer as God loueth those that are humble and dutifull, so also the King who is his minister, ought not to despise them. Moreouer I haue beeene aduertised that certayne knights are already departed from the Firme-Island, to maintaine their quarrell against you, and the right which they haue: and therefore my Lord *Gandandel*, if yon or your sonnes dare maintaine this counsell which you doe give vnto the King for good, it may bee you may finde, that you or they which shall haue to doe with them, shall not beall at their best case: *Gandandel* hearing *Grumadas* to speake so vertuously, could willingly haue wished the words vnspeaken, which he vttered so lightly: but now it was too late to remedy that which was past helpe, wherefore to saue his honour, he answered. Des *Grumadas*, you seeke to purchase my displeasure, and yet haue I not any way deserued it of you. As touching my sonnes there is not any in

this company, who knoweth them not for valiant and bolde knights, and such as will maintaine before all and against all men, that this which I haue sayde vnto the King is according to right and equity. Wee shall shortly see what they will doe sayd *Grumadas*: but vpon mine honour, I speake not this in that I wish you any hurt, but onely because it seemeth vnto me that you counsaile the King amisse. Now did the King certainly know that against all right, and without any cause at all, hee had banished *Amadis*, notwithstanding his ancient vertues could not banish this new passion, but hearing *Grumadas* speake so wisely, hee willingly gaue earre vnto him: and afterward demanded of him who were the knights that came for *Amadis*. *Grumadas* named them all vno to himone after another. Truely sayd the King, for so small a number they are men of worth, and valiant knights. *Gandandel* did now very well perceive, that his affaines were like to prosper worse and worse: knowing his two sonnes to be no such men as to march or compare with *Dow Floreflas*, *Algrates*, *Brian*, or *Garnet* of the fearefull valley. Wherefore so soone as the King had sent the *Damosels* backe againe to prison, he wengon secke out *Bracadan*, vnto whom he wholy recited all that which *Grumadas* had sayde vnto the King in his presence, at which hee was not lesse amazed then hee, whereupon they both retyred into a chaumber, that they might more privately conferre together. And as they were in this consultation, & that *Bracadan*, reprooued *Gandandel*, cursing the houre that ever he was aduised by him, to bring *Amadis* into these earnestes: a yong knyght named

named *Sarquiles*, Cosen vnto *Angriotta de Estranx* (being in loue with one of the Neeches of *Broquadan*) was by chance hidden behind the Tapeстrie of the same chamber, staying for some signe or watch word, which was to be giuen vnto him by his louing Mistresse, hee I say heard all their counsaile, wherat hee was wonderfull abashed. For which cause incontinently after the traytors were departed, hee came foorth from his place, where hee had almost all that day beeне hidden: and the next morning hee armed him, and as if he had beeне come some farre iourney, he entred into the Pallace where the king was, vnto whom he came and sayd: If it may please your Maiesy, I am none of your subiect nor liege man, but in requitall of the bring vp and education that I haue had in your Court, I am bound to preserue and defend the honour of your Maiesy. Wherfore your highnesse may be pleased, to bee aduertised that within these three dayes, I was in such a place, where I heard that *Broquadan* and *Gandandel* did not only then conspire (but already had committed against God and your grace) the greatest treason that might be imagined. It is sure that they determined to counseil & perswade you to put *Madasima* and her gentlewomen to death, and for the rest I hope if it like your Maiesy, before ten dayes be past, that their wickednes shalbe wholy laid open & proued vnto you. And beeause that in maintayning such traitors, you haue of late banished my Lord *Amadis*, and many other good knights from your company, I am not determined to stay any longer with you, and therefore

I take my leaue of your grace, to goe seeke out my Uncle *Angriotta*, whom (if God please) you shall see in these parts, and I with him, determined to atouch by force of armes against these two traytors, their vniust conspiracies. God be with you (answering the king) seeing that you haue so great hate. Herewithall *Sarquiles* rose vp, leauing the king alone very pensiue for the wordes which hee had said vnto him, and some few dayes after he arrived in the Firme-Island, as *Amadis*, *Angriotta*, *Bruner*, and others were walking by the Sea side, causing certayne shippes to be prepared and rigged, to passe into *Gaule*: where king *Perion* had sent vnto *Amadis* that he should come for certayne affaires which were lately happened vnto him. When *Angriotta* beheld his Nephew *Sarquiles*, he wondred thereat, inquiring of him why hee had left king *Lisware*. My Lord, answered *Sarquiles*, it is for a matter wherat you & all this company wil greatly admire. Hereupon hee recited vnto them the whole discourse of the practises and counsailes that *Broquadan* and *Gandandel* had held vpon the accusation of *Amadis* & his companions. Well answered *Angriotta*, I did alwaies thinke so of them. And you my Lord, said hee vnto *Amadis*, doe now finde that to be true which I haue heretofore told you: But seeing it is so, I protest they shall repente their treacherie: for I will depart hence to morrowe morning to goe and fight with them, and make them acknowledge their villany. Gentle friend answered *Amadis*, the matter being so certaine as it is, you haue no reason to deferre the execution of your enterprise: and if you had any sooner performed that

which you now determine, it had beeне (perchance) with lesse assurance then you now haue. And after many other discourses they went vnto their lodging, vntill the next morning that *Angriotta* took his leaue of *Amadis*, and accompanied with his Nephew *Sarquiles*, tooke the right way towards great *Brittaine*, where within few dayes after he arrived. Now you must vnderstand that euer since the departure of *Amadis*, king *Lisware* was so melancholly as no man could be more, and hee spent all the day long in studying with himselfe: whereof one time aboue all the rest, *Broquadan* and *Gandandel* seeing him alone very pensiue, came vnto him and sayd. May it please your Maiesy, it seemeth vnto vs, that the ouer great care which you take in these your affaires, depryeth you of your wonted manner of life, and you take matters more to heart then you neede. It may welbe answered the king, but what meane you to tell me so? Is it (if it like your Maiesy) sayd they, for doubt of those that come from the Firme-Island, in the defence of *Madasima* and her Damosels? by the faith wee owe vnto God, if it please your grace to credit our counsell, you and your estate shall be henceforth in greater security then euer yet it hath beeне. And to bring that to passe, commaund the heades of those pledges which you haue, this day to bee sinnen off: Then afterwardes send vnto *Galuares* and the rest of his company (your enemies) that vpon their lynes they be not once so hardy as to enter into your countries, and if by chance they be already arrived, command them foorthwith to depart, or otherwise you will cause them to bee cut in pee-ces. When the King heard this wicked speech, and vngodly counsaile of theirs, hee remembred that which *Sarquiles* had tolde vnto him, & therewithall he knew that without doubt thes two traytors did with wrong procure the death of these Damosels: notwithstanding because he would not at that time amase them, hee onely answered this. You counsaile mee to things farre vnsitting my estate: the one that I should without processe or order of Justice, put *Madasima* and her Damosels to death: and the other, that I should forbid fro my Court those knights that are minded to come thither. But if I should doe this which you say, I might bee grieuously reproved for it before God, who hath by his great bountie and mercy instituted mee King, to administer Justice vnto euery one alike: therefore the counsell whiche you doe giue vnto mee, is wicked and vnworthy to be received. Let it suffice you therefore that I have already listned vnto you in the accusation which you haue contynued against *Amadis*, whereof I doe greatly repente mee: for I neuer receiued of him, nor any of his, but all honor, pleasure, & seruice, wherfore I charge you vpon your liues, that you mooue me no more thereto.

Saying so he rose vp, shewing by his countenance that hee was very angry, wherat *Gandandel* and *Broquadan* were greatly abashed, and they were constrained to departe vnto their lodging, to determine what was best for the to be done, seeing that already fortune had maruailously crossed them, & they came not in the King his presence all that day after vntill the next morning, when they attended Q.4 vpon

upon him as hee rode into the fields. The King beeing halfe a league from the Cittie, he behelde comming toward him the knights of the Firme-Island, for the deliuer-  
ry of *Madafima* and her Damosels, being come somewhat neere they all did their dutys to his Maiestie. Then *Galuanes* who marched for-  
most, took vpon him to speake for all his fellowes, saying vnto the King. If it like your Maiestie, wee (being all of vs well assured of your accustomed vertue) are come to demand iustice of your grace for *Madafima* and her Damosels, and to defend their right if by force of armes it is defensible. My friends, answered hee, seeing that you haue already set vp your Tents in this place, if you thinke good you may haue abide for this day, and to morrow you may come vnto mee, to aduise vpon that which shall be reasonable to bee done. If it please your highnesse, said *Brian of Moni-  
asta*, wee all are assured that accor-  
to your, ancient royll Behaviour, iustice shall not bee denied vnto vs, and if wee finde it other-  
wise, it is rather by the counsaile of some wicked traitors that are a-  
bout you, then any of your owne motion. *Brian, Brian*, saide the King, I am well assured that if you had beleueed your father, you would neither haue deparred from my seruice (as you haue done) nei-  
ther would you in this sort haue helde argument against mee. The argument which I do hold against your Maiestie, said *Brian*, is not for any il will, or that I would not per-  
forme any dutifull seruice for your grace, for I know well that in time you will acknowledge that which I say true. And where your Maiestie doth tell me that if I had beleueed my father, I would not

haue forsaken you, sauing the re-  
uerence of your Maiestie I did ne-  
uer forsake you, for I never did be-  
long vnto you: but I onely came into your house to seeke my cofin *Amadis*, who so long as hee was yours, so long had I a desire to serue you, and never did I whilte I there remained offend you, Well, well, answered the King, wee will debate of this another time more at large. Which said, he bad them good night, and departed: for it was already somewhat late. Here-  
tofore you haue heard how the King had the day before, after dinner, taken vp *Gandandel* and *Bro-  
quadan*, who beeing very heawie, did consult a great while how they might with honour finish their wicked enterprise, for the next morning the twelue Knights of the Firme-Island met the King & Church, who after seruice was ended, called *Broquadan* and *Gandandel*, vnto whom he said. You haue of long time counsaile met to put *Madafima* and her Damosels to death, beeing our prisoners, and that in their behalfe I should haue no iustification whatsoeuer. There-  
fore you must now make answere vnto that which these 12 Knights will maintaine. Then *Imosel* of Burgoine stepped forth, saying vnto the King. If it like your Maiestie, I and my fellowes are come into your Court to beseech you most humble, that you would extend your iustice and mercy to *Madafima* and her Damosels. Whereupon *Gandandel* stepped forth and answered: My Lord *Imosel*, you request that iustice should bee extended to *Madafima*, and so fare as I perceiue, you twelue wil maintaine, that they ought to be heard, what they they can say in their own defence. Truely if it like your Maiestie, sayd the old Earle, you speak like a ver-  
tuos king, and it is not possible to

consent thereunto he doth amisse, considering vnder what condition they are entred into his prison.

Beleeue me *Gandandel* said *Imo-  
sel*, had you held your peace you  
had done but your duty, for the  
king hath not yet commanded you  
to speake, & also because you know  
that by the custome of great Brit-  
taine no woman ought to suffer  
death, except it bee in two cases,  
the one for *Leze maeſtie*, the o-  
ther for treason. But there is not  
any in this company, who know-  
eth not how these poore women  
were brought into the king his  
hands, more by compulsion then  
their owne consent. Therefore we  
beseech your Maiestie and you my  
Lords all to consider of the mat-  
ter, for reason and pittie are most  
fit to be vſed therein. You are to  
blame answered *Gandandel*, to re-  
quest a thing so vreasonable, and  
seeing it hath pleased the king to  
haue vs both, let him order the  
matter as to his maiestie shall seem  
most conuenient. Then the king  
caused every one to depart, & cal-  
led some of the most principall of  
the realme vnto him, and amongst  
others his Vnkle the Earle *Arga-  
more*, an auncient & most vertuous  
Prince, vnto whom he said, Good  
Vnkle, I pray you and all the rest  
also, to counsell me vpon this con-  
trouerſie. But there was not any  
that would speake their opinion,  
before they had heard the king.  
Seeing it is so sayde the king, you  
shal preſently know mine opinion,  
It seemeth vnto me *Imosel* of Bur-  
gondie hath both reasonable and  
wisely spoken, and that the Damo-  
sels ought to be heard, what they  
they can say in their own defence.  
Truely if it like your Maiestie, sayd  
the old Earle, you speak like a ver-  
tuos king, and it is not possible to

giue a righter iudgement, of which  
opinion they were all. Wheterefore  
he commanded *Gandandel* & *Bro-  
quadan* to bee ſent for, and in the  
preſence of the knights of the  
Firme-Island, hee gaue the ſame  
ſentence, for the which they hum-  
bly thanked his maiestie, beseeching  
him that *Madafima* & her wo-  
men might be ſet at liberty. For  
we hope ſaid they, to haue them  
acquired either by reaſon or arms.  
It is well ſaide answered the king,  
who ſent for the Damosels to  
come vnto him, and afterward ſaid  
vnto them, Looke vp Ladies, be-  
hold theſe Gentlemen which will  
detend your right, will you be co-  
tent to put your quarrell and ad-  
uenture your liues vp & their force.  
Alas if it like your Maiestie anſwe-  
red *Madafima*, ſeeing it pleaſeth  
them to affoord vs this good, wee  
doe put our liues into their hands,  
and your good mercy. Trust mee  
Madame ſaide *Imosel*, If there bee  
any heere which will gainsay that  
you are not deliuered and ſet at  
liberty, behold me ready to prove  
the contrarie, & if there be twelue  
together of the like opinion, wee  
are twelue likewiſe that wil hazard  
our liues for yours. Therewithall  
the king did caſt his eyes vpon *Gan-  
dandel* and *Broquadan*, and he per-  
ceiued that they hanged downe  
their heads, looking vpon the  
ground, ſo much amafed, that they  
were not able to anſwer one word,  
wherefore the king ſaide vnto the  
knights of the Isle. My Lords, I  
pray you to withdraw your ſelues  
for this day, and to morrow you  
ſhall haue anſweſe of thoſe with  
whom you are to deale. Where-  
upon they all departed, and pre-  
ſently after the king called apart  
*Broquadan* & *Gandandel*, vnto whom  
he ſaid, come hither, you knowe  
that

that many times you haue solicited me to put these poore Damosels to death, perswading mee that it was iust and reason so to doe, and that if need were you & your sons would maintain this counsaile vnto the death. You haue heard what *Imosel* and his fellowes haue saide vnto mee, which I doe thinke to be good & right, wherefore it is time that you determine what to do. For by the faith that I owe vnto God, I will not permit that any other of my knights shall fight with them, & if you look not vnto it, you shall bee answerable for all, and the Damosels deliuered. If it please your Maiestie, answered they, to morrow we will be ready to maintain whatsoeuer we haue saide. And for that time they departed to their lodgging, greatly troubled for that which they were to do. Neuerthelesse, seeing that now there was no remedy, they determined to peruer in their daurned opinion by argument of words onely; without putting themselves or their children in danger: knowing assuredly that they were not able to resist any of those that were come from the Firme-Island. But it happened out so well for them, as the very same night newes came vnto the King, that *Grumeda* the olde Giantesse was dead, and that a little before her death, shee had yeelded vp her strong places into the hands of the kings people, beseeching him to haue pitty vpon her daughter *Madasima*.

Wherupon the next morning at their retурne from church, hee caused the twelue knights of the Firme-Island to bee called, vnto whom he said. My friends, you may carry away with you the Damosels which you demand, when it shall please you, for I set them at liberty,

because that this night the Eagle Latin hath written vnto me, that he hath the Isle of *Mongaza* in his hands, and that the olde Giantesse is deceased. If any were glad hereof, you may beleue that the two traitors *Broquadan* and *Gandandel* were nothing sorry, for as much as they did perceiue that if this had not happened, their treason had bid discouered. The *Imosel* answered the king. If your Maiestie doe but *Madasima* right, shee must not remaine poor nor disinherited, seeing your grace knoweth that children are bound to obey their parents as shee hath done, more by feare then free will. And so if it please your Maiestie, vsing your accustomed liberality, you should shew her some grace and fauour, shewing thereby an example to all other vertuous and couragious Princes to do the like. *Imosel* sayde the king, let it suffice you that the Damosels are at liberty, for I cannot revoke the gift which I haue made to my daughter *Leonor*, of the land which you demand. I most humbly beseech your Maiestie, answered *Galuanes*, to haue pitty vpon her and mee, who at this prelēt ought to hold the place descended frō her ancestors, of whom shee is the lawfull inheretrix, especially of the land which you doe take from her: and if it please your highnesse, in remembrance of the seruices which I haue done vnto you, you may restore them vnto vs to hold them of your grace by fealty and homage. I haue said enough my Lord *Galuanes*, answered the king, that which is done, cannot be vndone. Trust me, answered he, seeing I can neither haue right nor reason of you, I will trie if I may get it some other way. Doe what you can, said the king, I am in good hope

hope leeing I haue won if frō greater then you, to defend it against those that are leſſe then they. Sir, answered *Galuanes*, he which got it for you, hath bin very badly recōpenſed therefore. Care not you for that, saide the King, if he of whom you speake dare but aduenture to aide you, I dare bee so bolde as to withstand him, and to make him beshrew himselfe. *Agriotes* hearing these threats, was exceeding angry, and in great choller answered: Sir, although my Lord *Amadis* was never other then a wādring knight, yet did he that good for you which as yet you never recomponed, for he hath many times defended you, and deliuered you from death. *Florefan* did well perceiue that *Agriotes* entred into farther tearmes then was fit hee should, for which cause he a little pulled him back, and said vnto the king. Sir, although you be a king and a great Lord, yet it may be you shall finde somewhat to do, to vse my Lord *Amadis* so ſuch ſort as you threates him. By my faith, said *Brian*, *Amadis* hath done you too many ſeruices to be thus badly requited, especially he being ſonne vnto a Prince as worthy as your ſelfe. Soft and faire *Dow Brian*, ſaide the king, we know wel enough that you are one of his friends. I am and ſo ought to be, said *Brian*, for every one knoweth that I am his coſin german, and therefore it were a shame not to ſuccour him in his neede. Truely, answered the King, for the ſame cauſe doe I hold you excused. And as they were in these tearmes, *Angriotes de Estraneux*, & *Sarguiles* his Nephew came before the King, who beeing armed at all points, did their duty vnto his Maiestie: but when the knights of the Firme-Island did beholde them, they greatly wondred, for they

knew nothing at al of this their en-terprie. Then *Angriotes* with a loud voice began his ſpeech in this manner. May it please your Maiestie, my Nephew and I haere preſent, do beseech your grace to cauſe two traitors that are in your Court, *Broquadan* and *Gandandel*, to ap-peare before your Maiestie, vnto whom I will declare the treason which they haue done againſt you. Much affrighted was *Broquadan* and his companion, hearing *Angriotes* ſpeak after this manner; who continuing his ſpeech ſaide: If it like your highnesſe, theſe two wicked persons of whom I ſpeak, without respect or feare of God or men, haue falſly accuſed my Lord *Amadis* & other of a matter where-in they never ſo much as in thought offendēd. By meanes whereof I dare well ſay, that you haue banished from you the beſt Knights that e-ver entred into Great Britaine, therfore if theſe traitors dare maintain that they be not ſuch as I ſteame them. I alone, by the help of God, and the edge of my ſword will make them confesse it. And if they ought to bee excuſed by reaſon of their age, there is neither of them both which hath not a ſonſe of long time bearing armes, and well enough eſteemed of amongſt the Knights of your court, againſt whom I will fight if they will main-tain the quarrell of their wicked fa-thers. Most mighty foueraigne, an-swered *Gandandel*, doth not your grace ſee the boldnes of this proud iniurious fellow, who is come into this countrey to no other end, but onely to ſhame the Gentlemen of your court? By my faith if your Maiestie would haue beleueed me long agoe, ſo ſoone as hee had en-tered into your Realme, hee ſhould haue bin hanged vp, vpon the firſt tree

tree that he had come vnto, but seeing that your grace doth suffer him, you must not hereafter be abashed if *Amadis* in his owne person doe come euuen hither to iniurie your owne selfe. Notwithstanding, thus much I protest, that by the liuing God, if I were as young now as when I began to enter into the seruice of the late deceased king your brother, vnto whom I haue done many great seruices, I am well assured that *Angriotta* durst not so much as haue dreamed to vetter halfe these iniurious words of me, as hee hath profferred now before your Maiestie. But the gallant doth well know that I am olde and craſed, as well by the great number of my aged yeeres, as by the infinite wounds which I haue received, in a manner in all the parts of my body, in the warres of your predecesſors, witnes wherof are yet these reliques. Saying so hee opened his breast, vpon the which were many scarres apparrantly to be seen. Villaine, said *Angriotta*, shalldost thinke to defend thee with the eloquence of thy tongue. But by the faith of a Knight, if the King doth but iusteſſe vnto vs both, hee shall apparranly perceiue thy great treason. Therewithall *Sarquiles* stepped forth and kneeling downe, hee ſaid vnto the King: It is long ſince I did aduertife your Maiestie, that ſo ſoone as my Lord *Angriotta* heere present, ſhould come vnto your Court, I would let you understand that, which with my two eares I did hear ſpoken by the mouth of these two traitors: heereupon hee recited word by word, the whole conſpiraſtions which he had heard, whereat al they that were present did greatly wonder to heare ſuch conſpiraſtions repeated. And for as much if it like your Maiestie, ſaid *Sarquiles*,

as they can in no ſort excuse themſelues, my Lord *Angriotta* and I will combate with their three ſons, if they dare maintaine the contrary. Now were they preſent of whō they ſpake, who ſeeing the iniury that was done vnto their aged fathers, and that every one gaue credit to the words of *Sarquiles*, in a great rage they thrust through the preaſe, and falling on their knees before the King, they ſaid: May it please your Maiestie, *Angriotta* and *Sarquiles* haue moſt falſly and wickedly lied in the words which they haue ſaid before your Maiestie, and wheresoever, or whenſoever they doe ſay to they ſhall lie, and therfore it may please you preſently to grant vnto vs the combate which they haue demanded. Trueſly, anſwered the King, it is now verely late, but I am content that to morrow after ſeruice you ſhall do that which you can, as well on the one part as on the other. Then *Damas* one of the ſonnes of *Brigandine* by the ſister of *Gandandel*, a valiant and expert man at arms (but wholly adiected to villany) ſtepped forth ſaying vnto the King: Saving the reverence of your Maiestie, *Sarquiles* hath vrinſtly, and leudly lied in all that he hath ſaid, and I ſhall be one of them that will maintaine it againſt him. By my faith, anſwered *Angriotta*, if there were a fourth here too, he ſhould be as wel handled as I hope thou ſhalt. Go too then ſaide the King, depart you all for this day, and to morrow think upon your busynesse.

Afterwards hee called *Grumedan* and *Gionotes* his Nephewes, and after hee had conſoled with them a little while, hee commanded *Gandandel* and *Brigandine* to come before him, vnto whom hee ſayde: Come hether, you haue

haue ſo many times declared vnto me, that *Amadis* and his associates had determined to betray me, and to vſurpe vpon mee the land of Great Britaine, yet neuertheleſſe when it is come to an iſſue, you excuse your ſelues from the combate, ſetting your ſons to maintaine your wickedneſſe, who cannot doe therewithall, notwithstanding God is iuft, & by all that I do owe vnto him, it is very lewdly ſpoken of you, neuer would I ever haue thought you ſuch as you are. May it please your Maiestie anſwered *Gandandel*, our children ſeing vs too ſlow in our iuſtification, put themſelues forward to maintaine the honour of their fathers. They had reaſon ſayd *Grumedan*, for hardly could you haue recouered any other, & no doubt but you are men of little worth, or reputation, for the Diuell could neuer haue inuented ſuch wickedneſſe as you haue ſet abroach, ſo as if the King ſhould cauſe a thouſand ſuch as you are to be hanged, yet could hee not holde him ſatisfied for the treacherie which you haue done vnto him, but your children ſhall beare the punishment for you. My Lord *Grumedan* ſaid they, although you wiſh it ſo, yet ſhall it not haphen ſo, if God pleaſe: for our ſonnes deliuering vs from shame, ſhall obtaine the victorie with honour. You ſhall ſee ſayd *Grumedan* what the iſſue will bee. And because this talke continued longer then the King liked, hee ſent euery man vnto his lodging. And the ſame night those which the next morning were to performe the combate, did looke that nothing might be wanting in their armour, especially *Angriotta* and his Nephew, who withdrew them vnto a Chappell where they

continued in prayer vntill the day breake. And because the King had receiued iniurious ſpeeches by the twelve knights of the Iſland, they went vnto their tents, with *Madafima* and her Damſels, where they remained all that night. But the day appearing, they all mounted on horseback, & came to accompany their fellowes *Angriotta* and *Sarquiles*, vnto the place of combate, there were already arriued the King, Princes, and Lords, with the Queen & the other Ladies. Thus the combatants entred into the field, *Angriotta* and *Sarquiles* on the one ſide, *Tarin*, *Corian* and *Damas* on the other ſide. Then the trumpers ſounded, whereupon each of the pulled downe the beaute of his helme, and with their Lances in their reſts, they ſet ſpurs to their horſes, running with ſuch force one againſt another, that *Corian* and *Tarin* brake vpon *Angriotta*, & *Damas* vpon *Sarquiles*: but *Angriotta* hit *Corian* ſo ſound a ſtroke with his Launce that hee vnhorſed him. Then turning his face, he ſaw *Tarin* ready with his ſword in his hand: who beholding his brother ouerthownde, came with great rage againſt *Angriotta*, & thinking to ſtrike him vpon the top of the helme, the blow fell ſhort, and lighted vpon the head of his horſe, wherewith hee was grieuously wounded. Notwithstanding *Angriotta* finding that hee was neare his enemy, he hit him ſo ſoundly with his ſword, that with the ſtroke hee vnhorſed him, and at the ſame instant hee himſelfe perceiued his horſe waxed faint, with the wound hee had receiued vpon his head, forſooke him and leaped on the ground. Then with his ſhield on his arme, he came againſt him whom hee had firſt ouerthownde

thowne, who was already risen vp & marched against *Angriotta*. And thus began the combate betweene the two, where shortly after came *Tarin* in like sorte, and *Angriotta* was to answeare them both: neuerthelesse he did make knowne, that he was not to seeke in such an extremitie: for hee had led them so roundly that hee gaue them not so muche leasure as to take their breath, so that in lesse space then an houre, their armour was hacked in peeces, & they so wounded that the blood ran downe on all parts. I beleue there is none of you all that doth heare this History, who vnderstandeth not well enough, that *Angriotta* could not defend himselfe so well, but that hee felt some part of the strokes, for he was sore wounded in many places, yet was it nothing in respect of the others. In the meane time *Sarquiles*, whom *Damas* had in hand, began to be ashamed with the ouer great resistance that his enemy made vnto him, and for the same cause setting spurs vnto his horse, he found the meanes to buckle with his enemy: and as they were strugling together and striuing who should fall first, *Angriotta* doubting that his Nephew would haue the worst, drew towards him, but before hee came neer vnto him, *Sarquiles* and *Damas* fell downe one vpō another: By this means was their encounter re-enforced, because that *Angriotta* endeauoured to succour his Nephew, & the others to relieue their kinsman: Who being vnder *Sarquiles* could by no meanes rise vp, for *Sarquiles* held him so short, that pulling off his helmet, hee thrust his sword into his throat, then seeing his enemy dead hee left him there, & came running vpon *Tarin*

The end of the Second Booke.

A

and his companion, who were in a manner out of breath, & ready to yeeld, or to ask mercie. The which the King, *Broquadan* & *Gandalen* perceiuing, they were so sorry that they departed. Notwithstanding although they were displeased with this sight, yet all the rest of the Court there present, tooke pleasure to behold it, for the loue which they did beare vnto *Amadis* & his friends. And more gladder yet were they when they saw them brought to the extremitie of their vnhappy end. For scant had the King turned his head frō the window, but that *Angriotta* did hit *Corian* so forcible a blow, that hee quite cut off all his right shoulder: with the extreame grief whereto, giuing a signe of his death, he fell downe kissing the ground with his nose, after whom *Tarin* staid not long before he did as much.

Thus were the sons of these traitors slaine, for the which *Madasima*, *Oriana*, and many others did greatly reioyce. Then *Angriotta* & his Nephewes tooke the bodies of the vanquished, and dragged them forth of the fields, afterwards they demaunded of the Judges if they had performed as much as was requisite, who answered that they had. Whereupon they both retyred in great triumph, & accompanied with their friends, they came vnto the tents of their fellowes, cōducting with them *Madasima* and her women, because they knew al-suredly that King *Lisuart* was very angry for the good fortune which had hapned vnto the, so much hurt did he wish vnto *Amadis*, notwithstanding that he wel perceiued how his affars prospered very badly euer since he had driven him away, & the Frēch knights of his cōpany.

## A Table of the Chapters contained in this Second Booke.

### CHAPTER I.

**T**He description of the Firme-Island. who made the enchantments, and placed those great riches which were found in the same.

Fol. 1.

*Pensive* did bring vnto the Court of King *Lisuart*, the shield, armour and sword of *Amadis*, which hee had found lying by the fountaine of the plaine field.

Fol. 39.

Chap. 2. How *Amadis*, *Galaor*, *Florestan* and *Agraeis*, hauing taken leue of the faire *Briolania*, to returne unto King *Lisuart*, were carried into the Firme-Island to prooue the arie of *Loyallowers*, and the other adventures in the same. Fol. 6.

Chap. 3. How *Durin* departed to goe towards *Amadis*, unto whom he delivered the Letters from *Oriana*, and what hurt hapned thereby. Fol. 14.

Chap. 4. How *Gandalin* and *Durin* followed the same way that *Amadis* had taken, brought the rest of his armes which hee had left behinde, theſe found him sleeping, and how he fought against a Knight who hee did overcome. Fol. 18.

Chap. 5. Who was the Knight vanquished by *Amadis*, and what hapned vnto him, before he fought with him. Fol. 23.

Chap. 6. How *Don Galaor*, *Florestan* and *Agraeis*, undertooke the search of *Amadis*: who hauing left his armour, changed his name, and withdrew himſelfe to an Hermite, in the company of a very olde Hermite. There to liue solitary. Fol. 27.

Chap. 7. How *Durin* returned unto the Princess *Oriana*, unto whom hee declared the sorrowfull newes of *Amadis*: and of the great sorrow which she made, after ſhe understood of his dispaire. Fol. 35.

Chap. 8. How *Don Guillan* the

Faire Forlorne did bring vnto the Court of King *Lisuart*, the shield, armour and sword of *Amadis*, which hee had found lying by the fountaine of the plaine field.

Fol. 39.

Chap. 9. How the Faire Forlorne beeing in the Rocke with the Hermite, there arrived a ſhip, in the which was *Corisanda*, who ſought for her friend *Florestan*, and of that which hapned unto them. Fol. 46.

Chap. 10. How the Gentlewoman of Denmarke going in ſearch of *Amadis*, after long trawaile coaſting along many ſtrange Islands, by chance ſhe arrived in the poore Rocke, where *Amadis* was, who was called the Faire Forlorne, whom ſhe knew, & how they returned together towards *Oriana*. Fol. 53.

Chap. 11. How *Galaor*, *Florestan* and *Agraeis*, departed from the Firme-Island, to goe ſeeke *Amadis*, of whom they could haue no tydings at all, wherupon they al returned vnto the Court of King *Lisuart*. Fol. 60.

Chap. 12. How King *Lisuart* being ſet at the Table, there came before him a ſtrange Knight armed at all points, who defied him: The conuference that *Florestan* had with him, and how *Oriana* was comforted with the good newes that ſhe received from *Amadis*. Fol. 71.

Chap. 13. How the Faire Forlorne ſent *Enil* his Esquire vnto London, to cauſe a new armour to be made for him, & what aduenture chanced vnto him in going to Mireleur. Fol. 78.

Chap. 14. How that after the Faire Forlorne had ended his aduenture,

## The Table.

uenture, he went unto the fountaine  
of the three Channels: from thence  
he tooke his way to Mirefleur, where  
he found Oriana, with whom he re-  
mained eight dayes together: and at  
the same time there arrived in the  
Court of King Liliard an auncient  
Gentleman, bringing with him two  
jewels of singular vertue, whereby  
the faithfull lover, from the fained  
might be tryed, the which Amadis  
& Oriana determine to make prooef  
of, in such secret manner, that they  
would neither be knowne of the King  
nor any other.

Chap. 15. How the Damosell of  
Denmark was sent unto London,  
so know what answer Enil had re-  
ceived from the King, touching  
the safe conduct which was deman-  
ded by the Faire Forlorne, who da-  
ft afterwards bring Oriana thither to  
prove the strange Jewels. Fol. 99.

Chap. 16. How after the Faire  
Forlorne had broughth Oriana backe  
againe to Miresfluer, he departed, shal  
he might be in the battell with King  
Liluart: and what happened unto  
him. Fol. 110

Chap. 17. How King Cildadan and Galaor were unawares to themselves, carried away by twelve Dam-sels, and one of them was put into a strong Tower, environed with the Sea, and the other in a Garden enclosed with high walls, where they thought they had beeene in prison, & of that which happened there unto them.

Chap. 18 How the evening en-  
suing, the King being risen from the

Table, walking about the galleries of his Palace, he beheld two great fires upon the Sea, that came directly towards the City. Fol. 120.

Chap. 19. How after the departure of Vrganda, the King being ready to mount on horseback, to excuse the enterprise which he had determined to make upon the burning Lake, where came before him a Dam Gyantesse, so understand whether his Majesty would bee pleased so to referre the quarrell that hee pretended in his voyage, upon the combate between Ardan Canila, and Amadis Gaule, with such conditions as shal be declared unto you. Fol. 130

Chap. 20. How Bruneo de bone  
ne Mer did fight with Madamir  
the ambitious, brother to the Damo  
injuries, and of the accusations they  
were made by some of the enemies  
Amadis unto the King, for which  
cause he and many others (that were  
desirous to follow him) departed from  
the Court. Fob. 15

Chap. 21. How Amadis with  
many others his confederates forsook  
the service of King Liruau, and  
went as well to prove the adventure  
of the Arch of leyal lovers, as also  
the forbidden chamber. Fol. 16

Chap. 22. How Oriana remained in great perplexitie, not willing for the departure of Amadis, but so because she felte her selfe great mischilde: and of that which happened to the twelve Knights that were disparted from the Firme-Island, to liner Madasima and her Damsel

THE  
THIRD BOOKE  
Of Amadis de Gaule

# CONTAINING THE DISCORDS

and warres which befell in Great Brittaine, and  
*there about, occasioned by the bad counsell, which*

King *Lisuart* received from *Gandandell* and  
*Brocadan*, against *Amadis* and his fol-  
lowers: whereby many good Knights  
(afterward on either side) cruelly  
concluded their Lives.

Written in French by the Lord of *Effars*, *Nicholas de Herberay*, Commissarie in Ordinarie for the Kings Artillerie, and his Lieutenant in the Countrie and Gouvernement of *Picardie*, vnder *Mon sieur de Brissac*: Great Master and Capitaine Generall of the said Artillerie.

*Translated into English by A. M.*



*L O N D O N,*  
Printed by NICHOLAS OKEs, dwelling in  
Foster-lane. 1618.

FINIS